

COLLECTIONS  
OF THE  
MASSACHUSETTS  
HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

VOL. IX.

---



---

*BOSTON:*  
PUBLISHED BY HALL & HILLER, No. 53, CORNHILL.  
.....  
MUNROE & FRANCIS, PRINTERS.  
1804.  
REPRINTED BY T. E. MARVIN, MDCCCLVII.

---



---

## CONTENTS.

---



---

<i>ECCLESIASTICAL History of Massachusetts</i>	1
<i>Memoir and Poem of Stephen Parmenius of Buda</i>	49
<i>Memoir of the Mohegan Indians</i>	75
<i>Extract from an Indian History</i>	99
<i>Journal of the Siege of York in Virginia</i>	102
<i>Memoir of Mr. Ebenezer Grant Marsh</i>	108
<i>Topographical Description of Catskill, New-York</i>	111
<i>Topographical Description of Newtown, New-York</i>	120
<i>Topographical Description of Brimfield</i>	127
<i>Description and History of Waterford</i>	137
<i>Chronological and topographical Account of Dorchester</i>	147
<i>Notes on Compton</i>	199
<i>Biographical Memoir of William Fisk, Esq.</i>	206
<i>History of the Penobscott Indians</i>	207
<i>Account of Earthquakes in New-Hampshire</i>	232
<i>Historical Scraps</i>	234
<i>Bill of Mortality for Middleborough</i>	235
<i>Bills of Mortality for Portsmouth</i>	236
<i>Extract from a Journal kept on a Voyage to the North- West Coast and Sandwich Islands</i>	242
<i>Conversation between Dr. Mather and King William</i>	245
<i>Observations upon the natural Production of Iron Ores, &amp;c.</i>	253
<i>Account of a Conference between the late Mr. Grenville and the Colony Agents</i>	268
<i>Mauduit's Miscellanies</i>	272
<i>Several Reasons proving that the Inoculation of the Small- Pox is a lawful practice</i>	275
<i>Extracts from a Letter written by a London merchant to his friend in Virginia</i>	280

---

# COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

THE SETTLEMENT OF THE FIRST CHURCHES IN MASSACHUSETTS. ACCOUNT OF MINISTERS WHO WERE FIXED IN SALEM, CHARLESTOWN, DORCHESTER, AND BOSTON, WATERTOWN, AND ROXBURY. CONTROVERSY WITH ROGER WILLIAMS, AND MRS. HUTCHINSON. SYNOD. IN 1637; AND STATE OF RELIGION TO THE YEAR 1647.

THE wisest statesmen have observed, that a regular ministry is the great instrument of civilizing mankind. It is evident, that their business is connected with a virtuous education, and the encouragement of polite literature; and it is a fact, that the most social order prevails, and most knowledge is diffused in those towns and states, where the people have regarded the institutions of religion, and chosen men of liberal education for their teachers. The fathers of New-England, who subdued the wilderness, and turned its roughest spots into fruitful fields, had been well educated in the old country; and were disposed to encourage a learned ministry. They frequently observed that a country destitute of ministers, was like paradise without the tree of life. But they extended their views beyond this sublunary state, and planted churches not so much for social improvements, and to bless the present scene of existence, as to brighten the prospects of future glory.

When Mr. Endicot came over to Salem, the people were few in number. After the second embarkation they amounted to three hundred. Among them were four clergymen; Mr. Ralph Smith who went to Plymouth; Mr. Bright who went to Charlestown, and soon after to England. He lost the esteem of the brethren, though a very pious man, because he could not proceed to the same extreme of non-conformity to the Church of England.\* Mr. Higginson and Mr. Skelton remained at Naumkeage. They called it Salem, which some opposed, thinking there was a puritanick cant in the appellation, but the majority prevailed, and it has preserved the name even to the present times. These gentlemen had the satisfaction of seeing a church formed according to their wishes; their wisdom and worth were respected by that generation, and their characters have lately been delineated to the honour of the first settlers of Massachusetts.†

Mr. Higginson had been a minister of Leicester, but silenced for non-conformity. Upon an address to him from Mr. Humphries, afterwards a magistrate of the colony, and also from Mr. White of Dorchester, he agreed to leave his native land, and here make his abode.

Mr. Skelton was another non-conformist minister, who had been settled in Lincolnshire. His sentiments and manner of life were adapted to the state of this people; and he was ordained pastor of the church in Salem at the same time Mr. Higginson was introduced as their teacher. One of the brethren, Mr. Houghton, was also elected to the office of elder, which office is now hardly known in the New-England States.‡

The

---

\* Our early historians thus describe him in their quaint manner:—“Thus he began to hew stones in the mountains wherewith to build, but when he saw all sorts of stones would not suit in the building as he supposed, he, not unlike *Jonah*, fled from the presence of the Lord, and went down to *Tarshish*. Hubbard’s MSS.

The like character is applied to *Mr. Blackstone*, but it is less descriptive than *his* manner of designating the *Lord brethren* who complained of the *Lord Bishops*.

† Hist. Collect. vol. 6. History of Salem.

‡ Mr. Bentley, in his history of Salem, says:—“In the choice of an elder to rule in the church, care was taken not to accept of a civil officer.”



The first planters who arrived with Endicot held some communication with their brethren at Plymouth, and expressed their opinion fully, that—*the church in Plymouth should not claim any jurisdiction over the church in Salem.*

*And that the authority of ordination should not exist in the clergy, but should depend upon the free election of members of the church, and that there should be a representation of this power preserved continually.*||

Mr. Fuller, a deacon of the church of Plymouth, as a physician, went to Salem, whilst a malignant disease was prevalent there, and was not only active in the line of his profession, but had some influence upon their religious opinions. Mr. Endicot was so well pleased with him, that he wrote a letter of thanks to Governor Bradford for sending him to their assistance, and also declared his approbation of the order and discipline of the Plymouth church.

On the 6th day of August, A. D. 1629, a covenant was drawn by Mr. Higginson, and on that day, in the presence of the Plymouth delegates, who arrived during the solemnities, they set apart their officers, and admitted thirty members to the church. None were admitted but such as gave a good account of their life and conversation, or offered a relation of the work of the Spirit, the divine influence upon the heart. This was sometimes written, and sometimes only a verbal declaration.

The inhabitants soon experienced the want of unanimity in their religious fellowship. An opposition of some consequence arose from several persons of influence, who had been active in promoting the settlement of the place. At the head of this were Mr. Samuel Brown, and Mr. John Brown, the one a lawyer, the other a merchant, who were attached to the form and usage of the Church of England. The ministers, assisted by Mr. Endicot, endeavoured

---

officer."—The remark is just; our fathers considered the church and state as entirely separate. Mr. Nowel, the ruling elder of the church in Boston, was obliged to leave this office in 1632. The church at Plymouth had great influence over the people in Massachusetts, and it was their opinion, that a "ruler in the church ought not to be a ruler in the state at the same time." Mr. Nowel was satisfied, and gave his attention to the affairs of the Commonwealth, or to this civil rule, for which his talents were well adapted.

|| Vid. 1st. vol. Hist. Coll.

oured to bring them over to the practice of the Puritans, but without success. Such contentions sprang from their difference of opinion, as made a separation necessary. The writers on one side say, that the ministers made use of modest and reasonable arguments to convince them, before they were sent away. Whether Mr. Brown and his adherents, who were prejudiced on a different side of the question, thought them reasonable and modest, may admit more than a doubt. In religious controversies we seldom find one party more candid than the other.

The business is thus represented by the advocates of the Church of England. These gentlemen, with others, were conscientious churchmen, and desired to use the Liturgy; and for this purpose met at their own houses. The magistrates, or rather Mr. Endicot, sent to demand a reason for their separation; they answered, that, as they were of the church established by law in their native country, it was highly proper they should worship God as the government required, from whom they had received their charter. Surely they might be allowed that *liberty of conscience*, which all conceived so reasonable when they were on the other side the water. But these arguments were called seditious and mutinous by the first settlers in general, who were determined none should participate the blessings of this promised land, but *saints* of levelling principles and puritanick feelings. A late episcopal writer expresses himself after this manner: "The holy brethren drove away the two Mr. Browns because they would not join with them in their prejudices against the crowned Church of England."§

This same writer, who is rather a polemick divine, than a candid historian, declares, "that Mr. Blackstone was driven from Boston, because he was a parson of the Episcopal Church."

The compilers of the modern parts of the *Universal History* have uttered similar complaints in *those few pages*, of their voluminous work, which they *allow for New-England*; but some farther evidence is wanted to confirm their account, as they do not support their reflections by any testimony of persons who could be acquainted with the business. Endicot's party were wrong, because they  
used

---

§ Anatomist versus Centinel, Philadelphia, printed 1768.

used violent measures ; but how frequently did persons leave the country, and complain of being driven from the plantation, when their object was to show resentment against individuals, and gain an importance of character ? It is no wonder that Episcopalians have strong prejudices against the character of the first planters of Massachusetts ; but we must also consider and allow for these prejudices, when they commit their opinions to writing. It is certain, that whenever old controversies have been revived, they have used a style and language which they censure in their opponents as bordering on vulgarity.

Mr. Bentley imputes the errors of the ministers to the temper of *Endicot*, who was determined to execute his plan of church government. Unexperienced in the passions of men, and unaccustomed to consult even his friends, he was resolved to suffer no opposition ; and as the Salem church had disclaimed the authority of the Church of England, his feelings were hurt, and temper raised against those who preferred a Liturgy, and whose object might be, as he conceived, to cause a schism in the community.

I am led to speak of another attempt to introduce the worship of the Church of England, where something more was intended than a bare toleration ; but which did not succeed, on account of a very different cause. Mr. Weston sent over a number of this persuasion to Wassaugussett, but they were men whose religious zeal was not the most remarkable trait in their character, though he himself was a man of piety, liberal in his views, and friendly to the settlement at New-Plymouth. Had they followed the advice which the men of Plymouth, those men, tried in the school of adversity, gave them, they would have ensured to themselves a safe habitation, with flattering prospects of a growing and flourishing plantation. But thinking only of trade, and little scrupulous of making unjust bargains with the Indians, when an immediate gain was in view, they opposed their true interest, and suffered the consequences of their folly, in a dispute with the natives, which would have issued in their sudden destruction, had they received no assistance from their friends at Plymouth. Soon after which, they were obliged to leave the settlement.

The plan was again brought forward, through the influence

ence of F. Gorges ; and a more serious effort made to persuade the first settlers to join the Episcopal Church. A clergyman of very respectable abilities and character was sent over, named Morel, who had an ecclesiastical commission, which, in a more flourishing plantation, would have clothed him with some authority. He is called a bishop, *not* in the most respectful manner, by certain writers who compiled the materials of our early history. From every account of him he was a man of prudence ; and he has left a specimen of his classical taste and erudition, which will long be preserved among other curious documents which describe the state and the prospect of *New-England*. Had this gentleman been stimulated by religious zeal ; had he been more remarkable for bigotry than for his learning and candour, like some who are to be found among every denomination of christians, he would have excited contention, and given trouble to the other settlements ; but instead of blowing the coals, he was disposed to extinguish the fire that had been kindled, and which a small matter would have spread ; for the inhabitants of New-Plymouth would never have submitted to ecclesiastical jurisdiction. Having suffered so much in the old country, how could they have yielded to the same authority in this ? But no difficulty of the kind ensued ; Mr. Morel lived some time among them, after leaving Wassaugussett ; and only mentioned his commission when he could make no use of it.\*

From this time the worship of the Supreme Being was after the manner of the Congregational churches ; nor did any assembly of Episcopalians meet in *New-England* till the reign of Charles the second. Between the settlement of Massachusetts, and the building of the first Episcopal Church in Boston, many years intervene ; and years made famous by events and revolutions of Europe, as well as

---

\* Morel's poem upon the state of *New-England*, is an excellent poem. The translation is not of equal elegance. A judicious writer observes, that it was composed before Waller and Dryden had tuned the English tongue. The same writer allows Morel to be a man of genius and elegant taste, or that his Latin is both "elegant and descriptive." Will not every person, who is without the prejudices of Dr. Cotton Mather, give his tribute of respect to the memory of a man who exhibited so much literature and virtue ?—and who took so much pains to collect facts, and accurately describe the face of the country ?

as the progress of society in this new and extensive region. When king Charles was dethroned, and all the power of the state fell into the hands of Presbyterians, or Independents, no encouragement was given to the Church of England. Even her lovers and friends, boiling with political rage in the phrensy of the times, dealt deceitfully with her. Cromwell was an artful hypocrite; he might have been sincerely religious once; but it is not to be supposed that a man of his temper and conduct was influenced by religious opinions, or that he run into all the wild fanaticism of those times. The solemn carriage of weaker men was sincere; but his ridiculous affectation of piety was for political purposes; and he succeeded by such artifices beyond his own, and beyond all human expectations. He was an enemy to the hierarchy, to the Presbyterians, and all the various sects, according to the power they possessed of thwarting his views; or their indisposition to his usurped authority. When the Presbyterian ministers thought him their friend, he at the very time encouraged the Independents in all their eagerness to pull down government in church, as well as the state. Afterwards, when his schemes were carried into execution, and he could make no further gain of his godliness, he exposed, to the scorn and ribaldry of his acquaintance, the levelling principles of the nation; and the fanatical conduct of those, who had contributed to the glory of his own character, and raised him to his exalted station.

There have been many publications to show the "world's mistake in Oliver Cromwell." Some wise and good men never gave up the opinion they held of the sincerity of his disposition, his patriotick zeal, or the sanctity of his life. Others have admitted his political errors, and called him a despot; but have thought favourably of his religious character; that he was sound in the faith, and a great defender of the evangelical doctrines taught in the school of Geneva; yet John Goodwin, the Arminian zealot, was his particular friend. Another of his chaplains defended and propagated the doctrine of *Universal Salvation*. Thomas Goodwin was his spiritual monitor, who was a zealous Calvinist; and he makes him die a christian.\*

---

\* John Goodwin, author of the celebrated tract against the Episcopal Church,

Mr. Howe, a man nearly connected with the fathers of New-England, and whose abilities were uncommonly fine, fell under the displeasure of the Protector, because he wrote against the doctrine of a *particular faith*. When Dr. Increase Mather was in England, this most excellent man

---

Church, styled, *Lord Bishops not the Lord's Bishops*, 1640; which is a direct attack on the archbishop of Canterbury, with these lines, as void of poetry, as of candour,

“ Prælati, Pilati;  
 “ Non pastores, sed impostores.”

Such a motto will supply an opinion of Goodwin, as well as reading the whole book. He was one of the rudest writers of that very rude age. This book was succeeded by another more celebrated, *A Defence of the honourable sentence passed upon the king by the high Court of Justice*, 1649. Opposed chiefly to the *Humble Address of Dr. Hammond*; and to the *Serious and faithful representation of some of the ministers of London*, with a motto—

Fiat justitia, ruat cælum  
 Ad generum cereris, sine cæde & sanguine, pauci  
 Descendent Reges, & sicca morte Tyranni—

And the 55th Psalm, 23d.

Both these books were presented, or dedicated to the Commons of England.

It was a wonder that he was not excepted from the Act of Indemnity as well as Hugh Peters. His conduct towards the king was not so indecent, but his writings, far superior in strength of argument, and consistency of manner, had a much greater effect in confirming the prejudices of the people against the king and his family. For some reason, neither Milton nor Goodwin was excepted, though it would have gratified many friends of the court, had they suffered, and been brought to ignominy and death.

Mr. Goodwin is among the ejected ministers in Dr. Calamy's list, who says, “ He was a man by himself; was against every man, and had almost every man's hand against him. He was warm and eager, whatever he engaged in. He had a clear head, a fluent tongue, a penetrating spirit, and a marvellous faculty in descanting on scripture; and with all his faults must be owned to be a very considerable man by those who will take pains to peruse his writings.” In the Doctor's lists, are only his theological works; but, he adds,—“ Other controversial tracts and pamphlets on matters disputed in those days.” The republicans preserved them, but they are very rare. In one there is a remark by the late T. H. of London, which the writer of this note has in his possession. “ A curious tract”—the *print* of the *author* should be before it.

Dr. Thomas Goodwin, a pious man, less independent of spirit, was duped by Cromwell; he is called by Ludlow, and, after him, by Skinner, *Author of ecclesiastical history of Scotland, Cromwell's trencher chaplain*. He believed in the doctrine of a particular faith, and used this expression

in

man told him, "that if any person was truly religious, it was Oliver Cromwell." Most of his domestick chaplains thought so; for he chose them from that class of men who are wrapped up in spiritual contemplations, and know little of the world. Such pious ministers judged from his great professions of religion, from his attending so many sermons, hearing and making prayers so often and so long, that he was devout; and if this were the test of his sincerity, Cromwell was certainly a saint. The great Dr. Owen

in his prayer during Cromwell's last sickness. "Lord, we beg *not* for his recovery, for that thou hast already granted and assured us of, but for his speedy recovery." He lived during the reign of Charles the second, was among the ejected ministers by the Bartholomew acts, which was the only difficulty he met with. When he died, his posthumous works were published in five folio volumes, and *more remaining*. They have not been much read in New-England. A late fashionable writer says, "If angels wrote books, they never would write folios."

Mr. Howe was the friend and favourite of the ministers in New-England. The Protector dismissed him his service; and he was among the ejected ministers after the *Uniformity Act*. Even Mr. Wood, the Oxonian, who very rarely has a good word for any dissenter, in his last edition of *Athena Oxoniensis*, says of him, "He was a person of neat and polite parts, and not of this sour, unpleasant converse, as most of his persuasion."

Particular faith, as Thomas Goodwin held, and as Mr. Howe denied, was different from what the first reformers believed. *Calvin* saith, Faith is a knowledge of God's kindness to us, and an assured persuasion of the truth thereof. *Hildersham* describes the faith of *God's elect*, which enables every man that believes to apply Christ to himself, and to rely upon him, and trust in him for his own salvation. And it is to be found in the books of the fathers of Massachusetts, "that faith is not performed by any affection of the will, but by the certain and particular persuasion, whereby the man is resolved that the promises of salvation belong to him, which persuasion is wrought in the mind by the Holy Ghost."

But the faith of Cromwell was more particular than all this. He would not only be persuaded that he was a child of God, but that God answered him in prayer; so that he knew when his desires would be gratified. He consulted the Deity in every important transaction of his life, and received a particular intimation what should take place. Dr. Cotton Mather was of the same opinion once; he lived to see how uncertain such a faith is; for having written in his *Diary* that certain matters were to take place; having kept days of fasting that he might not be deceived, yet nothing of the kind happened. It was enough to convince him how much better it is to keep the judgment in exercise, than to follow the delusions of fancy.

Owen was not so easily wrought upon ; he beheld him in various attitudes, and by surveying the lineaments of his political character, as these were displayed in the scenes of his publick conduct, judged more correctly, and united with those who said, *let no such man be trusted*. He saw through the deceitful manner of his refusing the crown, and discovered equal virtue and wisdom by advising him never to accept it.\* The Protector corresponded with Mr. Cotton, and flattered him ; by his letters he seems to possess a most pure and spiritual mind : hence the clergy of New-England were among his friends. Most of them looked up to this worldly politician as to a *star* of the churches, or a constellation of the new heavens ; but afterwards their good opinion was somewhat shaken when he made a proposition to settle Jamaica from this new earth. He would have persuaded them to leave this virgin soil which they had embraced as their home, and to which they were peculiarly attached, from many circumstances attending their arrival here, as well as the prevailing sentiment, that it was to be Immanuel's land.†

The fathers of Massachusetts, Winthrop, Dudley, Johnson, and others, who came over in the *Arabella*, will not be denominated very rigid puritans by those who read their address upon leaving their native country. In this, they show their affection and esteem for the Church of England. We must suppose they were upright ; and that they did not contemplate making such a separation, as took place when they reached these shores, and joined their brethren who had been laying out the settlement. The words of their letter evidently mark their resolution never more to be under the galling yoke of Episcopacy ; still they had a great respect for the doctrines of the church, nor did they make particular exceptions to their manner of worship. A like observation may extend to the puritans of queen Elizabeth's reign. They did not join with the Separatists, but disowned many of their writings, especially where they call the Church of England, Antichrist, a name fixed on the Church of Rome. Such opinions were publickly condemned by the learned conformists of that age, and as much disclaimed by

---

\* Ludlow's Memoirs.

† Vid. O. Cromwell's letter to J. Cotton.



by those who sought a reformation and could not conform to the rites and ceremonies. Of the various dissenters from the church, during times which agitated the minds, and interested the passions of people, (in general) we may well think *some* would be more extravagant in their conduct than others. They may be divided into two sorts; the one endeavoured to get rid of the corruptions which had crept into the Church either before, or after its reformed state; the other, not content herewith, maintained with the greatest obstinacy the necessity of abrogating and disannulling their former Church, and creating all anew. "Those who insisted upon further reformation (says the celebrated Daniel Defoe) were called puritans, because they set up for greater purity. They did not separate from the establishment till the time of Charles. They always declined the ceremonies, but did not break from the church in communion." If this author speaks justly, the early puritans were very different from the Brownists,\* nor did they understand the principles of the Congregational

---

\* The *Brownists*, according to Mr. Neal, rose as a sect, 1580. In 1582, Robert Brown published his book, *The life and manners of true christians*. According to the *Brownists*, every church is a *body corporate*, having full power within itself to exclude members, to choose and ordain officers; and when the good of the society requires it, to depose them, without being accountable to classes, convocations, synods, councils, or any jurisdiction whatever.

The sect have an earlier origin, according to a fragment picked up by Dyer in his life of *Robinson*.

"G. Gifford, minister of God's word at Malden, who published his plain declaration, *that our bishops be full Donatists*, hath these words: Now there is a sect in England, called *Brownists*, because Brown, as they say, was the originator of them. But for all this, he hath written or published in maintenance and enlargement thereof, and more skill and learning than either have followed or gone before him. Many men think they have sprung up of late; but whereas indeed it is well known that there was a church of them in London twenty years past, and one Botten was a principal doer therein, whose fearful end is not forgotten. John Smyth said in 1609, Poperly had the proscription against Calvin of 1000 years, but Calvin had not 100 years against the Separation; nay, I suppose not above 50 years."

From this we see the Brownists did not know the date of their own rise, and according to the date in Gifford they were a church in 1570. Their obscurity might have protected them till Robert Brown, a man more noisy, wild, and fanatical, brought them into publicity, and exposed them to persecution and banishment.

tional churches, as they have since propagated, defended and confirmed in various parts of Great Britain as well as New-England.

Our fathers were the offspring of the old non-conformists, such as did *not* deny the Church of England to be the true church; but that they retained the essentials of faith and order; yet they could not content themselves to live under the wing of the Episcopal government. When they came to America they only complained of the ceremonies; but very soon after they cherished prejudices against the discipline and government thereof; and attempted to form churches according to their ideas of the primitive method, or the pattern described in the word of God, and practised by the apostles, evangelists, pastors, and teachers, mentioned in the sacred history. Their intentions were good, though they might be mistaken in some points. "We of the congregation kept a fast,\* (says Governor Winthrop,) and chose Mr. Wilson teacher, Mr. Nowel elder, Mr. Gager and Mr. Aspinwall deacons. We used imposition of hands, but with this protestation by all, that it was only as a sign of election and confirmation, not of any intent that Mr. Wilson should renounce his ministry he received in England." Mr. Neal of London, who is another of our historians, says, that Mr. White preached the sermon at Mr. Wilson's ordination; that Mr. Wilson was then chosen pastor, who, though ordained minister of the Church of England, submitted to a *re-ordination* by the imposition of hands, such as the church invited to pray for a blessing on his labours.

There is some difference of opinion; but undoubtedly Mr. Neal is mistaken, whose information, many years after this period, could not be so correct as Mr. Winthrop's, an eye-witness to the scene, and who hearing the teachers make the declaration, wrote the account of it at the very time it took place.†

They

---

\* August 27, 1630.

† This is undoubtedly a mistake of Neal. Who was the Mr. White that preached? They had no sermon preached upon such occasions. Afterwards when this part of the service was introduced, we find that the minister preached his own ordination sermon. Mr. Higginson did this in Salem, 1660. But many after this were separated to the work  
of

They who have looked into the early state of the New-England churches, will find alterations made very frequently in their manner and forms, although they adhered strictly to the same general principles. It was a different church model when Mr. Wilson settled, from that which was adopted when Mr. Cotton and Mr. Hooker came over; each of them loved the truth, and liked to have the pre-eminence. By some kind of covenant they had moulded themselves into a church, wherever they made a plantation; but we must give much credit to their performances. They wrote like men of thought and learning upon most theological subjects; cleared up the order of church government so as to please the majority of the planters; and most of their rules were adopted into the advice of the synods, which they gave upon several important occasions to the people of New-England.

Mr. Higginson differed from the church of Plymouth in some particulars. He was advised by certain persons in England, as Hubbard relates, to agree upon their form of ecclesiastical discipline and government, before the people left the old country; and had this advice been regarded, many inconveniences would have been prevented, to which they were subject by the neglect. At least, they would have

---

of the ministry without preaching, and the sermon was said to be an innovation upon the practice of the first settlers. Dr. Colman preached at Mr. Fisk's ordination in Salem, 1718; he was a minister of a church in Boston formed in opposition to the platform. It was a proper Congregational church according to the model of the churches in the old country; the form of worship, the discipline, and the method of choosing their pastor differed very much from the practice of our ancestors. In a MS. *penesme*, the opinion of a literary friend is thus expressed:

“Let us inquire where the primitive planters could get this practice? The puritans had no such practice in the times of *Charles* the first; the canons of the church of England, 1603, require no preaching; there is nothing mentioned of it in the Scotch form, 1645; the *Brownists* assigned the ordination to the elders and people, without any appearance of the sacerdotal functions: our fathers had no connection with them, did not consult them, nor asked their opinion as witnesses. It was as much designed to separate the services as it was at funerals and marriages, private baptisms, or any special exercises of religion. But as ordination sermons did obtain, it is proper to fix their origin; I have attributed them to the innovating genius of the great Cotton, sovereign in his dogmas, and absolute in power. Cotton's lectures attached themselves to every thing.”

have saved the succeeding ministers the imputation of departing from their first principles. But they had not yet waded so far into the controversy of the discipline of the churches, as to be very positive upon those points, on which the main hinge turned upon themselves, and others; yet aiming to come as near as possible to the apostolick method, and apprehending that they who joined together in sacred fellowship were followers of their example, they agreed upon a form which should express their covenant relation; and also a method of ordaining ministers, placing them in the office to which they were designated by the voice of the people.

Certain English historians, and indeed most writers upon our ecclesiastical affairs abroad, except Mr. Neal, say that the New-England dissenters took their plan of church government from Geneva; but in this they are mistaken, as they will find, if they only attend to what is written in the books of our fathers, or the correspondence by letters between some ministers of Boston, and their literary correspondents of the parent country. Independents, Presbyterians, and other denominations, are not to be confounded. Our fathers were so far independent that they had no canons nor constitutions for the whole; but they had a connection with each other for the sake of strengthening and consoling by mutual advice and counsel. They had not Calvin's model of ecclesiastical discipline, nor did they refer to it, in the *declarations* of our early *synods*. The first assembly which bore this name of synod was in 1637. It was called to oppose the enthusiastick spirit which then raged, which banished all moral principles from their religion, and obscured the sacred light of christianity as much as the thickest darkness of superstition in the catholick countries of Europe. Their proper scheme of church government was not digested, recommended, nor received, till the year 1648.

These were therefore the several changes in the Congregational churches of New-England.

The church of Salem and Plymouth coalesced, but some difference remained.

The churches of Massachusetts followed Mr. Higginson's method,

method, with sentiments more liberal towards Episcopacy, till Cotton and Hooker arrived.

The Congregational platform is said to be a middle way between Presbyterianism and Brownists.

The latter takes all power from the eldership. The people, in this case, says Mr. Hubbard, "hold the bridle, and then are content that the elders should sit on the saddle."

On the other hand, the Presbyterians vest all power in the hands of the presbytery; thus swallowing up the interest of the people, in every single congregation, in the major part of the classes, or combination.

The Massachusetts churches kept between these extremes; and placed the church power, in a due proportion of authority, in divers hands, according to the concern which each one has from his authority in the church. No trust is committed to one man, however able, nor to any body of men or officers, although diversified into many subordinations under one another. This middle way, delineated chiefly by Mr. Cotton, is that wherein the churches have walked.\*

The principal things, in which they differ from other churches, are these:

First. "The subject matter of the invisible church."

"Saints by calling," i. e. such as have attained to the knowledge of the principles of religion, and are free from gross vices; and are willing to walk together with a confession of their faith and repentance, declaring their subjection to Christ in his ordinances.

2dly. "The constitution and form of the visible church:" which they account to be a re-stipulation, or mutual covenanting to walk together, in their christian communion, according to the rules of the gospel. This had better be explicit, they say, though they do not deny that an implicit covenant may suffice to the being of a true church.

3dly. The "quantity and extensiveness of a particular church." Concerning which, they hold that no church, or society of people, ought to be of greater number, or larger extent, than may ordinarily meet together in one place,

\* Hubbard, Mather, Wise, &c.

place, for the enjoyment of the same numerical ordinances and celebrating all divine worship; nor fewer, than can carry on, conveniently, the business that comes before them.

4thly. The “denial of any particular jurisdiction to which churches are, or ought to be subject.” i. e. By way of authoritative censure, placed in classes or synods; or any church power extrinsical to the churches where each society meet.

After this manner the ecclesiastical affairs of Massachusetts from the year 1633.

In 1647, a synod was called, and the platform or discipline was fixed by the elders and messengers of the churches assembled at Cambridge.\*

Towards

\* The discipline and mode of the New-England churches gave much offence to *their brethren* in England. The Congregational churches there had more liberal ideas, and were surprised that such as left them to come over to America should leave their practice, and approach so near to those of the Separation, as they called the Brownists, or the churches of Mr. Robinson, Ainsworth, &c.

A treatise was written upon this subject by Mr. Bernard, minister of Barombe, *addressed to his much esteemed and reverend brethren, the pastors and teachers, and his beloved the christian believers as well without as within the congregations of Christ Jesus in New-England.* The object of this is to censure the conduct of the churches in this country, because they required persons to join in a particular covenant and to declare the foundation of their hopes before they could be admitted to church privileges. Whether this book was ever printed or not, I cannot learn. In the same MSS. there is a LETTER addressed to an eminent *divine of New-England*, written soon after the settlement of Massachusetts, which also censures the conduct of the first planters for their contracted notions concerning baptism, and the admission of christians to their communion: this could not be done, *except a written testimony was brought of their belonging to a particular church.* Some person has marked, by his own hand-writing, that he was credibly informed that this *letter was written by Mr. Cotton.* This can hardly be. It is more probable that it was written by Richard Bernard; it was certainly written by a Congregational minister who was intimately acquainted with those gentlemen who came over in the Arabella.

An extract is as follows. “It has not a little troubled me that you have denied the Lord’s supper to such faithful and godly servants of Christ, as Mr. Governour, Mr. Johnson, Mr. Dudley, Mr. Coddington, whereof the three latter were known to you to be men of upright heart and unblameable life, and the first might have been evidenced to you to be no less by their approved testimony. My grief increased upon me  
when

Towards the close of the century, an innovation was made upon the order of the churches as settled by the fathers of Massachusetts. The church in Brattle-street, Boston, was erected, different in its constitution and mode of worship, a more particular account of which will occur in the pages of this narrative.

In

when I heard you denied baptism unto Mr. Coddington's child, and that upon a reason worse than the fact, because he was not a member of any particular reformed church, though of the Catholick. And that which added more to my grief was, that you admitted one of Mr. Lathrop's congregation not only to the Lord's supper, but his child to baptism upon sight of his testimony from his church, whereas Mr. Coddington bringing the same from the chief of our congregation, was not accepted.

"The love I bear towards you with the desire of peace and truth may dwell among you have constrained me to bear witness against your judgment and practice in a word or two.

"First, that you think no man may be admitted to the sacrament, though a member of the Catholick church, unless he be a member of some particular reformed church.

"Secondly, that none of the congregations in England are particular reformed churches, except Mr. Lathrop's, and such as his. For the first, we do not find, neither is it credible, that the eunuch, Acts 8, was a member of any particular congregation, yet Philip baptized him," &c.

After other examples and similar observations, he says, "Your other errors would require a book to answer it, rather than a letter. You went hence of another judgment, and I am afraid that your change sprung from *New-Plymouth* men, whom though I much esteem as good loving christians, yet their grounds which they receive for this tenet from Mr. Robinson, do not satisfy me. The man I reverence as godly and learned.

"The grounds of his dis-churching all our congregations are three.

"First, he says, we want the matter of a visible church, which are saints by calling. But, I inquire, where had he, or all they that deny the right hand of fellowship to us, their calling, but in our English congregations. Say not all the godly that are begotten here are begotten of adultery, for God is not wont to bless the bed of adultery with a greater increase than the bed of wives.

"The second ground is taken from our want of the essential form of a true church, which, as he conceiveth, is a right constitution by mutual covenant between the pastor and people, &c. &c. &c.

"The third is taken from the state of our church government, which he reporteth to put a heavy yoke on God's people. What is amiss in any of them or their ways, I will not take upon me to justify, but to omit other questions too large to be put upon this paper, and to join issue with him upon his own principles. It is not a false nor tyrannical  
one

In the progress of our ecclesiastical history, it is proper to mention the settlement of Dorchester, which was next to Boston; which always has been a flourishing place, and supported the character of a people remarkable for their attention to religious duties. The Indian name was Matapen. The first settlers were Ludlow, Rosseter, Glover, Clap, &c. who formed a church and invited Mr. John Wareham and Mr. John Maverick to be their ministers, and called the town, *Dorchester*, in honour of Mr. White, heretofore mentioned as minister of Dorchester in England. The worthy gentlemen who took charge of the church in this place did not long continue among them. Mr. Maverick died a short time after, being nearly sixty years of age; and Mr. Wareham removed to a settlement, on the east bank of Connecticut river, which had the name of East-Windsor given to it.\*

“Mr. Maverick was a man of a very humble spirit, and faithful in furthering the work of the Lord both in the churches and their civil state.” [*Winthrop.*]

Dorchester was the *first* settled church and town in Massachusetts, according to Mr. Prince; and we are told, that on all public occasions, the inhabitants of this town took the precedence of other towns. It seems, that the fathers of this place arrived rather earlier than the company in the Arabella, who joined Mr. Grave’s settlement at Mishawum, or Charlestown-neck.

During the summer of the year 1630, the ministers preached to the several congregations at Charlestown, Dorchester, and Watertown. For, in addition to Mr. Wilson at Charlestown, and the pastors of the Dorchester church, there

one (as he calleth it) of the prelates of the church that can disannul the being of a church,” &c.

The conclusion is in these expressions: “I say no more. Reject not the womb that bare you, nor the paps that gave you suck; till Christ give us a bill of divorcement, do not you divorce yourselves from us. The Lord Jesus Christ show you as much mercy as he hath done to us, and still doth, and so may he do for you, and more and more forever.

“Have pity also upon those poor creatures that die amongst you, and, as it is said, some for lack of necessaries. Call upon the richer sort for a compassionate heart and hand. We do the like here for yours and ours, as we may.”

\* Vid. M’Clure’s Account of East-Windsor, Hist. Collections, vol. 5.



there was Mr. George Phillips, whose voice also cried in the wilderness; who, with Sir R. Saltonstall and others, laid the foundation of Watertown, a village which soon became respectable among the plantations of Massachusetts, and continues to flourish unto the present times.

The church of Charlestown divided the latter part of this year, and a part settled Shawmut. Particularly Mr. Isaac Johnson, who built a house on a spot which is now considered as a most eligible situation, and then was called Tremontane, from three hills approximating each other. It retains the name of Tremont-street, and is an elevation which commands very beautiful surrounding prospects. Mr. Johnson was the husband of the lady Arabella, who died at Salem, and was doubtless one of the most amiable of women. He was a very popular character, of a generous, noble spirit, much interested in the settlement of the country, and, on his death-bed, rejoiced that his eyes had seen the promised land. He was buried in the ground, since called the Chapel burial-place; and as others died, they desired their bodies might be laid near him. It is natural to wish that the kindred dust may mingle, though many think it a weakness, who are very rational and cold in their conceptions; but it is something like a sentiment of the heart, and must certainly influence where there is a glow of the social affections.

The First Church in Boston was built on a spot more south-easterly than the place where it is situated at present. It became distinct very soon from the church at Charlestown, who settled Mr. James, while Mr. Wilson kept his relation with the other part of the brethren. This worthy man went to England the ensuing spring, and left his congregation on each side the river to the care of those who could *prophecy*; though they were not qualified to preach. A particular description of their parting is written by Governor Winthrop. "On the 29th of March, 1631, Mr. Coddington, Mr. Wilson, and divers of the congregation, met at the Governor's, and there Mr. Wilson, praying and exhorting to love, &c. commended to them the exercise of prophecy in his absence, and designed those whom he thought most fit for it, viz. the Governor, Mr. Dudley, and Mr. Nowel, the elder; then he desired  
the

the Governor to commit himself and the rest to God by prayer, which being done, they accompanied him to the boat, and so they went over to Charlestown to go by land unto the ship." This ship sailed April 1st, from the town of Salem, and arrived at London in twenty-nine days.

About this time, the church in Salem, having called Mr. Roger Williams to be their teaching elder, received a letter from the Court holden in Boston to this effect: "That their teacher would not commune with the churches in Boston, because they would not make a public declaration of their repentance for having communion with the churches of England while they tarried there." Another peculiarity of this divine was, "that the magistrate might not punish the breach of the Sabbath, nor any other offence that was a breach of the first table." It was matter of surprise to all who knew these things, that the good people of Salem should be so precipitate in their choice, and proceed so far without consulting their brethren in other parts of the plantation. He had only been in the country a few weeks when his invitation came to settle with the people of Salem. In February, the *ship Lyon* brought a number of passengers, among them Mr. Williams, "a godly man," says Governor Winthrop; and who doubtless possessed many excellent gifts amidst the excentricities of his opinion, and certain irregularities of conduct.

Many things are related of this distinguished character in the annals of Massachusetts; he afterwards made a greater figure in the settlements of the Providence plantations. Upon the remonstrance of the General Court, he went to Plymouth, where he assisted Ralph Smith until the close of the year 1632, when he returned to Salem, and preached to a people who certainly admired his pulpit talents. He gave satisfaction to those who were prejudiced against him, on account of the contracted spirit he had discovered; and offered to burn the book with his own hand, if this should be required. For some time the churches had rest, except some trifling differences in particular churches, which called for a conference, in which the magistrates, Winthrop, Dudley, and Nowel, gave their opinion as men gifted and learned in theological controversy.

versy. Very particular mention is made of an elder in the church at Watertown, much to his honour in an age of bigotry, though censured by worthy men who were influenced by the spirit of the age. "The congregation being much divided about their elder, Mr. Brown, both parties repaired to the Governor for assistance, whereupon he went to Watertown with the Deputy-Governor, &c. and the congregation being assembled, the Governor told them, that being come to settle peace, they might proceed in three distinct respects. 1. As magistrates, their assistance being desired. 2. As members of a neighbouring congregation. 3. Upon the answer we received of our letter, which did no way satisfy us. But Mr. Phillips, the pastor, denied we should sit as members of a neighbouring congregation, whereunto we consented." [*Winthrop's Jour. Dec. 8, 1631.*]

The question was, whether the churches of Rome could be true churches? The elder had said, they might be, notwithstanding their degeneracy and corruptions; but the sentiment was declared to be erroneous; this was a declaration of the majority of the Council, though some dissented.

The little flock scattered in this wilderness were not left as sheep without a shepherd, having such a man as Governor Winthrop to lead and guide them; but they were glad to have pastors set over them, and rejoiced when such came to America, who would abide with particular churches. That excellent man, Mr. John Eliot, arrived at Boston, 1631; joined the church there, and was invited to be their teacher, but preferred a spot a few miles distance, which was named Roxbury, where he became a useful minister; his works still praise him. Hooker, Cotton, and Welde, were soon added to the worthies of the plantation, and fed the people with knowledge, guiding their particular flocks where the desert land exhibited the face of cultivated society, and the thorny wilds had become *green pastures*. The great, and good men in the parent country, who could not enjoy rest on account of their belief, however they conducted; whose good names could not secure them from reproach, nor their innocence and probity defend them from the rods of ecclesiastick tyrants, with

with which they were sometimes scourged, and which were continually shaken over their heads, turned their views towards this new world; and here many of them found a shelter from the storm, and a shadow from the heat.

In the month of September, 1633, the famous John Cotton arrived at Boston, and was immediately connected with the First Church. When he joined the church, he offered his son for baptism, who had the name *Sea-born* given him because he was born on the water: it is worthy of notice, [in this place] because this administration of baptism affords us a view of his opinion of the ordinance. He did not baptise the child on the ocean, because there was not a regular congregation there. But another reason was, that a minister had no power to give the *seals* but in his own congregation. He would not consent that his wife should make an open confession of her faith, when she was admitted to the church, because, he said, it was against the apostle's order, and not fit for a woman's modesty; but he gave his testimony of her qualifications, and consented that the elders should examine her. When they were admitted, and their child baptized, the father presented it; —the child's baptism being, as he affirmed on other occasions, the father's instruction for the help of his faith.

In such high esteem was Mr. Cotton held, that his word became, as it were, a law to the people. From the respect the magistrates paid to his opinion, we should suppose oracles of wisdom dropped from his lips. But there was a time when he discovered a want of judgment in his preaching, and of discretion in his conduct; when he endangered his own reputation, and appeared one of those who threw all things, civil and ecclesiastical, into confusion. We must impute this to the nature of enthusiasm. There is frequently a romantick ardour, which religious people have in propagating their opinions, and which they mistake for evangelical *zeal*; but if we are to judge by the fruits of it, there is nothing like the beauties of holiness, or law of love. Whoever reads the trial of Mrs. Hutchinson must be convinced of this, whether he reflects upon the conduct of her friends and adherents; or the opposition that was made to her by the magistrates, and by all the ministers. We may except Cotton and Wheelwright.

The

The one was her brother, and as complete an Antinomian in his principles, with a temper similar to herself. Mr. Cotton was also her pastor, and had uttered sentiments so much like those which she propagated, that he was accused of being of the same party. It was this controversy which caused the synod to be called in 1637. Many errors were pointed out and condemned. Before we give a particular account of this, however, we are to consider the rise and consequences of another dispute between the people of Salem and the government, and which ended in the banishment of Roger Williams.

Mr. Skelton died in 1634. Mr. Williams was chosen his successor. It has been related, that he was a man of singular opinions, some of which he gave up for the sake of peace, or from conviction. He was again accused of opposing the government, equally, with the prevailing opinions of the churches. If we may judge of the case, from the papers which have come down to us, he defended himself against the pastors of the other churches, and the magistrates, with much acumen, and a candid spirit. Polemick theologians discover too often an acerbity of spirit and sarcastick humour in their contentions for the truth, although their cry is, they are all for peace. His writings, if they be a fair copy of his mind, show him to be a better man, than he is described in the early history of this country.

By some writers he is held up as an enemy to the peace and order of society; a man opinionated and turbulent; a religious bigot, whose aim was to make confusions in the churches, or to be marked for his piety, or singularity. That very liberality of sentiment is censured by the author of the *Magnalia*, which would cast a lustre around him in the present age.

By other historians, he is represented to be a man of good temper, with a zeal for the truth.

“Mr. Williams appeared,” says Mr. Callender in his *Account of Rhode-Island*, “through the whole tenor and course of his life and conduct, to be one of the most disinterested men that ever lived, a most pious and heavenly-minded soul.”

He

He certainly supported a most excellent character after he went to Providence plantations, and the next generation ought to have forgotten his errors. Much allowance should be made for him, when we consider that Mr. Cotton and Governor Winthrop were his opposers, and that they were enthusiastically fond of that constitution of church government which he disliked. He was for indulging unlimited toleration of religious opinions. But they thought otherwise; that it was not only an error but a crime to admit such a latitude of thinking; that it was necessary rather to use a whip of cords, and drive men in, as well as out of the temple. We must recur to facts when we pretend to decide concerning his conduct. These certainly show how far he was involved in theological heresy, and guilty of political transgression. The Governor and Assistants met in Boston, 27th December, 1634, and took into consideration a treatise Mr. Williams (then of Salem) had sent unto them; and which he had formerly written to the Governor and Council of Plymouth; wherein among other things he disputed their right to the lands they possessed there, and concluded that claiming by the King's grant they could have no title, nor otherwise, except they compounded with the natives.

For this, taking advice with some of the most judicious ministers, who much condemned Mr. Williams's error and presumption, they gave order that he should be convened to the next Court, to be censured, &c.

There were three passages in which they were offended. 1st. For that he charges King James with telling a solemn lie in publick, because in the Patent he blesses God that he was the first Christian Prince that had discovered the land. 2dly. For that he charges him and others with blasphemy, for calling Europe Christendom or the Church world. 3dly. For that he did apply to King Charles those three places in the Revelations, &c.

Mr. Endicot being absent, the Governor wrote to him, "letting him know what was done, and withal adding several arguments to confute the said errors, wishing him to deal with Mr. Williams to retract the same, and whereunto he returned a very modest and discreet answer. Mr. Williams also wrote to the Governour (and also to him) and the

the rest of the Council very submissively, professing his intent to have been only to have written for the private satisfaction of the gentlemen, &c. of Plymouth, without any further purpose, if the Governor had not required a copy of him. At the next Court, he gave satisfaction, and the matter ended."

This narrative of what Mr. Williams said, and did, might come with more propriety into the political history of Massachusetts; but it has some relation to the account of the religious controversy which succeeded; and it certainly puts the character of the man in a more favourable view than many have considered it. From an excentricity of genius he might be led into strange mistakes; but he was not disposed to maintain his opinion, in opposition to the general sentiment of the people. It would have been happy for him, and his friends, had he been as ready to retract his errors in certain doctrines of religion; and much for the credit of New-England if he had experienced less severity from the magistrates, and more candid treatment from his clerical brethren. Mr. Roger Williams, like other partizans of religious controversy, was more zealous to maintain, to defend, and propagate scholastick notions, or sentiments of little consequence to good morals, than he had been when he first wrote in opposition to publick sentiment and the laws. Then he declared opinions more alarming to the state of society, in this new world; though much more consistent with the energies of a great mind. *Here* he discovered the fruits of an obstinacy and inflexible perseverance, which hitherto had not been characteristick of the man. His adversaries were also strong in their prejudices. Their zeal was more like the fire that burneth, than the godly jealousy of the meek apostles of the Christian faith. All persecution for religious opinions is wrong. Our fathers indulged the spirit of it more than became men, who had complained of the bigotry of other churches, and openly espoused the cause of freedom and toleration, in the parent state. They were most excellent men; but where do we find men so excellent, that something does not intervene which shows that no characters on earth shine with a pure and perfect lustre?

The observation is not to be confined to the controversy with Roger Williams, but appears to be just, upon succeeding views of their conduct towards Mrs. Hutchinson, the various sects of Antinomians, whose doctrines were contrary to theirs; or to those of the Episcopal persuasion, the Baptists, and Quakers, who made an opposition to the form and discipline of the churches.

The doctrines, for which Roger Williams was banished, were:—"That a magistrate ought not to tender an oath to an *unregenerate man*, for that we thereby have communion with a wicked man in the worship of God, and cause him to take the name of God in vain."

"That it is not lawful for an unregenerate man to pray, nor for good men to join in family prayer with those they judge unregenerate."

"That the civil magistrate ought not to punish breaches of the first table, except the peace of the community was disturbed."

Another peculiar sentiment was, that after meat we ought *not* to return thanks.

Other charges were made against him; but even when aggravated with acrimony of temper by his adversaries, they amount only to extravagant conduct; or an extraordinary zeal for his singular opinions, which would not be singular to many of the present generation; yet were then censured by the magistrates and ministers, and issued in his removal to a place beyond the jurisdiction of this province.

The next religious controversy was less important in its nature; but involved something more remarkable in its consequences. This was a mere question of Antinomianism, which Mrs. Hutchinson, a woman of sense, spirit, and party zeal, brought forward to the consideration of the *publick*.

The late Gov. Hutchinson has printed an account of her trial, which is a curious document in the history of this country, where every question, with her reply, is marked down;—every person's name is mentioned, who put the questions to the lady; and she appears to gain such an advantage of the Court, that we cannot but perceive it was the hand of a friend who took minutes of the *trial*.  
The



The observation of a writer already quoted,\* a writer against the New-England churches, is, that a serious quarrel took place in this country. They set up two parties. One for the *covenant of works*; and the other for the *covenant of grace*; and they quarrelled till they who were for the covenant of grace banished their opposers to the plantations now known by the name of the Rhode-Island government." Contrary to this representation, they who went to Rhode-Island were the Antinomians. It is true that many things might have been settled by the exercise of candour and prudence, which caused a difference between the church in Boston, and the neighbouring churches; it is likewise true that Mr. Coddington and others, principal members of the First Church, either from serious motives, or displeasure at the influence of Winthrop and Dudley, left the town, and fixed at Rhode-Island, where they became a distinct government. Mr. Williams had gone before to Providence, and did more than any other man in this wilderness to calm the spirits of the savages, and to prevent the whites in the neighbouring plantations from becoming a prey to their cruel stratagems. Both Williams and Coddington were friendly to the people of Massachusetts, and afterwards maintained a friendly correspondence with their old friends, and some principal characters, being esteemed and valued by them. It is very difficult to distinguish between the influence of political and religious opinions, when the parties are zealous in the community. Religion entered into every thing which arrested the attention of the fathers of Massachusetts, and the magistrates were elected and dismissed, according to the principles or notions which were most prevalent. The dispute with Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson was, properly speaking, an Antinomian controversy, but it had its influence upon all the civil affairs of the plantation. In the year 1636, Sir Henry Vane, the governor, was on one side; and the deputy-governor, on another; both were learned in theology; none of the ministers understood the subject better. Winthrop had more prudence and learning; and the people of the inland towns were more acquainted with his worth. They had made every exertion to get him into the chair; but the  
people

\* Philadelphia Centinel.

people of Boston were fond of this stranger. Struck with the gravity of the man, and being influenced by Cotton, who believed Vane to be a saint because he was an enthusiast, they supported his interest in the state, and his religious sentiments in the churches. They filled the air with their plaudits, and the storm of their wrath burst upon the head of his enemies, especially on Winthrop and Mr. Wilson their own pastor, whose firmness on the occasion was remarkable, considering the mild tenor of his deportment at other times. For he was a person of condescending manners and loved every thing which makes peace. But he joined his influence with the inhabitants of other towns, and warmly supported their cause, so as to have the election proceed in May, 1637, when Boston made every attempt to stop it, and the assembly did not proceed till they were moved by his speech. That year, however, Mr. Winthrop was chosen governor, and Vane, with his particular adherents, left out of the magistracy. Had not this alteration been made, there would have been the greatest danger to the good New-England principles, which the first settlers professed; and a probability that their faith being wrecked, the vessel of state would also sink in the waves.

Mr. Coddington, Mr. Vane, and most of the members of Boston church, with their teacher, Mr. Cotton, were reckoned friends of Mrs. Hutchinson. Some joined fully in her opinion of justification; others wished to make use of her influence and party, to establish their own spiritual dominion over the people in the land. She was brought into court, November, 1637. The account of her trial has been mentioned, but it seems proper we should know the opinion of our early historians concerning this extraordinary woman. One of them says, "this gentlewoman was of a nimble wit, voluble tongue, and great charity, especially when the children of the household of faith stood in need of the assistance of each other; which was the opportunity usually taken to insinuate into the spiritual state of those she came among, telling them of the danger of being under a covenant of works; by which means the affections of those, labouring under bodily infirmities, became susceptible of any novel impressions, especially such as tended to exalt free grace, depress the creature, and leave  
all

all for Christ to do. And as the devil attempted to ruin mankind by the insinuation of a new divinity, began with Eve, and, by her, surprised her husband ; the same course is still found the most successful, and was to admiration verified with the good ladies in and about Boston." *Hubbard.*

When Mrs. Hutchinson was brought into court, and she was charged with her errors, she was told to reform her manners, or she must suffer the penalty of the law. She solicited to speak upon the occasion, and it being *granted*, she declared the manner of God's dealing with her, applying certain texts of scripture to herself, like other fanatics, who flatter themselves with the imaginary excellencies of their character, or the peculiar interpositions of heaven in their favour, and thus claim a distinction among their fellow-creatures, which their good works would never give them.\* In the plenitude of her spiritual assurance she threw such an insult upon the court, as to quote the passage in Daniel, where the princes and presidents sought something against him ; saying, " See, this day, this scripture fulfilled in mine eyes ! Take heed what ye do unto me ; I am in the hands of God my Saviour." One text of scripture she spake with peculiar emphasis. Jeremiah 46. " Though I make a full end of all the nations, yet will I not make a full end of thee." Mr. Hubbard says this " is very remarkable as to the end that befel her." It seems that Mrs. Hutchinson went from this province to Rhode-Island, thence to New-York, and was killed by the Indians. Had Governor Winthrop, from whom Hubbard takes his remarks, omitted some observations and certain matters related as facts, his journal would now be held in greater credit. But whatever he wrote, he believed fully ; and some, on the opposite side of the question respecting her principles, were persuaded that the divine judgments followed that unhappy woman. It was an age of credulity. This gentleman, and the historian aforementioned, were among the best men, and the most judicious, this country ever produced. But no man is wise at all times ; and those who are judicious in most things, often show a weakness of mind in certain opinions which have some-  
thing

\* See Winthrop, Mather, &c.

thing marvellous in the relation, or are combined with their prejudices. Many of the present generation with justice smile at the absurd account of Mrs. Hutchinson, related in Winthrop's Journal; but the report at the time obtained general credit. It came from a distance, and there were none to contradict it. The prodigies and strange events, mentioned by ancient historians of the first name, do not destroy the general belief of their writings. In the pages of Livy and Plutarch, the grossest absurdities are mingled with that luminous narration of truths which constitute the excellency of their history. Is it any wonder that grave and pious men, in this secluded part of the world, should mention as facts in their narrative, what men of a wiser age cannot receive, and know to be absurd? But it does not deprive them of their reputation even for judgment, when we make proper allowance for the times in which they lived, and the prejudices of people in the early state of society. We may consider likewise what passed in the old countries of Europe, at this very period. There were men in England, and other places in that civilized part of the globe, as much the slaves of a credulous imagination, as the people who settled these plantations. No exception is made to the abilities and character of chief justice Hale, who lived years after Mr. Winthrop, yet, in certain parts of his writings, he discovers as much imbecility of mind, as we see in the pages of the New-England Journal.

This episode is designed to chase away wrong impressions, where persons are disposed to make ludicrous or severe observations upon the death of Mrs. Hutchinson, and to tread hardly upon the ashes of our fathers, who not only banished her from the jurisdiction, but continued to load her memory with reproaches, and make the divine vengeance pursue her. Much of the blame falls upon the ministers, who were zealous men; but their enemies had become the prevailing party, and might have kept their influence had they not been more fanatical than wise. Had they not gone to an extreme, when Vane was governor, which excited the spirit of moderate men, who were not much disposed to favour one ruler more than another, and some of whom disliked the power given to the clergy in the

the affairs of the province, the people who settled Rhode-Island might have been the first characters in Massachusetts. The great Cotton would not have wavered, but have been a partizan, most likely, in their cause. Wheelwright would certainly have been his colleague, and even their elders and deacons have appeared as *stars* in the *churches*. There was this difference between Cotton and Wheelwright. The former was more of a peace-maker; his zeal was qualified; though at times this was rather like the fire of emulation, than a coal taken from the divine altar. But the latter was opinionated, decisive, and regardless of consequences. He cared neither for men nor measures, and carried his seditious language even to the pulpit. This man seemed desirous of increasing the unhappy divisions which then disturbed the churches, and were combined with all civil business. During the contention, Mr. Cotton preached from Isaiah lviii. 4. "Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thy health spring forth speedily," &c.

This was considered as a sermon calculated to heal the divisions, and make men judge with candour; such kind of sermons tend to do good at any period; but Wheelwright preached the other part of the day, and was fierce in his manner of speaking, and his matter was more unbecoming than any discourse ever preached in the country. He attacked magistrates and ministers, calling them Jews, Herods, and Philistines, and said that they walked in such a way of salvation as none ever did, but those who were under a *covenant of works*.\* For this, he was called to account, and though a number of his respectable friends signed a protest against the proceedings of the court, he was banished for sedition. He was obstinate for some time, thinking he could appeal to a superiour tribunal in England; but being convinced of the contrary, he submitted, and left the province. After remaining a number of years in exile, he made an open confession of his errors, and was restored to the communion and good will of the people. Winthrop and Dudley exerted themselves strenuously to crush the influence of the Antinomian party, and the

\* T. Welde's Narrative.

the synod which met at Newtown this year, 1677, gave no small strength to the principles which they approved.

A synod of our Congregational churches is a religious assembly, called on special occasions, for giving advice and counsel in case of difficulty. It consists of the ministers and lay messengers, such as each religious society chooses to send, who debate upon the subject before them, and present the *result* for the approbation of the brethren of the several churches. No synod is allowed to pass censures, or to exert authority, jurisdiction, or discipline; but the weight of their opinion is very considerable, and had no small influence in the early settlement of Massachusetts. An *independent synod*, says Mr. Neal, is nothing else but a council to the several churches, called together upon proper occasions, not to make laws and decrees which shall bind men upon pain of excommunication and deprivation, but to advise them how to act under their present difficulties; and if a church or private person refuses to hearken to their advice, the last remedy is, to declare they will no longer hold communion with them. Magistrates have power to call a synod, when the publick welfare of the country requires it; and may send to the churches, to commission elders and messengers to meet together, and assist them with their advice; but if the magistrates neglect to do this, any particular church may send to the rest, and seek their advice in the same way.

In this synod, the first of the kind assembled in New-England, were present, the messengers of the several churches; the magistrates of the province, who not only added to the dignity of the synod, but preserved order and kept the peace. Such as gloried in their Autinomial sentiments were admitted to the freedom of debate. Much subtilty and theological refinement must have been displayed; for of the various questions which became objects of discussion, no less than eighty-two errors were pointed out in their result. The moderators of the synod were the celebrated Thomas Hooker, and Peter Buckley, pastor of the church in Concord. All joined in the condemnation of the new opinions, except Mr. Cotton, who openly declared his abhorrence of most of the errors, which indeed had been propagated by his particular friends, who were  
very

very severe in their animadversions on his conduct; but in the article of justification, he dissented from his brethren of the synod. It is said the Antinomians were very indecent and clamorous; this we learn from Mr. Welde, who was present, and afterwards wrote an *Account of the rise, progress and ruin of Antinomianism in Massachusetts*. He was a bitter enemy to the sect, but does not give a worse account of their conduct than others who were less engaged in the dispute. Indeed the force of prejudice operated upon the minds of every class in the community. All the accounts agree in stating the number of the questions discussed. The errors were first pointed out by a committee; then the subject was debated. One day was given for the defendants; another for the opponents: after which, the assembly made up their judgment.

One of those gentlemen, who left the province, and went to Rhode-Island, has given a narrative of their proceedings, and says, that notwithstanding so many errors were brought forward, the chief points of difference were these.

“Touching the covenants; and in the points of a man’s evidencing his good estate.”

“Some,” he observes, “pressed hard for a covenant of works, and for sanctification to be the first and chief evidence. Others pressed as hard for the covenant of grace, that was established on better promises, and for the evidence of the Spirit, as that which is a more sure, constant, and satisfactory witness.”

Dr. Mather calls these men, who differed from the synod, *opinionists*, and will not allow that his ancestor, Mr. Cotton, was one of them; but each side claims him as of their way of thinking. The points in debate, according to him, were five.

The order of things in our union to the Lord Jesus Christ.

The influence of our faith in the application of his righteousness.

The use of our sanctification in evidence of our justification.

The consideration of our Lord Jesus Christ by men yet under a covenant of works.

The grounds of our assurance of blessedness in a future world.

These points were debated in the synod between Mr. Cotton and the synod, and he remained unsatisfied with all their arguments and persuasions. The Antinomians drew all their consequences from his opinions, and therefore accused him of inconsistency, dereliction of the good cause, and said he might be compared to a light in a dark lantern.

Mr. Callender, a judicious writer of the Baptist persuasion, and minister of Rhode-Island, tells us, that each side ascribed to the other consequences they would not *own*. The first of the eighty-two errors, discussed in the synod, charges, as a consequence of the opinion, the denial of the immortality of the soul. "If the faculties are really quiescent and passive, in the work of conversion, or regeneration, then it must die with the body"; and yet these divines, without one exception, believed fully the doctrine of election and irresistible grace.

The main question in the dispute was, whether any man could receive the comforts of his justification, if he were sanctified; or by what evidence a man could know his justification? "The bigger part of the country made the first main stress upon sanctification." The other part thought this an Arminian sentiment, inconsistent with the doctrines of grace, and "made the application of the Divine Spirit as a promise to the regenerate, begetting in them, or revealing to them a powerful assurance," the only evidence of justification.

These doctrines have always divided the Protestants, and ought not to kindle the fire of contention among the disciples of the Prince of peace. Nothing need be more inconsistent than to suppose christians to be of one opinion, where freedom of thought is allowed, and the Bible is in every man's hands, for each one to form his judgment. The same theological opinions are as much in dispute now; but we can bear with the ebullition of religious zeal and feel no necessity of calling a synod, and of having the voice of magistrates in things of a purely spiritual nature. This was the fault of an age less distinguished by its candour,



dour, though, as many think, not less illuminated with the beams of evangelical truth.

After this controversy, new sects sprang up in New-England, whose giddy reveries led to a very fanatical behaviour. They were generally styled Familists; and were not more sudden in expressing their unsubstantial notions, than obstinate in defending them. Samuel Gorton was supposed to be their leader; and this man is handed down as a most unprincipled being, by Morton, Mather, and others, who have imputed every thing bad to him; but we ought to consider the force of their prejudices which prevented them from being impartial, although they were sincere. It is common to disfigure opinions that differ from ours, especially if our adversaries have represented us to be deficient in talents and honesty; and we certainly exhibit our own opinion to the greatest advantage, when nothing guides us but an attachment to our way of thinking. *Gorton* wanted a clear head and a sound judgment; but there is nothing proved which makes him appear destitute of religion, which is so declared in our histories. It is said, he even denied a future existence, and was an enemy to the moral and social virtues. He, on the other hand, opposes them who had thus delineated his character, and imputes to them equal weakness of mind. *Gorton* came to Rhode-Island in June, 1638; two years afterwards he went to Providence. A complaint of him was made to the Massachusetts government, which he disregarded. They summoned him to appear at Boston; he refused, denying their jurisdiction. They sent and took him, kept him a prisoner, tried, and condemned him. He was banished. Then he fixed his residence at Warwick, one of the towns of the Providence plantation. He lived to a great age, officiated as a minister, became learned in the languages, though he had pretended to despise human learning and a liberal education. His enmity to the Quakers has been also a subject of remark, and no wonder; for they are upon the extreme opposite to Antinomianism, and all the errors termed Familistick. Concerning his principles and his life, we can in some measure judge from his own letter to Mr. Morton, wherein he blames him for his manner of writing his memorial.\*

\* Vid. Appendix to Hutchinson's History.

“ You

“ You say that I have spoken words that there is no state and condition of men after this life. I do verily believe there is not a man, woman or child upon the earth, that will come forth and say, they ever heard such words come out of my mouth. And I appeal to God, the judge of all secrets, that there never was such a thought entertained in my heart.”

He speaks of himself as a preacher of the gospel, and that he preached to no small acceptance in London, where the congregations heard him without those prejudices which the people of Plymouth and Massachusetts had against him.

“ The ministers of London were among his hearers, and they appointed lectures there and in other places for him.”

He says, “ You know that I hold my call to preach the gospel, not inferiour to any minister in the country, though I was not bred up at the schools of human learning; and I bless God that I never was; lest I had been drowned in pride and ignorance, through Aristotle’s principles, and other heathen philosophers, as millions are, and have been, who ground their preaching of the gospel upon human principles, to the falsifying the word of God, in the ruin of men’s souls. Yet this I doubt not of, there has been as much true use made of the languages, within these twenty years past, in the place where I live, as has been in any church in New-England: I know the manner of your preaching well.”

This letter, the whole of it curious, is dated Warwick, June 30, 1699.

From comparing all accounts we can obtain of Samuel Gorton, he was an excentrick man, a great enthusiast, a rigid Antinomian, an enemy to the clergy; he despised their mode of preaching. He was at times a disturber of the peace, and therefore not a good member of the community; but he was a religious man in his professions, and died in the belief of what he supposed to be the truths of the Bible. Some, who were called Gortonists, might run to extremes, and to greater absurdities than himself; but could not be more obnoxious to the magistrates and ministers of Massachusetts.

Such wild notions as the Familists and other fanatics hold and believe, have a tendency to injure the cause of  
virtue

virtue and morality. But they who believe them, do not admit the consequences. Each sectary pretends to the same regard for the Bible, and every system, in the view of its supporters, will make men wiser and better. We often see the spirit of the gospel animating the lives and conversation of persons, whose particular sentiments and circumstances may be thought very unfavourable to its growth; and we often, alas! find it wanting, where it might be expected to shine in its greatest strength and lustre. Let the opinions of the Gortonists be ever so bad, they denied the consequences which their opponents drew from them, and even Governor Winthrop said, at the trial of their leader, he could agree with them in their answers, though he could not in their writings.

The charge was exhibited in the following words: "Upon much examination and serious consideration of your writings, with your answers about them, we do charge you with being a blasphemous enemy of the true religion of Jesus Christ, and his holy ordinances, and also of civil authority among the people of God, and particularly in this jurisdiction." The Court asked Gorton what he understood by the faith of the gospel? He said, "It was the substance of things hoped for, and the evidence of things not seen." When they brought forth his writings, he explained them in such a manner that no evidence of blasphemy appeared, and he was condemned, against his own confession of his principles, by that opinion they had previously taken up concerning his writing, which was a hard sentence, and contrary to our ideas of toleration as members of civil society, and certainly against every sentiment dipped in the dew of that heavenly charity which is not confined to, or excluded from, any one party, or description of professing disciples.\*

About

---

\* Hutchinson says, the sentence of the Court was cruel. *Gorton* was ordered to be confined to the town of Charlestown, there to be kept at work, and to wear such bolts and irons as might hinder his escape; and if he broke his confinement, or by speech or writing published or maintained any of the blasphemous abominable heresies wherewith he had been charged by the General Court, or should reproach or reprove the churches of our Lord Jesus Christ in these United Colonies, upon conviction thereof he should suffer death.

Gorton

About this time, several ministers came over to America, some with high raised expectations that the country was better cultivated than they found it, and that they could live here in as easy circumstances, as among the European settlements. They soon found themselves deceived; and their expectations being completely frustrated, every desire was chilled which once warmed their breasts at the thought of passing their days in the new world.

---

Gorton says that they cast a lot for their lives, putting it to the major vote of the Court whether they should live or die; and that God in his providence ordered it so, that a majority of two votes were in favour of them. But several things which he asserted, were absolutely denied, and his writings show a man opinionated, with strong passions, and a deep sense of the injury done him.

After being confined one winter, he was banished from Massachusetts, and from the land purchased by him of the Indians. But he went to England, and obtained liberty to enjoy these lands in *Narraganset bay*.

Gorton came to Boston in 1648. The Court upon his arrival ordered him to be apprehended, but producing a letter from the Earl of Warwick, desiring that he might have liberty to return home, the Court recalled the order, and gave him a week's liberty to provide for his departure.

The writer of this ecclesiastical narrative had an opportunity of knowing something similar to Gorton's expressions, conduct, and trial, in the town of Boston. A man from the State of Rhode-Island was accused of blasphemy, and brought *before a Court of Justices*. He was said to be a *deist*, an *atheist*, blasphemer of the Bible, &c. He denied it all. Witnesses were produced who had heard him say, That the Bible was *not the word of God*. He acknowledged that he said it, and that every Christian would say the same; that he was no atheist, or deist, but loved his Redeemer and venerated his Bible. Being asked, how he could be consistent? he answered, "That his Bible told him that *Christ* was the *word* of God, and the Bible a *record* of the *divine will*." This was all he meant by saying the Bible was not the *word of God*." He was dismissed, and he laughed heartily at his accusers. This man had been a Quaker preacher; became a preacher of the Universalists, and had a small congregation in the *County of Berkshire*, in 1794; but has never been permitted to preach in the other churches of Universalists, his notions being very peculiar, and such his manner of expressing himself as people of all persuasions must dislike.

Yet he possesses that acuteness of reasoning, and recollective memory for quoting scripture, which would have been fully equal to *Gorton*, had he met with the same opposition; but the spirit of persecution has flown from this State, to the mortification of many who wish to be of consequence, and would fain raise its ghost, for the sake of complaining of the present magistrates and clergy, but cannot find even the shadow on the wall.

world. Those men are only calculated to settle a new place who can endure hardship ; and those ministers were only fit for New-England who could conform themselves to the habits of the people, or yield to some of their peculiarities. Those who could not do this, did not succeed, especially in the old colony of Plymouth, where the people were more rigid in their puritanick notions, and had been less favoured with a variety of ministers and other learned men, to enlarge their views, and divest them of their prejudices. Mr. Blinman, a gentleman of Wales, and a preacher of the gospel, was one, who expected to find a welcome reception. Being invited to Green's harbour, near Plymouth, he and his friends meant there to settle, but the influence of a few gifted brethren made learning or prudence of little avail. They compared him "to a piece of new cloth in an old garment," and thought they could do better without patching. The old and new planters, to speak a more modern style, could not agree, and parted. Mr. Blinman and his company came to Massachusetts and settled at Cape Ann, which the General Court established the same year as a plantation, and called it Gloucester.

This year, 1642, Woburn was made a town, from being a part of Charlestown, and Mr. Carter was ordained pastor of their church. Having no officers, nor any members of the church, who thought themselves capable of bearing a part of the solemnity, they were advised by some to desire the elders of other churches to perform it ; but others supposing it might introduce the dependency of churches, &c. according to the form of a Presbytery, objected, and therefore it was performed by one of their own members, though not to the satisfaction of some of the ministers and magistrates then present. Since that time, Mr. Hubbard observes, it has been more frequent for the neighbouring churches to send ministers and delegates to act, or join in the service ; which implies a communion of churches, or a kind of fellowship, quite consistent with the Congregational plan, but different from the manner of the Presbyterians.

In the same year, three very eminent divines of this country were invited to the famous assembly of Westminster.

ster. The letter which was sent to them is preserved in Hutchinson's History, signed by several of the nobility and members of the lower house, as well as the ministers who then made a figure in England, and had influence among the members of that ecclesiastical body. Mr. Cotton, minister of Boston, was the first of the three, to whom probably the letter was directed, and who thought it *a call of God* which he ought to obey. Mr. Hooker and Mr. Davenport, both of Connecticut, were joined with him; but did not receive the invitation with the same lively and impressive force. One supposed it unnecessary to go so far upon a business of this nature, and the other could not feel it his duty to leave his church, where he certainly was very useful. These gentlemen had all written upon church government; they differed in some opinions of discipline, but were all sound in the faith of what were then called the doctrines of the Reformation.\*

These

---

\* These three men, such luminaries in this obscure part of the world, and whose light shone upon distant places, have been subjects of the biographical part of the *Magnalia Americana*.

They were men of *name* in their own country, and the application now made for their assistance is an evidence how worthy they were of esteem; and deserve more than sketches of a character in the pages of every ecclesiastical history. Their biography may be collected from books published in Europe, from Winthrop's Journal, Cotton Mather's Lives, and scattered fragments in other narratives.

Thomas Hooker was a rival of Mr. Cotton, and was supposed by many to be his equal, if not his superior; but the influence of Mr. Cotton was greater in Massachusetts. "The rivalry between Mr. Cotton and Mr. Hooker, two favourite ministers in the settlement of Massachusetts bay, disposed the latter, who was less successful in the contest of fame and power, to wish for some settlement at a distance from a competitor by whom his reputation was eclipsed."

Thus speaks Dr. Robertson; and adds, "A good number of those who had imbibed Mrs. Hutchinson's notions, and were offended at such as combated them, offered to accompany him." This is a very wrong representation. Mr. Hooker moved away before any controversy took place of the kind mentioned. His church, as well as their minister, were more opposite to Mrs. Hutchinson, and all the Antinomians, than any church in Massachusetts. The great Dr. Robertson paid more respect to Douglas, than to all the American historians. But Douglas wrote carelessly, and when he had given his opinion would not alter it, though facts appeared to contradict his assertion. This Scotsman, with the pride of a foreigner, despised the people who gave him his subsistence,

These doctrines have been as firmly held, and as strenuously defended in New-England as any part of Christendom. Had every minister of Massachusetts been active in forming the Westminster Confession of Faith, it would not

---

ence, and knew not enough of New-England, or any of the States, to write summaries about them.

Mr. Cotton had been expected in New-England before Hooker; and therefore had some claim to the first attentions of the people. Many of them had been connected with him in England; and another thing which contributed to give him so much influence was, that so many of the magistrates resided in Boston. After all which can be said, it certainly was not this rivalry which stimulated to the settlement of Connecticut. Nor is anything but conjecture offered for Mr. Hooker's being jealous of Cotton. The people wanted room; there was a general desire to spread over the country, which operated upon the minds of the people who came over with Mr. Hooker, and led them to seek another settlement. This we learn from Winthrop's Journal, the best source of intelligence we have. Without mentioning particulars of Mr. Hooker and Mr. Davenport, who were ministers of Connecticut, I shall give the biography of Mr. Cotton, as a matter combined with the present history.

John Cotton was born at Derby, A. D. 1634. His parents were persons of considerable quality and good reputation. Their condition, as to the good things of this life, competent. They were wise enough to employ their means to good purposes;—and educated their son so as to make him eminent and useful. Their solicitude for this tender plant was well rewarded when they saw him, like a tree of life, feeding thousands with the doctrines of christianity; and to them also the fruit of his lips was sweet.

After leaving the Grammar-School at Derby, he was admitted to Trinity College, Cambridge. His industry was great, and his proficiency uncommon. From Trinity he was admitted to Emanuel, where he was soon made a *Fellow*. When he was elected, he was strictly examined. The portion of scripture, chosen to prove his knowledge of the Hebrew tongue, contains more hard words than any other in the Bible,—Isaiah iii.—Wherein the prophet declaims against the pride and haughtiness of the daughter of Zion. But so good an Hebrewician could not be at a stand; it rather gave him an opportunity to show his ability and attention to that language. Being thus advanced, he was in a place for improvement; he was surrounded with characters, who were proper objects of emulation; the glow of genius appeared in his manner of giving and receiving instruction, and all his powers and faculties were quickened to attempt a resemblance of those who had the highest reputations for erudition. He soon rendered himself famous by his funeral oration for Dr. *Some*, Master of Peter-House, Cambridge. In this, he discovered a purity of style with the ornaments of rhetoric. The fame of his learning increased from his next publick performance, which was a University sermon, and he was often invited to preach

not have been more generally received. Almost a century after, it was necessary for every candidate to declare his belief in the doctrines of christianity as here explained, before any church would accept him for their minister; their

---

preach in the same place. When he had been at Boston in Lincolnshire some months, he proceeded Bachelor of Divinity, and preached a *Concio ad Clerum*, in Latin, which was greatly admired. His text was Mat. v. 13. He appeared also to great advantage in answering a very acute opponent, Mr. William Chappel, who disputed with him.

For several years he preached to his people without any opposition, but when he urged his dislike of the ceremonies, he was brought before the Court of the bishop of Lincoln for his non-conformity: from which he was advised to appeal to a higher Court, and employing Mr. Leverett (who was afterwards one of the ruling elders in the church of Boston, New-England) he was, through his means, restored to his church, who had much occasion to rejoice in his labours. He was so much in favour with Dr. Williams, the bishop of Lincoln, that when he was *Lord Keeper* of the great seal, he went to King James, and begged that a man of so much worth and learning might have liberty of preaching without interruption, though he was a non-conformist.

The earl of Dorchester, also, being at old Boston, was much affected when he heard him deliver a discourse upon civil government, and stood his friend in times of great opposition. These are the times to try and prove friendship. From men of urbanity and good nature the civilities of social life are readily granted; but how few among the rich men of the city, and nobles of a kingdom, think of virtue in distress! There were some, however, among the gentlemen and noblemen in England, who exerted themselves to serve worthy Puritan ministers, and kept them from prison and from penury, while bigots ruled the nation, and the vilest aspersions were cast upon all who were suspected of non-conformity.

Mr. Cotton was not able to stem the tide of party. He was ordered before the High Commission Court, who were disposed to pour out the bitterness of their wrath upon his head; but they were disappointed of their aim, and, through the influence of those who were well disposed, he escaped, and came to New-England. It was observed, that he did not fly from the profession of the truth, but unto a more opportune place for the profession of it.

When Mr. Cotton came over to this country, they were busy in settling the affairs of the churches and commonwealth. In both of which he took an active part. Being requested to preach before the General Court, his text was Haggai ii. 4. "Yet now be strong, O Zerubbabel, saith the Lord; and be strong, O Joshua, son of Josedech the high priest; and be strong, all ye people of the land, saith the Lord, and work; for I am with you, saith the Lord of hosts."

It was a usual thing for the magistrates to consult with the ministers, and Mr. Cotton was appointed with Gov. Winthrop to draw an *abstract* of



their shorter catechism is now taught in most of our families, and is combined with the education of the large proportion of our youth in publick schools and academies. It is said, that these divines received afterwards a different kind

of the *judicial* laws of the Mosaick system, so far as they are *moral*. It was his advice to establish a *Theocracy*.

Mr. Cotton began the sabbath on Saturday evening. He gave religious instructions and read the scriptures, and then retired into his study. He spent the sabbath day either in his study or in the pulpit. He was a very accomplished preacher; his voice had melody in it, and was sonorous; his sermons pathetick, and his critical acumen uncommon. This was discovered in his frequent expositions, and dissertations, upon passages and whole books of the scripture. He was considered as a great polemick divine; yet upon two occasions, when his talents were exerted this way, he was under no small disadvantage. In his controversy with Roger Williams, he had an opponent who not only possessed talents which would have made him great in any school, but had bent the force of his strong mind to the very subject which then employed their attention. In England, Mr. Cotton had written in favour of toleration, and against the power of the magistrate in matters of religion. Here, he had to oppose the sentiment he had formerly defended, and to write against the principles which the dissenting ministers in England then thought evangelical, and have, ever since, supported; and which are necessary to vindicate their separation.

He was accused of holding a bloody tenet by Williams, and the title of his answer was, *The Bloody Tenet washed in the Blood of the Lamb*.

In the general commotion of the country concerning the Antinomian sentiments, our celebrated divine lost much of the dignity of his character, and his influence in the churches. He did not go to the extreme which would please his friends, and some of them compared him to a *light* in a dark lantern. The other side were bitter in their animadversions upon his conduct. At the synod in 1637, he had to oppose the whole body of ministers, and some of them were disposed to vex him. Once he became so unhappy as to threaten to leave the plantation. The latter part of his ministry was less irksome. He enjoyed some years of rest after being tossed on the troubled sea. His labours were edifying to the people; his abilities and character were equally respected by the magistrates and his clerical brethren, who all lamented his death when he was sixty-eight years old, and mourned for the loss which the country as well as his people had sustained. He died December 23, 1652. His disorder was of a pulmonary nature, owing to his passing a ferry and getting wet, and then preaching in a neighbouring church. He was seized while he was delivering the sermon, and was never afterwards free from the complaint: yet he continued to labour, and a few weeks before his death he took for his subject the four last verses in 2d epistle to Timothy: giving as a reason why he chose several verses, that he should not live to finish them if he were more particular. He dwelt chiefly

kind of letter ; or such intimations as would have discouraged them, had they been ready to pursue their voyage.

From

---

chiefly upon these words, *Grace be with you all.* When he could preach no longer, he was visited by his pious friends, to whom he administered consolation and good instruction. He died in peace, and the last words which he uttered were pious and benevolent wishes to a friend who was endeavouring to soften the pillow of death ; and which caused others to say of him, that *he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost.*

Mr. Cotton married twice, and left a number of children. His descendants have spread over the country, and though no one has appeared equal to him in a rich variety of learning and popular talents, yet several of them have been eminent as preachers, and among the civilians of our country. He published many works ; some in Latin. These were printed in London, and they have since been re-printed in New-England. Among them we find *Milk for Babes*—and *Meat for strong Men*, according to their power of digesting the *spiritual* food.

Some difference has appeared in the opinions expressed of this celebrated man. It has been suggested, that his character was blazoned beyond its merit ; for his biographers were Mr. Norton, his friend, who succeeded him as teacher of the *Old Church*, and Cotton Mather, his grandson. But his character was high before he came into this country. We have taken our account from books which were not published by any near relation, nor by men who were much prejudiced in his favour. His learning was allowed by all his contemporaries ; his piety and zeal none could doubt, for he sacrificed his ease, his interest, and his country, to enjoy the ordinances of religion. His candid spirit was not always in exercise. In the phrenzy of his imagination he blamed worthy men, and censured those who had great claim to his respect and affection ; yet Governor Winthrop, one opposite in sentiment upon politicks and religion, says of him, that he delivered himself in a gentle manner upon a subject which interested his feelings, and though he censures his opinions speaks with respect of the man. Others, as strong in their own sentiments, allow him candour and forbearance.

In those instances where he discovered intolerance and the spirit of bigotry, a zeal for ecclesiastical power, he only manifested the inconsistency of human nature. It is a true observation, that when men begin to taste of christian liberty themselves, they forget that other men have an equal title to enjoy it.

Such flagrant instances of inconsistency are so evident among christians, of all denominations, that it cannot be imputed as a reproach peculiar to any sect. Instead of disturbing the ashes of our ancestors, by repeating that the “very men who had fled from persecution became persecutors,” we had better imitate their virtues, throw a mantle over their failings, let instruction spring from their graves, and hope to meet them in that better world where just men are made perfect.

From what we learn concerning this convocation, or synod, or mixt assembly, it was rather difficult to get them together; and many, who were chosen in England, Scotland, and the Protestant States on the Continent, never attended. It was so connected with the politicks of the day, that had all attended, who were elected members, the affairs of religion would have been only of secondary consideration. Out of thirty lay assessors, and one hundred and twenty divines, only sixty-seven appeared in Henry the Seventh's chapel, and drew the forms and orders of the assembly. Of these, some were Episcopal ministers, all of whom withdrew. The assembly was opened July 1, 1643, both houses of Parliament being present. Those who continued to be members of this assembly were learned, pious men; among them, Mr. White of Dorchester, so often mentioned in the account of the Massachusetts, and the great *Selden*, whose name alone ought to rescue them from the reproaches of their enemies, some of whom are adverse to their puritanism, and others to their rigid notions of theology, though themselves ministers of the Independent churches. Nothing need be more absurd than the suggestion of the bishop of Gloucester, that *this assembly was made up of Brownists and Independents from New-England*; whereas only three New-England ministers were sent to; none appeared; and, according to Mr. Neal, whose narrative I follow, there were but six Independents in this whole assembly.

During the course of this year, Mr. Bennet, a gentleman from Virginia, arrived at Boston, and represented the state of the churches in that colony to be truly deplorable. His object was to obtain a number of ministers from Massachusetts, where the churches were so well supplied, to settle and cultivate those waste and desolate places of our Lord's vineyard. The words of the Psalmist were then literally fulfilled: "The boar out of the wood doth waste it, and the wild beast of the field doth devour it." Virginia had been longer settled, but the planters had little or no religion. They cared for none of those things which occupied the sole attention of the more northern settlers, who had come over to America to enjoy the privileges of the gospel, and who had planted churches  
wherever

wherever they had felled the trees, or by hard labour obtained subsistence from the soil.

The letters, written by some well disposed persons in that province, were read at the Boston Thursday lecture, and the people assembled were so much affected with the contents, that they set apart a day of prayer to seek the blessing of heaven upon their proceedings, and then chose three worthy divines, who could be better spared on account of the churches being supplied with two ministers. Mr. Phillips of Watertown, Mr. Thompson of Braintree, and Mr. Miller of Rowley, were agreed upon, approved by the General Court, and recommended by the Governor of this Province to the authority in Virginia. Mr. Phillips not being willing to go, Mr. Knowles, his fellow labourer, and Mr. Thompson, went to Narrhaganset, where they found the vessel which was to transport them. Mr. Miller did not depart with them on account of bodily indisposition, but they had Mr. James, formerly minister of Charlestown. These gentlemen were received in a kind and hospitable manner, and met with every encouragement from the success of their labours; but while they were the instruments of doing much good to the people, they met with opposition from the magistrates. The civil rulers of Virginia forbid their preaching, while the people flocked to them in private houses.

At their return, which was the next summer, they were able to tell, and the letters from Virginia confirmed it, that God had given abundant success and a lustre to their ministry. The time was not long they were in that country. "*The rulers did in a sense drive them out, having made an Order, that all such as did not conform to the discipline of the English Church should depart that country by such a day.*"

Within this period, there was something like a struggle between the magistrates and ministers for power and influence; and some who were attached to the cause of religion, and loved their ministers, were disposed to make them sensible that they were too officious for their meek and humble calling. Mr. Cotton endeavoured to prove, from Numbers xxvii. 21. and other texts of holy writ, that the priesthood ought to be consulted by the magistrates,  
not

not only before they went to war, but in every thing appertaining to the affairs of the *commonwealth*. Mr. Ezekiel Rogers told the people, that no governor ought to be continued more than one year. By such means, they roused the indignation of Dudley, and provoked the milder spirit of Winthrop to speak a contrary opinion. But in another matter, both magistrates and clergy had the same ideas of spiritual domination, and discovered a more intolerant spirit than they had known in the parent country. No man in the plantation was allowed to hold an estate, or vote as a freeman, except he were a member of a Congregational church, such as the New-England settlers had declared to be according to the model of primitive christianity. Mr. Maverick, who had fixed his tent on Noddle's island, and possessed some considerable property when the banks of Charles river were settled by our fathers, had been declared a freeman, though an Episcopalian; which shows they were less rigid when they first came over, than they were afterwards. As soon as they felt their consequence, they realized certain powers which they never would have dared to exercise, had it not been for the confusions in England. *There* the Independents had the most influence, but they did not deprive other men, or sects, of the privileges of thinking for themselves, or enjoying, with their possessions, the privilege of society. *Here* was a kind of theocracy; and the power given to members of churches, or rather taken by them, enabled them to build partition walls. The petitions of Robert Child, Maverick, and others, mark the character of men and of the times.

Hutchinson gives the most particular and just account of this matter, with some good reflections; and he is the only Massachusetts historian who has stepped forth in the cause of toleration, before the revolution of America. No wonder a learned civilian should speak in favour of men who suffered such unrighteous judgment. The petitioners "prayed that civil liberty and freedom might be granted to all truly English; and that the members of the Church of England and Scotland might be admitted to the privileges of the New-England churches; or if these civil and religious liberties were refused, that they might be freed from heavy taxes imposed upon them, and the impresses  
made

made upon their children and servants into the war; and if they failed of redress here, they should be under the necessity of making application to England to the honourable houses of Parliament, who they hoped would take their sad case into consideration, provide able ministers for them, New-England having none such to spare, or else transport them to some other place, their estates being wasted, where they might live as Christians, &c. But if their prayer should be granted, they hoped to see the then contemned ordinances of God highly prized; the gospel, then dark, break forth as the sun; christian charity, then cold, wax warm; jealousy of arbitrary government banished; strife and contention abated; and all business, in church and state, which for many years had gone back, successfully thriving," &c.

These petitioners were treated with severity, pointed at in the pulpits, and could obtain no redress during the times of the Commonwealth in England, or the Protectorate of Cromwell; but when Charles the Second came to the throne, they obtained some triumph, and were able, in their turn, to show a spirit more like the wisdom of this world, than christian forbearance and forgiveness.

Before the platform of church discipline had been agreed upon, an attempt was made to introduce the Presbyterian government and discipline in one of the churches; this was almost as opposite to the principles of our fathers as the Church of England. The church at Newbury was under the pastoral care of Mr. Parker and Mr. Noyes, both of whom were inclined to Presbyterianism, which caused an assembly of ministers to sit at Cambridge. Cotton and Hooker were chosen moderators. "The assembly concluded against some part of the Presbyterian way, and the Newbury ministers took time to consider the arguments," &c.

The churches had rest for some years after; having been much disturbed by the religious controversies which divided the Old Church in Boston, and made so many ministers in the Bay at variance with each other. Mr. Wheelwright wrote a letter which contained an acknowledgment of his offence, and the Court desired the Govern-

nor to write to him, that he was released from his banishment, and was permitted to come to Boston.

In this early age of New-England, we have seen different sects arise; each found adherents, and gave no small disturbance to the plantation. In a book called the *Wonder-working Providences*, they are thus summed:

1. *Gortonists*; who denied the humanity of Christ.
2. *Papists*.
3. *Familists*; who depend upon rare revelations.
4. *Seekers*; who deny the word and ordinances.
5. *Antinomians*; who deny the moral law to be the rule of Christ.
6. *Anabaptists*; who deny civil government to be proved of Christ.
7. The Prelacy.

In the year 1646 was the second synod at Cambridge. This year also was a body of laws composed; and that they might be agreeable to the scriptures, there were appointed in every county two magistrates, two ministers, and two able persons among the people; these were confirmed by the General Court in 1648.

---

MEMOIR OF PARMENIUS.

STEPHEN PARMENIUS, the author of the following POEM, was born, about the middle of the sixteenth century, at Buda, the capital of Hungary, at that time in possession of the Turks. His genius probably procured him patronage; for some literary men in Hungary assisted him to a liberal education. For its completion, he visited the European universities. During his residence in England, he was singularly pleased with the people, the government, and the country; the flattering attentions of the literati of London contributing, doubtless, to this partiality. Here he became acquainted with Mr. RICHARD HAKLUYT, the celebrated author of *Voyages and Discoveries of the English nation*, who introduced him to Sir HUMPHREY GILBERT, at the very time when he was preparing to embark with a colony for America. Delighted with this gentleman, and with his enterprise, he celebrated both in this poem. At the time of composing it, in

March, 1583, he had no intention, it seems,\* of coming to America. He, however, did actually embark with Sir H. Gilbert and the English adventurers, on the 11th of June, the same year. Expecting that great discoveries would be made, or great actions performed, by this colony, he intended to compose a history of them in the Latin language, which he wrote with great elegance. The admiral, however, made but a very short stay in America; and did nothing more, than take possession of Newfoundland for queen Elizabeth. Returning to England, he was lost in a violent storm, on the 9th of September, and with him the learned Hungarian. This catastrophe is thus related by Mr. Edward Haies, a gentleman, who was "principal actor in the same voyage," and "who alone continued unto the end, and by God's speciall assistance, returned home with his retinue safe and entire":—"This was a heavy and grievous event, to lose at one blow our chiefe shippe fraughted with great provision, gathered together with much travell, care, long time, and difficultie. But more was the losse of our men, which perished to the number almost of a hundreth soules. Amongst whom was drowned a learned man, an Hungarian, borne in the citie of Buda, called thereof Budæius, who of pietie and zeale to good attempts, adventured in this action, minding to record in the Latine tongue, the gests† and things worthy of remembrance, happening in this discoverie, to the honour of our nation, the same being adorned with the eloquent stile of this Orator, and rare Poet of our time."‡—Beside this poem, I find no composition of Parmenius, excepting a letter in Latin, to Mr. Richard Hakluyt, dated at St. John's port, Newfoundland, August 6, 1583; which gives a brief account of the voyage from England, and of taking

---

\* O mihi felicem si fas conspendere puppim!

*See the Poem, from line 157 to 164.*

† *Gests*, from the Latin *gesta* [*exploits*]. The same word is used in another part of this writer's account of the same voyage:—"as if God had prescribed limits unto the Spanish nation which they might not exceed; as by their owne gests recorded may be aptly gathered." *Hakluyt's Voyages*, I. 680; & III. 144.

‡ *Ibid.* I. 692; & III. 156.



taking possession of Newfoundland; and a description of this island. §

To the Poem is prefixed a Preface, and both are here translated. In the translation, no freedom has been intentionally used with the original, excepting to deprive queen Elizabeth of her poetical divinity.\* Poets and painters have great licence by prescription; but it had a pagan origin, and Christians ought to contribute nothing toward perpetuating their idolatry. The classical reader of this poem will be too much entertained with the elegant original, to disquiet himself about any imperfection in the translation.

It seems but just, to say one word concerning the illustrious person, to whom the poem is addressed. Sir Humphrey Gilbert having procured an ample patent of queen Elizabeth,

‡ Ill fated Poet! the country furnished thee but a barren theme. The most fertile one was the cod fishery. "Nunc, narrandi erant mores, regiones, et populi. Cæterùm quid narrem, mi Hakluyte, quando præter solitudinem nihil video. Piscium inexhausta copia: inde huc commeantibus magnus quæstus. Vix hamus fundum attingit, illicò insigni aliquo onestus est."—In the account of the climate, the facts of the historian form a very sober contrast to the description of the poet. || "Cælum hoc anni tempore ita fervidum est, ut nisi pisces, qui arefiunt ad solem, assidui invertantur, ab adustione defendi non possint. Hyeme quàm frigidum sit, magnæ moles glaciei in medio mari nos docuere." *Letter to Mr. Hakluyt.* It is inserted entire in Hakluyt's Voyages, I. 697—699; & III. 161—163.

\* See lines 179th and 225th. Such impious compliments were frequent in the Augustan age. [See Virg. Georg. I. 24—42. Hor. Carm. Lib. IV. ode V. Lucan, Lib. I.] The classical writer is in great danger of the sin of deification.—*Æternùm cupiunt* [line 204th.] are suffered to pass. The thought was, perhaps, borrowed from the Thebaid of Statius [Lib. I. 31—33], where Cæsar is thus addressed:

"Tuque . . . . .  
Æternum sibi Roma cupit."

"Oh! bless thy Rome with an eternal reign,  
Nor let desiring worlds poutreat in vain." *Pope's translation.*

Budæius was not alone. Buchanan, one of the purest and finest of modern writers, who was his cotemporary, concludes a poem, addressed to Henry VIII.—which ascribes to that king all the virtues that he ever had, and some which he had not—with these lines:

"Hæc tua te virtus dis immortalibus æquum  
Efficit, atque hominum supra fastigia tollit."

|| See the Poem, line 299 to 303.

Elizabeth, in 1578, with full powers to undertake the discovery of the northern parts of America, and to inhabit and possess any lands, which were at that time unsettled by any Christian princes, or their subjects, he sailed, not long after, to Newfoundland. After continuing here a short time, he was compelled, by adverse occurrences, to return to England. Not discouraged, however, by this disappointment, he prosecuted the design with steady and resolute perseverance. The queen was so well pleased with his conduct, that she gave him, as a mark of her peculiar favour, an emblematical jewel, being a small anchor of beaten gold, with a large pearl at the peak, which he wore ever after at his breast. He and his brother Sir Walter Raleigh\* were the parents of the English plantations in America, and laid the foundation of the trade and naval power of Great-Britain. Sir Walter Raleigh was a joint adventurer with his brother, and, the very year in which Sir Humphrey Gilbert perished, took out a new patent for the same purposes, and of the like tenure with that of Sir Humphrey; upon which he immediately proceeded, and sent a colony at his own expence, to settle on the American continent. This opened the way to the settlement of Virginia.—“As to the person of this brave and wise man [Gilbert], it was such as recommended him to esteem and veneration at first sight; his stature was beyond the ordinary size; his complexion sanguine; and his constitution very robust.” In the British Biography, he is highly celebrated for courage and prudence; for genius and learning; for eloquence and patriotism; and for the estimable virtues of private life. “His life and death were a continual commentary on his own generous maxim, *That he is not worthy to live at all, who for fear or danger of death shunneth his country’s service, or his own honour; since death is inevitable, and the fame of virtue immortal.*”†

A. H.

---

\* After the death of Sir H. Gilbert's father, his mother married Walter Raleigh of Fardel, Esquire; and by him was the mother of the famous Sir Walter Raleigh.

† See Hakluyt's Voyages, III. 135--162. Biographia Britannica, Art. *Gilbert*; and Belknap's American Biography, I. 196--205.

## NOTES ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE POEM.

*Line 75—82. Dacis*—inhabitants of Transylvania, &c. ‘Dacia, regio Scythiæ Europææ quæ ad Septentrionem Carpato monte è Sarmatia dividitur. Dacia hodie divisa est in Transylvaniam,’ &c.

*Æmathiis*—Æmathia was the ancient name of Macedonia.

*Hebrus, &c.*—Thrace.

*Pannoniæ*—Pannonia was a part of Hungary. “Hungaria—Danubius medium interfuit, atque in partes nempe in citeriorem & ulteriorem scindit. *Citerior est ea ubi olim Pannoniæ fuerunt.* Hujus citerioris Hungariæ caput est Buda regni sedes.”

*Liburnis*—Liburnia is now called Sclavonia. “Liburnia—quam hodie Sclavoniam apellant.”

*Sarmaticas gentes*—Inhabitants of Poland, Russia, and Tartary. “Sarmatia—quem tractum hodie tenent, quos Polonos, Ruthenos, Tartaros appellamus.”

*Vide Caroli Stephani Dictionarium Historicum, Geographicum, &c.; also the VIIth. Map in Blair’s Chronology, which gives the ancient names of these countries.*

*Line 113—115. Belgæ—Hibernia.*—For the suppression of the Irish rebellion, Gilbert was raised to the rank of Colonel, which seems to have been, at that time, a title of supreme command; for his troops consisted of 100 horse, 400 regular foot, and a certain number of that kind of Irish militia, distinguished by the name of Kerns. When he was sent over to Holland, to the assistance of the Dutch, he had the same title, and is reported to have been the first Englishman, who bore it in that service.

*Biog. Britan. Art. Gilbert.*

*Line 120. Sequana* was the ancient name of the river Seine in France. “Sequana—Lutetiam Parisiorum mediam intersecans, unaque cum Matriona Belgas à Celtis dividens.”

*See Stephan. Diction. & Blair, ut supra.*

*Line*

*Line 127. Aucheriam*—The wife of Sir H. Gilbert. He married, from the court of queen Elizabeth, a lady of distinguished birth and fortune, Ann, the daughter of Sir Anthony Ager of Kent,\* who, with his son, behaved in the noble manner, described by the poet, at the reduction of Calais by the French, in 1558.

*Line 163. Istri, &c.*—The wars of Germany. Ister was formerly the name of the Danube.

*Lines 237, 238.* New Albion was discovered by Sir Francis Drake in 1578; and the principal king of the country invested him with his principality.

*Line 272.* Sir Hugh Willoughby, on a voyage for the discovery of a passage to India by the North West, having proceeded to 72°. north latitude, perished, with all his mariners, in 1554.

*Line 276.* Sir Martin Frobisher made three voyages to the north, for the same discovery, in 1576, 1577, and 1578. In translating the 277th. and 278th. lines, regard was had to Forster's account of these voyages. In a part of Greenland, discovered by Frobisher, "in hard winters, masses of ice, of an astonishing size, are generated by the mountaines of snow, which are blown down from off the high rocks, and in the spring, in consequence of the thaws, of heavy rains, and of the sea water dashing upon them, are converted into ice."

*See Forster's Voyages. 277, 278.*

*Line 281.* Sir Anthony Jenkinson made his last voyage to Russia in 1571. For a proof and illustration of his wonderful enterprises in the East, see *Hakluyt's Voyages*, 1. 426—436. See also *Camdeni Rerum Anglic. et Hib. Annales, regn. Eliz.* 126, 155.

*Line 284.* Sir Francis Drake commenced his voyage round the world in 1577, and completed it in 1580.

*Line 297.* John and Sebastian Cabot discovered the continent of North-America in 1497. More than sixty  
years

\* Biog. Brit. Art. Gilbert.

years elapsed, however, before the English availed themselves of this discovery. This remarkable neglect historians ascribe to the frugal maxims of Henry VII. and the unpropitious circumstances of the reigns of Henry VIII. of Edward VI. and of the bigoted Mary; reigns peculiarly adverse to the extension of industry, trade, and navigation. The honour of commencing the colonization of North-America was reserved for the vigorous and splendid reign of queen Elizabeth.

---

DE NAVIGATIONE ILLUSTRIS & MAGNANIMI EQUITIS AURATI  
HUMFREDI GILBERTI, AD DEDUCENDAM IN NOVUM ORBEM  
COLONIAM SUSCEPTA, CARMEN *Επιθυμικον* STEPHANI PAR-  
MENII BUDÆII.

*Ad eundem illustrem equitem auctoris præfatio.*

REDDENDA est, quàm fieri potest brevissimè, in hoc vestibulo, ratio facti mei, & cur ita homo novus & exterus, in tanta literatissimorum hominum copia, quibus Anglia beata est, versandum in hoc argumento mihi putaverim: ita enim tu, fortissime Gilberte, fœtum hunc nostrum in lucem exire voluisti. In servitute & barbarie Turcica, Christianis tamen, magno immortalis Dei beneficio, parentibus natus, aliquam etiam ætatis partem educatus; postquam doctissimorum hominum opera, quibus tum Pannoniæ nostræ, tum imprimis salvæ adhuc earum reliquiæ florescunt, in literis adolevissem, more nostrorum hominum, ad invisendas Christiani orbis Academies ablegatus fui. Qua in peregrinatione, non solum complura Musarum hospitia, sed multas etiam sapienter institutas respublicas, multarum Ecclesiarum probatissimas administrationes introspeximus, jam fermè triennio ea in re posito. Fuerat hæc nostra profectio ita à nobis comparata, ut non tantum mores & urbes gentium videndum, sed in familiaritatem, aut saltem notitiam illustriorum hominum introëndum nobis putaremus. Cæterum, ut hoc à nobis sine invidia dici possit, (certè enim taceri absque malicia nullo modo potest) non locus, non natio, non respublica ulla nobis æquè ac tua Britannia complacuit, quamcumque in partem eventum

eventum consilii mei considerem. Accedit, quòd præter omnem expectationem meam ab omnibus tuis civibus, quibuscum aliqua consuetudo mihi contigit, tanta passim humanitate acceptus essem; ut jam (sit hoc salva pietate à me dictum) suavissimæ Anglorum amicitiaè fermè abolerint desiderium & Pannoniarum & Budæ meæ, quibus patriæ nomen debeo. Quas ob causas cùm sæpenumero animus fuisset significationem aliquam nostræ voluntatis & existimationis edendi; accidit utique secundùm sententiam, ut dum salutandis & cognoscendis excellentibus viris Londini operam do, ornatissimus ac doctissimus amicus meus Richardus Hakluytus ad te me deduxerit, explicato mihi præclarissimo tuo de ducenda propedièm colonia in novum orbem iustituto. Quæ dum aguntur, agnoscere potui ego illud corpus & animum tuum sempiterna posteritatis commemoratione dignum, & agnovi profectò, eaque tali ac tanta observantia prosequi cæpi; ut cum paulò post plura de tuis virtutibus, & rebus gestis passim audissem, tempus longè accommodatissimum existimarem esse, quo aliqua parte officii studiique nostri, ergà te & tuam gentem perfungerer. Hoc est primum ovum, unde nostrum *εὐλαβειῶν* originem ducit. Reliquum est, ut eas & redeas quàm prosperimè, vir nobilissime, & benevolentia tua, autoritate, ac nomine, tueare studium nostrum. Vale pridie Kalen. Aprilis, 1583.

---

A POEM OF STEPHEN PARMENIUS OF BUDA, IN CELEBRATION OF THE VOYAGE OF THE ILLUSTRIOUS AND VALIANT KNIGHT, SIR HUMPHREY GILBERT, UNDERTAKEN FOR THE PURPOSE OF CONDUCTING A COLONY TO THE NEW WORLD.

*The Preface of the Author to that illustrious knight.*

HERE, at the threshold, the reason of my attempt must be given as briefly as possible; and I must tell wherefore I, so great a stranger and a foreigner, in such a throng of literary characters, as that with which England is blest, should think of meddling with this subject; for it was you, most noble Gilbert, who chose that this my imperfect production

production should see the light. Born in Turkish servitude and barbarism, yet, through the great goodness of God, of Christian parents, and by them partly educated; afterward, by the aid of learned men, with whom Hungary then abounded, and even yet abounds so far as its reliques are preserved, having grown up in letters, I was sent, after the manner of my countrymen, to visit the universities in Christendom. In my travels, I not only beheld many seats of the muses, but also many wisely constituted republics, and admirably conducted churches; nearly three years being devoted to that object. This journey I so contrived, that I took care not merely to observe the manners and cities of different nations, but to obtain the familiar acquaintance, or at least, the knowledge of eminent men. But, to speak without envy (for it cannot be suppressed without malice), no place, no nation, no republic, pleased me equally in every respect, with your Britain. It so happened, that, beyond all my expectation, I was received every where by all your citizens, with whom I had the least familiarity, with such politeness, that already (let me say it without the violation of patriotism) the very delightful friendships of Englishmen have almost obliterated the love both of the Hungarians and of my Buda, to which I owe the name of country. When, for these reasons, I had often wished to give some expression of this my affection, it happened, according to my wish, that, while I was taking pains to pay my respects to the excellent men in London, and to become acquainted with them, my very accomplished and learned friend Richard Hakluyt introduced me to you, explaining to me, at the same time, your most noble design of shortly conducting a colony into the new world. In the mean time I could perceive, that that body and spirit of your's were worthy of the perpetual remembrance of posterity, and hence began to attend to them with such respect, that when, soon after, I every where heard more concerning your virtues and exploits, I thought it the most favourable time possible, to discharge some part of my duty, and to express somewhat of my regard, toward you and your nation. This is the primary origin of my poem. For the

the rest, may you prosperously go and return, most noble sir, and secure my regard by your benevolence, authority, and renown. Farewell. March 31, 1583.

---

AD THAMESIN.

*AMNIS, inoffensa qui tàm requiete beatus  
 Antipodum quæris jam tibi in orbe locum :  
 Nunc tibi principium merita, pro tempore, laudis  
 Fecimus, et raucæ carmina prima tubæ.  
 Tum cum reddideris, modo quam dimittimus, Argo,  
 Ornatu perages gaudia festa novo.*

TO THE THAMES.

*RIVER, who, happy in thy harmless course,  
 Seek'st thy antipodes in yon new world ;  
 Thy meed of praise I now have scarce begun,  
 And simply sounded the first trump of fame.  
 When Argo thou restor'st, whom now we loose,  
 Thy festal joys shall claim a nobler song.*

---

QUÆ nova tam subitò mutati gratia cœli ?  
 Unde graves nimbi vitreas tenuantur in auras ?  
 Diffugiunt nebulae, puroque nitentior ortu  
 Illustrat terras, clementiaque æquora TITAN ?  
 Nimirum posuere NOTI, meliorque resurgit  
 EURUS, et in ventos solvuntur vela secundos,  
 Vela quibus gentis decus immortale BRITANNIÆ

5

---

WHAT wondrous favour this of alter'd heaven ?  
 Whence do big storms dissolve to gentlest gales ?  
 The clouds disperse, a brighter orient sun  
 Illuminate the earth, and seas assuag'd ?  
 The SOUTH WINDS, sure, are laid ; the better EAST  
 Rises ; to prosperous winds are loos'd the sails,  
 Sails, borne by which, GILBERT, BRITANNIA'S pride,

5



Tendit ad ignotum nostris majoribus orbem  
Vix notis GILBERTUS aquis. Ecquando licebit  
Ordiri heroas laudes, et facta nepotum 10  
Attonitis memoranda animis? Si cæpta silendum est  
Illa, quibus nostri priscis ætatibus audent  
Conferri, et certare dies: quibus obvia plano  
Jamdudum FORTUNA solo, quibus omne per undas  
NEREIDUM genus exultat, faustoque tridenti 15  
Ipse pater NEREUS placabile temperat æquor.  
Et passim Oceano curvi Delphines ab imo  
In summos saliunt fluctus, quasi terga pararent  
In quibus evectæ sulcent freta prospera puppes.  
Et quasi diluvium, tempestatesque minatur 20  
Follibus inflatis inimica in vela physeter.  
Et favet ÆGÆON, et qui NEPTUNIA PROTEUS  
Armenta, ac turpes alit imo in gurgite phocas.  
Atque idem modò ab antiqua virtute celebrat  
Sceptra CHALDONIDUM: seclis modò fata futuris 25  
Pandit, et ad seros canit eventura minores.

---

Goes to a new world, to our sires unknown,  
On waters scarce explor'd. When shall we care  
To sing heroic praises, and the deeds 10  
To astonish future ages? If designs,  
That, by our age achieved, with former times  
Dare bold comparison, must not be sung:  
Deeds now by FORTUNE favoured, deeds which all  
The race of NEREIDS, on the Ocean's waves, 15  
Exults to foster, while great NEREUS' self  
With kindly trident smooths the yielding sea.  
From Ocean's depths e'en the curved dolphins leap  
On highest waves, as though with backs upreared  
To bear the ships far o'er the prosperous seas;  
And the dread whale a flood and tempest threats 20  
With windy blasts against unfriendly sails.  
Propitious is ÆGÆON, PROTEUS too,  
Who NEPTUNE's herds feeds in the deeps below:  
And he, who lately praised for ancient worth  
The CALEDONIAN sceptre, now unfolds 25  
To future ages fate's great destinies,  
And sings to late descendants things to come.

Ut pacis bellique bonis notissima vasto  
 Insula OCEANO, magni decus ANGLIA mundi ;  
 Postquam opibus dives, populo numerosa frequenti,  
 Tot celebris factis, toto caput extulit orbe ; 30  
 Non incauta sui, ne quando immensa potestas  
 Pondere sit ruitura suo, nova mænia natis  
 Quærat, et in longum extendat sua regna recessum :  
 Non aliter, quàm cùm ventis sublimibus aptæ  
 In nidis crevere grues, proficiscitur ingens 35  
 De nostra ad tepidum tellure colonia NILUM.  
 Euge, sacrum pectus, tibi, per tot secula soli  
 Servata est regio nullis regnata MONARCHIS.  
 Et triplici quondam mundi natura notata  
 Margine, et audacem quarto dignata COLUMBUM ; 40  
 Jam quintâ lustranda plagâ tibi, jamque regenda  
 Imperio superest. EUROPAM ASIAMQUE relinque,  
 Et fortunatam nimium, nisi sole propinquo  
 Arderet, LYBYEN : illis sua facta viasque  
 Terminet ALCIDES : abs te illustranda quiescit 45  
 Parte alia tellus, quam non BABYLONIA sceptrâ,

In the vast Ocean lifts her head erect  
 Above the spacious earth a well known Isle,  
 In peace and war far famed, pride of the world,  
 ENGLAND, for wealth, for numbers, deeds, renown'd. 30  
 Aware that time may come, when power immense  
 By its own weight may fall, new walls she seeks,  
 And stretches far, for her own sons, her realms :  
 So when in nests storks firmly fledged have grown  
 Fit for the lofty winds, in flocks they move 35  
 Forth from our climate to the tepid Nile.  
 Hail, noble soul, thus long for thee alone  
 A land is kept by tyrants never ruled.  
 The earth, erst bounded by a triple line,  
 And honouring bold COLUMBUS with a fourth ; 40  
 Reserves her fifth for thee, and for thy sway.  
 EUROPE and ASIA leave, and AFRIC's clime  
 Too happy, but for burning suns ; ALCIDES  
 Their deeds and bounds may fix : far hence remains  
 For thy survey a land, which not the rod 45  
 Of BABYLON, nor MACEDONIAN might,

NON MACEDUM invictæ vires, non PERSICA virtus  
Attigit, aut unquam LATIÆ feriere secures.  
NON illo soboles MAHOMETI mugit orbe :  
NON vafer HISPANUS, cœlo, superisque relictis, 50  
Sacra PAPÆ humano crudelia sanguine fecit.  
Illic mortales hominumque ignota propago ;  
Sive illi nostræ veniant ab origine gentis,  
Seu tandem à prisca FAUNORUM stirpe supersint  
Antiqua geniti terra, sine legibus urbes 55  
Sylvasque et pingues habitant civilibus agros :  
Et priscos referunt mores, vitamque sequuntur  
ITALIÆ antiquæ, et primi rude temporis ævum :  
Cum genitor nati fugiens SATURNUS ob iram  
In LATIO posuit sedem, rudibusque regendos 60  
In tenues vicos homines collegit ab agris.  
Aurea in hoc primùm populo cæpisse feruntur  
Secula, sicque homines vitam duxisse beati ;  
Ut simul argenti percurrens tempora, et æris,  
Degener in durum chalybem vilesceret tætas ; 65  
Rursus in antiquum, de quo descenderat, aurum

---

NOR PERSIC bravery ever yet has reached,  
NOR LATIAN axes yet have ever ruled.  
Not there the sect of MAHOMET hath roared ;  
NOR subtil SPANIARD, first his God renouncing, 50  
Offered the HOLY FATHER human blood.  
There mortals, and a race of men unknown,  
Whether from our own lineage first they sprung,  
Or of the stock of Faunus yet remain,  
Derived from mother earth, cities possess, 55  
Though lawless, and the woods and fertile fields.  
Old manners they revive, the life pursue  
Of ancient ITALY, and earliest time ;  
When father SATURN, fleeing Jove's dread ire,  
In Latium fixed his seat, and into towns 60  
Brought from rude fields the subjects of his sway.  
Here first, 'tis said, commenc'd the golden age,  
And men thus learned to live a happy life ;  
Yet still this age, at length to silver fallen,  
And next to brass, to iron hard at last ; 65  
Again to ancient gold, from which it sunk,

(Sic perhibent vates) ævo vertente rediret.  
 Fallor, an est tempus, revolutoque orbe videntur  
 Aurea pacificæ transmittere secula gentes?  
 Fallor enim, si quassatas tot cladibus urbes 70  
 Respicio, et passim lacerantes regna tyrannos :  
 Si MAHOMETIGENIS ASIAM LYBIAMQUE cruento  
 Marte premi, domitaque jugum cervice subire :  
 Jamque per EUROPE fines inhumane tribunal  
 BARBARI adorari domini, DACISQUE, PELASGISQUE 75  
 ÆMATHISQUE, omnique solo quod dividit HEBRUS,  
 Et quondam bello invictis, nunc MARTE sinistro  
 Angustos fines, parvamque tuentibus oram  
 PANNONIE populis, et prisca in gente LIBURNIS.  
 Tum verò in superos pugnas sine fine cieri 80  
 Patribus AUSONIIS : ardere in bella, necesque  
 SARMATICAS gentes : et adhuc à cædi recenti  
 HISPANUM sancto GALLUMQUE madere cruore.  
 Non sunt hæc auri, non sunt documenta, sed atrox  
 Ingenio referunt ferrum, et si dicere ferro 85  
 Deteriora mihi licet, intractabile saxum.

(So prophets tell) would finally revert.  
 Mistake I, or is this the eventful time,  
 When peaceful nations form this golden age?  
 Yes, I mistake, if cities I behold, 70  
 Shattered by force, and realms by tyrants torn ;  
 If ASIA, AFRIC, prest in bloody war  
 By SARACENS, bend to the servile yoke ;  
 And through all EUROPE a barbarian power  
 Is tremblingly ador'd, by DACIANS, GREEKS, 75  
 ÆMATHIANS, and the realm that HEBRUS parts,  
 PANNONIANS, once in war invincible,  
 Now, sad reverse ! guarding their small domains,  
 And the LIBURNIANS, anciently renowned.  
 Then too against high powers perpetual wars, 80  
 Caus'd by AUSONIANS priests : SARMATIAN tribes  
 Ardent for battle ; and yet warm with slaughter,  
 The GAUL and SPANIARD drenched in holy blood.  
 These, these, no proofs of gold, they rather prove  
 Atrocious iron, and, if worse than this 85  
 Aught may be named, the stone intractable.

At verò ad niveos alia si parte BRITANNOS  
Verto oculos animumque, quot, ô pulcherrima tellus,  
Testibus antiquo vitam traducis in auro?  
Namque quòd hoc summum colitur tibi numen honore 90  
Quo superi, atque omnis geniorum casta juventus  
Illius ad sacra jussa vices obit, arguit aurum.  
Quòd tam chara DEO tua scepra gubernet AMAZON,  
Quàm DEA, cum nondum cœlis ASTRÆA petitis  
Inter mortales regina erat, arguit aurum. 95  
Quòd colit haud ullis inclusas mænibus urbes  
Aurea libertas, et nescia ferre tyrannum  
Securam ætatem tellus agit, arguit aurum.  
Quòd regio nullis injuria gentibus, arma  
Arma licet ferruginea rubicunda quiete, 100  
Finitimis metuenda gerit tamen, arguit aurum.  
Quòd gladii, quòd mucrones, quòd pila, quòd hastæ  
In rastros abiere, et bello assueta juventus  
Pacem et amicitias dulces colit, arguit aurum.  
Denique si fas est auro connectere laudes 105  
Æris, et in pacis venerari tempore fortes ;

---

But if the eye and thought I hence advert  
To snow-white BRITONS ; O thou loveliest land,  
What proofs resistless of thy life of gold !  
For, that the sovereign DEITY by thee 90  
Is worshipp'd as divine, and thy chaste youth  
Regard his sacred mandates, argues gold.  
That, dear to God, a queen thy sceptre sways,  
As if the goddess, yet not fled to heaven,  
ASTRÆA ruled o'er mortals, argues gold. 95  
That golden freedom unwall'd cities rears,  
And that the land, which tyrant never bore,  
Is ever safe, and tranquil, argues gold.  
That, to no nation's harm, a region here  
Bears arms, all reddened with the rust of peace, 100  
But arms to neighbours dreadful, argues gold.  
That swords, and darts, that javelins too, and spears,  
To ploughshares turn, and youths inured to war.  
Seek peace and joys domestic, argues gold.  
In fine, if meet the praise of brass to blend 105  
With gold, and in mid peace to extol the brave,

Quot natos bello heroas, quot ahænea nutris  
 Pectora? sint testes procerum tot millia, testes  
 Mille duces, interque duces notissima mille  
 Illa cui assurgunt MUSÆ, quam conscia PALLAS 110  
 Lætior exaudit, GILBERTI gloria nostri.  
 Illius auxilium, et socialia prælia amici  
 Mirantur BELGÆ, et quamvis injustus IBERUS  
 Commemorat justas acies, domitasque per oras  
 Martia victrices formidat HIBERNIA turmas. 115  
 Illum oppugnatae quassatis turribus arces,  
 Illum expugnatae perruptis manibus urbes,  
 Fluminaque et portus capti, hostilique notatum  
 Sanguine submersæ meminere sub æquore classes.  
 Hic ubi per medios projectus SEQUANA CELTAS 120  
 Labitur, et nomen mox amissurus, et undas.  
 Omnia si desint, quantum est ingentibus ausis  
 Humani generis pro pace bonoque pacisci  
 Tam varios casus, freta tanta, pericula tanta?  
 Linquere adhuc teneram prolem, & dulcissima sacri 125  
 Oscula conjugii, numerantemque ordine longo

---

What heroes born for war, what brazen hearts  
 Thou rearest? Let the thousand chiefs attest,  
 The thousand veterans, and mid them most famed  
 Our GILBERT's glory, which the MUSES greet, 110  
 And conscious PALLAS gladly deigns to hear.  
 His aid, and federate battles, BELGIC friends  
 Admire, and the IBERIAN, though unjust,  
 Praises his arms; and, through her subject coasts,  
 Martial HIBERNIA dreads his conquering bands. 115  
 Him battered castles, with their shaken towers,  
 Him cities, gained by storm, with broken walls,  
 And streams, and captured ports, full well have known,  
 And fleets submerg'd beneath the briny deep:  
 Here, where SEQUANA, pouring through the CELTS, 120  
 Glides, soon to lose at once his name, and waves.  
 Were all things wanting, yet how great the emprise  
 To brave, for human peace and weal alone,  
 Chances so great, such seas, such perils dire?  
 To leave a tender offspring, and the sweets 125  
 Of wedlock, and Aucheria numbering o'er

AUCHERIAM digitis in mollibus, æquora mille  
 Formidanda modis, atque inter pauca relatos  
 AUCHERIOS exempla suos, fratremque patremque ;  
 Qui dum pro patriâ laudem et virtute sequuntur, 130  
 Obsessi in muris soli portisque CALETI,  
 Præposuere mori, quàm cum prodentibus urbem,  
 Et decus ALBIONUM, turpi superesse salute.

Quòd si parva loquor, nec adhuc fortasse fatenda est  
 Aurea in hoc iterum nostro gens vivere mundo, 135  
 Quid vetat ignotis ut possit surgere terris ?

Auguror, et faveat dictis DEUS, auguror annos,\*  
 In quibus haud illo secus olim principe in urbes  
 Barbara plebs coëat quàm cùm nova saxa vocaret  
 AMPHION THEBAS, TROJANA ad mœnia PHÆBUS. 140

Atque ubi sic ultrò junctas sociaverit ædes,  
 Deinde dabit leges custoditurus easdem ;  
 In quibus ignari cives fraudumque, dolique,  
 A solida assuescant potius virtute beari ;  
 Quàm genio et molli liquentia corpora vita 145  
 In Venærem ignavam, pinguemque immergere luxum :

In long array, the dangers of the seas,  
 And, midst a few examples, her own kin  
 AUCHERIAN, both her brother and her sire,  
 Who, in their country's cause, for virtuous praise, 130  
 Alone besieg'd in CALAIS' walls and gates,  
 Would rather die, than basely live with those,  
 Who, with the city, Albion's fame betrayed.

But, if small things I tell, nor yet confest  
 A golden race within our world revives, 135  
 What hinders it to rise in lands unknown ?

I augur, HEAVEN fulfil ! I augur years,  
 When, under this their chief, the barbarous throng  
 Shall into cities crowd, as when of old  
 AMPHION call'd to THEBES the rugged stones ; 140  
 Or PHÆBUS, to the lofty walls of TROY.

When he shall thus the social compact form,  
 Laws he shall give, laws which himself shall guard ;  
 By these the citizens, in frauds unskilled,  
 May learn from virtue to derive their bliss,  
 Rather than seek it in voluptuous ease, 145

Quàm nummos, quam lucra sequi, quam propter honores  
 Vivere ad arbitrium stolidæ mutabile plebis.  
 Non illic generi virtus, opibusque premetur  
 Libertas populi, non contra in deside vulgo 150  
 Oppugnabit opes civis sub nomine pauper :  
 Quisque suo partem fælix in jure capesset.  
 Tum sua magna parens ingenti fænore tellus  
 Exiguo sudore dabit bona : cura juventam  
 Nulla adiget senio, nec sic labor ocia tollet, 155  
 Quo minus è virtute petant sua commoda cives.  
 O mihi fælicem si fas conscendere puppim :  
 Et tecum patriâ (pietas ignosce) relictâ  
 Longinquum penetrare fretum, penetrare sorores  
 Mecum unâ AONIAS, illic exordia gentis 160  
 Prima novæ ad seros transmittere posse nepotes !  
 Sed me fata vetant, memoraturúmque canorâ  
 Inclyta facta tubâ, ad clades miserabilis ISTRÏ  
 Invitum retrahunt. His his me fata reservent :

---

And riot in the luxuries of life ;  
 Rather than gain pursue, and for renown  
 Live at the will of a capricious mob.  
 There virtue ne'er shall be by birth oppress'd,  
 Nor by enormous wealth the people's freedom ; 150  
 Nor yet in vulgar sloth, affecting rights,  
 The wretch invade by force his neighbour's wealth ;  
 Each happy shall his own by right enjoy.  
 Then parent earth with rich increase shall yield  
 Her products without pains : no care shall drive 155  
 Youth to old age ; nor toil so banish ease,  
 But that from virtue men shall seek their boon.  
 O might I in the happy ship embark,  
 And (Piety forgive !), my country left,  
 The distant sea explore, and in my train  
 The AONIAN sisters, there the earliest rise 160  
 Of a new nation might I but convey  
 In song heroic down to latest time !  
 But me the fates forbid, and, tuned to sing  
 Great deeds in verse sonorous, back recall,  
 Reluctant, to the wretched ISTRÏAN wars.  
 For these, for these, me destiny reserves :

---



Non deerit vates, illo qui cantet in orbe 165  
Aut veteres populos, aut nostra incognita cœlo  
Munera naturæ ; dum spreto HELICONE manebit  
Illa AGANIPPÆIS sacrata OXONIA Musis.

Dum loquor in viridi festinant gramine Nymphæ,  
Impediuntque comas lauro, et florentis olivæ 170  
Frondebis armantur, dominatricemque frequentes  
Oceani immensi longè venerantur ELISAM.

Illa autem ad gelidum celsis de turribus amnem  
Prospicit, et jamjam TAMESINO in patre tuetur  
Paulatim obliquis GILEBERTUM albescere velis. 175

Sic dea Peliaco spectasse è vertice PALLAS  
Fertur Iasonios comites, ad PHASIDOS undas  
Vix benè dum notis committere carbasa ventis.

DIVA fave, nutuque tuo suscepta parari  
Vela juva ; si sola geris dignissima totum 180  
Talibus auspiciis proferri sceptrâ per orbem.  
Propterea quia sola tuos ita pace beasti  
Tranquilla populos, ut jam te principe possint

But ne'er shall be a poet wanting, who, 165  
In that new world, may ancient people sing,  
Or nature's blessings, to our sky unknown ;  
While, HELICON disdained, OXFORD remains  
To AGANIPPÆAN Muses consecrate.

While I yet speak, Nymphs on the verdant grass  
Haste, and with laurel their fair locks entwine, 170  
Their brows with never fading olive deck,  
And in thick bands extol ELIZA's name,  
The mighty empress of the boundless deep.

She from the lofty turrets looks the while  
To the cold stream, and in old THAMES beholds  
GILBERT with sails slow whitening to the view. 175  
Thus erst the goddess PALLAS viewed from heaven  
The band of Jason at fam'd COLCHIS' waves,  
Unfurl their canvass to the untried winds.

Great QUEEN, be thou propitious, aid the sails  
By thy own patronage thus far prepared ;  
Since thou a sceptre dost alone sustain 180  
Worthy, with omens such, to rule the world.  
As thou alone hast Britons blest with peace,  
Let them beneath thy princely sway have power

Augere imperii fines. Quia sola videris  
 Quo niveæ CHARITES, quo corpore DELIA virgo 185  
 Pingitur, et justo si sit pro teste vetustas.  
 Talibus audimus quondam de matribus ortos  
 SEMIDEOS homines : tali est de sanguine magnus  
 Sive HECTOR genitus, sive HECTORE major ACHILLES :  
 Duntaxat sine fraude ulla, sine crimine possint 190  
 Ulla tibi veterum conferri nomina matrum,  
 Quæ sexum factis superas, quæ patribus audes,  
 NYMPHA, diis dignas laudes æquare LATINIS.  
 Mentior infelix, nisi sic in corpore virtus  
 Lucet formoso, ceu quæ preciosior auro est 195  
 Gemma, tamen pariter placituro clauditur auro.  
 Mentior, et taceo, nisi sola audiris ubique  
 Induperatorum timor aut amor, inter et omnes  
 Securam requiem peragis tutissima casus :  
 Dum reliqui reges duro quasi carcere clausi 200  
 Sollicitis lethi dapibus, plenoque fruuntur  
 Terrificis monstris furtiva per ocia somno.

---

To stretch the bounds of empire. Thou alone  
 Seem'st like the snow white GRACES, or the form 185  
 In which, if ancient story claim belief,  
 The DELIAN virgin is exactly drawn.  
 Once, we are told, from matrons such as these  
 Sprung DEMIGODS : from blood like this great HECTOR,  
 Or famed ACHILLES, greater still than he.  
 Yet without fraud, or crime, let any names 190  
 Of ancient matrons be compared with thee,  
 Who in great deeds thy sex surpasses, who,  
 O NYMPH, darest rival even LATIAN sires,  
 And claim renown, full worthy of their gods.  
 Hapless I err, unless in a fair form 195  
 Shines virtue, as the gem, worth more than gold,  
 Is set in gold, that yet alike will please.  
 I err, and own my fault, unless alone  
 Thou art of potentates the fear, or love,  
 And, midst all hazards, safely hast repose :  
 While other princes, as in prison pent, 200  
 Partake their dainties charged with deadly fear,  
 And sleep, at furtive moments, terror filled.

Mentior et taceo, solam nisi vivere cives  
Æternùm cupiunt : quando nec verbere torvo,  
Nec cædis pœnæve thronum formidine firmas : 205  
Sed tibi tot meritis majestas parta, et inermis  
Ad patulos residet custos clementia postes :  
Ut quot penè rei justum meruere tribunal,  
Tot veniam grato narrent sermone clientes.  
Nec tamen admittis, nisi quod justumque piumque 210  
Agnoscit probitas, et quæ potes omnia, solis  
Legibus usurpas cautas sanctissima vires.  
Nec mala formidas : si quidem quasi fune ligatur  
Consilio fortuna tibi : Nullum impia terret  
In castris BELLONA tuis : Quin pronus adorat 215  
GRADIVUS tua jussa pater, sequiturque vocantem  
Quacunque ingrederis grato victoria plausu.  
Dumque fores aliis, vitamque et regna tuetur  
Janitor externus, cingunt tua limina cives :  
Dumque aliis sordet sapientia regibus, almo 220  
PEGASIDUM tu fonte satur, tot APOLLINIS artes

---

I err, and own my fault, unless thy subjects  
Wish thou mayst live for ever ; since thy throne  
Thou strengthenest not by sanguinary dread ; 205  
But merit gains thee power, and Clemency  
Sits guardian at the open gates, unarmed :  
And numbers of the guilty, justly doomed,  
Their pardon grateful to the world proclaim.  
But nought, save that which probity approves 210  
As just and pious, thy indulgence gains ;  
And thou, who hast all power, with sacred heed,  
Drawest all thy vigour from the laws alone.  
Nor evil fear'st thou : fortune to thy prudence  
Is close allied : BELLONA in thy camps 215  
Impious scares none : Prostrate her father MARS  
Reveres thy mandates, and where'er thou mov'st,  
Victory, with glad applause, thy steps pursues.  
While foreign guards at other palace doors  
Heedful their monarch's life and realm protect,  
Thy threshold thy own citizens surround :  
And while to other kings wisdom imparts 220  
A niggard portion, thou, at the fair fount

Aurea vaticina fundis quasi flumina lingua.  
 Nil nostri invenere dies, nil prisca vetustas  
 Prodidit, in linguis peragunt commercia nullis  
 CHRISTIADUM gentes, quas te, divina virago, 225  
 Justius AONLE possint jactare sorores.  
 Audiit hæc mundus, cunctisque in finibus ardet  
 Imperio parère tuo : et quæ fortè recusat  
 Miratur vires regio tamen. Hinc tua scepra  
 Incurva MAHOMETIGENÆ cervice salutant : 230  
 Hinc tua pugnaces properant ad fœdera GALLI :  
 Dumque sibi metuit toties tibi victus IBERUS,  
 Nescia ROMANO GERMANIA Marte domari  
 Quærit amicitias BRITONUM : procul oscula mittit  
 Virgineis pedibus LATIUM, longèque remoti 235  
 PANNONES in tutos optant coalescere fines.  
 Quinetiam quæ submisso diademate nuper  
 Obtulit invictis fascesque fidemque BRITANNIS,  
 Nonne vides passis ut crinibus horrida dudum  
 Porrigit ingentem lugubris AMERICA dextram ? 240

---

PEGASIAN fill'd, pour'st from prophetic tongue  
 Arts APOLLONEAN as in golden streams.  
 Nought have our days discovered, nought past time  
 Produc'd, the CHRISTIAN nations in no tongues 225  
 Commerce maintain, which, noble heroine,  
 The AONIAN band may better boast than thee.  
 This knows the world, and in all regions longs  
 To obey thy empire ; and what land perchance  
 Denies, admires, thy power. Thy sceptre hence  
 With neck unbent the SARACENS salute : 230  
 Hence warring FRENCHMEN hasten to thy leagues :  
 And while the SPANIARD dreads thy oft felt force,  
 GERMANIA, loth to yield to ROMAN power  
 Seeks BRITAIN'S friendship : distant LATIUM sends  
 Kisses for virgin feet ; and, far remote, 235  
 PANNONIANS wish within safe bounds to press.  
 Yea more : Seest thou not how, with lowly crown,  
 AMERICA, who late her faith hath pledged,  
 And feälty, to BRITONS unsubdued,  
 Even now, all horrid with dishevelled hair,  
 Mournful to thee her huge right hand extends ? 240

Et numquid lacrymas, inquit, soror ANGLIA, nostras  
 Respicias, et dura nobiscum in sorte gemiscis?  
 An vero nescisse potes, quæ tempora quantis  
 Cladibus egerimus? postquam insatiabilis auri,  
 Nam certè non ullus amor virtutis IBEROS 245  
 In nostrum migrare solum, pietasve coëgit.  
 Ex illo, quæ sacra prius væsana litabam  
 Manibus infernis, sperans meliora, tuumque  
 Discere posse DEUM, jubeor mortalibus aras  
 Erigere, et mutas statuas truncoque precata 250  
 Nescio quod demens ROMANUM numen adoro.  
 Cur trahor in terras? si mens est lucida, puris  
 Cur DEUS in cœlis rectâ non quæritur? aut si  
 A nobis cœlum petitur, cur sæpe videmus  
 Igne, fame, ferro subigi, quocumque reatu 255  
 Ænotriæ sedis majestas læsa labascit?  
 Non sic religio, non sic me iudice gaudet  
 Defendi sua regna DEUS, quòd si optimus ille est;  
 Quòd si cuncta potest, et nullis indiget armis.

ENGLAND, my sister, dost thou nought regard  
 Our tears, she cries, nor groanest at our lot?  
 Canst thou a stranger be to those drear times  
 Deathful we pass'd? since the insatiate love  
 Of gold, for sure not love of virtue, urged, 245  
 Or piety, the SPANIARDS to our soil.  
 Since I the magic rites have ceas'd to pay  
 To powers infernal, hoping better things,  
 Hoping thy GOD to learn, I am required  
 Altars to raise to mortals, and entreating  
 Dumb stocks and statues I, infatuate, 250  
 Some Roman god, I know not what, adore.  
 Why am I dragg'd to earth? If pure the mind,  
 Why is not GOD directly sought in heaven?  
 Or if heaven right we seek, why do we see  
 Oppressions caused by famine, fire, and sword; 255  
 Whene'er a crime offends the Papal throne?  
 Not thus religion, not thus GOD delights,  
 If right I judge, his kingdom to defend,  
 If of all beings he indeed is best;  
 Or if omnipotent, he needs not arms.

Mitto queri cædes, exhaustaque mœnia bello : 260  
 Mitto queri in viles tot libera corpora servos  
 Abjecta, immanique jugum Busiride dignum.  
 Te tantum fortuna animet tua, te tua virtus :  
 Si tibi tam plenis habitantur mœnibus urbes,  
 Ut nisi in excelsum crescant, cœloque minentur 265  
 Ædes aëriæ ; quanquam latissima, desit  
 Terra tamen populo : Si tot tua flumina nigrant  
 Turrigeras arces imitatae mole carinæ,  
 Quot non illa natant eadem tua flumina cygni.  
 Si tibi jam sub sole jacens penetratus utroque est 270  
 Mundus, utroque jacens peragrata est terra sub axe.  
 Ni frustra gelidam vectus WILLOBEUS ad arcton  
 Illa in gente jacet, cui dum sol circinat umbras,  
 Dimidio totus vix forsitan occidit anno.  
 Ni frustra quæsit iter, duraque bipenni 275  
 Illo FROBISERUS reditum sibi in æquore fecit,  
 Horridum ubi semper pelagus, glacieque perenni  
 Frigora nativos simulant inimitia montes.

---

I pass by slaughters, and towns drained by war : 260  
 I pass by numerous freemen turned to slaves,  
 And a hard yoke worthy Busiris dire.  
 Thee let thy fortune, thee thy valour rouse,  
 Since now thy cities are so closely filled,  
 That, if not upward built, and airy seats 265  
 Threaten the sky ; the earth, however broad,  
 For people would be scant : Since all thy streams  
 By ships are darkened, ships, like lofty towers,  
 More numerous than the swans, those streams that swim.  
 Since in both hemispheres there lies a world 270  
 By thee explored, and regions now remain  
 Survey'd already underneath each pole.  
 Unless in vain, borne to the frozen north,  
 WILLOUGHBY lies, where, measuring the shades,  
 The sun scarce sets entire for half the year.  
 Unless in vain hath FROBISHER his course 275  
 Distant pursued, and with the hardy steel  
 His passage opened back, in yonder sea,  
 Where is perpetual horror, and where snows  
 Form mountains hardened by perennial ice.

Ni frustrà per CIMMERIOS, sylvisque propinqua  
Flumina RIPHÆIS eoa profectus ad usque est 280  
Mœnia JENCISONUS, PERSASQUE et proxima PERSIS  
BACTRA, et BACTRORUM confines regibus INDOS.  
Ni frustrà, quod mortali tot secla negarant,  
Hâc tuus immensum nuper DRACUS ambiit orbem,  
Quà patri OCEANO clausas circumdare terras 285  
Concessit natura viam, mediaque meare  
Tellure, et duplici secludere littore mundos.  
Jam si fortuna, jam si virtute sequare  
Digna tua ; sunt monstra mihi, sunt vasta gigantum  
Corpora, quæ magno cecidisse sub HERCULE non sit 290  
Dedecus, OGYGIUS non quæ aspernetur IACCUS.  
Quæ si indigna putas, tantaque in pace beata  
Aversare meos multo ut tibi sanguine fines  
Invidiosa petas : est nobis terra propinqua,  
Et tantum bimari capiens discrimen in ISTHMO. 295  
Hanc tibi jamdudum primi invenere BRITANNI,

---

Unless in vain hath JENKINSON advanced  
Through the CIMMERII, and the rivers near 280  
RIPHÆAN forests, even to eastern walls,  
To PERSIA, and to BACTRIA, PERSIA nigh,  
And INDIA, bordering on the BACTRIAN realms.  
Unless in vain, what numerous ages past  
To mortal had denied, of late thy DRAKE  
The world immense hath compass'd, where heaven gave 285  
A passage to old Ocean to surround  
The enclosed lands, and midway pass the earth,  
And by a double shore to part the world.  
If deeds worthy thy fortune thou pursue,  
Worthy thy valour ; know that I have monsters,  
Vast forms of giants, which 'twere no disgrace 290  
Even had they fallen beneath great HERCULES,  
And which OGYGIAN BACCHUS would not spurn.  
But if thou deem'st these base, and, blest with peace,  
Thou wouldst not for thyself my borders seek  
At price of blood : near us a region lies,  
And by an ISTHMUS only separate. 295  
This first the BRITONS long since found for thee,  
What time the valiant CABOT in our world,

Tum cum magnanimus nostra in regione CABOTUS  
 Proximus à magno ostendit sua vela COLUMBO.  
 Hæc neque vicina nimiùm frigescit ab areto,  
 Sole nec immodico in steriles torretur arenas : 300  
 Frigus et æstatem justo moderamine servat,  
 Sive leves auras, grati spiracula cœli,  
 Seu diæ telluris opes, et numerâ curas.  
 Pone age te digno tua scepra in honore, meoque  
 Junge salutarem propius cum littore dextram. 305  
 Sit mihi fas aliquam per te sperare quietem,  
 Vicinoque bono lætum illucescere solem. .  
 Quòd si consiliis, superùm fatisque negatum est  
 Durare immensum magna infortunia tempus :  
 Quòd si de immerita justum est cervice revelli 310  
 Ignarum imperii dominum, populique regendi ;  
 Quòd si nulla unquam potuit superesse potestas,  
 Ni pia flexilibus pareret clementia frenis  
 Obsequium. A miti quæsita potentia CYRO  
 Amissa est sævæ soboli. Parcendo subegit 315  
 Tot reges MACEDUM virtus, tot postera sensim

Next to the great COLUMBUS shew'd his sails.  
 This neighbouring region neither chills with cold,  
 Nor yet by heat to sterile sands is burnt : 300  
 Just temperature it equably preserves,  
 Whether the gentle airs, sweet breath of heaven,  
 Or earth's best gifts and products are thy choice.  
 Come, stretch thy sceptre where its regal sway  
 Befits thine honour, and thy right hand join 305  
 Kindly propitious to my distant shore.  
 Through thee let me indulge some hope of rest,  
 And a glad sun beam on thy neighbour's bliss.  
 But the high counsels and decrees of Heaven  
 Permit not mighty evils long to last :  
 And just it is, that from the guiltless neck 310  
 Be torn the tyrant lord unskill'd to rule ;  
 Nor ever could an empire long endure,  
 Where clemency paternal did not win  
 To flexile reins obedience. That large power,  
 By the mild CYRUS gained, was lost entire 315  
 By his fierce offspring. Whatsoever kings  
 By generous valour MACEDON subdued,



Abscidit a parto tandem inclementia regno.  
Et quod ROMULEIS crevit sub patribus olim  
Imperium, diri semper minuère NERONES. 319

---

All these succeeding rigour gradual  
Cut off, at length, from the acquired realm.  
That empire, too, reared by the ROMAN sires,  
The barbarous NEROS rapidly reduced. 319

---

TO THE COMMITTEE OF PUBLICATIONS FOR THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

EVERY document, which elucidates the numbers, characters, or condition, of any of the Indian tribes of North-America, at whatever period, is doubtless worthy of preservation. The entire extirpation of some tribes, and the gradual diminution of the rest, furnishes a subject of affecting contemplation to the man of feeling, and of curious investigation to the philosopher. I offer you, therefore, for the Collections of the Society, an account of the present number of the Moheagan tribe, situated between Norwich and New-London; a tribe once distinguished in the annals of New-England, but now so reduced, as eásily to admit an enumeration of the individuals who compose it. On the authenticity and correctness of this account you may entirely rely; for, in passing through Moheagan, the last September, I obtained it of JAMES HAUGHTON, Esquire, one of the Overseers of this tribe, who lives within its limits. To this paper, which is exactly copied, I have nothing to add, respecting the *present* state of the Moheagans, but what that gentleman related to me: That the land belonging to these Indians, consists of about 2700 acres; that it was holden by them in common, till the year 1790, when it was divided to each family, by the legislature of Connecticut; that a convenient school house has been built for the benefit of their children, by the legislature; that John Cooper, the richest man in the tribe, possessing a yoke of oxen and two cows, was then their religious teacher; that there were not more than 80 persons of this tribe remaining; and that,

that, with all their advantages for improvement in agriculture and other useful knowledge, they were still distinguished by the characteristic indolence, intemperance, and improvidence of Indians.

A. HOLMES.

Feb. 1, 1804.

THE FAMILIES OF THE TRIBE OF MOHEAGAN, AND NUMBER OF EACH FAMILY.

			[Brought up . . .]	39
Henry Qurqurquid's family	2	Eunice Occom and her mother	2	
Moses Mazzeen and Hannah Mazzeen	2	Joseph Shentup's family	4	
Ezekiel Mazzeen's family	5	Joshua Shentup's family	5	
John Tantequiggen's family	3	Henry Shentup's family	2	
Martha Johnson	1	Moses Shentup's family	2	
Lucy Tocomwos	1	Hannah Shentup & her daughter	2	
Isaiah Hoscoat's family	2	Martha Tantequiggen's family	4	
Josiah Hoscoat & Anne Hoscoat	2	John Cooper's family	4	
Robert Ashpo's* family	3	Jacob Cooper's family	2	
Hannah Ashpo, Samuel's widow	1	John Cooper, jun.'s family	2	
Andrew Ashpo's family	3	David Tantequiggen's children	2	
Jenne Ashpo's family	3	Solomon Cooper's family	2	
Noah Uncas's family	3	John George	1	
Benoni Occom's† family	3	Eliz. Cooper, Sam's widow	1	
Jonathan Occom	1	Great Lucy Cooper & her daughter	2	
John Uncas	1	Simon Jorjoy	1	
Hannah Uncas	1	Joshua Cooper's family	5	
Elizabeth Uncas, John's widow	1	Joseph Johnson	1	
Elizabeth Uncas, Samuel's widow	1	Annie Robins	1	
	39		84	

Indians belonging to Moheagan, in the year of our Lord 1799.	3 families of 5 each	-	-	15
	3 of 4	-	-	12
	6 of 3	-	-	18
	13 of 2	-	-	26
	13 single ones	-	-	13
				84

\* One of this name and tribe, Samuel Ashpo, accompanied the Rev. Mr. Kirkland on his first mission into the Indian country. See Narrative of the Indian Charity School in Lebanon, 55, 56.

† The celebrated minister, Mr. Samson Occom, was a Moheagan of this family.

ADDITIONAL MEMOIR OF THE MOHEAGANS, AND OF UNCAS,  
THEIR ANCIENT SACHEM.

IF the number of the Moheagans, at the time of the first settlement of New-England, has been recorded by any of the early historians, it is not now recollected. Some judgment may be formed of it from a remark in a State Paper, published by the Commissioners for the United Colonies in 1645, by which it appears, that Uncas, the Moheagan Sagamore, at the time of his great battle with Myantonomy, in 1643, had between four and five hundred warriors.\* Supposing him to have had four hundred and fifty, and allowing the proportion of the warriors to the whole number of inhabitants to have been as three to ten, which was the proportion of the warriors to the whole number of inhabitants in the Powhatan confederacy, at the first settlement of Virginia; † the whole number of  
Moheagans

---

\* "Myantonomy without any provocacon from Uncas (unlesse the disapoyntment of former plotts provoaked) and sodainely without denouncing warr, came upon the Mohegans *with nine hundred or a thousand men*, when Uncas *had not half so many* to defend himself."

*Hazard's Historical Collections, II. 47.*

This account has the sanction of the commissioners; for it is extracted from "A Declaracon of former passages and proceedings betwixt the English and the Narrohiggansets, with their confederates, wherein the grounds and justice of the ensuing warr are opened and cleared." Published by order of the Commissioners for the United Colonies at Boston, the sixth of the sixth month, 1645.

See also Mather's Magnalia, VII. 44. Callender's Century Sermon, 72.

A MS. quoted by Dr. Trumbull, represents Miantonimoh (so the word is often spelt) as having 900, and Uncas 600 men. History of Connecticut, I. 131. But the Doctor does not insert this in the text.

† Jefferson's Notes on Virginia, under Query XI. Dr. Trumbull does not allow so great a number of warriors to the whole number of Indians in Connecticut. "The Pequots, Moheagans, and Nehanicks could, doubtless, muster a thousand men. The Pequots only were estimated at seven hundred warriors. Upon the lowest computation we therefore find, at least three thousand warriors on the river Connecticut, and in the eastern part of the colony. If we reckon every third person a bowman, as some have imagined, then the whole number of Indians, in the town and tract mentioned, would be nine thousands; but *if there were but one to four or five*, as is most probable, then there were twelve or fifteen thousands." Hist. Connect. I. 29. This ratio would make the number of the Moheagans much larger, than I have computed, in the text.

Moheagans under Uncas must have been 1500. If we suppose Uncas to have had 500 warriors; his tribe, by the same ratio, must have contained nearly 1700 people.

In an account of the State of Connecticut, given by the General Assembly of that colony in 1680, in answer to inquiries of the lords of the committee of colonies, the "Indian neighbours of Connecticut" are estimated to be about 500 fighting men.\* But what Indians, beside the Moheagans, might be included in this account, cannot probably, at this distance of time, be ascertained. In 1705, the Moheagans are said to have "consisted of a hundred and fifty warriors, one hundred of whom had been in the actual service of the country that very year."† It also appears, that there was about the same number of fighting men in 1725, within the memory of the late secretary Wylls of Connecticut.‡

In 1774, when a census of the inhabitants of Connecticut was taken, there were in that colony 1363 Indians. Among the answers returned, that year, by the governor and company, to the heads of inquiry, relative to the state and condition of Connecticut, the answer to Question XVII. [What number of Indians have you; and how are they inclined?] was, "There are thirteen hundred and sixty-three; many of them dwell in English families; the rest in small tribes in various places: they are in peace, good order, and inclined to idleness." By the "account of the number of inhabitants in the colony of Connecticut," taken in 1774, and published the same year by order of the General Assembly, it appears, that of the 1363 Indians in the colony, 842 were within the county of New-London. The return of Indians for that county is as follows :

\* Chalmers' Annals, I. 307—310.

† Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut, I. 448.

‡ President Stiles' MS. Itinerary.

TOWNS.	Indian Males under twenty.	Indian Females under twenty	Indian Males above twenty.	Indian Females above twenty.	Total Indians.
Groton,	55	36	39	56	186
Lyme,	21	18	23	42	104
Killingworth,	6	2	4	2	14
NEW-LONDON,	64	48	35	59	206
Norwich,	16	14	11	20	61
Preston,	11	9	1	9	30
Saybrook,	3		1		4
Stonington,	73	80	28	56	237
	249	207	142	244	842

In this enumeration, Moheagan was doubtless included in the township of New-London. If all the Indians within this township be set to Moheagan, the entire number is but 206. The Indians at Moheagan, therefore, instead of constituting "the greater part," as it has been affirmed,\* were not one sixth part of the whole number of Indians then in the colony.

The Pequot and Moheagan country lay to the south and east of the Nehanticks [in Lyme], from Connecticut river to the eastern boundary line of the colony, and north-east or north to its northern boundary line. This tract was nearly thirty miles square, and included the counties of New-London, Windham, and the principal part of the county of Tolland.† Historians have treated of the Pequots and Moheagans as two distinct tribes; and have described the Pequot country as lying principally within the three towns of New-London, Groton, and Stonington. All the tract above this, as far north and east as has been described, they have represented as the Moheagan country. Most, if not all, of the towns in this tract hold their lands by virtue of deeds from Uncas, or his successors, the Moheagan sachems. Dr. Trumbull, however,

\* Coll. of Hist. Soc. I. 210.

† Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 28. His authorities are President Clap's MSS. and Chandler's map of the Moheagan country.

however, the accurate and judicious historian of Connecticut, thinks it very doubtful whether the Moheagans were a distinct nation from the Pequots. "They appear to have been a part of the same nation, named from the place of their situation."† On the conquest of the Pequots by the English, the Moheagans claimed most of the Pequot country as their hereditary right; either on account of this affinity, or because that territory, which they claimed, had been wrested from them by the Pequots; or, because Uncas their new sovereign, was originally a Pequot, and assisted too, in the conquest of the common enemy. When the Moheagan country was surveyed in 1705, a map of it was drawn, by which the boundaries were as follow: "From a large rock in Connecticut river, near eight mile island in the bounds of Lyme, eastward, through Lyme, New-London, and Groton, to Ah-yo-sup-suck, a pond in the north-eastern part of Stonington; on the east, from this pond northward, to Mah-man-suck, another pond; thence to Egunk-sauka-poug, whetstone hills; thence to Man-hum-squeeg, the whetstone country. From this boundary, the line ran southwest, a few miles, to Acquiunk, the upper falls in Quinibaug river. Thence the line ran a little north of west through Pomfret, Ashford, Willington, and Tolland, to Mo-she-nup-suck, the notch of the mountain, now known to be the notch in Bolton mountain. From thence the line ran southerly, through Bolton, Hebron, and East Haddam, to the first mentioned bounds." This, it appears, was the Pequot country, "to the whole of which," says Dr. Trumbull, "the Moheagans laid claim, after the conquest of the Pequot nation, except some part of New-London, Groton, and Stonington, which had been the chief seat of that warlike tribe. The Moheagans claimed this tract as their hereditary country; and the Wabbequasset territory, which lay north of it, they claimed by virtue of conquest."\*

The

---

† Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 28.

\* Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 443, 444. The last mentioned territory was conquered from the Nipmuck Indians, whose principal seat was about the great ponds in Oxford, in Massachusetts; but their territory

The occasion of this survey was, a claim brought forward, in 1704, by Owaneco, the son of Uncas, to certain lands in Connecticut. The Masons and others, on this occasion, preferred a petition and complaint to queen Anne, in favour of the Moheagan Indians. The Masons claimed the lands, purchased by their ancestor deputy governor John Mason, in virtue of a deed given to him by Uncas, in 1659, while he acted as agent of the colony; and denied the legality of his surrender of them to the colony, in the General Assembly, the next year. They insisted, that it respected nothing more than the jurisdiction right, and that the title to the soil was vested in their family, as guardians or overseers of the Indians. This celebrated "Moheagan Case" was kept in agitation nearly seventy years. It was always, on a legal hearing, determined in favour of the Colony. The final decision was by king George III. in council, just before the late revolutionary war.†

The Assembly of Connecticut, in 1722, confirmed a purchase, made six or seven years previously from the Moheagan Indians, upon the Moheagan hills, part of their reserved lands, to governor Saltonstall, major Livingston, Dennie, Rogers and Bradshaw. This was constituted the North Parish of New-London.\*

UNCAS, whose name is still retained in the Moheagan tribe, though without any pre-eminence of rank or power, made a conspicuous figure in the early colonial annals. He was a uniform, and very important friend of the English, at the time of their first settlement in Connecticut, and for many subsequent years.† He was a Pequot, by birth, and of the royal line, both by his father and mother;

---

tory extended southwardly into Connecticut more than twenty miles. This was called, The Wabbequasset and Whetstone country; and sometimes, The Moheagan conquered country, as Uncas had conquered and added it to his sachemdom. Trumbull, *ibid.* I. 31. His authorities are President Clap's MSS. and Chandler's Map of the Moheagan country.

‡ Trumbull's Hist. I. 434—449. \* Douglass' Summary, II. 197.

† The Moheagans, while under Uncas, were sometimes *insolent* toward the English; but never, as a body, actually hostile. In 1647, these Indians, as well as the Narragansets, by new *insolencies*, obliged the English to demand satisfaction. Mather's *Magnalia*, VII. 45.

mother; and his wife was a daughter of Tatobam, one of the Pequot sachems. He appears to have been a captain, or petty sachem, under Sassacus the great prince of the nation. When the English first came to Connecticut, he was in a state of rebellion against him, in consequence of some misunderstanding between them; and his power and influence among the Indians were inconsiderable. Having revolted from his tribe, he had been expelled his country. § In these circumstances of degradation and infamy, it must have required no common enterprise and talents, to obtain the sovereignty of another tribe, and to fix the supreme power in his own family. Uncas, however, found means to effect these aspiring projects. He soon became the sagamore of the Moheagans; and he transmitted the sovereignty of this tribe to his own descendants.

On the extermination of the Pequots in 1637, the English divided the miserable remnant of that devoted tribe between the Moheagans and the Narragansets; and those of them, who fell to the lot of the Moheagans, became subject to the government of Uncas.\* He seems, however,

---

§ Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 28, 449.

\* Neal's New-England, I. 182. Chalmers' Annals, I. 291. Increase Mather's Troubles in New-England, by reason of the Indians, 39. The number of Pequots, who survived the famous Swamp Fight, was about 200, beside women and children. Of this number the English gave 80 to Miantonimoh; 20 to Ninnigret; and the other 100 to Uncas; to be received and treated as their men. This division was made at Hartford in September 1638; at which time, among other articles, it was covenanted, That the Pequots should never more inhabit their native country, nor be called Pequots, but Narragansets, and Moheagans. *Trumbull's Hist. Connect.* I. 87.

Ninnigret was one of the two chief sachems of the Narraganset Indians, and was at the head of the Nianticks. His principal seat was at Westerly, which formerly belonged to Stonington, but is now a town in Rhode-Island. By refusing to join the other Narraganset Indians, in king Phillip's war, he preserved his lands for his posterity. A few Indians of his tribe were living on these lands, when Mr. Callender preached his Century Discourse, in 1738. Few, if any, of the Narragansets were at that time remaining in Rhode-Island Colony. "They do now," says this writer, "in a manner cease to be a people" *Callender's Century Discourse*, 78. *Trumbull's Hist. Conn.* I. 360. I find, in President Stiles's Itinerary, an anecdote about Ninnigret, which is inserted



ever, to have swayed the sceptre with a heavy hand; for the Pequots withdrew themselves from his dominion, and the Commissioners found it necessary, in one instance to fine him,† and repeatedly to admonish him, for his tyranny.§

He was a resolute and brave warrior; and, if oppressive to his subjects, he was proportionably formidable to his enemies. On the murder of one of his principal Indians, by some of the men of Sequassen, a sachem on Connecticut river, he demanded satisfaction of that chief. It was refused. Uncas and Sequassen fought. Sequassen was overcome. Uncas killed a number of his men, and burned his wigwams.

served here, because illustrative of the Indian customs. Ninnegret married a Pequot, of high blood. Awaking, one night, after intoxication, and finding his sunck [queen] lying near another Indian, he, in a fit of jealousy, took his knife, and cut three strokes on each of her cheeks, in derision for adultery, and sent her home to the Pequots. This appears to have been the Indian mark of infamy, for unfaithfulness to the marriage bed, if a woman were of royal blood. This stigma on the wife of Ninnegret took place about 45 years before Dr. Stiles was informed of it in 1761. A lady told him that she had often seen Ninnigret's squaw with those marks of her divorce.

† Hazard's Collect. II. 93. The fine was 100 fathoms of wampam.

§ Ibid. II. 89—91. Obachickquid one of the chief men of the Pequots, in 1647, complained to the Commissioners, that Uncas had taken away his wife. They generally, at that time, complained, that he was unjust and tyrannical; that he drew wampam from them from time to time on new pretences; that, in their play, if a Pequot won of a Moheagan, he could not get payment if he complained; that "Uncas carried it partially to the Moheagans, and threatened the Pequots." See the complaints of the Pequots, and the orders of the Commissioners entire, *ibid.*—The Commissioners ordered, that Uncas should restore Obachickquid his wife, and "that he be duly reprov'd for any passage of tyrannicall government over the Pequatts, soe far as they may be proved, and seriously enformed that the English Colonies cannot own or protect him in any unlawful much lesse treacherous and outrageous courses, but they are not so far satisfied in those Pequatt complaynts as to justify their disorderly withdrawinge." *Ibid.* Two years afterward (1649) the Complaints of the Pequots being again brought before the commissioners, they required Foxon, "who wayted at their meeting on the behalfe of Uncas," to signify, "that it is the mind of the English, that hee carry himself towards them in a loving way, and doe not tyrannise over them. *Ibid.* 131, 132. Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 186, 187. In 1654, it was ordered, that all the Pequots, licensed in 1647 "to sett downe at Pequatt, may yet continew there, under the obeidience of Uncas." *Ibid.* 326.

wigwams. [Trumbull's Hist. Con. I. 129. Winthrop's Journal.] His challenge to the Narraganset sachem to a single combat, shews his bravery and patriotism. Christian duellists (what a solecism!) have no just pretensions to the honour, or even to the humanity, of this Pagan chief.\*

Uncas, with his Mohegans, assisted the English in their grand expedition against the Pequots, in 1637. So terrible was the name of Sassacus, the Pequot sachem, and so desperate the valour of his tribe, that most of the Narragansets (who were also auxiliaries to the English in that expedition), on approaching the Indian forts, fled, and returned home. The Mohegans were intimidated; but Uncas animated them to battle, and they staid to witness, and to aid, the catastrophe of that eventful day.†

Uncas appears to have pushed his conquests in different directions, beyond the river Connecticut. About the year 1654, he had a quarrel with Arrhamámet, sachem of Mus-saúco [Simsbury], which brought on a war. Uncas sent one of his warriors, to take and burn an out wigwam in the

---

\* "Uncas before the battaile [see the first note in this *Memoir*] tould Myantenomy, that hee had many wayes sought his life; and for the spareing of blood offered by a single combatt betwixt themselves to end the quarrell: but Myantenomy presuming upon the number of his men, would have nothing but a battell; the yssue fell contrary to his expectation, his men were routed, divers of his considerable men slayne, and himself taken prisoner." Uncas, soon after, by the advice of the Commissioners for the colonies, cut off Myantenomy's head.

Haz. Coll. II. 9, 47, where are the reasons of the advice. Winthrop's Journal, 305, 306. Hubbard's Narrative of the Indian Wars, 45. Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 132—135.

† Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 71—78.

"The dreadful sound of great Sasácus name," fills the Indians with such terror,

"That suddenly they run, and seek to hide,  
Swifter than leaves in the autumnal tide.  
The Narragansets quit the service clear,  
But the Mohegans followed in the rear."

*Gov. Wolcott's Poem, in Coll. of Hist. Soc. IV. 281.*

The Narragansets said, "Sassacus is all one God; no man can kill him." *Trumbull's Hist. I. 31.*

When the English first arrived, Sassacus had under him 26 sachems, or principal war captains. The Pequots, at that time, were estimated at 700 warriors. Their chief places of residence were New-London and Groton. New-London was called Pequot. *Trumbull, ibid. 28, 29.*

the night, kill and burn, and leave the marks of Mohawks. His orders were executed. Arrhamamet ascribed the mischief to the Mohawks, and went in search of them to the north-west. Uncas gained time to equip his men; and afterward subjugated Arrhamamet. Podunk, ever after, was tributary to Uncas.\* We shall presently find that he, thirteen years before this period, granted lands to the English in the southern part of the State, far beyond the river.

The name of Uncas often occurs, in the conveyance of lands in Connecticut, and in various compacts between the Indians and the English. In 1638, articles of agreement were made at Hartford between Uncas and the English people of Connecticut.† In 1640, Uncas, on receiving presents to his satisfaction, "by his certain writing," granted to the governor and magistrates of the English on Connecticut river all his lands, called by whatever name, to dispose of as their own, reserving only the ground then planted by him for himself and the Moheagans.‡ In 1641, he granted to Henry Whitfield, William Leet and others, certain lands "east of the East River" [somewhere near Guilford], "in consideration of 4 coats, 2 kettles, 4 fathoms of wampum, 4 hatchets, and 3 hoes."§ In 1569, "Uncas and Wawequay, sachems of Moheagan," granted all their lands, with all their corn, &c. to major John Mason, who, the next year, surrendered it to the colony of Connecticut.||

Uncas was very inimical to the Christian religion. Gookin, the Indian historian, informs us, that when he was at Wabquisset, with Mr. Eliot the Indian apostle, in 1674, Uncas, by an agent, claimed this place, and remonstrated against their attempts to christianize its inhabitants.

\* President Stiles's Itinerary. Podunk was in the neighbourhood of Hartford. See Coll. of Hist. Soc. V. 167—170; and Trumbull, I. 27.

† Gov. Trumbull's MS. "State and Origin of Connecticut," in the Historical Society. Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 424.

‡ Gov. Trumbull's MS. and Trumbull's Hist. I. 115. Colchester was conveyed by this deed. *Ibid.* 424.

§ Pres. Stiles's Itinerary.

|| Gov. Trumbull's MSS. Trumbull's Hist. I. 424. A repetition of grants was not unusual with Indians. "The colony not only bought the Moheagan country of Uncas, but afterwards all the particular towns were purchased again, either of him or his successors, when the settlements in them commenced." Trumbull, I. 114.

tants.\* The Commissioners for the Colonies endeavoured to reclaim him. In 1672, they wrote a letter to him, "to incourage him to attend on the Minnestry."† Whatever effect this letter may have had on his exterior deportment, it seems not to have reached his heart. Two years afterward (1674) Mr. Fitch, the minister of Norwich, mentions him, as manifesting some appearances of respect to the Christian ministry, but with an entire distrust of his sincerity.‡ About two years afterward, however, when all

---

\* "We being at Wabquissit, at the sagamore's wigwam, divers of the principal people that were at home came to us, with whom we spent a good part of the night in prayer, singing psalms, and exhortations. There was a person among them, who sitting mute a great space, at last spake to this effect: That he was agent for Unkas, sachem of Mohegan, who challenged right to, and dominion over, this people of Wabquissit. And, said he, Unkas is not well pleased, that the English should pass over Mohegan river, to call his Indians to pray to God."

*Collections of Hist. Soc. I. 190, 191.*

Wabquissit is the south-west corner of Woodstock, now in Connecticut, and is, to this day, called Wabbequasset. This is the territory, which the Moheagans claimed by virtue of conquest.

† Haz. Coll. II. 528.

‡ "Since God hath called me to labour in this work among the Indians nearer to me, where indeed are the most considerable number of any in this colony, the first of my time was spent upon the Indians at Moheek, where Unkas, and his son, and Wanuh, are sachems. These at first carried it teachably and tractably: until at length the sachems did discern, that religion would not consist with a mere receiving of the word; and that practical religion will throw down their heathenish idols, and the sachems' tyrannical monarchy: and then the sachems, discerning this, did not only go away, but drew off their people, some by flatteries, and others by threatenings: and they would not suffer them to give so much as an outward attendance to the ministry of the word of God. But at this time, some few did shew a willingness to attend. These few I began meetings with about one year and a half since.—The number of these Indians is now increased to above thirty grown persons, men and women, besides children and young ones.—For the settlement and encouragement of these Indians, I have given them of mine own lands, and some that I have procured of our town, above 300 acres of good improveable lands, and made it sure to them and theirs, so long as they go on in the ways of God. And at this time Unkas and his sons seem as if they would come on again to attend upon the ministry of the word of God. But it is no other but in envy against these, and to promote some present self design."—*Mr. Fitch's Letter to the Hon. Daniel Gookin, Coll. of Hist. Soc. I. 208, 209.*

Mr. Gookin calls Unkas "an old and wicked, wilful man, a drunkard, and otherwise very vitious; who hath always been an opposer and underminer of praying to God." *Ibid.*

all other means had failed of success, a providential event made such an impression on the stubborn mind of the Pagan chief, as gave this pious minister good hope of his conversion, or at least of his sincere conviction of the truth of Christianity. Mr. Hubbard, who published his *Narrative of the Indian Wars in 1677*, speaking of Uncas, and of his fidelity to the interest of the English, observes: "It is suspected by them who knew him best, that in his heart he is no better affected to the English of their religion, than the rest of his countrymen, and that it hath been his own advantage that hath led him to be thus true to them who have upheld him, as formerly against the Pequods, so of late against the Narrhagansets; yet hath he not long since been convinced of the truth of our religion, and vanity of his own, as himself hath solemnly confessed." In proof of what he alleges, he adduces the testimony of the reverend Mr. Fitch, who had lately given so discouraging an account of Uncas to General Gookin, of Cambridge. In the preceding summer (1676) there was a great drought in New-England, which was extremely severe at Moheagan, and in the neighbouring country. In August, the corn was dried up; the fruit and leaves fell off, as in autumn; and some trees appeared to be dead. The Indians came from Moheagan into Norwich, and lamented that they had not rain; and that their powawes could get none in their way of worship; desiring Mr. Fitch, that he would seek to God for rain. He appointed a fast day for that purpose. The day proved to be clear; but at sun set, at the close of the service, some clouds arose. The next day was cloudy. Uncas went to the house of Mr. Fitch, with many Indians, and lamented the great want of rain. If God shall send you rain, said Mr. Fitch, will you not attribute it to your powawes? He answered, No; for we have done our utmost; but all in vain. If you will declare it before all these Indians, replied the minister, you shall see what God will do for us; remarking, at the same time, their repeated and un-failing reception of the blessing of rain, in answer to fasting and prayer. Uncas then "made a great speech" to the Indians, confessing, that if God should then send rain, it could not be ascribed to their powawing, but must be acknowledged

acknowledged to be an answer to the Englishmen's prayers. On that very day, the clouds became more extended; and, the day following, there was such a copious rain, that their river rose more than two feet in height. §

Whether Uncas *died in faith*, or not, I am unable to say. It is agreeable, however, to find him at last acknowledging the God *who is above*, and paying homage to the religion of his Son. He must now have been an old man; and I do not recollect any subsequent notice of him in history. The same year (1676) Oneco, a son of Uncas, commanded a party of Moheagans, in an expedition with captains Denison and Avery, against the Narragansets.\*

The Rev. Dr. Lathrop, of Boston, informs me, that the last sachem of the Moheagan tribe, † Isaiah Uncas, was his pupil in Dr. Wheelock's school, at Lebanon. He was a fat fellow, of dull intellectual parts, as was his father before him, whom also the Doctor well remembers. The race of Uncas, if we may trust the following Epitaph, was peculiarly obnoxious in Colonial History.

#### EPITAPH on a Stone at Moheag.

“ Here lies the body of SUNSEETO  
 “ Own son to Uncas grandson to ONEKO  
 “ Who were the famous sachems of MOHEGAN  
 “ But now they are all dead I think it is Werheegan.” ‡

Although several tribes of Indians, in the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts, had attended to the gospel, and a number of churches had been gathered and maintained among them, for nearly a century; yet very small impression was made on the Moheagans, till about the year 1744; “ though much pains had before been taken to win them

---

§ Hubbard's Indian Wars, 274--276, Worcester edition. See the excellent character of the Rev. Mr. Fitch in Trumbull's Hist. I. 502.

\* Hubbard, *ibid.* 182. Trumbull's Hist. Connect. I. 360.

† Among the Connecticut Indians, and among all the Indians in New-England, the crown was hereditary, always descending to the eldest son. Trumbull, *ibid.* I. 40.

‡ Ind. “ All is well,” or “ Good News.” President Stiles's Itinerary.

them to embrace the gospel." The zealous, but erratic, Mr. Davenport, at that time directed his zeal toward their conversion; and the pains which he took, "to incline them to receive instruction," are said to have been eminently blessed.\* To the converts, gained at this time, Dr. Trumbull probably refers, when he says, "Some few of the Moheagans have professed Christianity, and been, many years since, admitted to full communion in the north church in New-London."†

About the year 1786, a few Indians went from Moheagan with Mr. Samson Occom § the celebrated minister, to the country of the Oneidas. A considerable number of their brethren emigrated to that country, at the same time, from

---

\* Prince's Christian History, 21, 154.

† Hist. Connect. I. 495.

§ Mr. Samson Occom was the first Indian pupil educated by the Rev. Mr. Wheelock, and the first Indian preacher of the gospel ever in Great-Britain. Soon after he emerged from Pagan darkness he went to live at Lebanon, with Mr. Wheelock, afterwards President of Dartmouth College; in whose family, and under whose instructions, he continued for several years. He afterwards kept a school on Long Island, during some years, and at the same time officiated as public teacher of the Indian tribe at Montauk on that island, till he received ordination by the hands of the Suffolk Presbytery. He was afterwards employed on several missions to various tribes of Indians, and his services were well received and approved. At his first entrance on the ministry, and for a considerable time after, he was esteemed and respected in his Christian and ministerial character. He was judged to be "well accomplished and peculiarly turned to teach and edify his savage brethren." Nor was he neglected by the polished inhabitants of the capital towns. Though for many years he was without polite conversation and destitute of a library, yet he preached to good acceptance in New-York, Boston, and other populous places.

By the best judges he was said to be an excellent preacher in his own language, and his influence among the Indians was for a long time great. In 1765 or 1766, he accompanied Rev. Mr. Whitaker to London, for the purpose of soliciting benefactions for the support of Mr. Wheelock's school, instituted at Lebanon for the education of Indian youth to be missionaries and schoolmasters for the natives of North-America.\* For the last years of his life, Mr. Occom resided with the Indians at New-Stockbridge, State of New-York, and died in July, 1792. Rev. Mr. Kirkland, Missionary to the Oneidas, preached his funeral sermon.

\* *A Brief Narrative of the Indian Charity School in Lebanon, Connecticut.* Print. Lond. 1766.

from Farmington, Stonington, Groton, and Nehantick, ‡ in Connecticut; from Long-Island; and from Charlestown in Rhode-Island. || The inducement to this removal was a tract of excellent wild land, given to them by the Oneidas. These emigrants, being most of the scanty remnant of the Muhhekaneok Indians, called formerly, "The Seven Tribes on the Sea coast," constitute what are now called, "The Brotherton Indians;" whose entire number, in 1791, was 250, and, in 1796, 150 only. § On their first emigration, they were under the pastoral care of the Rev. Mr. Occom. ¶

Overtaking, at Moheagan, an Indian belonging to the place, I made inquiry of him concerning his tribe. From an account which I had seen in the Historical Collections, † I was led to ask him, Whether a great part of the tribe did not go to Oneida with Mr. Occom. "No," he replied; "there didn't hardly any go—Mr. Occom and a few more." Why did not you accept the offer of the Oneidas? "O, live well enough here—land enough—and good fishing!" This same Indian, however, I found was on his way to New-London, for the purpose of taking passage to Albany, meaning to proceed thence to Oneida. His fiddle was slung on his back; and, if one might judge of his disposition, from his easy and sauntering air, he had no real attachment to any one spot of earth, in preference to another.

THE preceding Memoir relates peculiarly to that part of the Moheagan tribe, which dwelt at Moheagan.\* The branches of this tribe appear to have been numerous and extensive; but, at what periods they were separated from the original stock, cannot now be ascertained. If we may judge of the numbers and extent of this tribe, from the extent

‡ The eastern part of Lyme. Trumbull's Connect. I. 332.

|| The four last of these places were affirmed by the Indian, hereafter mentioned, to be parts, from which the emigration proceeded. He said it with such promptitude and confidence, that I venture to assert it.

§ Collect. of Hist. Soc. IV. 68; & V. 13.

¶ Ibid.

† Vol. I. 210.

\* This Indian town is on the east side of the road from Norwich to New-London, nearly four miles from Norwich Landing.



extent of its *language*, it was one of the largest, if not the very largest, in North-America. On this language a few remarks shall be subjoined. To these the just observations of two respectable writers may properly be prefixed. "It is much to be lamented," says the one,† "that we have suffered so many of the Indian tribes already to extinguish without our having previously collected and deposited in the records of literature the general rudiments at least of the languages they spoke. Were vocabularies formed of all the languages spoken in North and South America, preserving their appellations of the most common objects in nature, of those which must be present to every nation barbarous or civilized, with the inflections of their nouns and verbs, their principles of regimen and concord, and these deposited in all the public libraries, it would furnish opportunities to those skilled in the languages of the old world to compare them with these, now, or at any future time, and hence to construct the best evidence of the derivation of this part of the human race."

"It is to be desired," the other writer|| observes, "that those who are informed, would communicate to the public what information they may possess, relating to this matter. Perhaps by such communication and by a comparison of the languages of Asia, it may appear, not only from what quarter of the world, but from what particular nation, these Indians are derived."—The HISTORICAL SOCIETY, it is respectfully suggested, is a very suitable depository for such communications.

Dr. Edwards remarks, That the *Muhhekaneew* or Stockbridge Indians,‡ as well as the tribe at New-London, are, by

† Jefferson's Notes on Virginia. Query XI.

|| The Rev. Dr. Jonathan Edwards, late President of Union College, at Schenectady, in his "Observations on the Language of the Muhhekaneew Indians;" communicated to THE CONNECTICUT SOCIETY OF ARTS AND SCIENCES, and published at the request of the Society in 1788. This tract was republished at New-York in 1801; and is very respectfully noticed, together with its Author (who died that year), in *The American Review and Literary Journal*, Article XII. Vol. I.

‡ These Indians migrated from Hudson's river, about the year 1734, and settled at Stockbridge in Massachusetts. Between the years 1785 and 1787, they removed to Oneida. Before their removal, they wasted  
away,

by the Anglo-Americans called *Mohegans*, which is a corruption of *Muhhekanceew*, in the singular, or *Muhhekaneok* in the plural. This language is spoken by all the Indians throughout New-England. Every tribe, as that of Stockbridge, that of Farmington, that of New-London, &c. has a different dialect; but the language is radically the same. Mr. Eliot's translation of the Bible is in a particular dialect of this language.\* The languages of the Delawares,† in Pennsylvania, of the Penobscots bordering on Nova-Scotia, of the Indians of St. Francis in Canada, of the Shawanese on the Ohio, and of the Chippewaus at the westward of lake Huron, are all radically the same with the Mohegan.‡ The same is said concerning the languages of the Ottowaus, Nanticooks, Munsees, Minomonees, Messisaugas, Saukies, Ottagaumies, Killistinoes, Nipegons, Algonkins, Winnebagoes, &c. That the languages of the several tribes in New-England, of the Delawares, and of Mr. Eliot's Bible, are radically the same, Dr. Edwards asserts from his own knowledge. He had good authorities

---

away, like other Indians. Fifty years ago, there were about 150 families. In 1791, they were reduced to 280 persons, and about 40 warriors. *Coll. of Hist. Soc.* I. 195; IV. 67; and *Pref. to Dr. Edwards' Observations*.

\* See the *Lord's Prayer* in this dialect, *Hist. Coll.* VII. 24.

† "The Delaware tribe is called Poh-he-gan, or Mo-hee-gan by themselves; and Auquitsaukon. It is dispersed into three divisions. O-hé-yewh, or Ohéo [French *Ohio*], is the largest." *President Stiles' Itinerary*.

‡ Carver divides the principal languages of North-America into four classes, "as they consist of such as are made use of by the nations of the Iroquois towards the eastern parts of it, the Chipeways or Algonkins to the north-west, the Nawdowessies to the west, and the Cherokees, Chickasaws, &c. to the south."—"But of all these," he adds, "the Chipéway tongue appears to be the most prevailing; it being held in such esteem, that the chiefs of every tribe, dwelling about the great lakes, or to the westward of these on the banks of the Mississippi, with those as far south as the Ohio, and as far north as Hudson's Bay, consisting of more than 30 different tribes, speak this language alone in their councils, notwithstanding each has a peculiar one of their own." *Carver's Travels*, Chap. XVII.

If the Chipeway and Mohegan languages are radically the same, Carver's observation does not contradict, but confirm, the sentiment of Dr. Edwards, respecting the extent of the Mohegan language.

authorities for what he says of the rest. He proceeds to illustrate the affinity between the *Mohegan*, the *Shuwanee*, and the *Chippewau* languages, by exhibiting a short list of words selected from each of them. The affinity is obviously close; and whoever wishes for the proof, is referred to the pamphlet itself.

The Mohawk language, which is the language of the Six Nations, Dr. Edwards remarks, is entirely different from that of the Mohegans. Between these two languages he also institutes a comparison, by giving a list of words from each; but they have not the smallest resemblance to each other. Hutchinson adds confirmation to this account. "The language of the Indians, from Piscataqua to Connecticut," he remarks, "was so nearly the same, that they could tolerably well converse together. Labials they used with freedom. It is observed of the western Indians, particularly of the Six Nations, that they have no labials in all their language, and they and the Nipnets, who lived little more than one hundred miles from them, could not better understand one another than the English and Chinese."\*

In the year 1788, Dr. Edwards, who was then prosecuting his inquiries on this subject, communicated to me (at that time living in the state of Georgia) a number of questions, for the purpose of instituting a comparison between the Mohegan language and the languages of the Southern Indians. The Creek Indians being then at war with Georgia, no knowledge of *their* language could be obtained. From an intelligent Negro, however, who lived several years, while a boy, among the Chactaws,† I obtained

---

\* Hist. of Massachusetts, I. 479.

† Du Pratz says, their own pronounciation is *Chat-kas*;—"la grand nation des Chat-kas, suivant la prononciation des ces Peuples, que les François nomment Chactas ou Têtes plates." Hist. Louisiane, II. 216.—This author, from the resemblance of names, thinks it probable, that they came from Kamschatka, in Asia. "Il paroît très-vraisemblable que les Chatkas de la Louisiane, ne sont autres que ce peuple qui est à l'extrémité de l'Asie près l'Isthme dont j'ai parlé, & qui se nomme *Kam-Chat-kas*, ce qui signifie Royaume de Chat-kas." *Ibid.* III. 132.—That the Indians of America are of Asiatic origin, is an opinion which seems every day to gain new confirmation. See *American Review*, ut supra.

obtained some scanty information concerning the Chactaw language, which I communicated to my much respected correspondent. Of the questions, which were nine in number, I find no copy; but they may be inferred from the answers which were as follow:

“1. Specimens of the Chactaw language.

Earth	Yaukanah
Water	Auquawh
Hatchet	Schefauh
Brother	Baubsaleeh
Fellow	Yaukook

“2. Their pronouns are

I, or we	Aunuh
Thou, or you, he	Chisnooh

“The second person singular, of the pronoun, is not distinguished from the third.\*

“3. Their pronouns are neither prefixed, nor suffixed, to their nouns; but

Aunu schefauh is, my hatchet.

Chisnooh schefauh, your or his hatchet.

“4. Verbs.	Eat	Impah
	Give	Cuahpetah
	Fight	Manhoh
	Love	Saupoolah

“Their pronouns are not affixed to their verbs; but

Aunuh impah, is I eat.

Chisnooh impah, You eat, or, he eats.

Chisnooh saupoolah, You I love; or, him I love; or, him you love.

“5. I cannot find that this language has any variety of tenses. The verb retains the same form, where there is a difference of time.

Aunuh	nenauh	manhoh
We	yesterday	fought.

“There

---

\* ADAIR, I now find [1804], confirms the correctness of this account. “*A-nó-wah* [is] the first person, and *Ish-na*, the second person singular; but they have not a particular pronoun for the third.” *History of the American Indians*, 69, 70.

“ There is a word, I think, to denote *to-morrow*, but the word *munhoh* is not varied.

“ 6. I cannot find a distinction of moods.

“ 7. They express the qualities of things by adjectives.

Nuquauh	He [is] vexed.
Yankoooh nequauh	That fellow is vexed.
Chisnooh coopahsaw	He is (or, you are) cold.
Chisnooh istooh	He is (or, you are) hot.

“ 8. I cannot find that this language has any passive voice. Instead of, *I am loved*, they say,

I and you [are] brothers  
 Aunuh menuh baubsaleeh  
 I (or we) tired.  
 Aunuh toopauh.

“ 9. They have no verb substantive.

“ The *Chactaw* language, I am informed, is nearly the same as the *Chickasaw*. The Chactaws and Chickasaws are thought to have been formerly one tribe.” \*

Dr. Edwards, in his answer to my letter, made the following remarks: “ By the specimen you have sent me, it seems the *Chactaw* language is totally different from the Mohegan, the most general language of North America, and from that of the Six Nations. In all North America, from the St. Lawrence, to the Wiondots; and from Nova-Scotia, to Lake Superior, I am persuaded there are

\* ADAIR, I find, confirms also the truth of this account. Speaking of the Chikkasah (so he spells the word), he observes: “ Their tradition says, they had 10,000 men fit for war, when they first came from the west; and this account seems very probable, as they and the Choktah (so he spells it), and also the Chokchooma, who in process of time were forced by war to settle between the two former nations, *came together from the west as one family.*” *Hist. of American Indians*, 352.

“ The most southern old town, which the Chikkasah first settled, after the Chokchoomah, Choktah, and they, *separated, on our side of the Mississippi, into three different tribes*, they called *Yanèka.*” *Ibid.* 66.

The Chikkasah are now settled between the heads of two of the most western branches of Mobile river. The Choktah country lies in about 33 and 34 deg. north lat. Their western lower towns, according to the course of the Indian path, are situated 200 miles to the northward of New-Orleans. *Ibid.* 352, 282. and the Map prefixed.

are but two original languages, the Mohegan and that of the Six Nations. I send you a small publication on the Indian language. Perhaps this may give you an opportunity to compare the Mohegan and the Chactaw language so far, as to obtain full satisfaction, that they are radically different languages. If so, I shall be much favoured by the communication of the result of the comparison."—— It was not in my power, however, to pursue the inquiry; for my Negro instructor, very soon after my interview with him, was carried off by a party of Creek Indians; and I never afterward found means of farther information on the subject.

By the assistance of ADAIR, I can somewhat enlarge my vocabulary. A few examples of a comparison of the Chactaw language with the Mohegan, may be sufficient, to prove their entire dissimilitude.

<i>English</i>	<i>Chactaw</i>	<i>Mohegan</i>
The sun	Neetak-Hasséh*	Keesogh
The moon	Neennak-Hasséh	Nepauhauck
Spring	Otoolpha	Thequan
Summer	Tóme pallet†	Nēpon
Autumn	Ashtóra móona‡	T'quauquuh
Winter	Ashtóra	'Hpoon
Water	Auquawh	'Nbey
He	Chisnooh	Uwoh
A hill	Nannè	Gh'aukoock
A mountain	Unchàba	W'chu

The Chickasaw and the Chactaw exactly agree in the above names of the four seasons; and in some of the other examples here given. Both these nations count in the following manner:

*Chactaw*

---

\* These Indians have no proper name for the sun and moon. One word, with a note of distinction, expresses both. The Chickasaws and Chactaws term the one, "The day moon, or sun," and the other, "The night sun, or moon." *Neetak* signifies *a day*; and *Neennak*, *a night*.

† *Toméh* signifies "the solar light;" and *palle*, "warm," or "hot."

‡ *Ashtora*, "winter," *moona*, "presently."

<i>Chactaw</i>	<i>English</i>	<i>Moheagan</i>
Chephpha	One	Ngwittoh
Toogàlo	Two	Neesoh
Tootchēna	Three	Noghhoh
Oosta	Four	Nauwoh
Tathlābe	Five	Nunon
Hannāhle	Six	Ngwittus
Untoogàlo	Seven	Tupouwus
Untootchēna	Eight	Ghusooh
Chakkāle	Nine	Nauneeweh
Pokoole	Ten	Mtannit

When the Chickasaws, or Chactaws, count beyond ten, they say, *Pokoole Aawa Chephpha*, "ten and one." The Chickasaws term twenty, *Pokoole toogàlo*, "two tens."

For several of the *Moheagan* words, in the last comparison, I am indebted to my worthy friend, Mr. WILLIAM JENKS, who lately procured the annexed specimen of this language from a young and intelligent Indian, of the Stockbridge tribe.\* Among other things, it shews, that the pronunciation of that tribe does not, at this time, essentially differ from what it was fifty years ago, when Dr. Edwards learned the language.

The spelling is chiefly according to the mode adopted by the present secretary of the Grand Council of the tribe (who was educated at Dartmouth College) in their public records; and the vocabulary was in fact mostly written by the young Indian himself, in order to preserve as much accuracy as possible.

### Specimen

---

\* "John Konkapot, jun. Nhu'h kekit Ochuch Anquiquoi you, mactshenaunetateh, austou Ich naskmuch." Such are his name and titles, as lately given by himself at Cambridge, in the Moheagan tongue. He is, by his own account, a grandson of the famous old warrior, HENDRICK, the Chief of the Mohawks, who was killed in the French war, 1758. This young Indian says, that his grandfather Hendrick was the son of a Moheagan Chief (called the Wolf), by a Mohawk woman; and that Hendrick also married a Mohawk woman, Hunnis, a daughter of the Chief of the Mohawks.

Specimen of the MOHEAGAN language, taken at Cambridge,  
February 28, 1804.

GOD PAUTAUMOUWOTH	fire, 'tltouw,
created <i>kecetaun</i>	air, <i>auwon</i> ,
the world <i>nooh keeyh</i>	water, <i>m'ppēh</i> ,
and all things 'n'don <i>mauw</i>	the earth, <i>nooh keeyh</i> ,
<i>kaupoi</i>	the sun, <i>kesogh</i> ,
in time, <i>kenauweēnoquicq</i> ,	the moon, <i>n'pauhauck</i> ,
place, <i>w'keceghtaun</i> , gh gut-	a star. <i>anauquauth</i> .
tural,	Heat, 'Ksetauwov,
order, <i>kenauweghtaun</i> ,	light, <i>wauthaujow</i> ,
and number. 'n'don <i>autgh-</i>	cold, <i>t'harthu</i> ,
<i>ainnoikack</i> .	wind, 'ksaughon,
Of time. <i>Neenogquicq</i> .	a rainbow, <i>anuquun</i> ,
Time <i>Kenauweēnoquicq</i>	thunder, <i>pautquauhan</i> ,
is divided into <i>m'ghmaunnoi-</i>	smoke, <i>quusautauwov</i> ,
<i>keeh t'gheghan</i>	a cloud, <i>m'taucq</i> ,
an hour, <i>hour</i> , from the	a river, <i>thēpow</i> , th sounded
English,	as in <i>thing</i> ,
a day, <i>waukaumaw</i> ,*	the sea, 'ktaunnauppēh, see
a month, <i>kesogh</i> ,	<i>water</i> ,
a year. <i>kētoon</i> .	a lake, 'pquaughon,
In a day are <i>Neeh waukau-</i>	ice, <i>m'quaumeeh</i> ,
<i>mauw oikeeh</i>	snow, <i>m'sauneeh</i> ,
the dawn, <i>pautaupon</i> ,	rain, <i>thocknaun</i> ,
the morning, <i>naujaupauwev</i> ,	an island, <i>m'nauhân</i> , hence
the evening, <i>t'paughesu</i> ,	perhaps <i>Monahigan</i> , or "isl-
the night. <i>p'quaunaujow</i> .	and of the Moheagans."
In a year are <i>Neeh kētoon</i>	a hill, <i>gh'aukooock</i> ,
<i>oikeeh</i>	a mountain, <i>w'chu</i> , hence
the spring, <i>thēquan</i> , th soun-	probably <i>Wachusett</i> ,
ded as in <i>thing</i> ,	a rock, <i>thaunauumku</i> .
summer, <i>nēpon</i> ,	Of man. <i>N'neemanâoo</i> .
autumn, <i>t'quauquuh</i> ,	an infant, <i>chacqesecet</i> ,
winter. <i>poon</i> .	a boy, <i>penaupahthuh</i> ,
Greater bodies are <i>Aunou-</i>	a girl, <i>peesquâhthuh</i> ,
<i>wew maumaugh-</i>	a young man, <i>eowthkenooh</i> ,
<i>quequicq oikeeh</i>	a man, <i>neemanâoo</i> ,
the heaven, 'thpummuck,	a woman, <i>p'ghainoom</i> ,
the sky, <i>onauwauk</i> ,	an old man, 'kchee,

\* Wakkamaw is the name of a river in South Carolina.



an old woman, <i>weenauthooth</i> ,	a grandmother, <i>ôlmân</i> ,
a husband, <i>w'ghân</i> ,	an aunt, <i>ôhmëthân</i>
a wife, <i>weewone</i> ,	a King, <i>Kioweenooch</i> ,
a father, <i>o'ghân</i> ,	a Chief, <i>Wauyuuwâghou</i> ,
a mother, <i>o'kegân</i> ,	a house, <i>weekwom</i> , hence
a son, <i>w'tiyumân</i> ,	<i>wigwam</i> , as spelt by Wood.
a daughter, <i>o'toosân</i> ,	“N. E. Prospect.”†
a brother, <i>o'ghëthmân</i> ,	a bow, <i>'thkenâghoo</i> ,
a sister, <i>weetaunphooân</i> ,	a shield, <i>authkëttuck</i> ,
an uncle, <i>oosëthân</i> ,	a book, <i>Oothoohégân</i> .‡
a grandfather, <i>mâghomân</i> ,	

In this short specimen it is remarkable that we find neither an *l* nor an *r*, nor indeed the sound of *f*. This remark was also made by Wood on the language of the *Aberginians*, of which he gives a vocabulary at the end of his “New-England’s Prospect,” printed in London, 1639. Wherever *gh* occurs in the above, the pronunciation is extremely guttural, and appears to be a strong characteristic of the language, hardly imitable by us,

---

EXTRACT FROM AN INDIAN HISTORY.

**T**HE country formerly owned and possessed by Muh-heakunnuk nation, now called by white people Stockbridge Indians, is situated partly in the State of New-York, partly in Massachusetts and Vermont.

The face of this country is in many places mountainous, supplied with excellent rivers, creeks and ponds; the side of these rivers, &c. was only known by natives capable of producing skommonun or Indian corn, and tupohquan or beans, and uhunnekuthkoatkun or Indian squashes, until it fell into the hands of white people, who convert even many swamps and rocky hills into fruitful fields.

This extensive country abounded with almost every kind of wild game, such as moose, deer, bears, tigers, wolves, beavers, otters, minks, muskrats, martins, foxes, wild cats, fishes, ground hogs, back hogs. Of the feathered

---

† Spelt *Weekumuhm* by Dr. Edwards.

‡ They have no word, it is said, to express paper.

feathered kind, turkies, wild geese, ducks, partridges, pigeons, quails, owls, &c. and the rivers, &c. abounded with variety of fish and turtles.

The inhabitants chiefly dwelt in little towns and villages. Their chief seat was on Hudson's river, now it is called Albany, which was called Pempotowwuthut, Muhhecanneuw, or the fire place of the Muhheakunnuk nation, where their allies used to come on any business whether relative of the covenants of their friendship, or other matters.

The etymology of the word Muhheakunnuk, according to original signifying, is great waters or sea, which are constantly in motion, either flowing or ebbing.

Our forefathers asserted, that their ancestors were emigrated from west by north of another country; they passed over the great waters, where this and the other country is nearly connected, called *Ukhkokpeck*; it signifies snake water, or water where snakes abounded; and that they lived by side of great water or sea, from whence they derive the name of Muhheakunnuk nation. Muhheakunneuw signifies a man of Muhheakunnuk tribe. Muhhekunneyuk is a plural number.

We understand that they were more civilized than what Indians are now in the wilderness; as it was said that they lived in towns, and were very numerous, until there arose a mighty famine which obliged them to disperse throughout the regions of the wilderness after sustenance, and at length lost their ways of former living, and apostatized. As they were coming from the west, they found many great waters, but none of them flowing and ebbing like Muhheakunnuk until they came to Hudson's river; then they said one to another, this is like Muhheakunnuk our nativity. And when they found grain was very plenty in that country, they agreed to kindle fire there and hang a kettle, whereof they and their children after them might dip out their daily refreshment.

As our ancestors had no art of manufacturing any sort of metal, they had no implements of husbandry; therefore were not able to cultivate their lands but little, that of planting skommon or Indian corn, beans, and little squashes, which was chiefly left under the management of  
women

women and old men, who were incapable of hunting, and little boys. They made use of bone, either moose, bears, or deer's shoulder-place, instead of hoe, to hoe their corn with, tie it fast to one end of a stick or helve made for that purpose. This their way of clearing lands was not so difficult as we should imagine, and that without using an axe. When they find that their fields will fail, they are to prepare another piece of lands; in the first place they do, they make a fire round the foot of every tree, as many trees as standing on the ground they intended to clear, until the bark of the tree is burnt through, for trees are killed very easy in this manner. They planted while trees are standing after they are killed; and as soon as trees are fell, they burnt it of such length that they might roll the logs together, and burnt them up to ashes, thus they do till they get it quite clear. An industrious woman, when great many dry logs are fallen, could burn off as many logs in one day as a smart man can chop in two or three days time with an axe. They make use of only a uthonnetmuhheakun or a stone axe, something like the shape of an axe, helve to it as of the hoe already mentioned, with which they rub the coals of the burning logs. But the employment of men consisted in hunting and fishing. They used bow and arrow to kill game, with which they were expert. They used to catch deer by insnaring them with strings. By hunting they supplied themselves with cloathing and diet; they seldom felt much want, and they were very well contented with their condition; having food and raiment was their only aim. They were not to kill more than necessary, for there was none to barter with them that would have tempted them to waste their animals, as they did after the Chuckopek or white people came on this island, consequently game was never diminished. They hunted occasionally a whole year; but hunting seasons are properly divided into two parts of a year. In fall, they hunt for deer, bear, beaver, otter, rackoon, fishes, martin for their cloathing, and drying meat for the ensuing season; and in the beginning of March, they used to go out to hunt for moose on the green mountains, where these animals keep for winter quarters. From thence they go again for beaver

ver

ver hunting as soon as the rivers, ponds, and creeks are opened; but they used to take good care not to stay over two months.

And as our ancestors were not subject to so many disorders or sicknesses, as they were after Chuckopek or white people settled among them, they flourished in some measure. That before they began to decay, our forefathers informed us, that Muhheakunnuk nation could then raised about one thousand warriors who could turu out at any emergency. Their weapons of war, besides bow and arrows already described, puhwy made of wooden knot, helve to it; and quennehtuhheakun or long cut; and tkuttekun or spear made of bone or horn and some of flinty stone, with long helve to it; thus also were quivers, commonly made of otter skin, which contain forty or fifty arrows; and in battle they used shields made of green hide, or breast plate.

Muhheakunnuk nation were formerly deemed to be best warriors in the field, truly formidable to any nation, which is still acknowledged by the western tribes.

JOURNAL OF THE SIEGE OF YORK IN VIRGINIA BY A  
CHAPLAIN OF THE AMERICAN ARMY.

September 12th, 1781. **T**HIS day, Major-General Lincoln and the second division of American troops embarked at the head of Elk, and proceeded in small schooners and flat-bottomed boats as far as Plumb-point.

13th. This day we reached Worten-creek, which is about thirty miles from the head of Elk.

14th. We sailed this day about thirty miles, and arrived at Annapolis in Maryland.

15th. Went on shore at Annapolis, and continued the most of the day, and were entertained very genteelly by some of the inhabitants.

16th. This day we left Annapolis, and sailed as far as Herring-bay and came to anchor.

17th. This day we reached the mouth of the river Patuxen and anchored.

18th.

18th. The last night was very stormy and part of this day, so that we did not sail until 12 o'clock. After which we proceeded, though not with a fair wind, yet, with a wind which permitted us to lay our course during the remainder of the day.

19th. We sailed all last night, and in the evening of this day reached the mouth of James' river. In the sailing of this day we passed a number of the French ships of war, and, at a great distance, saw the French fleet in Lynnhaven bay. Here we met with General Washington, who was on board the Charlotte ship of war, which had been taken from the enemy. The General was returning from a conference which had been held between him and the Count De Grasse.

20th. We proceeded up James' river with a fair wind, until our vessel ran on ground, where we continued till 8 o'clock this morning, when we left that vessel, and went on board of a smaller one. The wind was against us this day, and very violent; nevertheless, by tacking frequently and contending with the wind, we arrived at this place, which is called the landing of Archer's Hope. This day no small difficulty nor danger attended us. Our vessel ran on ground repeatedly this day.

21st. This day General Lincoln again embarked and went down James' river with provision for the troops, who had been detained by contrary winds, or bad sailing vessels. The General, anxious for the safety and comfort of the troops, would trust none but himself to relieve them from their present difficulties.

22d. This day some of the troops arrived. General Washington arrived this day from the French fleet. The vessel he came in ran on ground.

Sunday, 23d. This day General Lincoln returned from the mouth of the river, having been down to supply the troops with provisions. His vessel ran on ground, and he was in great danger; but happy is the man who has learned to view the raging of winds and waters with the sweetest composure; and can smile amidst the thunder of cannon, and all the winged instruments of death!— This day I went to Williamsburgh and preached to the light-infantry, commanded by the Marquis De la Fayette.

24th.

24th. I remained the last night in Williamsburgh. There are about 300 houses in this town, some of which are very good, but the greater number are very mean. The College is about 130 feet in length and 40 in breadth. Two handsome wings, about 50 feet by 30, have been added to this building. This College is three stories high; and has a very good apparatus, and a large library of ancient authors, but the modern authors are few.—The capitol, or state-house, in which the Assembly used to meet; and the palace in which the Governor resided, are both very grand buildings. The court-house and the church are also good buildings. Besides these there are a few good private houses. A principal street, about one mile in length, runs through the whole town; the other streets are very irregular. All the land which I have yet seen in Virginia is very poor, except where it has been very laboriously manured.

The troops arrive and disembark every day. The last night the flat-bottomed boats arrived safe without the loss of any of the men, though they had been in a most violent storm.

26th. The last night the French troops finished their disembarkation. This day General Lincoln and the two brigades of York and Jersey troops moved from Archer's Hope, and encamped at the east end of Williamsburgh.

27th. Near Williamsburgh. The water in this state is very bad; we have not had any which is fit to drink since we came on shore until this day. We are now within 12 miles of York, where the enemy are.

28th. This day we marched to a place which is about two miles from the town of York.

29th. Our troops lay on their arms the last night, and expected an attack from the enemy; but they did not disturb us. This day the whole army approached the enemy's lines. A cannonade from the enemy took place, but we received very little injury. The American troops, consisting of three divisions, under the command of General Lincoln, encamped about one mile from the enemy's works.

Sunday, 30th. This day 1200 men from the American camp are ordered to make fascines, gabions, and  
sansisans.

saucissons. The last night the enemy retired from their out works, which are in front of our army. This day the French and American troops took possession of them. The enemy appear to have fortified the town very strangely, to which they have now retired. Colonel Scammel, being officer of the day, and reconnoitering the situation of the enemy, was surprized by a party of their horse, and after being taken prisoner was inhumanly wounded by them.

October 1st. This day, 1200 men are on fatigue in order to prepare for the siege of York. This day our troops began a work on the ground which the enemy so lately had in their possession. The French troops also began a work at the same time. The fire of the enemy has been very constant this day, but we have lost but three or four men yet.

2d. The firing of the enemy has continued all this day, in order to annoy our men who are working on a redoubt. No men have been killed this day in the American camp.

3d. This day the firing from the enemy abated. Last night four men were killed in our camp by one canon ball from the enemy. Military stores and cannon are coming every day from the landing, about six miles from this place.

4th. The general orders of this day mention an action of yesterday, in which the Duke De Lausune defeated Colonel Tarlton, killed and wounded a number of his officers and men.

5th. Preparations are making to besiege the enemy with great vigour. Our troops vie with one another in the performance of duty and the love of danger.

6th. A gentleman from General Greene's army informs us, that on the 8th of September the southern army defeated the enemy at Eutaw springs.

Sunday, 7th. Last night the trenches were opened, at the distance of about 800 yards from the enemy. The American troops, under the command of General Lincoln, broke ground on the right, and the French, under the command of the Baron Viaminill, on the left. The night was the most favourable in the world. Providence seemed

very evidently to have drawn the curtains of darkness around us on purpose to conceal us from our enemies until the time of the greatest danger had passed by. Not a man killed or wounded in the American camp, and but a few in the camp of the French. Let gratitude abound in our hearts for this remarkable instance of the divine goodness. Colonel Scammel died yesterday at Williamsburgh.

8th. Our troops are going on with their works most vigorously, and meet with very little opposition from the enemy; only four or five men have been wounded this day.

9th. This day an American battery of six guns, 18 and 24 pounders, and four mortars, began to play on the town.

10th. The last night the cannonade and bombardment did not cease. This day a second American battery of four 18 pounders is opened, and a French battery of twelve 24 pounders and eight mortars increases the horrors of war. The British batteries are mostly silent this day.

11th. A cannonade and bombardment continued through the most of the last night, and this day the engines of war have raged with redoubled fury. Two of the enemy's ships were burned the last night; one this day. They were fired by red hot shot from a battery under the direction of the Marquis De St. Simon. I have heard of no man being killed this day.

12th. The French have, this day, played upon the enemy from seven batteries, which contain about forty pieces of ordnance. The horrors of war must have been very evident to our enemies this day.

13th. The last night the fire of the enemy was very constant and severe. Our troops opened the trenches of the second parallel.

Sunday, 14th. No cessation of firing the last night. This day Captain White and four soldiers were killed, and ten wounded in our trenches.

15th. The last night an attack was made on two redoubts of the enemy. The French took the one, and the Americans the other. They were both carried in the most gallant and enterprising manner. The American light infantry,



infantry, under the Marquis La Fayette, in storming the redoubt, had about eight killed, and twenty-five wounded. No officers killed, and but four wounded. None of the enemy were put to death after they asked for mercy; this is an evidence of the generosity and humanity which dwell in the breasts of the Americans, when they have a cruel and unmerciful enemy in their power.

16th. The last night the enemy made a sortie where our batteries were not completed on the second parallel. They spiked up seven or eight pieces of cannon; but were obliged to retreat suddenly, leaving a number of their men killed in the trenches.

17th. This day we opened some batteries on the second parallel, and are almost prepared to cannonade and bombard the town with seventy pieces of ordnance. The cannonade of this day has been prevented by the arrival of a flag from the enemy, requesting a cessation of arms for twenty-four hours, also desiring to know upon what conditions the garrison may expect to surrender. General Washington informed them what terms he would give them, and has allowed them only two hours to consider them, and to give an answer. This day four years, Burgoyne and his whole army surrendered to the United States; that signal instance of the smiles of heaven, and what we now have in prospect, should make us very thankful to Almighty God.

18th. This day the enemy have agreed to surrender themselves prisoners of war to the combined arms of France and America. Hallelujah!

19th. This day the enemy marched out of their works and laid down their arms. Some French and American troops have taken possession of the town.

20th. What an alteration do we find this day! The fields and plains, which so lately were the theatres of death and carnage are now places of safety, and peace!

21st. This day I preached a sermon, on the account of our success, before Generals Lincoln and Clinton, to the York brigade, and one brigade of light infantry.

Monday, 22d. I this day went to see York. It contains about 60 houses. Many of them are very much damaged, some of them totally ruined. This town is well situated

situated for trade. Gloucester has about twenty houses in it, where the most of the British sick are. It is at present a most miserable and infectious place.

---

MEMOIR OF MR. EBENEZER GRANT MARSH, DECEASED,  
EXTRACTED FROM DR. DANA'S FUNERAL DISCOURSE.

MR. EBENEZER GRANT MARSH was known to you from his childhood. In each of the ten years last past, he was a member of my family a great proportion of the time. Called by my esteemed friend and brother to sympathize with him and his house, and to minister to you on this mournful occasion, some sketches of the life and character of this excellent young man will be expected, as a due tribute of respect to departed worth.

*The Father of spirits* was pleased to endow him with a superiour genius, and a mind fitted for contemplation. Formed by the earliest education to studious and pious habits, favoured with the best advantages for the culture of his talents, he increased in wisdom and virtue, as in age.

His secret retirement and devotion, best known to Him who seeth in secret, were remarked by those who guided his early steps.

Admitted a member of College, in his fifteenth year, his application to his studies was assiduous and uniform; so that he always ranked with the first scholars in his class. The general tenour of his deportment conciliated the esteem of his fellow students, and of the officers of the College.

He was graduated in 1795; and continued to reside at New-Haven. In 1798 he was chosen Instructor in Hebrew; Tutor, in 1799; and Professor of Languages and Ecclesiastical History in 1802. His election to these various offices was a just tribute to literary merit.

Well acquainted with all branches of academick instruction, it was his delightful employment to imbue the minds of his pupils with science and virtuous principles. He received in return, from each succeeding class under his instruction, constant testimonies of gratitude, affection and esteem.

Appreciating

Appreciating his advantages to lay a good foundation for future usefulness and eminence in life, he separated himself for the search of all wisdom. Seldom is a good genius cultivated by so ardent a love of science.

He excelled in the learned languages, general history, and ancient, especially *oriental*, literature. By placing in opposite columns, in his manuscripts, the history of manners and religious rites, in the east and in the west, he endeavoured to make it *conspicuous*, that they had the same origin. His dissertations on the Mosaick history of creation, the origin of language, and the descent of all nations from one pair, evince his abilities and industry.

His laborious researches embraced the antiquities of our own country, in the history of which he was particularly informed.

He examined the principles and manners of the Moderns as well as the Ancients, and observed the passing affairs of the world.

Biography, ecclesiastical history, and the evidences of natural and revealed religion, he had much attended to.

On this great variety of subjects, he made judicious extracts from, and compendiums of, the ablest authors. These manuscripts contain fifteen volumes, about two hundred pages in each.

He commenced his studies, from day to day, with reading in his Hebrew bible, and penning down occasional observations on the original text.

Uniting good judgment with extensive reading and a retentive memory; observing also strict order and method in his literary pursuits, he had amassed, from the best sources, rare treasures of wisdom and science. Not fond of mere abstruse speculations, he searched for useful truth, and that only. He was one of those practical scholars, who value the dictates of *common sense*.

His conversation had nothing contracted or assuming—nothing of the pedant or recluse student. It was cheerful without levity—entertaining and pleasing to the wise and unwise.

Considering himself as a steward—accountable to him who maketh some to differ from others, his talents were consecrated to the glory of God, and the good of mankind.

kind. The spirit of vital piety added a lustre to his other accomplishments. So far as a Christian may be known by the uniform tenour of his conversation—so far as an irreproachable life lays a foundation to presume goodness of heart—so far as we may know the moral and religious character of others, he *feared the Lord from his youth*. According to the sentiments and example in the text, he sought his happiness in the approbation of God through the Redeemer, a conformity to the divine moral perfections, and the immortality brought to light by the gospel. No traits in his character could lead us to number him among the *men whose portion is in this life*.

As a candidate for the ministry, few come forward with his fund of science, advantages to magnify the office, and prospects of acceptance. His sermons, full of thought, written in a pure, perspicuous style, with judicious arrangement, and a proper degree of pathos, were applauded by the best judges, and edifying to all.

Known and esteemed by the first characters in this State, he had many testimonies from learned and excellent men in neighbouring States. The Massachusetts Historical Society lately elected him a member. In the official letter, informing him of the choice, their secretary writes, “Be assured, Sir, we have no small respect for the character you maintain in the republick of letters.” He was respected as far as known, and known far for his years.

Upon an invitation from one of the largest and most respectable churches in a neighbouring State, he had engaged to minister to them in the last vacation at the College: but the mysterious providence of God was pleased to order otherwise. Arrested by a disease, which was attended with alarming symptoms at first, he languished about four months, and closed the scene.

To the servant, who made a good improvement of his talents, the Proprietor said, *Well done,—Thou hast been faithful in a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.*

In few instances is the vanity of human hopes exemplified as in the early death of this rising character. *Verily every man, at his best state, is altogether vanity.* Whilst the family, kindred and acquaintance are peculiarly affected with

with his removal in the morning of life; it will be lamented, as a common loss, by the seat of literature, the country, the church, and the republick of letters.

This death, in one view premature, is not so in another. To a short life, filled up with unintermitting industry and usefulness, as was that of our lamented friend, we may apply the observation, "Honourable age is not that which standeth in length of time, nor that is measured by number of years. But wisdom is the grey hair unto men, and an unspotted life is old age. Though the righteous be prevented with death; yet shall he be in rest." *m. n.*

---

A TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION OF CATSKILL, IN THE STATE OF NEW YORK. 1803. BY REV. CLARK BROWN.

**C**ATSKILL is the shire town of the county of Greene. It is one hundred and twenty-four miles north of the city of New York, and thirty-six south of Albany. It was formerly part of the town of Coxsackie, which was bounded north by Albany, south by Kingston, east by Hudson river, and west by unincorporated lands.

Catskill was incorporated into a town in the year 1786. It then belonged to the county of Albany. In 1797 it was annexed to the county of Ulster. In 1799 the county of Greene was incorporated, and Catskill was made the shire town.

#### *Boundaries.*

It is bounded north by Coxsackie, south by Sagutyes, east by Hudson river, and west by Canton. It extends along the river thirteen miles. The south part of the town extends to the top of a large mountain, connected with a ridge of mountains generally known by the name of Catskill-mountains.

#### *Soil and Face of the Land.*

The soil is principally of a clayey nature. In almost every part of the town there is clay suitable for the making of brick. In the road and streets clay may be dig-  
ged

ged in great abundance. The soil however is somewhat interspersed with sand and loam. The loam in some places lies above the sand, and in other, the sand above the loam.

The land is generally hilly, and in some places mountainous. There are in the town lime and stone ledges; from which lime and slate are taken for building, which renders them valuable.

In 1797 several acres of a large hill, lying on the west of Catskill-creek, slid off all at once, carrying the cattle and sheep, which were on it, several rods, without injuring any of them. This opened a large bed of marl, which has been found to answer a good purpose for manure; within a few rods of the spot, vessels which draw ten feet of water can come with convenience.

#### *Rivers, Streams, &c.*

On the east is the Hudson river, which is one of the largest and most commodious rivers in the United States. It is navigable for any ship to Catskill, which ever entered the harbour of the city of New York.

The Catskill river, or creek, rises out of the lake in a swamp, in Scott's Patent, thirty-four miles from where it empties itself into the Hudson. About twenty miles from the mouth, it is intersected by the Canton-kill, which rises in a lake on the height of Catskill mountains, or as sometimes called Blue Mountains, but more properly, the Allegany. To these streams nature has been more liberal, in many respects, than perhaps to any small streams on the continent. At every season of the year they afford sufficiency of water. They abound with falls and dams, formed by nature, far superiour for strength and convenience to any made by art. They require little more than a suitable building and machinery, to set any kind of water works in motion.

At the south-west part of the town, there is a fall of water of two hundred and sixty feet perpendicular.

About four miles from Catskill landing, there is a lake containing between forty and fifty acres, situated on a mountain of considerable magnitude. From this lake issues a stream of water running one hundred feet under a bed of limestone, whose height is thirty feet above the surface

face of the lake. After running about half of a mile, it carries a saw, grist, and fulling mill, all of which are erected at the foot of the mountain, on which is the lake.

#### *Roads.*

The principal road is the Turnpike, leading from Catskill-landing to the Susquehannah river, a distance of about ninety miles; not far from the junction of the Oleout with the Susquehannah.

From the village of Lunenburg, which lies at the north part of the town, there is a turnpike road extending twenty-one miles west; at which distance it approaches within a mile and a quarter of the Susquehannah turnpike, and is there intersected by a turnpike from Old Schoharie, running north and south.

There is a company incorporated by the Legislature at the last session, for the purpose of making, agreeably to petition, a turnpike road from Albany to the line of the state of New-Jersey. This road is to pass through the villages of Lunenburg and Catskill-landing. In its whole extent it is to be made as near Hudson river, as the nature of the ground will admit.

There are several other roads of a more private nature, and which are as good, as they are in general in old settled towns in Massachusetts.

#### *Timber.*

The principal timber is the white and black oak, and the yellow and white pine. Of the best kind of timber for ship-building there is plenty. Walnut and maple are also plenteous; particularly the former, which is considered the most valuable on account of the nuts, which it produces in great abundance, and which are much admired for their superiour quality. About a thousand bushels are annually exported from the town.

#### *Produce.*

Wheat, rye, corn, barley, oats, and peas, are raised, more than sufficient for the consumption of the inhabitants. The soil is favourable for wheat. A large quantity is yearly raised and floured for the New-York market. All kinds of fruit, common to the northern states, is raised in abundance.

abundance. The land produces excellent grass for pasturing and hay. Beef and pork are raised for exportation.

At the south-west part of the town, black spruce grows in abundance, from which a large quantity of the essence is extracted for making beer, the greater part of which is exported.

#### *Number of Inhabitants.*

There are between five and six thousand inhabitants in the town, the majority of whom are from the New-England states. There are seven hundred electors. There are numbers of Dutch, and between seven and eight hundred blacks. Nearly two thousand inhabitants are in Catskill-landing, living within three quarters of a mile of each other.

#### *Mills.*

There are seven grist mills, and about the same number of saw mills.

Four miles from the mouth of Catskill creek, in the village of Madison, stands a flouring mill, lately erected, belonging to Ira Day and Company, a few rods west of the Susquehannah turnpike. It was set in motion in February, 1803. It is the most curious and complicated piece of machinery, which perhaps is of the kind in the United States. It daily manufactures between five and six hundred bushels of wheat into flour. It has two water wheels, each of which carries two stoves for the grinding of the wheat, &c. The whole of the wheat, as it is purchased, is poured into a hopper containing fifteen bushels, in which it is weighed, the hopper being erected for the purpose upon a scale fashion. Hence it descends into different bins, according to its quality for goodness, conducted by different spouts. From these bins the wheat is taken by elevators, and is conducted through screws, fanning mills, smut machines, into the hoppers over the stoves for grinding. After having descended into a long trough, it is conducted up into the bolts, and thence to a large cooling room, and there cooled by stirring; after which it is carried into a room for packing. All these various operations, with a packing screw, are performed by water, effected in consequence of different gear by the two large water wheels only. These wheels are turned with rapidity,



ity, with not more than half the quantity of water, which is necessary for one of our common grist mills. The flour made in this mill is principally sold in New-York.

*Villages.*

There are four villages in the town, viz. Madison, Jefferson, Lunenburg, and Catskill-landing.

MADISON is a small village. It consists of nine dwelling houses, newly and neatly built, at the mill before described, of three stores, one publick house, and a few other small buildings. There is kept here a large store of European and West-India goods. This village will send annually, according to present calculation, through Catskill-landing to New-York, between sixty and seventy thousand dollars worth of flour, chiefly belonging to Ira Day and Company. It is a place, which undoubtedly must increase in settlements and business very rapidly.

JEFFERSON is also a new village. It is situated about two miles north of Catskill-landing, and about the same distance south of Madison. It consists of ten dwelling houses, three stores, and two publick houses. The merchants trade in lumber, which they receive for their goods; the most of which is sent to the landing for sale.

LUNENBURG is situated on the west bank of Hudson river, directly opposite to the city of Hudson, commanding a beautiful prospect of its buildings and shipping. It is five miles north of Catskill-landing. It contains near a hundred buildings, including dwelling houses, stores, &c. The south part of this village, which goes by the name of Lower Purchase, is in a very flourishing situation. Between this and the Upper Purchase, or the north part of Lunenburg, there is a small distance without any buildings. They are in fact two separate villages at present, though known both by the name of Lunenburg. It is about two years since they began to build on the lower purchase. It now consists of between twenty and thirty buildings, erected mostly with brick, in a neat and well finished manner. It is already a place of considerable business, and is conveniently situated for navigation. Several wharves have lately been built out into the river. To the upper purchase the inhabitants have given the name of Espran-ija.

ija. This upper purchase has been settled a long time. Several of the inhabitants are Dutch. They are said to possess a litigious spirit, being inclined to have almost every trivial controversy settled by law. The writer of this has been creditably informed, that in this village, forty judgments have been obtained in the course of one day, before one justice of the peace.

CATSKILL-LANDING is the principal and most noted place in the town. It lies on Catskill creek, which forms a safe and convenient harbour for vessels. The creek is narrow and deep; but no vessel, which draws more than ten feet of water, can come into it, by reason of a sand bar near its junction with the Hudson river. The populous part of the village at present is nearly half of a mile from the Gnat river. There are twelve wharves built into the creek. From the mouth of the creek to the north part of the village the course is north, two points west.

There are nearly two hundred buildings in the village; twelve ware houses, thirty-one mercantile stores, one court-house and jail for the county, a printing office, and the remainder dwelling houses. The buildings are good; many of them are of brick. The dwelling houses are mostly two stories high. Those, which are not built of brick, are handsomely painted.

The village consists principally of two rows of houses, running nearly parallel with the creek, forming one large and handsome street. On the east of the village there is a large hill, at the foot of which the houses are built. On its eminence stand the court-house and jail. The top of the hill being level and convenient for building, it has been laid out into regular streets and house lots. There is but one dwelling house on this eminence, which was built the present year. This house commands a beautiful prospect of Hudson river, and of all the vessels passing up and down the river. All the other house lots on this eminence afford an equally agreeable prospect. This village is watered by the best of spring water, and is conducted into almost every house by an aqueduct.

From the village there is a romantick prospect of all the blue mountains, and of the little hills upon them. This village

village is perhaps unequalled, in point of situation for the West-India trade, by any of its bigness on the continent. It affords in great abundance every article for exportation, and almost every article necessary for ship-building. A wharf might be built into Hudson river as far as a small island, which lies about one quarter of a mile from the shore, to accommodate the trade carried on by navigation. A wharf might be built here with little expence, as the ground, from the east bank of the river to the island, is bare at low water, there being a large flat between them. Near the west part of the island is the channel of the river. But notwithstanding these uncommon conveniences for the West-India trade, the inhabitants have never engaged in it; it being a business with which they are wholly unacquainted, and of consequence fearful, that they should not carry it on with success. To gentlemen of property acquainted with the West-India trade, the situation and prospects afford the most ample encouragement to allure them here, and to induce them immediately to engage in the business. The present inhabitants have already had it in contemnation to build a wharf out as far as the island before mentioned. They are generally possessed of a publick and enterprising spirit.

#### *Stages and Mails.*

After the first of October next, a stage will start for Albany, and one for New-York, on every Tuesday and Friday, and others from the same places will arrive here on the same days. These will intersect various other lines of stages from the different parts of other states. The mail goes to, and returns from, Hudson, twice a week by water. There is also a mail from this place to Tiogapoint, in the state of Pennsylvania, which is commonly but one fortnight going and coming.

#### *Amount of Exportation.*

From the town there is annually exported to the city of New-York, between three and four hundred thousand dollars worth of produce; more than three hundred thousand of which go from Catskill-landing.

#### *Bridge.*

The only bridge of any considerable magnitude is that, which

which is built over Catskill creek. It is two hundred feet in length. It has a draw, through which vessels pass to the north part of the village. It is a place of resort in the warm season of the year for parties of pleasure. It affords a beautiful prospect. It is a toll bridge ; over which the New-York and Albany stages pass.

*Fishing and Fowling.*

Shad, bass, herring, sturgeon, pike, trout, perch, &c. are caught in Hudson river. Various kinds of small fish are found in the other streams.

Wild geese and ducks are found very plenteously in the spring and autumn. These and wild pigeons are the chief fowls, which are killed for use. Fishing and fowling are under no restrictions, but free for any one.

*Increase of landed Property.*

Land, which was sold in Catskill-landing, in the year 1786, for ten dollars an acre, has since been sold at the rate of four thousand dollars an acre. Good building lots, consisting of sixty feet in front, and one hundred in rear, are now selling from three to four hundred dollars, by the acre.

*Progression of Population and Business.*

In Catskill-landing, there has been a natural progressive increase of business, equal, if not superiour, to any on Hudson river, and perhaps to any in this country.

In the year 1787 the village consisted of but five dwelling houses, and one store ; at which time there were two sloops belonging to the place, which were employed in carrying lumber to New-York. In that year there were but two hundred and fifty-seven bushels of wheat, fifteen thousand feet of lumber, and two thousand nine hundred and eighty pounds of pot ash exported from the place. In 1792 the village consisted of ten buildings ; one coasting sloop of between fifty and sixty tons was the only vessel, which was then owned in the place. In that year there were only six hundred and twenty-four bushels of wheat sent from the place, which was the principal article of exportation. In 1802 the village consisted of one hundred and eighty buildings ; at which time twelve vessels were owned

owned in the place, which were employed in carrying the produce of the country to New York. Two others were employed in coasting to and from Boston, and one to the southern states. The navigation increases in proportion to the population. In that year ten thousand bushels of wheat were exported. The exportation of pot and pearl ashes has increased in proportion. Between fifteen and sixteen hundred sleighs, containing chiefly wheat and pot-ash, have been unloaded in the village in one day. In the village shipping to the amount of thirty-seven thousand tons have been built, in one year, for foreign markets.

Taking into consideration the many advantages, which this village enjoys for navigation and trade, and also that the turnpike road from Salisbury in Connecticut to the Susquehannah river, which passes through the village, a distance of an hundred and eleven miles, will be completed this season; the inhabitants may reasonably expect a still more rapid increase of trade and population.

#### *Literature.*

There are fifteen schools taught in the town; three of which are in the Landing. In one of these are taught the languages.

There is a well regulated library in the Landing, containing six hundred and seventy-two volumes of well chosen books.

There are two clergymen in the town; one at the Landing, an Episcopalian, and the other a Dutch Presbyterian, between two and three miles west of the Landing.

There are eight licensed attornies in the town, and several merchants, who have received a publick education; two of whom have been regular settled ministers in Connecticut, and another was a licensed candidate preacher from that State. These three are now members of the Presbyterian church in Catskill-landing, and gentlemen of reputable characters.

#### *Churches.*

There are four churches in the town. Two at the Landing; one Episcopalian, of which Rev. Mr. Bradford is the minister; and one Presbyterian, over which there is no settled minister. One is in the village of Lunenburg, which

which at present is vacant; and one between two and three miles west of the Landing, over which Rev. Mr. Laubaugh is the minister.

*Houses of Publick Worship.*

There are at present but two in the town, which belong to the two Dutch churches and societies. The Episcopalians are making preparations to build one in the course of the present year. The Presbyterian society intend soon to build them a meeting-house, and to settle a minister. At present they meet in the court-house for publick worship. Several wealthy and publick spirited men belong to this church and society.

*m. n.*

A TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION OF NEWTOWN, IN THE STATE OF NEW YORK. AUGUST, 1803. BY THE AUTHOR OF THE PRECEDING ARTICLE.

NEWTOWN lies at the south-west corner of the county of Tioga. It is a half shire.\* The township is thirteen miles square; but not more than one quarter of the land is under improvement. It was incorporated in the year 1793.

*Boundaries.*

South by the north line of Pennsylvania, in north latitude 42°.; east by Chemung; north by Catharines; and west by the pre-emption line, bounding the east part of a gore of land, ceded to Massachusetts by the legislature of New-York.

*Newtown Village.*

The village lies on the north bank of Tioga river. The principal street is Water-street; the houses and stores on which are compact: they stand fronting the river, at the distance of about four rods. There are two other streets laid out, parallel to Water-street, running east and west. From Water-street there are eight cross streets, leading north into the two other long streets; but the greater part

\* The Courts for the county sit half the time in Chenengo, sixty miles from Newtown.

part of the buildings are as yet on Water-street, extending east and west, nearly one mile. Most of the buildings have been erected within six years. It is a very flourishing place. There is a large country already settled, lying north and west of it; the surplus produce of which is brought to it for market. The produce of the country round the Seneca and Cayuga lakes is brought here to be sent down the Susquehannah river, either to Baltimore or to some of the towns north. To favour the intercourse between the inhabitants in the vicinity of the lakes and those of Newtown, and to render transportation less expensive, the legislature have granted an act of incorporation for making a turnpike road, extending from the village to the lakes, which is a distance of eighteen miles. It is expected, that this road will be completed by the autumn of 1804. The land on each side of the road is good, except a few miles which is low and swampy. On the front of the village, in the river, there is a small island, containing about eight acres. It is long and narrow. On it are growing several kinds of trees, which make a delightful shade in the hot season of the year. It is a retreat for parties of pleasure.

The land in the village, on Water-street, is selling from three hundred to six hundred dollars by the acre. The village is three hundred and sixty-seven miles from the Federal-city, north, 15'. east.

#### *Soil and Produce.*

The soil is generally good. Near the river it is of a clayey nature. The land is suitable for grass, English grain, and corn. Most of the hay is made from good herds-grass. Large quantities of wheat are raised, and sent down the Susquehannah in arks, constructed for the purpose. The arks carry from ten to fourteen hundred bushels each. Part of the wheat is sent to Baltimore. Between forty and fifty thousand bushels are sent down the Susquehannah from Newtown annually. The land is very favourable for raising stock. Fat cattle are carried to market down the river in arks. This is a much easier and cheaper way than driving them by land.

The principal wood is the oak, walnut, and maple; but  
birch,

birch, elm, butter-nut, and pine, are not scarce. Adjacent to the village, for little more than a mile each way, the timber is mostly pine and hemlock. The soil, on which this grows, is not so clear and good as that which produces hard wood.

Most of the pine timber is suitable for lumber, a considerable quantity of which is made, and sent down the Susquehannah in rafts.

The country at present does not produce much fruit. Peaches are more common than apples. In a few years however apples will be plenty, as farmers in general are paying great attention to nurseries and orchards. There are already several large orchards set out, which are highly flourishing; several of which begin to bear fruit. It is therefore probable, that cider will be plenty here in a few years.

Wild apples and plumbs are found in abundance in the woods in autumn. These make excellent preserves, and are gathered for this purpose by the inhabitants. The apple is about as large as a shagbark walnut, including the bark. It is, when ripe, hard and very tart.

The plumb is palatable and sweet. Some of them are red, and others are yellow.

Mandrakes are also found in the woods. They are gathered and preserved for sweetmeats.

Several thousand pounds of good maple sugar are made in the town every year. It is likewise made in the adjacent settlements, and brought into Newtown for sale.

#### *Roads.*

The roads in and about Newtown are very good; much better than they are generally in old settled towns at the eastward.

#### *Mountains.*

The greater part of the land is level. There are two mountains in the town. The larger of which is nearly four miles west of the village, extending north and south, and inclining two points and an half east from the north part of the town to the south. The other is one mile and an half east of the village. Its course is also north and south, inclining from the north part of the town, as it extends



extends to the south part, one point west. These mountains are covered with brush wood and trees. They are very steep, and incapable of much improvement, particularly that on the west of the village. They however occupy but a small proportion of the town.

*Streams.*

The Tioga river runs through the town from the west to the east, inclining, after it passes the village, almost a south-east course. It empties into the Susquehannah at Tioga Point, in the state of Pennsylvania, lat. 41°. 57'. twenty miles from Newtown village. By it the inhabitants have connexion, and maintain commercial intercourse with the towns on the Susquehannah, as far south as Baltimore, in the state of Maryland. It is navigable for boats, which carry from twenty to five-and-twenty tons, as far as the town, called Painted-Post,\* eighteen miles west of the village. At this place, there is a junction of two streams, forming the Tioga river; one of which comes from the north-east, and the other about one point south of west.

There are two other streams, one of which is called Newtown creek, and the other Seeby's creek. They both empty into Tioga river. Newtown creek rises south of the Seneca lake. Its course is almost due south. It falls into the Tioga river at the east part of the village, forming by its junction with the river what is called Newtown Point. It is a permanent stream, having its rise from durable springs. On it stand several grist and saw mills.

Seeby's creek, so called, is a much smaller stream. Its course is by the east side of the mountain, already described, which lies on the west of the village. It empties into the Tioga river, at the south part of the town. It is called Seeby's creek, in consequence of a number of families, by name Seeby, originally settling near it. The land east of it, on which the settlements and improvements are, is excellent.

In

---

\* Called by this name, in consequence of its being the place where the different tribes of Indians, living in this part of the country, were accustomed to assemble to hold their councils and make their treaties. Here they erected a large post, and painted it *red*; that it might more easily be known at what place to assemble. It is in the county of Steuben.

In Tioga river and in Newtown creek there are caught several kinds of fresh water fish ; viz. chub, pickerel, perch, and trout. In the river, shad are caught in the spring : also a fresh water fish called Oswego bass,\* which weighs from four to twelve pounds.

#### *Salt.*

The salt used in this and the adjacent settlements, is brought in waggons from the southern part of the Seneca lake, which is eighteen miles from Newtown village. It is made at the Onondago lake, which lies twenty-seven miles north-west from the north end of Seneca lake. Within eight miles hence, the salt is brought in boats in the Seneca river, at the place where it is joined by the Scayace river ; it being no farther boatable towards the lake.† From this place it is carried to the north end of the Seneca lake in waggons, and then to the south end, a distance of forty miles, in a sloop of forty tons. The salt is much lighter, than that brought from the West Indies ; but it is in general much clearer and whiter. The salt spring is within a half mile of the Onondago lake ; the water of which is salter than that of the ocean. “ It constantly emits water in sufficient quantity for works of any extent.” It is supposed, that there are salt springs in Newtown, about eight miles north of the village. Should this prove to be a certainty, salt works will be immediately erected there.

#### *Price of Land.*

The cleared and improved lands are as clear as they are in old settled country towns in Connecticut and Massachusetts. The new land about six miles from the village, is from twenty to twenty-four shillings, York currency, by the acre. Lots are sold on six years credit ; and three years without interest. The quality of the land is good, and easily cleared. It affords great encouragement to those who wish to purchase new farms. There is scarcely any

---

\* Called by this name, because they were first caught in the Oswego river, which empties into lake Ontario.

† The Seneca river has its chief or original source in the lake of that name. It does not become boatable until it advances eight miles towards the Onondago, at the place, where it receives the Scayace river.

any cleared and improved land, except small lots in the village, for sale in the town. The country is considered very healthful.

*Number of Inhabitants.*

There are two thousand four hundred inhabitants in Newtown. These constitute about three hundred families. There are two hundred eighty electors. There is not a person so poor as to be supported by the town. Most of the inhabitants, except those in the village, where the greater part are mechanicks, merchants, and professional characters, are supported by agriculture. The inhabitants are rapidly multiplying every year, by new settlers. Mechanicks are wanted, especially blacksmiths and carpenters.

*Mills and Distilleries.*

There is as yet hardly a sufficient number of saw mills to cut the lumber which is wanted, nor of grist mills to grind the grain which is used in the town.

In the course of the present year, there is to be erected a flour mill, at the north end of Water-street, on a large and improved plan, in which flour of the best quality will be made for the southern markets.

There are seven distilleries; one of which, two miles east of the village, is on a new plan, as secured to the inventor by patent from Congress. The greater part of the spirits, which is whiskey, is sold to the inhabitants living on the Susquehannah river. Some of it is sent down to Baltimore.

*Schools.*

Parents are careful not to employ any but suitable persons for instructors to their children; such as are of good morals, and have an acquaintance with the rules of reading, pronunciation, and grammar. Considering there is no law in the state, pointing out the qualifications of schoolmasters, or in any way regulating common schools, the conduct of parents in Newtown, in this respect, must be considered laudable, and highly worthy of imitation.

It is probable that there will be an Academy established in Newtown village in a few years. There are several gentlemen who are now anxious to have some of their children taught the languages.

*Religion.*

*Religion.*

Rev. Daniel Thacher, a Presbyterian minister,\* from the state of New-Jersey, formed a church in Newtown, about six years past. The church is very small, consisting only of about fourteen members. It was formed upon the Presbyterian plan, and upon the Westminster's confession of faith. But the majority of the people are men of liberal sentiments, and desirous of procuring a Congregational minister. They have associated accordingly for the purpose of supporting the publick privileges of the gospel. They have formed and signed a constitution, by which they have severally bound themselves to pay what they have subscribed to the minister, whom the majority of a committee, consisting of fifteen chosen for the purpose, shall procure and establish in the place. The committee are to obligate themselves to see the contract with the minister fulfilled. They do not propose to have the minister, whom they shall procure, consecrated in particular over the present church; but to administer the ordinances to them, if they should wish it. If the male members of the present church should insist upon an acknowledgment of a belief in the Westminster's confession of faith, as an indispensable condition for admission into the church, there will undoubtedly be a new church established upon a more liberal plan: so that others, who cannot give their full assent to its articles of faith, may not, on this account, be debarred the enjoyment of ecclesiastical ordinances.

*Place of Publick Worship.*

The usual place for publick worship at present is the court-house. But they purpose, as soon as they can procure a clergyman whom they would wish to settle, to build a meeting-house; to do which, the present association for the support of publick worship are abundantly able.

The western wilderness, in a civil and moral sense, is beginning to blossom like the rose.

*m n*

---

\* Mr. Thacher was sent out a missionary by the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Clergy of the United States, to preach and form churches in new settlements. He is now dead. He was said to be a pious man.

A TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION OF BRIMFIELD, BY THE AUTHOR OF THE TWO PRECEDING ARTICLES. JUNE, 1803.

**B** RIMFIELD lies in the county of Hampshire, Massachusetts, seventy-five miles south-west by west from Boston, and thirty-four south-east by east from Northampton, the shire town of the county.

*Boundaries.*

It is bounded by Worcester county twelve miles and twenty-two rods: viz. east by Sturbridge, four miles and three quarters and twenty rods; north-east by a small corner of Brookfield, one quarter of a mile; north by Western, seven miles and an half. It is bounded by Palmer and Monson\* on the west, three miles on the former, and three miles and a quarter and forty rods on the latter; and south by South-Brimfield and Holland, three miles and three quarters and twenty rods on the former, and two miles and three quarters and ten rods on the latter. The line between Brimfield and Sturbridge is strait: from the south to the north, it inclines 6°. 30'. east. From the north-east corner of the town, the separating line from Western was first west, 15°. south, three miles and a quarter and two rods; then north, 4°. west, one half of a mile; and then west, 23°. north, three miles and an half; thence on to the south, Chickope river† divides the town from Palmer for three miles, when it strikes the north-east corner of Monson; from which, the line runs south, 5°. east, which separates the town from Monson: the line on the south, which separates the town from South-Brimfield and Holland, is strait; from the west to the east point, it inclines only about 8°. 30'. north.

Upon an average, the town is about six miles in length and five in breadth.

It was incorporated by the General Court, July 14th, 1731. It then included Monson, South-Brimfield, and Holland,

---

\* Doctor Morse, in his American Gazetteer, has made a mistake in saying that Monson lies east of Brimfield.

† See the description and course of the river, under Streams, &c.

Holland, and part of Western, now in Worcester county. It began to be settled in the year 1701.

*Soil. Wood. Produce.*

The soil is much preferable to that of the adjacent towns. There is very little unimproved land in the town. There is about one thousand acres of tillage land, and upwards of eight hundred of good upland mowing.

The black and white oak is the most common wood: there is not much pine and hemlock; but there is a considerable quantity of chesnut, butternut, birch, and maple. Firewood is growing scarce; it is generally sold for one dollar and seventeen cents a cord in the middle of the town.

The principal part of the produce raised in the town consists in rye, corn, beans, butter, beef, and pork: the four last are most of the articles, which are carried to market. The inhabitants generally trade at Boston. Most of the farmers carry their own produce to market. There is but little wheat raised in the town, not so much as is consumed by the inhabitants. A small quantity only of cheese is made for market, and that not of the best quality. The dairies are small. There are but few large farms. The butter, which is carried to market, is generally of an excellent quality.

The inhabitants principally get their living by farming. There are but few tradesmen, not so many as are really wanted. The land naturally being fertile, and easy to improve, the inhabitants have never been distinguished for industry: the farms are poorly fenced; and few only are under proper improvement. Double the number of inhabitants might be supported in the town by agriculture were the farms as well managed, as they are in Sturbridge, an adjacent township, where the soil is not half so good. Were the inhabitants more ambitious to excel in agriculture, and to encourage tradesmen to settle among them, the town would assume a very different aspect.

Its manufactories and publick buildings, which are necessary to render any town flourishing and respectable, have been neglected.

There have been proposals made to the inhabitants by  
those

those of other towns, to have turnpike roads pass through the town; particularly the one which is already completed from Norwich to Stafford, in Connecticut, and which is to be extended to Dartmouth College; but the proposals were not treated with much attention by the most wealthy part of the inhabitants. They act with respect to almost all publick institutions, as if they thought the property, expended upon them, was in effect thrown away.

### *Buildings.*

There is one gin distillery, four saw mills, and four grist mills; but none of flour in the middle of the town.

There is but one house for publick worship, which has been built upwards of sixty years. It is small and inelegant. It stands on a beautiful rise of ground, in the centre of the town, gradually descending as you go from the house on every side, and subsiding after a few rods into level ground.

There are ten districts for schools, and nine school-houses; but the school-houses are mostly out of repair. The one in the middle of the town is small, very inconvenient, and quite old: and although there are nearly one hundred scholars belonging to the district, its inhabitants cannot be convinced at present of the necessity of erecting a new one of a larger and more convenient size.

Except six two story dwelling-houses, in the middle of the town, which are finished and handsomely painted, and about twenty others in different parts of the place, the houses are small and mean. It may, however, be reasonably expected, that, in a few years, the town will appear much more respectable as to its buildings.

### *Streams and Ponds.*

The town is well watered. Chickapee river, which has its rise in a large pond, in the south parish in Brookfield, separates Brimfield from Palmer for the distance of three miles; it strikes the north-west corner of the town; from which its general course is south, 16°. west, until it comes to the north-west corner of Monson, when it turns off to the west: it empties into Connecticut river in Springfield.

Quinabogue river runs through the south-east part of the

the town. It rises in Union, in Connecticut, runs through Holland into Brimfield, then into Sturbridge, and so on till it empties into Thames river, near Norwich landing, Connecticut. Its course is very crooked. It runs near north, till it comes into Brimfield; then nearly east, till it gets into Sturbridge, where it takes about a south-east course.

This river receives another, about half as large, one mile and an half before it runs into Sturbridge. This latter stream is composed of several smaller streams: one from a pond, lying north from the Townplat, which runs south one mile and a quarter, and crosses the Townplat about half of a quarter mile east of the meeting-house; it then turns off, south-east, and unites after a few rods with another stream which comes from the south part of the town: these two being thus united, and constituting one stream, receive another, nearly as large as both of them, from South-Brimfield, about three quarters of a mile from the meeting-house; which being united, the course is east, two points south, until it empties into the Quinabogue, one mile and an half before it comes to the Sturbridge line, as before observed.

There are two ponds in the town: one of which, the largest, is about one mile north,  $22^{\circ} 30'$  east, from the Townplat, on the road to the south parish in Brookfield. It contains about sixty acres. From it large quantities of clay are taken, with which excellent bricks are made. The other, which is called Allum Pond, in consequence of its very solid white bottom, and the water being very clear, is two miles and an half east of the Townplat: it contains about forty acres. From it a small stream runs east into Sturbridge. They both abound with the fish and eels common to fresh ponds.

#### *Townplat, Roads, &c.*

The Townplat is beautifully situated. The roads from Sturbridge, South-Brimfield, Holland, Monson, Palmer, Western, and Brookfield, all centre at, and pass through it. It is mostly surrounded by hills, at different distances and of different magnitudes. There are two roads leading from it to the northward; one to Western and to the  
west



west parish in Brookfield; and the other to the south parish in Brookfield, which is the Boston road. The former runs almost directly north for two miles, at which distance it turns off to the north-west, and from the same place there is a cross road leading to Western city, so called, which runs north one point west.

The other road, leading northward from the Townplat, runs north,  $22^{\circ}. 30'$ . east; and then turns off to the north-east. The road, leading from the north-west corner of Sturbridge, comes into this road four miles from the Townplat at the south-west corner of Western. From the Townplat, for the distance of three quarters of a mile, these two northern roads are only about one quarter of a mile from each other; but they are separated by a hill, which is very steep on the east side: they are connected by a cross road, which however is very steep, rising from the east to the west, being almost impassable for teams and carriages. The east road is very level for one mile. This is the most direct road to Boston from Monson, South-Brimfield, and Holland.

The road leading to Monson and Palmer, and through one part of Palmer to Springfield, and through another part to Northampton, &c. runs west,  $22^{\circ}. 30'$ . north: the meeting-house stands fronting this road, a few rods north of it.

The road to Sturbridge, &c. is east one point, or  $11^{\circ}. 15'$ . south.

The road to South-Brimfield, and so on to Stafford, in Connecticut, is south for three quarters of a mile, and then south, one point west: and to Holland, and so on to Union, in Connecticut, at the same place where it separates from the South-Brimfield road, is south,  $1^{\circ}. 30'$ . east, for one mile and three quarters, and then south one mile unto Holland, inclining in its general course half of a point to the west.

About two miles west of the Townplat, there is a large and steep eminence, called by the inhabitants, *West Mountain*, on which there is a large high rock: from this rock there is a very extensive and beautiful prospect exhibited, the neighbouring towns and their houses of worship rising to view.

*Number*

*Number of inhabitants.*

There are between thirteen and fourteen hundred inhabitants in the town; among whom there is an uncommon proportion upwards of seventy years of age.

The town is considered healthful. It has proved so to the writer of this, who upon his settlement in the town was an invalid, weak and spare, but now fleshy and healthy.

There have been no very remarkable instances of longevity in the town. The most remarkable, which has ever happened, was Mr. Joseph Morgan: he died in the winter of 1798, aged ninety-five. He retained his mental faculties, and his bodily powers, to the last hour of his life: his memory was very tenacious: he could relate with precision things and events which took place in his youth.

There have only two hundred and eighty persons died in the town for fourteen years past, ending December 31st, 1802. The population of the town does not increase, on account of the spirit of emigration, which has prevailed among the inhabitants for several years past. Within about four years, nearly forty families have removed into the new settlements at the westward. Were it not for this, and the want of some enterprizing and publick-spirited men, with some more industrious tradesmen and farmers, the place would soon become one of the most flourishing and beautiful towns in the county, except a few of those on Connecticut river.

*Literary Characters.*

The town has not been distinguished for many characters of extensive erudition. There have been four ministers of publick education ordained over the church and congregation in the town, memoirs of whom shall hereafter be given.

Hon. Timothy Danielson, Esq. was distinguished as a literary and publick character. He was a brigadier-general, a justice throughout the commonwealth, and a senator for the county of Hampshire, during a number of years. He was educated at Yale College, and graduated in the year 1756. He studied divinity, and preached one sermon only, and that for the Rev. Mr. Bridgham of this town.

He

He died September 19th, 1791. His widow, who was left young and in affluent circumstances, married Capt. William Eaton, late consul from the United States to the kingdom of Tunis. Capt. Eaton is a gentleman of liberal education, and distinguished talents. He was educated at Dartmouth College.

Abner Morgan and Stephen Pyncheon, Esqrs. attornies at law, are gentlemen of liberal education: the former was educated at Harvard College, and the latter at Yale College.

Mr. Abner Stebbins educated a son at Yale College, who was a tutor there for several years: he is now an attorney at law, in New-Milford, Lincoln county, District of Maine.

Dr. Joseph Moffett educated his eldest son at Dartmouth. He is now settled as a physician in Danville, Vermont.

Deacon Ebenezer Fairbanks educated a son at Yale College, who is now and has been for several years a licensed candidate preacher.

Deacon Jonathan Morgan has given a publick education to an only son: he graduated at Union College last May.

Mr. Caleb Sherman, whose parents are dead, will graduate at Providence College the next commencement.

#### *Schools.*

It has been too much the custom in this town, as it has been in several other country towns, to hire cheap schoolmasters. This being the general principle, upon which the committees of districts proceed, it cannot reasonably be expected, that proper persons should always be engaged as instructors. Add to this, that there is no one school taught through the year, and no one kept in the summer season, except by young women for little girls and boys, and also that the selectmen of the town, and the committees of districts, are altogether negligent of their duty in visiting the schools and causing the scholars to be examined; the consequence must be, that in all such schools there must be great deficiency. But notwithstanding all this neglect and delinquency, the schools are under much better regulations than they were a few years past.

Most

Most of the instructors, who are employed in the winter season, have a general acquaintance with grammar and arithmetick, and also a general knowledge of the rules of reading, pronounciation, and of the other branches, taught in our common English schools. It is to be hoped, and it may reasonably be expected, that a much greater attention will yet be paid to the schools, and consequently to the morals and abilities of those whom they shall employ as teachers.

#### *Libraries.*

There was a library established in town near thirty years past; a considerable part of which consisted in old school divinity; the books are mostly worn out, and many of them wholly destroyed. There have been no additions made to it for several years: the present proprietors pay little or no attention to the rules and restrictions upon which it was originally established.

About four years past, a new one was established; the proprietors of which are incorporated, according to an act of the Legislature provided for the incorporation of such associations. It consists of upwards of one hundred volumes judiciously selected. But it is painful to observe this very useful and laudable establishment finding but little encouragement from the wealthiest part of the town. Hence it must be inferred, that publick institutions are not much encouraged by charitable donations.

#### *Ecclesiastical Affairs.*

The church records having been destroyed, during the ministry of Rev. Mr. Bridgham, at the time his house was burned, it cannot be ascertained when the church was gathered, nor when the first minister was ordained.

Rev. Richard Treat was the first settled minister. He was dismissed from his pastoral relation to the church, March 25, 1734.

Rev. James Bridgham; a native of Boston, was his successor. He was ordained June 9, 1736. He was graduated at Harvard College, in 1726. He died Sept. 17, 1776, aged 69. He was said to possess moderate powers of elocution, but extensive learning.

Rev. Nehemiah Williams, who was also an alumnus  
of

of Harvard College in 1769, was ordained colleague with Mr. Bridgham, Feb. 9, 1775. He died Nov. 16, 1796. During the latter part of his ministry, he suffered somewhat through the disaffection of part of his flock, who employed as preachers illiterate itinerants. But he uniformly sustained the character of a pious and learned minister, and was highly respected by all his acquaintances. He was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; and a volume of his sermons, since his death, has been given to the publick. It is to be hoped, that the grave of this respected minister will not be neglected, like that of Rev. Mr. Bridgham, which, for want of a stone, cannot be found.

Rev. Clark Brown, who was first ordained over a congregation at Machias, (Maine,) having obtained a dismission thence, was installed in Brimfield, June 20, 1798.

In the February preceding, a council convened for the purpose of installing Mr. Brown. After sitting one or two days, it dissolved itself without accomplishing the object for which it was formed.

Soon after Mr. Brown's installation, several persons in Brimfield, who opposed his settlement, applied to the association of neighbouring ministers for advice. They advised to the calling of a mutual council. This measure was not acceded to on the part of the town. The minority called an *ex parte* council, which advised them to renew attempts for a mutual council. In case of a second failure, they were to apply to three neighbouring churches to establish them, "The christian congregational church of Brimfield." The advice was carefully followed; and the minority were accordingly in this manner constituted a church of the above mentioned description.

The male members of Mr. Brown's church at his installation were eighteen. The minority consisted of thirteen only. In the major church there are now twenty-six male members; in the minor church there are only ten.

In the spring of 1801 the town voted, in consequence of repeated applications from the minority, consent that a mutual council should be called, and that Mr. Brown, if he thought proper, should unite in the measure. The council was called. It was found to contain, when convened,

vened, a majority of three who were chosen by the minority. The council proceeded to business, resulted, and advised Mr. B. to ask a dismissal from his pastoral office. He complied with the advice ; but the town at a legal meeting refused to grant his request.

Both before and after the sitting of this council, an opinion prevailed in the minority, that they were not severally holden legally to pay their proportion of Mr. Brown's salary. Under the influence of this opinion an individual of the minority, a member of the new church, and of reputable estate, on being called upon to pay his ministerial tax, refused, denying that he possessed any property. The collector carried him to jail. Unable to get freedom without paying his tax, he paid it with the cost, and commenced prosecution against the assessors for illegal taxation. The town defended the suit. At the Court of Common Pleas, he made no effort to support his cause, which of course failed. He appealed to the Supreme Judicial Court, where by the aid of three attornies he attempted to prove the illegality of the tax. The Court however would not suffer the case to go to the jury, but unanimously gave it against the plaintiff. Nearly four hundred dollars were expended in this suit, of which none of the minority, the plaintiff excepted, is legally holden to pay any part.

Thus has ended the legal contest between the town and the minority. And it is hoped, that, as Mr. B. intends soon to take a peaceable dismissal from his charge, which there is the highest probability of his being able to do, the town will no more be agitated by ecclesiastical controversy ; and that the inhabitants will cultivate for each other that charity, which is the brightest ornament of christians.

---

A DESCRIPTION AND HISTORY OF WATERFORD, IN THE COUNTY OF YORK. BY REV. LINCOLN RIPLEY. AUGUST, 1803.

*Situation and Limits.*

**W**ATERFORD is an inland town in the county of York, district of Maine. It lies between  $44^{\circ}$ . and  $44^{\circ}$ . 8'. north latitude, and between  $70^{\circ}$ . 35'. and  $70^{\circ}$ . 45'. west longitude from London. It is distant seventy miles north from York, twenty north-east from the Academy at Fryeburg, forty-five north-west from Portland, and fifty west from Bowdoin College in Brunswick. It is bounded north by Oxford and Norway, east by Norway and part of Otisfield, south-east by Otisfield, south by Bridgeton, south-west by Lovell, west by the same, and north-west by part of the state lands. The town was originally seven miles and a half long, and seven wide. It was laid out in the year 1774 by Capt. Joseph Frye, of Fryeburg, Mr. Jabez Brown, of Stow, and Mr. -----, of Marlborough. When the town was incorporated, March 2, 1797, three tiers of lots, each containing one hundred and sixty acres, were annexed to other tracts of land, which together compose the promising town of Norway, in the county of Cumberland. Since this separation, Waterford is seven miles long, extending from north to south,  $25^{\circ}$ . east, and six miles in width.

*History of first Settlements.*

On the 10th of October, 1775, Mr. David Mc. Quain, a young man from Bolton, having by his industry obtained about one hundred and fifty dollars, boldly ventured into the wilderness, and took up his residence in the easterly part of Waterford with no companion but his dog. His first purchase was one lot of land, for which he gave forty dollars. On the approach of winter he retreated to the milder regions whence he came. In the spring, 1776, he revisited his lonely cottage. Again he sought winter quarters in the circle of his connexions; but in the spring of 1777, he left all his former acquaintances, became a steady

dy cultivator of his own soil, and has never since revisited the place of his nativity. As the wilderness around him was a residence for moose, bears, and deer, he could generally obtain a supply of some kind of venison. After raising domestick animals, having no household furniture, except a pail, a dish, and a spoon, his method of scalding his pork, was to fill a trough with water, and then to put in heated stones, until the water would scald.

Mr. Mc. Quain continues in a state of celibacy, without any female person in his house, or any housekeeper but himself. He now owns eight hundred acres of land in one body, besides some outlands. He improves one hundred and sixty acres, and keeps forty head of cattle. His cows would afford a profitable dairy, if he had a dairy woman; but at present he finds it most advantageous to give the milk to his hogs; and in the year 1802, he fattened no less than thirty-three hundred weight of good pork. He has a flourishing orchard, whose fruit yields plenty of cider for himself and his labourers, besides many generous draughts for those who visit him. Necessary attention to his house and farm has confined him generally at home, and prevented a disposition to seek society abroad. Notwithstanding the peculiar disadvantages of his solitary condition, he has acquired by honest industry a handsome property, and pays almost double the taxes of any of his townsmen.

Five or six years after Mr. Mc. Q. settled in Waterford, three other men came hither with their families; but unable to support their families comfortably in the wilderness, they found it expedient to tread back their steps to an inhabited country. One of the same families again made a fruitless attempt to become naturalized to the place. In May, 1783, Messrs. Daniel Barker, Jonathan Robbins, Israel Hale, Asaph Brown, Europe Hamlin, and America Hamlin, with a few others, without any families, but with enterprising spirits, came and boldly pitched their wooden tents among the trees, and on their several lots, began to expose to full view of the sun the uncultivated soil. Most of them, in two or three years, introduced their families to participate with them in their toils and hopeful prospects. The greater part of them retain their



their first inheritance, and some of them liberally enjoy the well earned fruits of their early labours.

On the 8th of September in the same year, Mr. Phillip Hor, originally from Taunton, last from Brookfield, came into town to seek a lot of land, which he had previously bought. The next June, two of his sons came with him to make preparation for the removal of his family. On the approach of winter he returned to Brookfield, leaving his sons to brave the severities of a long winter in the wilderness, or to let themselves in some more inhabited town, to procure necessaries for the ensuing season. In June, 1785, Mr. Hor, with more courage than property, returned to Waterford with his wife, who originated from Norton, and with the remainder of his family. Urged by necessity, prompted by sense of duty, and supported by the consolations of religion, this pious couple with six children passed through almost incredible scenes of suffering. The principal part of their household effects was brought several miles on the shoulders of those, who conducted them from Bridgeton to this place. Disappointed of provision previously engaged, and of a log-hut in which they were to have lived one season on a plat of ground not their own, they were obliged to shelter themselves in a cottage, whose floor and covering consisted of the bark of trees. This was their only habitation during the space of nearly two years. For a whole year they were destitute of even a cow. Their nighest neighbour in the summer season was three miles distant; and six weeks of the following winter passed, in which the family saw no human being beside themselves. A dog was the only domestick animal they possessed, and on his fidelity in some measure depended their safety. At Bridgeton was the nearest corn mill. To obtain meal therefore, they had either to carry grain on their backs twelve miles, or first travel that distance to borrow an horse, carry their grain the next day, and on the third day return their horse. Having received a religious education, it was a serious trial to them to be deprived of the publick ministration of the gospel. For some time, Mrs. Hor was the only inhabitant of Waterford, who was in full communion with any christian church. Her husband and two sons, who first came to the

the town, have since gladdened her heart by becoming members of the same body: and the joy she has expressed on beholding the divine word and ordinances here statedly administered, bore some resemblance to that of good old Simeon, when he embraced the infant Saviour.

Three months after the arrival of this family, Mr. Oliver Hapgood and wife emigrated hither from Stow. Their eldest son and first child was the first ever known, by the present inhabitants, to have been born in Waterford. To this child was given, as a birth privilege, a tract of land containing fifty acres, which now awaits his age of manhood, and which, lying near the centre of the town, promises a pleasant and valuable settlement. In March, 1786, Messrs. Nathaniel Chamberlain and John Chamberlain came into town from Westford.

*Face of the Country, Soil, Produce, and Exports.*

The land in Waterford, like that in the adjacent towns, is uneven. It may properly be called a land of hills and vallies. The hills however are not so high, as to be unfit for cultivation. Rising gradually, they afford pleasant prospects, and, with the vallies, are calculated for good settlements. The timber on what is usually termed hard-woodland principally consists of beech, birch, rock and white maple, red oak, and white ash. On the low, or, what is commonly called, black land, the timber is chiefly white and Norway pine, spruce, and hemlock.

Having no thermometer, except what nature has furnished in the sensibility of the human frame, we are unable to form an exact comparison between the state of the climate here, and that in the vicinity of Boston. The probability is, that there are a few days in the year, in which both heat and cold are more intense in this place, than in either Boston or Worcester.

Contrary to the opinion formerly entertained of this part of the country, the soil is fertile; and by judicious culture amply rewards the labours of the husbandman. The land is good for all kinds of grain raised in New-England, though it is not so friendly to the growth of wheat, as the more level land, which lies in the neighbourhood of large rivers. The upland yields to the mower a desirable

able burden, and to the cattle excellent grazing. Fruit trees of different kinds are cultivated with success. Many might begin to make cider, if the expense of mills, and the demand for apples to be otherwise used, did not prevent them. But the ambition of the people, and the numerous and flourishing young orchards in town afford reason to hope, that we shall soon have a competency of both apples and cider.

Potatoes of various kinds and of a good quality are here made profitable for man and beast. There is scarcely a better soil in any part of New-England for the cultivation of esculent roots and herbs. A taste for ordinary horticulture is not uncommon among us; and though we live at a distance from market, there are several persons, who begin to make their gardens profitable to their families, and also to raise a surplussage of vegetables for their less favoured neighbours.

In good seasons some of the inhabitants make their own sugar, molasses, and vinegar of the juice of the maple. As the land becomes more cultivated, they are more dependent on the W. I. islands. It is an unfavourable circumstance, that the first growth of maple, as also of other trees, does not extend its roots into the earth sufficiently deep, to secure the trees when they become exposed to heavy winds. To remedy this disadvantage in regard to future generations, it becomes the present cultivators of the soil, to set out young orchards of maple trees in the most convenient places, having care to preserve such a distance between the trees, as that the depth of the roots may ordinarily ensure their safety.

Beside the timber, of which no small quantity is annually rafted down the river, articles of exportation, from which some profit is derived and more expected, are, beef, pork, butter, cheese, rye, indian-corn, hops, onions, sale-shoes, barrels, and firkins. To this list potash might have been lately added, but the making of it is at present neglected.

#### *River, Streams, Ponds, and Canal.*

The unevenness of our land occasions numerous springs and brooks. Generally the town in this respect is highly favoured. There are here also thirteen ponds, which not only

only variegate the scenery of the place, but afford plenty of fish, of which the most delicate kinds are the pike and salmon trout. Through the north and east sides of the town runs the Songo or Crooked river, on both whose sides are valuable lots of timber. What renders this river a peculiar privilege is, timber is drawn on to it when frozen in the winter, and in the spring conducted down the current into the great Sabago pond, and thence to the Sacarappa mills, near Portland.

The most important benefit however, relative to water carriage, is the opening of a canal from the centre of this town to Portland, which the people of Waterford contemplate as an event, that will probably take place not many years hence. The situation of the ponds is highly favourable to such an enterprize. As neither the exact distance of the course, which the canal must take, nor the descent of ground has been ascertained; and as they, who are best acquainted with these circumstances, are wholly unacquainted with the history of canals, no person has ventured to make an estimate of the expense of the undertaking. It has however been conjectured that fifty thousand dollars would effect it. It is almost certain that such a plan, whenever it shall be accomplished, will increase the number of saw-mills in Waterford, and give the inhabitants opportunity of sawing their own timber; will multiply the sources and facilitate the operations of trade; enhance the value of our lands; and greatly conduce to the population and prosperity of the town.

#### *Arts, Artificers, and Curiosities.*

There have been three brick-yards in the place; but the clay of the oldest is now exhausted. There is yet reason to expect a supply, and perhaps longer experience in the art of brick-making will augment the *apparent* value of our bricks.

Lime-kilns are not yet known among us. A kind of stone has been noticed, which bears some resemblance to limestone; but none that is genuine has been found. Neither are there here any coal-beds, except such as are made by the process of fire; and the furrows of the field, and the labours of honest commonwealthsmen are the richest mines  
and

and minerals, which are known in the vicinity. To these sources of health and independence all classes of people are cordially invited.

There is a general supply of mechanicks in town. A saddler, hatter, and clothier are exceptions. For ingenious men, who are willing to live by their professions, there is still encouragement in many of the common arts.

There is at present one tavern keeper only in town. Other inhabitants occasionally entertain travellers.

In one of the ponds there is found a white clay of a yellowish cast, which, when burned, baked, or only dried, makes good chalk. Carpenters prefer it on account of its softness to that which is imported. Whether it may not be converted into whiting and made an useful ingredient in paints; or whether pipes, or porcelain may not be made of it is yet to be determined.

#### *Roads.*

It is but justice to remark, that the inhabitants have distinguished themselves by a laudable ambition to make the roads through town convenient for themselves and comfortable for travellers. The sum of five hundred dollars is annually appropriated to the mending of highways; and their appearance is in some measure characteristic of the industrious disposition of the people.

#### *Militia.*

In the autumn of 1799 the militia of this town were called upon to choose their first officers, and, in conformity to the laws of our country, to commence their annual military exercises. They accordingly assembled on the common, and amicably elected Dr. Stephen Cummings, captain, Mr. Seth Wheeler, lieutenant, and Mr. James Robbins, ensign, of their company. After the inferior officers were chosen, a respectable company of able bodied soldiers, consisting of seventy-two rank and file, appeared before the door of Mr. Eli Longley, where, by the desire of the captain, a prayer was made by the pastor of the parish.

In September, 1801, a company of horse was formed from  
the

the militia companies of Bridgeton and Waterford, under Captain Kimball, Lieutenant Robbins, and Cornet Smith.

*Number of Families, rateable Polls, and Houses.*

On the first of May, 1801, there were in Waterford one hundred and three families, and six hundred and five inhabitants. May 1, 1803, there were one hundred and eleven families, one hundred and forty-five rateable polls, and six hundred and sixty-eight souls. The number of rateable polls, in March 1786, was fourteen.

The number of dwelling houses in town is one hundred and seven. Six of them are of two stories, eighty-six low framed, and fifteen are log houses. Some of the second class of houses are small, others are ordinary, and there is not a finished house in the place. There are about eighty framed barns; and a building has been lately erected for a store.

*Civil Officers. Professional Men. Learning.*

Of the original proprietors Mr. Nathaniel Chamberlain, now merchant in Portland, was clerk. The first select men, after the town was incorporated, were Lieut. Africa Hamlin, who was likewise the first town-clerk, and Messrs. Daniel Chaplin, and Solomon Stone. These men were appointed assessors also, and took the first valuation of the town. Mr. Eli Longley was the first town-treasurer. The first justice of the peace, who received his commission in 1799, was Eber Rice, Esq.; and the first deputy sheriff, Mr. Hannibal Hamlin.

No attorney has hitherto become an inhabitant of the town; but one of an academick education is soon expected. We have two physicians, though the place is generally considered remarkably healthful. The only person of a collegiate education in town is the writer of this, who was graduated at Dartmouth College in 1796.

As the original inhabitants, and indeed a large proportion of the present inhabitants, emigrated from the counties of Worcester and Middlesex, they, like their ancestors, are emulous of educating properly the rising generation. To further an object of such immense importance, the town has already built no less than six school-houses. In-  
stead

stead of employing instructors and instructresses, who themselves have need to be instructed in the first principles of literature, the town begins to pay strict regard to the laws of the commonwealth respecting the qualifications of male and female teachers, and the inspection of schools. It has also adopted an uniform selection of school books for its children and youth, who manifest laudable ambition to understand the English language, and to profit by their advantages.

*Religion, House of Worship, &c.*

Although many new settlements in this part of the country abound with sectaries, there has hitherto been no appearance of more than one religious society in Waterford, which is Congregational. A few individuals profess themselves Baptists; but the serious of these, so far from trying to cause divisions among their fellow christians, seem disposed to attend constantly on the publick institutions of religion with the Congregationalists.

Not many candidates for the ministry were employed as preachers in Waterford, before its inhabitants invited their present pastor to settle among them. For his pecuniary encouragement they offered him fifty pounds settlement, in addition to a right of land reserved by the proprietors for that purpose, and an annual salary, which, for a new town, was decent. This invitation was accepted by the pastor elect, who was accordingly ordained Oct. 2, 1799. The ministers of the ordaining council were Rev. William Fessenden, of Fryeburg; Rev. Ezra Ripley, of Concord; Rev. Nathan Church, of Bridgeton; Rev. Samuel Hidden, of Tamworth; Rev. Daniel Marrett, of Standish; and Rev. John Simpkins, of Brewster.

Previously to the ordination, a church was embodied, consisting of eight male members, who received into their fellowship their pastor elect by recommendation from the church in Barrè. Eleven other men were admitted into the church at the same time. Oct. 11, the church held a meeting, and unanimously chose for their deacons Messrs. John Nurse, Stephen Jewett, and Ephraim Chamberlain. On the 20th of the same month, after the admission of four female members, the Lord's supper was, for the first

time, administered to the church of Christ in Waterford. In addition to the twenty members forming the church at the time of ordination, before the close of the same year, 1799, twenty-five other persons became members. Of these seven were previously members of other churches. The church received an addition of nine members in 1800, and of nine more in 1801. Some of these persons had been communicants in other churches. No addition has been made to the church since 1801; but she has lost three by death and two by removal: her present number is therefore fifty-eight.

In the year 1801 a good frame, 50 by 46 feet, was erected for a meeting-house in the centre of the town. In the summer of 1802 it was covered and enclosed, and it will probably be completed by the middle of October next. The pew ground has been sold for more than two thousand dollars. Three thousand dollars perhaps will meet the whole expense of finishing the house.

#### *Baptisms. Marriages. Deaths.*

Before the settlement of a minister, twelve children and youths had been baptized in the place by missionaries and neighbouring clergymen. In 1799, after ordination the pastor baptized thirty-seven persons, one of whom was forty years old. There have often been three and four, and in one instance there were nineteen children, presented for baptism at once. The number of baptisms in 1800 was twenty-one; in 1801, fourteen; in 1802, seven; and hitherto in the present year, three. All the baptisms, since the town was inhabited, amount to ninety-four. Though it is matter of joyful reflexion, that so many in a new town have been initiated into Christ's visible church, it is yet a melancholy truth, that a far greater number of persons remain unbaptized.

Twelve marriages also had been solemnized in town previously to Oct. 2, 1799. Since that period, there have been married nineteen couples. The whole number of marriages, 31.

It appears by our bills of mortality, that fifty-four persons have died in Waterford since its first settlement. In the winter 1797, 8, the place was more sickly through the prevalence



prevalence of the canker, than it ever has been with any disease. The number of children and young persons, who died that winter, is said to be thirteen. Since the commencement of the year 1799, the number of deaths annually has been as follows: In 1799, six; in 1800, four; in 1801, six; in 1802, five; and since the beginning of the current year, five; the whole number twenty-six. Of this number twelve were young children and infants; five youths; four middleaged persons; four past the meridian of life; and one upwards of three-score and ten years. During the four last years more persons, who have reached and exceeded the meridian of life, appear to have fallen victims to consumption, than to any other disease. Several infants have died with fits; but among children and young people, the canker, accompanied sometimes with other complaints, has been the most prevalent and fatal disorder.

*m n*

---

CHRONOLOGICAL AND TOPOGRAPHICAL ACCOUNT OF  
DORCHESTER, BY REV. T. M. HARRIS.

**I**N giving an account of Dorchester, I propose beginning with some particulars respecting the first settlement and subsequent history of the town, extracted from authentick records, and recited principally in the words of those who relate the facts; next describe the ancient boundaries and present situation of the town, interspersed with such topographical remarks as seem worthy of notice; and then furnish some brief biographical anecdotes of the former ministers, and others, whose talents and virtues claim a grateful remembrance.

Should it be thought that the narration is tediously minute and incidents related which are quite trivial, I would observe that every particular in the early records of our country is important to the historian, and helps in delineating the features of its primitive character; whilst to the inhabitants of the town itself the more circumstantial the account the more interesting and entertaining will it prove.

*Chronology.*

*Chronology.*

In the beginning of the year 1630 a Congregational Church was gathered in the new hospital at Plymouth in Great-Britain of persons who intended to come to North America for the purpose of enjoying greater religious and civil privileges. They observed a day of solemn fasting and prayer to seek divine approbation and assistance. In the after part of the day, they chose and called those godly ministers, Rev. John Warham, a famous preacher at Exeter, and Rev. John Maverick, who lived forty miles from Exeter, to be their spiritual guides; who expressed their acceptance, and were separated to the special care of the intended emigrants. Rev. Mr. John White of Dorchester, in Dorset, who was an active instrument in promoting the settlement of New-England, and had been the means of procuring the charter, being present, preached in the fore part of the day; and in the latter part the new installed pastors performed.

They set sail on the 30th of March following, in a vessel of four hundred tons, Captain Squeb, master; and on Lord's day, May 30th, arrived at Nantasket, where the captain put them ashore, notwithstanding his engagement was to bring them up Charles river. Here they were "left in a forlorn wilderness, destitute of any habitation, and most other necessaries of life."\* Some of them, however, had the good fortune to procure a boat of an old planter, and went over to Charlestown, but met with poor accommodations there, and no encouragement to tarry; for, "though they saw several wigwams, they found but one Englishman in a house, where they ate a hoiled bass, but no bread."† They returned therefore to the boat, and, taking an Indian interpreter, went up the river to where it grows narrow and shallow,‡ and there, with much labour and difficulty, landed their goods, the bank being very steep. At first their fears were greatly alarmed by being informed that three hundred Indians were encamped near them. They sent immediately their interpreter

---

\* Blake's manuscript Annals.

† Prince's Chronology, page 207.

‡ To a place since called Watertown.

terpreter to persuade the natives not to molest them, and to assure them of their own pacifick intentions. "The next morning, when the Indians appeared, they offered no violence, but sent some of their number holding out a bass, and our people sent a man to meet them with a biscuit, and so they exchanged, not only then, but afterwards, a biscuit for a bass: and the Indians were very friendly to them, which our people ascribed to *God's watchful providence over them in their weak beginnings*. All the company had not come up the river, but only ten men to seek out the way for the rest. Those who tarried behind were to take care of the cattle they had brought, and prevent them from wandering and being lost in the wilderness. Those who had gone in quest of a place to settle on, did not tarry away but a few days, during which time the rest of the company had found out a neck of land joining to a place by the Indians called *Mattapan*, that was a fit place to turn their cattle upon, with less danger of their straying; and so they sent to their friends to return."\* Accordingly they repaired to that place, and began a settlement about the beginning of June. They named the place *Dorchester*, "because several of the settlers came from a town of that name in England, and also in honour of Rev. Mr. White of Dorchester."† This name was sanctioned "by order of the Court of assistants held at Charlestown, September 7, 1630,"‡ and the town was then regularly incorporated.

Here, also, the natives were kind to them.§

This settlement was formed a month or two before Governor Winthrop, and the people that came in ships with him, arrived at Charlestown; so that Dorchester is the oldest town in the Massachusetts colony except Salem and Charlestown.||

\* Elder Blake's MS. Annals.

† *Ib.*

‡ Prince's Chronology, page 249.

§ Captain Clap's memoirs. The manuscript of these memoirs, in the hand-writing of Capt. Roger Clap, was furnished Rev. Mr. Prince of Boston, by Mr. Blake of Dorchester, and is published in a small pamphlet. It contains some of the most affecting and interesting particulars of the early settlers of our country.

|| *Shawmut*, afterwards called *Blaxton's neck*, and since *Boston*, was not settled till the spring after by Governor Winthrop and his people. Ferd. Gorges' Descript. of N. Eng. p. 29. edit. 4to. 1659.

“The first inhabitants of Dorchester came chiefly from the counties of Devon, Dorset, and Somersetshire. They were a very godly and religious people, and many of them persons of note and figure, being dignified with the title of *Mr.* which but few in those days were. Some of the principal men were Mr. Rossiter, Mr. Ludlow, Mr. Glover, Mr. Johnson, Mr. Smith, Mr. Gallope, Mr. Hull, Mr. Stoughton, Mr. Cogan, Mr. Hill, Capt. Southcote, Capt. Lovell, Mr. Duncan, Mr. Pinney, Mr. Richards, Mr. Wey, Mr. Williams, and Mr. Tilley. Among them came also Capt. Roger Clap, a very worthy, religious gentleman, then a young man. It seems that many of these people were trading men, and at first designed Dorchester for a place of commerce. Accordingly they built a fort upon Rock-hill, wherein were several pieces of ordonnance, near the water side; but the channel being poor, and the landing difficult, and Boston and Charlestown harbour being far more commodious, they desisted from that design, and many of them removed afterwards to Boston and other places; so that many families about in the country had their first rise from Dorchester.”\*

“These first settlers set down pretty thick together at the northerly end of the town, next the aforesaid neck of land, and on the easterly side near the sea.”§

“The two first years were spent in working themselves into settlements, and incorporating into a body to carry on the affairs of the plantation; in granting parcels of land and meadows, some to each family; their homesteads being their own option.”† The many great straits and difficulties with which they met, are thus pathetically described by Captain Clap:‡ “O the *hunger* that many suffered, and saw no hope in the eye of reason to be supplied, only by clams, and muscles, and fish. We did quietly build boats, and some went a fishing; but *bread* was with many a scarce thing, and *flesh* of all kind as scarce. And in those days, in our straits, though I cannot say God sent a raven to feed *us* as he did the prophet Elijah, yet this I can say to the praise of God’s glory, that he sent not only poor ravenous Indians, which came with their baskets of

CORN

---

\* Blake.

§ ib.

† Blake.

‡ Page 16.

corn on their backs to trade with us, which was a good supply unto many; but also sent ships from Holland and from Ireland with provisions, and indian corn from Virginia, to supply the wants of his dear servants in this wilderness, both for food and raiment. And, when people's wants were great, not only in one town, but divers towns, such was the godly wisdom, care and prudence, (not selfishness, but self-denial) of our governour Winthrop and his assistants, that when a ship came laden with provisions, they did order that the whole cargo should be bought *for a general stock*; and so accordingly it was, and distribution was made to every town and to every person in each town as every man had need. Thus God was pleased to care for his people in times of straits, and to fill his servants with food and gladness. Then did all the servants of God bless his holy name, and love one another with pure hearts fervently."

"March, 1632, Mr. Maverick, drying a little powder, it took fire by the heat of the pan, fired a small barrel of 2 or 3 pounds, and yet did no other harm but siuge his clothes. It was in the new meeting house, which was thatched, and the thatch only blacked a little."||

Most of the houses here, in those early times, were built of logs and covered with thatch; and a reservation of a piece of marsh, where thatch was cut, was made by the proprietors for the free use of the inhabitants.\*

"At the Court in August, 1632, two of Chickatabott's men were convicted of assaulting some English of Dorchester in their houses, &c. They were sentenced to be put in the bilboes, and Chickatabott required to beat them, which he did."†

"One Henry Wey of Dorchester, who had gone in a shallop to trade with the eastern Indians the winter before, and was long missing, this summer (1632) it was found that himself and his company were all treacherously killed by the Indians. Another shallop of his, being sent out in the spring to seek after that, was cast away at Agameticus, and two of the men that were in her were drowned."

|| Gov. Winthrop's Journal, p. 33.

\* Town Records.

† Blake.

ed.”§ Upon which governour Winthrop makes this remark, “Thus oftimes he that is greedy of gain troubles his own house; and, instead of acquiring a little pelf of this world, loses his own life in the conclusion: which hath been observed as very remarkable on many who have followed that course of life.”

“1633. July 24, a ship arrived with about eighty passengers, and twelve kine, which set down at Dorchester.”||

This year the plantation began the practice of choosing men that we now call *Selectmen*. They elected four, who were to have their monthly meetings to order the affairs of the settlement, and their orders being confirmed by the plantation were of full force and binding upon all the inhabitants.—There were many orders this year concerning cattle, fences, &c. and penalties annexed; besides many grants of land. These were signed by John Maverick, John Warham, William Rockwell, and William Gayland.\*

The same year a fort was built at Rock Hill, and the charge ordered to be paid by rate.

In September Mr. John Oldham, who was afterwards killed by the Pequod Indians, and Samuel Hall, who died at Malden in Essex 1680, and two others, travelled from this town through the wilderness to Connecticut to view the country and trade with the Indians. The sachem upon the river made them most welcome, and gave them a present of beaver. They found that the Indian hemp grew spontaneously in the meadows in great abundance. They purchased a quantity of it, and upon trial it appeared much superiour to the English. They, also, brought back on their return some black-lead ore, of which the Indians said there was a whole quarry.† The flattering accounts which they gave of this part of the country induced a number to go there in the summer of 1635. They settled upon a place called by the Indians *Mattaneang* or *Ouschankamang*, and called it Windsor.‡ There they made

---

§ Hubbard's MS. History.

|| Gov. Winthrop's Journal, p. 51.

\* Blake.

† I have now by me a specimen of stibium, of superiour fineness, found in the neighbourhood of Hartford.

‡ Hubbard's MS.

made preparations for the reception of their families, and for forming a permanent settlement.|| But governour Bradford wrote to them, complaining of their conduct as injurious to the people at Plymouth, who had made a fair purchase of the Indians, taken a prior possession, and erected a trading house. Many remonstrances of this kind were afterwards repeated. Application for redress was also made to the governour of Massachusetts. The Plymouth people demanded a sixteenth part of the lands, and one hundred pounds in money, as a compensation; but the emigrants would not comply with their demands. There appeared, however, to be so much justice in making them some "compensation for the purchase they had made and the good service they had done in defending that part of the country against the Indians and the Dutch, that, sometime after, the freeholders of Windsor gave them fifty pounds, forty acres of meadow, and a large tract of upland, for their satisfaction."\*

The removal of Dorchester people to Windsor is said to have been disagreeable to their ministers; but, as their whole church, and most of the congregation determined upon going, they at length consented to accompany them. However, Mr. Maverick died in the spring (Feb. 3, 1636) before the preparations were made for his removal. Mr. Wareham went in September, but did not judge it expedient to remove his family until better accommodations could be made for their reception. The

---

|| Connecticut, says *Chalmers* [Polit. Annals,] was settled by emigrants from the vicinity of Boston. Actuated by the restless spirit of the times, these men had determined to remove as early as the year 1634; and they applied to the General Court of Massachusetts for permission to go in quest of new adventures in a better land. But, owing to a division in that body with regard to the propriety of the measure, they did not now obtain their desires. Yet they could not be satisfied till they had accomplished their intention, and had obtained leave of the court. For it was the general sense that the inhabitants were all bound to one another by the oath of a freeman, as well as the original compact, so as not to be at liberty to separate without the consent of the whole."

For farther particulars see *Douglass' Summary*, Vol. ii. p. 159. *Neal's N. Eng.* Vol. i. p. 164. *Hutchinson*, Vol. i. p. 44. and *Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut*.

\* *Gov. Winthrop's Journal*, *Gov. Wolcott's MS.* and *Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut*.

The emigration consisted of about one hundred men, women, and children, mostly from Dorchester, joined by a few from Newtown† and Watertown. They were fourteen days performing the tedious journey through the wilderness. On their arrival they began their settlement on the west side of Connecticut river not far from the mouth of Scantic river.‡

These adventurers were put to great straits after their arrival. The provisions they took with them were nearly exhausted before they arrived. The crops they raised were small, for they had cleared but very little of the ground for tillage; besides, most of their time had been necessarily devoted to the construction of huts against the winter. The winter came on early, and was very severe. They were reduced to extremity; and were obliged to subsist upon "acorns, and malt, and grains." Their cattle, also, unsheltered and poorly fed, suffered so much, that "the greatest part of them died; but some which came late, and could not be put over the river, lived very well all the winter without any hay."||

But, though these circumstances, and fear of the Indians, for some time retarded the settlement, Mr. Wareham lived to see the great increase of the little colony of christians with whom he had crossed the Atlantick, and traversed the wilderness, and died 1670.

After the departure of the first settlers, "there was an essay towards gathering a new church in Dorchester, April 1, 1636; but as the messengers of the churches convened for the purpose were not satisfied concerning some that were intended members of that foundation, the work was deferred until August 23, when a church was constituted according

---

† Since called Cambridge.

‡ The names of those who came with Mr. Wareham, and were in full communion with the church, were Henry Wolcott, Esq., William Phelps, John Whitefield, Humphrey Pinney, Deacon John Moore, Deacon William Gayland, Lieut. Walter Filer, Matthew Grant, Thomas Dibble, Samuel Phelps, Nathan Gillet, Richard Vose, Abraham Randal, Bagot Eglestone, George Phelps and Thomas Ford. Of the congregation were Roger Ludlow, Esq., Thomas Stoughton, Capt. John Mason, Isaac Sheldon, Bray Rossiter, and several others.

|| Gov. Winthrop's Journal, p. 98. He adds, "they lost near £.2000 worth of cattle.



according to the order of the Gospel, by confession and profession of faith, and Rev. Mr. Richard Mather was chosen teacher.”\*

At this period the records of the church begin; and they not only contain many minute particulars respecting the discipline of its own members, and entries of admissions, deaths, baptisms, &c., but, as Mr. Mather was a very eminent man and employed at all the synods, councils, and ordinations in the province, the annals of the church of Dorchester, during the time of his ministry, more than thirty years, are a brief ecclesiastical history of this part of the country.

“At a court holden at Dorchester this year (1636) it was ordered that every town should keep a watch and be well supplied with ammunition. The constables were directed to warn the watches in their turns, and to make it their care that they should be kept according to the direction of the court. They also were required to take care that the inhabitants were well furnished with arms and ammunition, and kept in a constant state of defence. As these infant settlements were filled and surrounded with numerous savages, the people conceived themselves in danger when they lay down and when they rose up, when they went out and when they came in. Their circumstances were such, that it was judged necessary for every man to be a soldier.”†

1677. March 21. The church renewed the covenant, and held a fast on the occasion. Mr. Increase Mather preached from Nehemiah ix. 38. *Because of all this we make a sure covenant, and write it; and our princes, Levites, and priests, sign unto it.*‡

1695.

\* Winthrop's Journal.

† Gov. Winthrop's Journal, p. 56.

‡ This sermon was printed. As it is now rarely to be met with, the following historical extracts from it are thought worth preserving here. “The churches in Plimouth colony renewed their covenant in the latter end of the fourth month (June) 1676; and ever since the heathen in those parts have fallen.” Page 18.

“Most of the members of the second church in Boston, when first constituted, were such as did once belong to the church of Christ in Dorchester.” p. 16.

In

1695. October 22. A church was gathered in this town, and Mr. Joseph Lord (who had been sometime employed as a schoolmaster) was ordained to its pastoral charge.† The church was formed with a design to remove to South-Carolina, "to encourage the settlement of churches and the promotion of religion in the southern plantations." The assisting churches were from Boston, Charlestown, Roxbury, Milton, and New-Cambridge.‡ Mr. Lord preached from Matth. v. 15. "*Ye are the salt of the earth.*" Mr. Morton gave the charge, and Mr. Hobart the right hand of fellowship.

On the fifth of December following the said church and pastor set sail. Mr. Danforth preached a sermon to them at parting, from Acts xxi. 4, 5, 6. which was afterwards printed. On the 14th of December they kept a fast on board, on account of the very boisterous weather; and on the 20th landed safely at Carolina, after a passage of only fourteen days. On the 2d of February, 1696, "was the first sacrament of the Lord's supper that was ever celebrated at Carolina. Eight persons received, besides such as were of the church there, by virtue of communion of churches; and there was great joy among the good people of Carolina, and many thanksgivings to the Lord."\* "For, (said Mr. Danforth, in the sermon before mentioned)

---

In his sermon against sacrilege he has this remark. "My father had four sons brought up at the College, which, if he had not a personal estate of his own he could not have done. For he had not more than one hundred pound per annum salary from his people in Dorchester, which, (although it is a larger stipend than what most ministers in New-England have) yet, without other supplies is not sufficient to support a numerous family after an honourable manner. The like is to be said concerning the very learned Mr. Chauncy. He was constrained to leave Scituate because of his family straits. When enquired of how it fared with him, his answer was in these words, "*Ut plurimum deest panis.*" What a shame is it that so great a man should be forced so to speak? And after he was president of the College the country was not so grateful to him as it ought to have been; nor could he have subsisted if he had not received supplies from England out of estate which he left there."

† He graduated at Harvard College in 1691. His native place was Charlestown.

‡ Now *Newton*.

\* Church Records.

ed) there is not in that country either ordained minister, or any church in full gospel order; so neither imposition of the hands of the Presbytery, nor donation of the right hand of fellowship, to be expected there, nor from any place much nearer to them than ourselves."

In honour of the place from which they emigrated, they named their new settlement *Dorchester*. It is situated on the north-east bank of Ashley river, and about eighteen miles west north-west of Charleston.

The successor of Mr. Lord was Rev. Hugh Fisher, who died October 6, 1734.

Rev. John Osgood, who was born in the same society, educated in Harvard College, and graduated in 1733, succeeded, on the 24th of March, 1735, to the pastoral charge of the same church at Dorchester, S. C. and Beech Hill which was a part of the settlement; and officiated in each place alternately.

This situation being unhealthful, and the quantity of lands too small for the inhabitants, in the year 1752 they projected a settlement in Georgia. A few persons went into that province in search of lands; and, having preferred a petition to the Legislature, procured a grant of thirty one thousand nine hundred and fifty acres. This tract lies to the southward of Ogechee river, and about thirty miles south-westerly from Savannah, in the parish formerly called St. John's, now denominated Liberty county.

Finding a general disposition in the people to remove, Rev. Mr. Osgood went into this new settlement in March, 1754,\* and the whole church and society gradually settled and collected there. The town they formed is named *Midway*.

The

---

\* "His tender regard for his congregation, (says Dr. Zubly in his funeral sermon on Mr. Osgood) and his anxiety that they might be kept together, engaged him to remove into this province, and to share with them all the inconveniences that attend the settling of a wilderness; and he lived to see their endeavours so blessed as to turn this wilderness into a garden, and the desert into fields which God hath blessed."

Mr. Osgood died August 2, 1773. After his death the church was occasionally supplied by Rev. Dr. Zubly, Rev. Daniel Roberts, Rev. Joseph Cook, and others. In 1776, Rev. Moses Allen, who was originally from Connecticut, and educated at the College in New-Jersey, succeeded to the pastoral charge.

In

The original church at Dorchester, South-Carolina, lay in a ruined condition from the period of the emigration of the first settlers till 1794, when a small body were re-organized. A year or two after they settled Mr. James Adams over them, who obtained a vote of separation March, 1804. A neat Congregational church has lately been erected on the spot where the first settlers built their place of worship.\*

1705. August 29. The powder works in Dorchester were blown up; but no one received any injury.

Other historical particulars of the town will be found under the articles which succeed.

*Topography, Purchases and Grants of Land, &c.*

Dorchester is situated south of Boston, at the distance of four miles and an half, measuring from the centre of each town.

In the month of November, 1778, the society was entirely broken up and dispersed by the British army from Florida under the command of General Provost. Some fled into Chatham county, and some into South-Carolina. The army wantonly laid waste all before them, burned the meeting-house at *Midway*, almost every dwelling house in the settlement, and the crops of rice then in stacks. In December following, Savannah was reduced by the British troops, commanded by Col. Campbell. At this time Mr. Allen was taken prisoner. The continental officers were sent to Sunbury on parole, except Mr. Allen, who was chaplain of the Georgia brigade; he was denied that privilege. "His warm exhortations from the pulpit (says Dr. Ramsay), and his animated exertions in the field, exposed him to the particular resentment of the British. They sent him with the private soldiers on board the prison ships. Wearied with a confinement of several months in that loathsome place, and seeing no prospect of relief, he determined to attempt the recovery of his liberty, by throwing himself into the river and swimming to an adjacent point; but he was drowned in the attempt."

On the prospect of peace the inhabitants returned to Midway. In November, 1785, they settled Rev. Abiel Holmes; but on account of his health he was obliged to leave them, June 21, 1791, and is now minister at Cambridge. He was succeeded at Midway by Rev. Cyrus Guildersleeve, who was ordained December 14, 1791. In 1797 there were one hundred and fifty communicants.

*[For the particulars of this note I am indebted to information derived through my much respected friend, Rev. Mr. Holmes.]*

\* At my request, my beloved christian brother, Rev. Mr. Mc. Kean visited Dorchester in his travels through South-Carolina, and communicated to me information respecting the first settlement of that place which I have recited above.

town. It is bounded on the west by Roxbury and Dedham, on the south by Milton and Quincy, and on the east and north by Boston harbour. It was originally very extensive, comprehending the whole of the territory now contained in Milton, Stoughton, Sharon, Canton, and Foxborough. It was then about thirty-five miles in length, and in some places from six to eight in width. At present it contains about 8,400 acres; and considered separately from its peninsulas, islands, and that part of it known by the appellation of "the farms," its greatest length from north-east to south-west is about six miles, and its breadth from north-west to south-east three miles and an half.

The following particulars of the ancient property and limits of the town, are deemed worth recording.

It has already been mentioned that the first settlers were kindly received by the aborigines. Liberty to remain here was granted them, but at the same time they were careful to purchase the territory of the Indians and "for a valuable consideration" they bought a tract of land from what is now called Roxbury brook on the west to Neponset river on the south, and on the other sides bounded by the sea.

In 1636 the General Court made a grant, in addition to this, as far as the Great Blue Hill, and the town took a deed of Kitchmakin, sachem of Massachusetts, for the same.\*

After this, the boundaries of the town were run, and are entered in the Town Records, as follows: "To run from the outside of Mr. Rösiter's farm next the sea, to the foot of the Great Blue Hill, from a marked tree, to a second marked tree in a strait line to the top of the Blue Hill next Neponset, S. W. and by W. half a point westerly; and all the marsh ground from the south side of Mr. Newbury's house along Neponsit river to Mr. Stoughton's mill, to lie in Dorchester,—and all the rest of the upland and marsh from Mr. Rositer's farm to the sea, and so to the mouth of the river beyond Minodiquid river running into the country southward, and to the west to lie to  
Boston,

---

\* Blake.—This part has since been set off and incorporated by the name of Milton.

Boston, only excepting such land as they have a right to by grant of the Court formerly."

In 1637, the General Court made a second grant to the town extending to the Plymouth line, called "the New Grant;" but the town was not able to make a contract immediately with the Indians. It was not till 1666 that the purchase was completed of Josias Chickatabot; and three years from that, before he engaged to sign a full and complete deed. Before *that* was properly authenticated, he was slain in the wars by the Mohawks; but Squamaug his brother, ruling as sachem during the minority of Jeremy Chickatabot, son of Josias, gave an ample deed which was also signed and confirmed by Jeremy himself in 1671, when the town assessed a rate of £.28 to pay for the purchase.

These are pleasing evidences of the precaution used by the early settlers to make regular purchases of the natives.

When the line between Dorchester and the old colony was run in 1713, a part of the last grant and purchase was cut off; Mr. Thaxter and Mr. Thompson mistaking *Station tree* for *Angle tree*, which are three miles and an half apart.\*

Thompson's island was appropriated for the benefit of a school in 1639; but afterwards the town was sued out of its possession, and the General Court granted one thousand acres of wild land in lieu of it.†

The Indians on Neponsit river having sold away all their lands, and finding themselves in the way of the new settlers, applied to Rev. Mr. Eliot at Roxbury for advice. He had been among them to preach to them, and gained their confidence and veneration. He readily exerted his influence in their behalf, proposed to them to move to Punkipog,‡ about fifteen miles farther back into the woods. To accomplish this, he sent a letter to major Atherton of Dorchester, full of grateful acknowledgments, in behalf of the Indians, "thanking him and all the good people

---

\* See letter of Mr. Noah Clap, town-clerk of Dorchester, inserted in the Historical Collections, V. i. p. 100.

† Blake.

‡ Sometimes spelled Ponkipog, Punkipoag, and Pakemit. The name signifies "a spring issuing out of red earth."

people of Dorchester that they were allowed peaceably to reside in their village ;” and then makes a request, “1st, that you would please to make an order in your town, and record it in your town records, that you allow the Indians at Punkipog, there to sit down, and to make a town, and to allow such accommodations as may be sufficient to maintain God’s ordinances among them another day. 2dly. That you would appoint fit men, who may in a fit season, bound and lay out the same, and record that also.” This letter bears date, “Roxbury, 4th of the 4th month, 1657.”

Accordingly, at a general town meeting on the 7th of December following, it was voted that the Hon. Major Atherton, Lieutenant Clap, Ensign Foster, and William Sumner, be desired and impowered to lay out the Indian plantation at Punkipog, not exceeding six thousand acres. It appears that this was done, for, in a deed from Charles Josiah an Indian sachem, bearing date June, 1684, he ratified and confirmed, for a valuable sum of money paid him by William Stoughton, Esq. what his father Jeremy and his grandfather Chickatabot had done before him ; granting and conveying all the land in the town of Dorchester and Milton, said six thousand acres laid out for the Indians excepted.\*

At the same meeting (1657) five hundred acres were granted to Lieut. Roger Clap ; and one thousand to be laid out for the support of the school in Dorchester.

In 1659 four hundred acres of land were granted to the use of the ministry, and five hundred to the non-commoners.

1662. *Unquety*† (now Milton) was set off a township.

1698. This year was finished the laying out of the *twelve divisions* of land, so called, in the new-grant, beyond the Blue Hills. They were laid out and surveyed by order of the proprietors ; John Butcher, surveyor.

In 1707 Punkipog plantation, with some other of the  
inhabitants

---

\* For some account of this Indian settlement see Gookin’s Historical Collections of the Indians in New-England, published in the first vol. of Historical Society, page 184.

† Sometimes called *Uncataquissett*.

inhabitants of the new-grant, were set off a precinct by themselves, as far as Mashepog pond and Moose hill; and the meeting-house ordered to be set, where it now stands, upon Packeen river. When they obtained the act of incorporation from the General Court in 1726, the town was called *Stoughton* as a tribute of respect to lieutenant-governour William Stoughton.

The "twenty proprietors" were incorporated into a distinct body, with powers to lay out and sell lands, &c. and held their first meeting June 17, 1713. Their last bears date . . . Their records and plans are in the possession of Deacon Topliff.

1714. The line between Dorchester and Wrentham was extended from Station tree, the south-west bounds before made, to near the Patent or Colony line.\*

#### *Face of the Town, &c.*

The surface of the ground, being agreeably diversified into hill and dale, gives a great variety of soil and prospect. Several of the hills afford extensive views of the harbour and islands on the east, and of the neighbouring towns and country in other directions; and offer, on their fertile sides or airy summits, very eligible sites for building, unequalled, perhaps, in the Commonwealth.

In the north-easterly extremity of the town, called "Dorchester neck," are those celebrated heights on which forts were erected during the late war with Great-Britain. These are so near to Boston and to Castle William, (now called Fort Independence) as completely to command both that town and harbour.

Most of the cliffs of rock in the town are formed of what are called *pudding stones*. These consist of concretions of small rounded pebbles, often highly polished, mixed with interstices. either of consolidated sand or petrified clay. The *former* kind, when exposed to the air frequently crumbles, and the sand and pebbles separate. This is observable of cliffs farthest from the sea shore, at the distance of four or five miles; and I have observed none more remote. The *latter* kind is very compact, and never separated but with force, for the purpose of building walls,

\* Blake.



walls, &c. In both the pebbles entirely resemble those found on the beach, where they are rounded by continual friction during the rushing in and receding of the tide.

#### *River and Brook.*

*Neponsit* river is the boundary line between the town and Milton. It hath its rise from Cedar swamp in Foxborough; though a considerable current flows from it from Mashapog pond in Stoughton.

The bridge over this river uniting the town with Milton was built in the year 1651. A few years since a handsome arch was stretched over it, bearing this inscription, "WE UNITE IN DEFENCE OF OUR COUNTRY AND LAWS."

Another bridge has been built over the river from Squantum by the Quincy turnpike association, and was completed in the year 1803.

*Mother brook*, is a stream flowing spontaneously from Charles' river in Dedham, though its channel has been enlarged by cutting. It crosses the south-west corner of the town, and falls into Neponsit. The circumstance of a brook flowing out of one river into another is very singular.

#### *Bay.*

Dorchester has but one bay, which is divided by a promontory, called *Fox point*, into two separate harbours. That which is formed on the south side is the most considerable, and has several wharves, but is not supplied with sufficient depth of water for vessels of a large size. The other is known by the name of "Old Harbour"; so called from being the place where the first settlers of the town came on shore.

The bay is met on the S. W. by Neponsit river, which is navigable by vessels of considerable burden almost to Milton mills. The land here forms a promontory called "Preston's point," and sometimes "Tinian;" on which a fort was erected at the commencement of the late war. The situation of the point is very pleasant.

Near this place is a small creek which bears the name of "Barque Warwick," from a small vessel which ran a-ground

ground here within two or three years after the first settlement of the town; the remains of which are still to be seen.

#### *Peninsulas.*

One of these is known by the name of "Dorchester point." It lies in an irregular form, and contains about 600 acres. Its north-east extremity approaches within half a mile of Fort Independence, and its north-west is about the same distance from the south part of Boston, with which to connect it by a bridge or dam would be easy; and a plan is in agitation for that purpose.

Two hills on this peninsula, at a small distance from each other, are the celebrated *heights* of which mention has been made.

*Squantum* is a smaller peninsula, running into the sea in a north-east direction from "the farms," (to which it is united by an isthmus about three quarters of a mile long) until it comes nigh to Thompson's island. The land here is generally good, especially for mowing and pasturage. It rises by a gradual ascent on all sides to a considerable height; and its summit commands a noble prospect of the harbour and circumjacent country. At the north-east extremity is an abrupt pile of rocks, known by the name of "the Chapel."

*The Farms* are a tract of land on the south-east of the bay, and contiguous to Milton and Quincy. The soil is in some parts tolerably good, but in general it is light and sandy. It produces considerable crops of indian-corn, barley, and oats; but its mowing and pasturage are indifferent.

#### *Islands.*

There are belonging to the town two islands, "Thompson's" and "the Moon." The former contains about 100 acres, and is inhabited; the latter about 30 acres.

#### *Mills.*

The first mill built in Dorchester, and "the first in the Colony" was erected by Mr. Stoughton, by leave of the plantation, on Neponsit river, in the year 1633.\*

There

\* Blake.

There are now belonging to the town ten mills; viz. three paper mills, two chocolate mills, three grist mills, and two fulling mills, situated on Neponset river, and a grist tide-mill on a creek which runs up from the mouth of the river on the easterly part of the town.†

#### *Manufactures.*

The principal manufactures of the town are bricks,‡ paper, chocolate, leather, and boots and shoes of various kinds; riding carriages, cabinet work, elegant and plain looking glass frames, playing cards, woolen cloths and stuffs.

#### *Salt Works.*

In the year 1802 salt-works were erected on Preston's point by Captain Deane. They consist of a series of vats, two hundred feet in length and twenty feet in width, making about four thousand superficial feet of exposure to the power of evaporation. These works produced the last year one hundred and thirty bushels of salt of an excellent quality and remarkably pure; and during the winter a considerable quantity of Glauber's salts were chrysalized.

Majors James and Edward Robinson are now erecting a set of works upon a new construction, of which they give the following description:

“The water is brought into troughs, elevated to whatever height the owner may choose; and from them, brought down upon the face of the *reflectors*, which stand over *inclined planes* or *platforms*. The water is carried down by *cleets*, which are also *reflectors*, which convey it forwards, and backwards, over the face of the large *reflectors*, until it be brought down to the head of the *platforms*, over which it is conveyed again by cleets, until it runs backwards and forwards (the little rivulets being about one inch and an half separated) until it traverse the whole surface, from which it is conducted into *vats*, and carried back again by *pumps* into the *troughs*, if not sufficiently pickled; and then carried again over the face of the *reflectors*

---

† On Neponset river on Milton side, are also three paper mills, one grist mill, one saw mill, and one chocolate mill.

‡ 4,000,000 bricks were made in the year 1803.

*flectors* and *platforms*, as before. The *reflectors* are also the *roofs*, which are much less costly than those in the other mode; and in the *evaporation* answer a most important purpose. When the water is pickled, it also stands under *reflectors* and *lenses*, if any choose to improve the latter, which, doubtless, will very soon chrystallize the brine. An hundred feet in *this way*, it is believed, will much exceed a thousand in the *former*. What is an agreeable consideration is, much of the works in the old way may be added to these, to the very great profit of the owners, because the chief of their works are *vats* and *roofs*, the latter of which only are lost. However, the advantage arising from the cheapness of the *roofs* in the new invention, and these being turned into *reflectors*, will a great deal more than repay the damage. *One hundred feet*, prepared for pickling the water, will very soon prepare great quantities to be put into the *salt rooms* or *vats*, in which the salt is made; and hence at comparatively a very small expence of time, much *greater quantities* of salt can be produced, than ever have been before."

#### Meeting House.

The first place for publick worship was erected on the plain, not far from "Old harbour," where they landed.\* It was surrounded by pallisadoes, was the place for the deposit of military stores, and for resort in case of alarm from the Indians. A sentinel was kept at the gate every night; and thither the people carried their plate and most valuable articles every evening, to be preserved in safety.

In 1676 a new meeting house was erected on the hill where the present one stands. The work was undertaken by Mr. Isaac Royal, and performed for two hundred pounds. The elm trees about it were set out by Mr. Thomas Tilestone.† After the building was completed the old one was sold, by a vote of the town, to Mr. Royal, for £.10. The first assembling in the new meeting house was on Nov. 17, 1678.

This place of worship having fallen into decay, and being too small to accommodate the inhabitants, a new one was

---

\* Near to where Col. Swan's pavilion now stands.

† These noble trees were cut down at the commencement of the late war.

was raised in 1743, sixty-eight feet by forty-six, with a tower fourteen feet square, and a steeple one hundred and four feet high to the vane. The whole cost three thousand five hundred and sixty-seven pounds, ten shillings, and eleven pence, old tenor. The first meeting in it was on the 2d of December, 1744; when Mr. Bowman preached a sermon suitable to the occasion from Psalm lxxxiv. 1. On leaving the old house the Lord's day preceding he discoursed from Rev. iii. 3.

In 1752 the new bell was hung. It was given by the proprietors of the common and undivided lands, late in the township of Dorchester and now in Stoughton. It was imported from Bristol in England; weighs seven hundred and eighty-five pounds, and cost the company fifty pounds sterling.

Sept. 23, 1753. Began to read the scriptures as a part of the publick service on the Lord's day.

In 1795 the meeting house was enlarged, by first dividing it along the ridge pole, and one half moved off fourteen feet, and then building an addition in the middle. After which the tower and steeple were moved, standing, seven feet, to bring it to the centre of the end. This ingenious operation was performed by deacon Edward Pierce of Dorchester, by means of screws, and with the strength of only four men.

#### *Schools.*

There are five annual schools in the town. The school-house in the middle of the town is brick; the others are commodious wooden buildings.

*A social Library* was formed in 1793. At present it consists of about five hundred volumes, of the best modern authors; with means for an annual increase.

#### *Population.*

By the last census Dorchester contained 2,347 inhabitants.

#### *Bills of Births and Deaths.*

“The records of births and deaths before the year 1657 were accidentally burnt in Thomas Millet's house, and so are all lost, excepting that a few families had kept an account of their children's births, and entered them in the next book of records.”\*

The

\* Blake's MS. Annals.

The following Tables are compiled from the registry of the town-clerk, compared with records kept in the families of Blake, Pierce, and others.

Year.	Births.	Deaths.	Year.	Births.	Deaths.	Year.	Births.	Deaths.	Year.	Births.	Deaths.
1657	19	17	1678	33	20	1699	27	11 <sup>d</sup>	1720	27	8
1658	31	9	1679	29	18	1700	34	15	1721	53	12 <sup>s</sup>
1659	18	7	1680	35	8	1701	35	19	1722	43	14
1660	29	6	1681	27	17	1702	31	14	1723	45	22
1661	19	7	1682	38	12	1703	35	8 <sup>e</sup>	1724	43	15
1662	23	5	1683	28	19	1704	40	12	1725	53	13
1663	5 <sup>i</sup>	5 <sup>a</sup>	1684	24	8	1705	41	6 <sup>f</sup>	1726	44	9
1664	18	8	1685	22	4	1706	38	10	1727	28	6
1665	29	5	1686	25	7	1707	31	12	1728	39	10
1666	13	6	1687	33	10	1708	33	14	1729	26	9
1667	26	5	1688	32	20	1709	48	11	1730	38	11
1668	20	5	1689	31	13	1710	39	10	1731	44	16
1669	22	6	1690	15	38 <sup>c</sup>	1711	35	14	1732	36	19 <sup>b</sup>
1670	23	4	1691	26	20	1712	38	16	1733	37	13
1671	17	5	1692	21	16	1713	27	13	1734	22	15
1672	14	3 <sup>h</sup>	1693	35	17	1714	36	22	1735	33	18
1673	25	6	1694	25	12	1715	35	13	1736	41	20
1674	20	4	1695	31	9	1716	47	10	1737	32	18
1675	37	13	1696	29	7	1717	28	15	1738	48	13
1676	35	28	1697	26	6	1718	37	23	1739	33	21
1677	36	12	1698	33	7	1719	34	11			

<sup>a</sup> Only that number recorded.

<sup>b</sup> William Dier, aged 93.

<sup>c</sup> "There is a memorandum (says Mr. Blake) in my father's book, in the account he kept, that from the first of April, 1690, unto the first of July, 1691, that is, one year and four months, there died in Dorchester fifty-seven persons, thirty-three of them of the *small pox*, the rest of a fever, and most of them of a middle age. About the same time, [1690] lost at sea forty-six soldiers that went to Canada, in all one hundred and three."

<sup>d</sup> One person aged 85, and one 93.

<sup>e</sup> One aged 83, and one 93.

<sup>f</sup> Feb. 6, 1705, died the widow Wyat, aged 94; "having as a mid-wife assisted at the birth of one thousand one hundred and odd children." *Blake*.

<sup>g</sup> "This year the small-pox went through Boston, and it was in twenty-nine families of this town, whereof thirteen persons died, two of them being strangers." *Blake*.

<sup>h</sup> Several aged people died of a prevailing epidemick cold.

Year.	Bap- tisms.	Deaths.	Year.	Bap- tisms.	Deaths.	Year.	Bap- tisms.	Deaths.	Year.	Bap- tisms.	Deaths.
1740	41	20 <sup>a</sup>	1757	48	19	1774	40	26 <sup>r</sup>	1791	42	32
1741	44	12	1758	37	18	1775	49	71 <sup>b</sup>	1792	37	36 <sup>p</sup>
1742	35	10 <sup>p</sup>	1759	33	28	1776	32	56 <sup>q</sup>	1793	35	39 <sup>q</sup>
1743	40	27	1760	33	28	1777	40	32 <sup>l</sup>	1794	47	19 <sup>r</sup>
1744	33	22	1761	41	53 <sup>s</sup>	1778	30	42 <sup>k</sup>	1795	39	17 <sup>s</sup>
1745	35	26	1762	37	26	1779	46	19	1796	61	22
1746	32	27	1763	42	25	1780	31	18	1797	47	21 <sup>t</sup>
1747	30	36	1764	54	23	1781	45	13	1798	57 <sup>u</sup>	34 <sup>v</sup>
1748	33	28	1765	44	24	1782	42	17	1799	50	38
1749	36	29	1766	37	38	1783	41	27	1800	43 <sup>w</sup>	41 <sup>x</sup>
1750	36	37	1767	44	29	1784	41	25 <sup>l</sup>	1801	47	44
1751	24	36 <sup>e</sup>	1768	44	26 <sup>f</sup>	1785	44	18	1802	40 <sup>g</sup>	61 <sup>h</sup>
1752	33	51 <sup>d</sup>	1769	45	29	1786	41	25 <sup>m</sup>	1803	44	50 <sup>aa</sup>
1753	36	26	1770	52	33	1787	26	29			
1754	34	18	1771	29	18	1788	37	11 <sup>n</sup>			
1755	33	20	1772	46	23	1789	41	16 <sup>o</sup>			
1756	38	19	1773	23	24	1790	34	35			

\* I here use the records of *baptisms*, as that of *births* in the town-clerk's office appears imperfect, probably from the negligence of parents in sending in the names of their children.

<sup>a</sup> Mr. John Trescot, aged 90, and his wife aged 90.

<sup>b</sup> One person aged 93.

<sup>c</sup> Twelve of this number died between Nov. 22 and Dec. 24.

<sup>d</sup> Several died of an epidemick, pleurisy, and nervous fever; twenty-four in January.

<sup>e</sup> Ten died in the month of October, and six in the beginning of November.

<sup>f</sup> Five very sudden deaths.

<sup>g</sup> Several aged persons died, viz. one of 95, two of 86, one of 85, one of 84, one of 73, one of 62, and one of 58 years of age.

<sup>h</sup> More aged persons died, viz. one [Mr. Israel Leadbetter] of 97, one of 88, one of 86, two of 72, one of 67, and one of 64 years of age. This year also forty soldiers were buried.

<sup>i</sup> Four died of the small-pox.

<sup>j</sup> Twelve died of the small-pox.

<sup>k</sup> Nine died of the small-pox.

<sup>l</sup> Several aged persons died, viz. one of 87, one of 86, one of 84, one of 82, one of 76, one of 73, and one of 72 years of age.

<sup>m</sup> Died one person aged 86, and one 71.

<sup>n</sup> One aged 79.

<sup>o</sup> One person aged 90, one 84, and one 75.

<sup>p</sup> Died ten of the small-pox.

<sup>q</sup> One person aged 77, one 76, and one 70.

<sup>r</sup> One person aged 86, one 83, four 78, and one 77.

<sup>s</sup> One person aged 97, one 88, and two 78.

<sup>t</sup> One person aged 95.

<sup>u</sup> And five adults baptized.

<sup>v</sup> Aged persons, 85, 83, 81, 78, 75, 71; and fifteen children under three years of age.

<sup>w</sup> And three adults baptized.

<sup>x</sup> Mrs. Thornton aged 100, and Mrs. Tolman aged 88.

<sup>y</sup> Three adults baptized.

<sup>z</sup> Aged persons, 87, 77, two of 72, one of 71, and one of 70. Eight persons died of a malignant fever, six of them children of Mr. Belcher, between the ages of 14 and 30.

<sup>aa</sup> Aged persons, 86, 85, two of 80, one of 78, 76, 75, 74, 70.

*Ministers.*

The first ministers in the town were Rev. John Wareham, and Rev. John Maverick, who came together from England, as has been already mentioned, in the year 1630. "Good old Mr. Maverick" as Morton styles him,|| died at Boston, after the removal of a large part of his church and congregation to Connecticut, on the third of February 1636, aged 60.

Dr. Mather fills up two columns in the Magnalia with an account of Mr. Wareham, from which we can learn only that he was a pious man, that he preached with notes, and that, from religious scruples, while he administered the Lord's supper to others he for several years declined partaking himself.\* From another source we learn that he died at Windsor, April 1, 1670.†

When a new church was gathered at Dorchester, Rev. Richard Mather was installed the pastor.

He was born at Lowton in the parish of Winwick and county of Lancaster, in Great-Britain, in the year 1596. His parents Thomas and Margaret Mather were of ancient families in that village. Though reduced to low circumstances, they gave their son a good education. So great was his early proficiency at school, that he was elected in 1611, being only 15 years old, to take the instruction of a school at Toxteth, near Liverpool. In this office he acquitted himself well, "so that he was both loved and feared by his scholars, beyond what is usual even where there are aged masters." After having fitted several scholars for the university, he removed there himself, and entered a student in Brazen Nose college at Oxford. He was soon, however, recalled to Toxteth by a request of the congregation there to become their minister. He accordingly returned, and preached his first sermon on the 10th of Nov. 1618. Soon after he received episcopal ordination by Dr. Morton, then bishop of Chester.

September

|| New-England's Memorial, p. 115.

\* p. 120.

† A daughter of his, Eunice, married Rev. Eleazer Mather first pastor of the church at North-Hampton. Her only daughter, Eunice, was the wife of Rev. John Williams of Deerfield, and was barbarously murdered by the Indians when her husband and the family were taken captive, March, 1703-4.



September 29, 1624, he married Katherine, daughter of Edmund Hault, Esq. of Bury in Lancashire; with whom he lived in connubial affection thirty years. By her he had six sons; of whom Samuel, Timothy, Nathaniel, and Joseph, were born in Great-Britain; and Eleazer and Increase, in New-England.

After having preached fifteen years he was suspended and silenced, August, 1633, for non-conformity to the establishment; but on November following restored again, through the intercession of friends. But, under the more rigorous visitations of the archbishop of York, he again received sentence of suspension in 1634. His never having worn the surplice, and his puritanick principles, were alleged against him. Being thus "inhibited from the exercise of his ministerial functions," placed again in private life, and apprehensive of the severity of those persecutions an enraged hierarchy were meditating, he resolved upon a removal to New-England. Accordingly he drew up his reasons for such a determination, and exhibited them to the ministers and others in Lancashire at several meetings appointed for their consideration. As nothing was objected against them that he deemed satisfactory, in the month of April, 1635, he left his people at Toxteth, and journeyed to Bristol in order to take ship there. He was obliged to change his outer habit, that he might travel *incognito*, because pursuivants were seeking to apprehend; but by this method he eluded their search. From Bristol he sailed for New-England, May 23, 1635. Two of his sons, who were ministers, came with him, also Jonathan Mitchil, then only a child of eleven years of age; afterwards the famous pastor of the church at Cambridge. The ship encountered a most violent and dangerous hurricane on the American coast, but providentially arrived safe in Boston harbour, August 17, 1635.

Mr. Mather tarried some months with his wife and family in Boston. Immediately several invitations were made to him from Plymouth, Roxbury, and other towns to settle with them; but, by the advice of Messrs. Cotton, Hooker, and other friends, he accepted the request from Dorchester, and began the gathering and forming a church there (the first church having moved with Rev. Mr.

Mr. Wareham to Connecticut) in August, 1636; and on the 23d of that month was constituted their teacher.

Notwithstanding many pressing invitations to return to his people in England, he continued in Dorchester till his death.

For his second wife he married the widow of the famous John Cotton.

Though in his old age he experienced many infirmities, as great deafness, the loss of sight in one eye for seven years, and painful attacks from the stone; yet such was his general good health, that it is observed of him that "in fifty years together he was not detained by sickness so much as one Lord's day from publick labours."

As he was attending the synod at Boston, of which he was chosen moderator, he was taken with a violent fit of the stone, which in five days put a period to his life, April 22, 1669, in the seventy-third year of his age.

The last texts from which he preached were Job xiv. 14. and 2 Tim. iv. 6—8. He had also prepared a discourse upon 2 Cor. v. 1. to be delivered at a private conference in Dorchester, "but was prevented speaking by bodily pains."

"He was a man of an exemplary life and conversation; a good scholar; and a plain, solid, practical preacher. He wrote several treatises, which were well accepted in those times, and was generally consulted in all difficulties relating to church government."\* He drew up the "discourses about the church covenant" and the "answer to the thirty-two questions," in the year 1639, which pass under the names of the ministers of New-England; and when the "platform of church discipline" was agreed to by a synod of these churches in the year 1647, Mr. Mather's model was that out of which it was chiefly taken.† Other particulars of his publications may be found in the *Magnalia*.

He left four sons in the ministry, one of whom, *Eleazer*, pastor of the church at Northampton, died about three months after his father. *Samuel* was teacher of a church  
in

\* Neal, Hist. of N. Eng. vol. I. p. 385.

† *Magnalia*, p. 128.

in Dublin in Ireland; *Nathaniel*, minister of Barnstable in Devon, Great-Britain, and afterwards of Rotterdam in Holland; and *Increase*, minister of Boston in New England.‡

In the latter part of the year 1639, Rev. Jonathan Burr was settled as colleague with Mr. Mather.\*

He was born at Redgrave in Suffolk, Great-Britain, of godly parents, who perceiving his early love of letters, gratified him with a learned education: and, says Dr. Mather,† “though literature did much adorn his childhood, religion did so much more; for he had from a child known the holy scriptures, which made him wise unto salvation.” In his earliest years, “so studious was he as to leave his food for his book, and withal so pious as to leave his book for his prayers.”

After having spent four years at the university, upon the death of his father he returned to the country, and was employed in keeping a school. Here, however, he pursued his studies with such diligence, that when those of his standing were to take their degrees of mastership, he was appointed one of the moderators; an honourable distinction in which he acquitted himself to great acceptance.

For a while he preached at Horniger, near Bury in Suffolk, and afterwards took the charge of the church at Reckingshal. “He was a minister of very good repute there for piety and learning.” ||

Having been silenced for non-conformity, in the beginning of 1639, he came over to New-England, with his wife and three children. Soon after their arrival she was delivered of a fourth. The following year he with his family had the small-pox, which, as inoculation was not then practised, was a very malignant and dangerous disorder; but they all happily recovered, though it left Mr. Burr in a state of debility which shortened his days.

Though in the discharge of his ministerial office at Dorchester

‡ For particulars of these, see the following notices of graduates at Harvard College.

\* The church records do not specify the time, but I find that on the 21st day of the 10th month [December] “Mr. Jonathan Burr and Mrs. Frances his wife were admitted as members of the church.”

† *Magnalia*, p. 78.

|| *Winthrop's Journal*, p. 216.

chester he is recorded to have given "good proof of his gifts and godliness to universal satisfaction, yet some little misunderstandings with regard to certain points supposed to favour the opinions of the Familists arose between him and Mr. Mather. The dissatisfaction of the latter was so great that a council was called to take the matter into consideration. It consisted of the governour and another of the magistrates, and ten of the elders of the neighbouring churches. Four days were spent in the discussion. The result was a recommendation to the two pastors "to set apart a day for mutual reconciliation;" which was accordingly done, with mutual concessions, "and harmony and a good understanding was restored." \*

Doctor Mather comments largely upon Mr. Burr's eminent piety, bountiful charity to the poor, tender sympathy with the afflicted, amiable disposition, and unaffected meekness of spirit.

Though distinguished by a most exemplary life and conversation, and by the most conscientious discharge of ministerial duties; yet such was his humility that he would sometimes complain to his friends, "Alas! I preach not what I am, but what I ought to be." "Hence, on the Lord's day, after he came home from his publick work, it was his manner presently to retire and spend some time in praying to God for the pardon of the sins which accompanied him in his work, and in praising God for enabling him to go in any measure through it; with petitions for the good success of his labours. He would then come down to his family worship, wherein he spent some hours instructing the family and performing other duties: and, when his wife desired him to abate of his excessive pains, his answer would be, "It is better to be worn out with the work than to be eaten out with rust." It was, indeed, his joy to be spending his life unto the uttermost for God and for his people; yea, he would say, though he should have no temporal rewards." †

Such holy fervour and pathos seasoned his pulpit performances that the famous Mr. Hooker remarked, "Surely this man will not long be out of heaven, for he preaches  
as

---

\* For farther particulars, see Winthrop's Journal, p. 216.

† Mather's Magnalia, p. 78.

as if he were there already." This prediction was soon verified. After a short sickness of ten days, he expired August 9, 1641. During his last illness his faith, patience, and piety were conspicuous. After some conversation with the friends who surrounded his dying bed, he requested the company to withdraw that he might have opportunity to pray awhile by himself, but, perceiving their reluctance at leaving him, "he prayed in Latin so long as he had strength to do it." He then took an affectionate leave of his wife and family, and died in peace.

His widow afterwards married the Honourable Richard Dummer, Esq. with whom she lived happily more than forty years.

Mr. Burr left four children. His eldest son was educated at Harvard College.

Rev. John Wilson, jun. was ordained "as co-adjutor with Rev. Mr. Mather, the teacher, in 1649." After two years he was removed to Medfield, where he was pastor forty years. "The Lord's day preceding his translation he preached both forenoon and afternoon fervently and powerfully. The Lord's day that he expired the greater part of his church were present to behold and lament his removal from them, which was on August 23, 1691."\*

He was son of Rev. John Wilson, first minister of Charlestown; received an education at Harvard College, and graduated with the first class in 1642.

After Mr. Wilson went to Medfield the church invited Mr. *William Stoughton*, afterwards lieutenant-governour, to take the office of teacher. This, though repeated several times, he persisted in declining; but gave his occasional assistance in preaching for some years, "for which he received compensation both from the town and church."†

Rev. Josiah Flint was ordained Dec. 27, 1681; Mr. Mather having been dead nearly two years. He was son of Rev. Henry Flint of Braintree; graduated at Harvard College in 1664; and continued in the pastoral office in Dorchester till his death, which was on the 16th of September, 1680, in the 35th year of his age. The only publication of Mr. Flint's that I have met with is an epistle dedicatory to "Mrs. Bridget Usher," his aunt, prefixed

---

\* Dorchester Church Records.

† Ibid.

ed to a sermon of Rev. Leonard Hoar, reprinted at Boston by John Foster, in 1680.

Rev. John Danforth was ordained here on the twenty-eighth of June, 1682. The churches sent to were, the one in Boston of which Mr. Eliot was pastor, Roxbury, Dedham, Milton, Braintree, Weymouth and Medfield. There were two meetings on the day. Mr. Increase Mather preached in the forenoon, and Mr. Danforth delivered a discourse in the afternoon from 2 Kings ii. 14. "Where is the Lord God of Elisha?" Mr. Eliot gave the charge.

He continued in office to the time of his death, May 26, 1730, aged 78.

He was son of Rev. Samuel Danforth of Roxbury; and graduated at Harvard College in 1677, and was afterwards a Fellow of the corporation.

The following character is extracted from Blake's manuscript annals. "He was said to be a man of great learning. He understood the mathematicks beyond most men of his function. He was exceeding charitable, and of a very peaceful temper. He had a good taste for poetry. † He

---

† I have seen several elegiac pieces of his in English hexameter verse. Those which possess the most poetical merit are, "Two vast enjoyments commemorated and two great bereavements lamented, in two excellent persons, viz. Rev. *Peter Thacher* pastor of the church of Christ in Milton, who was born into this world July 18, 1651, and ascended to a better world, Dec. 17, 1727, *Æt.* 77, and in the 47th of his pastorate; and Rev. *Samuel Danforth*, pastor of the church of Christ in Taunton, whose nativity was Dec. 18, 1666, and his translation to the heavenly paradise Nov. 14, 1727, fifteen days after the first shock of the great earthquake in New-England." The other poem is "on the death of Mrs. *Anne Eliot*, the virtuous consort of Rev. John Eliot, first minister of Roxbury, who exchanged worlds March 24, 1687, in the 84th year of her age." To which are added "verses to the memory of Mr. *John Eliot*, teacher to the church of Christ in Roxbury, and a propagator of the Gospel among the Indians in New-England. Who rested from his labours May 20, 1690, *Æt.* 86." The following version of Mr. Eliot's hints respecting the best methods of gospelizing the Indians may serve as a specimen of the poetry.

"Address, I pray, your senate for good orders  
To civilize the heathen in our borders.  
Virtue must turn into necessity,  
Or this brave work will in its urn still lie.

'Till

He took much pains to perpetuate the names of many of the good christians of his flock by writing inscriptions and epitaphs for their grave stones; and yet the world is so ungrateful that he has not a line written to preserve his memory. He was buried in Lieut. Gov. Stoughton's tomb; and there also lieth his consort Mrs. Elizabeth Danforth.

Mr. Danforth published several sermons of which I have seen the following.

"Kneeling to God at parting with friends; or the fraternal intercessory cry of faith and love; a sermon preached at the departure of Rev. Mr. Lord and his church to go to Carolina." 1767.

"The blackness of sinning against the light; a sermon on Rom. i. 21." 1710.

"Sermon on the death of Edward Broomfield, Esq."

"Judgement begun at the house of God," &c. 1716.

"Two sermons on the earthquake." 1727.

Fast sermon, on Exod. ix. 33, 34.

He also preached the artillery election sermon in the year 1693: but I do not know whether it was printed.

Between six and seven months before Mr. Danforth's death, Rev. Jonathan Bowman was ordained his colleague; Nov. 5, 1729. The churches sent to were Lexington, Roxbury, Scituate, Braintree, Milton, and Stoughton. Mr. Hancock preached from 2 Cor. xi. 28. Mr. Danforth gave the charge, and Mr. Walter gave the right hand of fellowship.

Mr. Bowman continued in the pastoral relation till Dec. 14, 1773, when at his request, he was dismissed. He died March 30, 1775, aged 68.

He was graduated at Harvard College in 1724.

Though a good scholar, and a handsome composuist,  
yet

"Till *agriculture* and *cohabitation*  
Come under full restraint and regulation,  
Much you *would* do you'll find *impracticable*  
And much you *do* will prove *unprofitable*.  
In common lands that lie unfenc'd you know,  
The husbandman in vain doth plow and sow;  
We hope in vain the plant of *grace* will thrive  
In forests where *civility* can't live."

yet such was his diffidence that he declined preaching on publick occasions, and never consented to have any of his sermons printed.

The successor to Mr. Bowman was Rev. *Moses Everett*. He was ordained September 28, 1774. The churches sent to were, the first church in Stoughton, Milton, the first church in Dedham, Dr. Eliot's church in Boston, the church in Ipswich, of which Rev. Mr. Cutler is pastor, the third church in Roxbury, the Old North church in Boston, and Dr. Cooper's church there. Rev. Mr. Haven preached from 2 Cor. iv. 5. Mr. Dunbar gave the charge, and Dr. Eliot the right hand of fellowship.

By reason of ill health Mr. Everett was induced to ask a dismissal; to which the church and people, after expressing their kindness to him, and duly weighing the matter, consented. The relation was accordingly dissolved January 14, 1793. He now lives among them a private gentleman and christian, much respected.

Mr. Everett published "a sermon at the ordination of his brother Rev. Oliver Everett to the pastoral care of the New South church in Boston," 1782; and a "sermon before a society of young men in Dorchester."

Rev. *Thalideus Mason Harris*, the present pastor, was ordained October 23, 1793.

*A list of those who went from Dorchester to receive an education at Harvard College.\**

Graduated 1643. Samuel Mather, A. M. son of Rev. Richard Mather of Dorchester. He was afterwards a Fellow of the college; and first preacher at the North church in Boston, where his brother and nephew were in after time settled. He went over to England in the time of Cromwell, and was chosen one of the chaplains in Magdalen college, Oxford. Afterwards he went over to Ireland, and became one of the senior Fellows of Trinity college in Dublin. Upon the inforcement of the act of uniformity in 1662, he left all his preferments in the church, and  
became

---

\* The writer is sensible that these are but imperfect sketches. His information in many instances was very deficient; but he hopes those who have it in their power will communicate, through the Historical Society, a more circumstantial account.



became pastor of a congregation of dissenters in Dublin, where he died in the year 1671. "He was a good scholar, and a generous spirited man. He was the author of a very valuable treatise "on the figures and types of the Old Testament," which was published by his brother after his death."†

1647. Nathaniel Mather, A. M. brother to the preceding, and his successor in the pastoral care of the church in Dublin, whither he went from Barnstable, New-England, where he was first settled. After that he was pastor of a church at Rotterdam: but about the time of the revolution he went over to England, and was chosen pastor of a dissenting congregation in London, where he died in 1697, in great esteem among his brethren for learning and piety. Aged 67.

William Brimsmead. He was educated at Harvard College, but never had a degree. Several of his class, equally dissatisfied with him, with a vote of the corporation requiring four years residence at college previous to a degree, took up their connections (in the year 1647), because, at the time of their admission, three years residence entitled students to that honour. He was first employed as a preacher at Plymouth, but afterwards settled at Marlborough, September 20, 1660. He was never married. "Where, or how he lived is unknown to the descendants of his charge; and nearly all that perpetuates his memory is an unlettered stone. He died July 3, 1701."‡

He preached the election sermon on May 11, 1681, on Jeremiah vi. 8. "Be instructed, O Jerusalem, lest my soul depart from thee; lest I make thee desolate, a land not inhabited."

He is characterized as "a well-accomplished servant of Christ."

Ichabod Wiswall was in the same class, and left college for the same reasons. He settled at Duxborough, where he was minister about thirty years. He was employed by the colony of Plymouth as their agent to the court of  
Great-

---

† Neale.

‡ Rev. Mr. Packard's account of Marlborough. Hist. Collections, Vol. IV. p. 47.

Great-Britain. He deceased July 20, 1700. He was considered as "a man of eminent accomplishments for the service of the sanctuary," "gave undoubted evidence of abilities and virtue," so that his death was "accounted a great loss to the country." \*

1650. William Stoughton, A. M. son of Col. Israel Stoughton. "A person of eminent qualifications, honourable extract, liberal education, and singular piety." † For a number of years he was a preacher of the gospel, with great acceptance. His sermon at the annual election, (April 29, 1668) has been ranked "among the very best delivered on that occasion."

He was ambassador from the province of Massachusetts to the court of Great-Britain; chief justice of the superiour court; lieutenant governour under Sir William Phipps, and after him commander in chief till the coming of his excellency Richard earl of Belmont; lieut. governour with him during his stay in the country; and after him commander in chief again till his death. He deceased July 7, 1701, aged 70. He was interred at Dorchester, July 15, "with great honour and solemnity, and with him much of New-England's glory." ‡

The inscription on his monument is published in the Collections of the Historical Society, vol. ii. page 10.

He was a generous benefactor to Harvard College. Stoughton hall was erected at his expence. He also left a tract of land in Dorchester for the support of scholars at the college, and another for the benefit of publick schools in the town.

1650. John Glover, son of John Glover, Esq. of Dorchester, who bequeathed a sum of money for the support of scholars at college. I believe Mr. Glover was a physician at Roxbury. He received the degree of *Doctor of Medicine* from Aberdeen.

Pelataiah Glover. Though educated at Cambridge, it seems that he never received a degree there. He was born 1637. Ordained at Springfield June 18, 1661, "when a church was first gathered there;" and was their minister many years.

1651.

\* Fairfield's MS. Journal.

† Ibid.

‡ Ibid.

1651. Jonathan Burr, A. M. son of Rev. Jonathan Burr of Dorchester.

1656. Eleazer Mather, son of Rev. Richard Mather of Dorchester. He was born May 13, 1637. When a church was gathered at Northampton in 1661, he was ordained over it June 23. "Here he laboured for eleven years in the vineyard of the Lord; much admired as a man of talents and exalted piety, and as a zealous preacher."

There was printed at Cambridge, 1671, in a 4to. pamphlet, "Serious exhortation to the present and succeeding generation in New-England, earnestly calling upon them all to endeavour that the Lord's gracious presence may be continued with posterity; being the substance of the *last sermons* preached by Eleazer Mather, late pastor of the church at Northampton." In a copy of this publication which I have seen, is the following note in the hand-writing of Dr. Increase Mather. "The first sermon was preached June 13, 1669; the second, June 27 following; the third, July 4th; the fourth and last, July 11th; after which day my brother Eleazer lived not in health able to preach: for July 13th he took to his bed, and July 24, he went to rest in the Lord, to keep an everlasting Sabbath in heaven."

He died in 1669, aged 32 years.

1656. Increase Mather, A. M. brother to the former. Ordained in the North Church in Boston, May 27, 1669. Appointed president of the college in 1685, but resigned that office, 1701. Received a degree of *Doctor of Divinity*. Died August 23, 1723, aged 85.

1665. Hope Atherton, son of Major-General Huniphrey Atherton, baptized at Dorchester August 30, 1646. In 1667 and 1668, he kept the school here, whence he was dismissed, and settled in the ministry at Hadley.

1667. John Foster. A printer and astronomer. He lived in Boston. To his almanack of 1681 he annexed an ingenious "dissertation on comets, their motion, distance, and magnitude;" followed by observations on the comets seen at Boston in November and December, 1680. He died September 9, 1681, *Æt.* 33. His grave stone bears the following inscription:

Astra

Astra colis vivens, moriens super æthera Foster  
 Scande precor, cœlum metiri disce supremum ;  
 Metior atque meum est, emit mihi dives Jesus,  
 Nec tenior quicquam nisi grates solvere.

1671. Samuel Mather, A. M. Settled at Windsor in Connecticut. He was one of the first trustees of Yale college, and died 1728, aged 77.

1675. James Minot, son of Mr. James Minot of Dorchester, and nephew to the Hon. William Stoughton, Esq. born 1659. He dwelt in Concord, where he held the military rank of captain, and was a justice of the peace for the county of Middlesex.

1677. Edward Payson, A. M. for many years a minister at Rowley. Died August 22, 1732, aged 75 years, 2 months, and 10 days.

1677. Joseph Capen, A. M. son of John Capen of Dorchester; baptized January 2, 1658. Ordained at Topsfield June 4, 1684. Died June 30, 1725, Æt. 67.

1690. Nathaniel Clap, A. M. son of Nathaniel Clap of Dorchester; baptized January 24, 1668. He was many years a minister at Newport in Rhode-Island; and died October 30, 1745, aged 78. From a discourse on his death by Rev. J. Callender, from Hebrews xiii. 7, 8. the following characteristic traits of this venerable man are extracted.

“The main stroke in his character was his eminent sanctity and piety and an ardent desire to promote the knowledge and practice of true godliness in others.”—“As his understanding was above the common level, so was his learning.”—“He thought his station required more than common instances of innocency, self-denial, and caution.”—“He was zealously attached to what he considered as the true doctrines of grace, and to the forms of worship he thought to be of divine institution: But his charity embraced good men of all denominations.—He had little value for mere speculative, local, nominal Christianity, and a form of godliness without the power. He insisted most on those things on which our interest in Jesus Christ and our title to eternal life must depend; that *faith* by which we are justified and have peace with God through our Lord

Lord Jesus, and that *repentance* towards God and *new obedience*, which are the necessary effect and evidence of our regeneration, and the proper exercise of Christianity.”

“He abounded in acts of charity and beneficence to the poor and necessitous—to whom he was a kind father and guardian.”

“In fine, he was a publick blessing, as an able minister of the New Testament, an example of unsuspected piety, and an honour to religion.”

“There are two things in which he excelled in so remarkable a manner, that I must not omit them: his care about the education of children, and his concern for the instruction of servants.”

“He abounded in contrivances to do good by scattering books of piety and virtue, not such as minister questions and strife, but godly edifying; and put himself to a very considerable expence that he might, in this method, awaken the careless and secure, comfort the feeble minded, succour the tempted, instruct the ignorant, and quicken, animate, and encourage all.”

“The conclusion of his life and ministry was a peaceful and happy death, without those raptures which some boast of, but with perfect resignation to the will of God, and good hope and humble confidence in Christ Jesus, who was the sum of his doctrine and the end of his conversation.”

1693. Henry Flint, Esq. A. M. son of Rev. Josiah Flint of Dorchester. He was fifty-five years a tutor at Harvard College, and one of the Fellows of the Corporation sixty. He died February 13, 1760. A discourse was delivered at his funeral by Rev. Dr. Appleton from Psalm cxii. 7. which pays a just tribute to his piety, learning, and worth; and an elegant Latin oration by James Lovell, A. M.

A volume of Mr. Flint's sermons was published in 1739, which possesses considerable merit.

1695. John Robinson, A. M. ordained at Duxborough, Nov. 18, 1702, where he was minister nearly forty years. Died 1739, aged 64.

1698. Richard Billings, A. M. son of Ebenezer Billings of Dorchester, baptized Sept. 23, 1677. He was settled at Compton in the state of Rhode-Island.

1700.

1700. Robert Breck, A. M. son of John Breck of Dorchester, baptized Dec. 10, 1682. Ordained at Marlborough October 25, 1704. Died Jan. 6, 1731, Æt. 49.

1701. Samuel Wiswall, A. M. son of Enoch Wiswall of Dorchester, baptized Sept. 21, 1679. The following character of him is extracted from the Boston Gazette for the year 1746, No. 1325.

“Rev. and venerable Mr. Samuel Wiswall, late pastor of the church at Edgartown, was a son of worthy and pious parents in the town of Dorchester; had his education in Harvard College, where he made good proficiency in learning, and had a good character for his sobriety.

After he had taken his degree of M. A. in the year 1704, designed to devote himself to the work of the ministry, he offered himself to the examination of an association of approved divines, to try his qualifications for the sacred employment which he desired to engage in: and, having their good approbation and encouragement, he preached awhile transiently as he had opportunity; and went a foreign voyage chaplain of a ship, which was unhappily taken by the Spaniards and carried into *Martinico*, where he underwent a dangerous fit of sickness, but God sparing his life he returned to his country again.

Here he preached as God called him to it, and his labours were well accepted. Particularly at *Nantucket* he preached about half a year, and was well esteemed of by the people of every profession there.

On his return from *Nantucket*, he was invited to preach at *Edgartown*, as an assistant to the very pious and aged Mr. Jonathan Dunham, and was ordained a pastor of that church in the year 1713, where he continued his faithful and painful labours as long as he lived.

He was, by all competent judges who knew him, esteemed a learned and judicious divine. His sermons were well composed and rational, and upon well chosen subjects; though his utterance was not so free and flowing as some others. His prayers were very fervent, and well suited to the occasions of them. His memory was so good that he had no need of notes in the delivery of his discourses.

He

He was a person of eminent and singular piety, which greatly recommended him and all that he did; a faithful, kind, obliging, and instructive friend; charitable and candid to all who differed from him in sentiment; remarkably humble, he willingly took up with a very small salary, and gave considerable part of it to his poor neighbours. He chose never to engage in matrimony, that he might not be encumbered with too many of the cares of this life, but that he might attend the work of the ministry without distraction; and gave himself to reading, meditation, and prayer.

He was more careful to avoid even all the very appearances of evil, and would sometimes say he was "more afraid of sin than of hell."

He was often infirm with regard to his bodily state, and in the last years of his life his infirmities increased upon him: and his not abating his labours in proportion to the decay of his strength has been supposed to hasten his death; especially in the time of the sickness and mortality a little before he died it is thought that he underwent more than he was well able to bear.

He died at last suddenly, having been in his study the day before his death, which was on the 23d of Dec. 1746, in the 68th year of his age."

1702. Peleg Wiswall, A. M. School-master at the north end, Boston. Died 1767, aged 84.

1703. Elijah Danforth, A. M. son of Rev. John Danforth of Dorchester, baptized Dec. 2, 1683. He was a physician at Castle William [now Fort Independence], and died October 8, 1736, aged 53.

1704. Ebenezer White, son of James White of Dorchester, baptized July 12, 1685. Ordained at Attleborough October 17, 1716.

1711. Samuel Blake, A. M. son of John Blake of Dorchester, born Sept. 26, 1691: was a school-master at Barnstable.

1715. Samuel Danforth, A. M. son of Rev. John Danforth of Dorchester; baptized Nov. 15, 1696. He was judge of the court, and in 1774 a mandamus counsellor. He died 1777, aged 81.

1723. Nathaniel Glover, A. M. Clerk in the store of Thomas Hancock, Esq. of Boston.

1724. Philips Payson, A. M. First minister of Walpole. Ordained in the year 1728, died January 22, 1778, aged 74.

— Isaac Billings, A. M. Resided in Milton.

— Richard Pierce, A. M. Minister at Dartmouth, since called New-Bedford: ordained in 1737. "He was obliged to leave the profession, after a certain number of years, on account of bodily infirmities."

1725. Ichabod Wiswall: for many years a school-master at Martha's Vineyard.

— James Robinson, A. M. Physician at Newport.

1729. Samuel Mosely, A. M. Pastor of the church at Hampton in Connecticut. He died July 26, 1791, in the 83d year of his age and 57th of his ministry, after a tedious confinement of nine years from a paralytick shock, attended with pains caused by rheumatick and asthmatick disorders extremely distressing, and at times excruciating. His patience and resignation under these complicated disorders was exemplary; and his constant regard to the interest of religion was very conspicuous in his improving the last remains of his life, strength, and reason (which last by a kind Providence was remarkably continued to him amidst the united attack of so many diseases) in frequent heavenly conversation, and making use of every opportunity to vindicate the doctrines and advance the cause of religion.

Mr. Mosely was honoured as an accomplished gentleman and scholar. He was a careful economist, but given to hospitality; remarkably intrepid in whatever he thought his duty, both with regard to practice and opinion, but open to conviction, and when led to discover his mistake, frank in confessing it. He was zealous to maintain a strict discipline, and though some might think him rigid in some instances, he thought the danger in the churches in general was on the other extreme.—In his ministerial character he was a faithful servant of Jesus Christ; a sound skilful divine, carefully steering between the extremes of scepticism and bigotry, and of censoriousness and universal catholicism. He avoided such doctrines on the



the one hand as would discourage a diligent attendance on the means of grace, or on the other would encourage persons to place an undue dependance on their own endeavours. He advocated the necessity, sufficiency, and efficacy, of the atonement—the free and sovereign grace of God, the absolute necessity of regeneration, and a divine influence to support it. At the same time he boldly inculcated the utility and necessity of moral duties.

A sermon was preached at his funeral by Rev. James Cogswell, D. D. of Windham, from Revelations iv. 17. in which are some more particular traits of his character as a minister, a parent, and a friend, which places it in a very respectable light.

1730. William Royal, A. M.

—— Lemuel Trott.

1731. Supply Clap, A. M. for a number of years minister at Woburn.

1732. Mather Withington, eldest son of Mr. Ebenezer Withington of Dorchester. After he took his degree he kept a school at Cape-Ann. He commenced preaching, and much esteemed for his talents, virtues, and piety. He died April 28, 1736. His manuscripts in arithmetick, geography, geometry and astronomy, discover his great proficiency in those sciences. He had calculated eclipses for many years. These manuscripts were purchased by Rev. Mr. Prince of Boston for his son, "between whom and young Mr. Withington was an intimate acquaintance." They are now in the possession of his brother, Capt. Ebenezer Withington. They bear a handsome tribute to the ingenuity, learning, and piety of Mr. Withington in the hand writing of Mr. Prince.

1735. Gillam Tailor, A. M. physician, son of William Tailor, Esq. lieutenant-governour.

—— Noah Clap, A. M. This worthy gentleman was a descendant from one of the most ancient and pious families in New-England; and inherited and exemplified their simplicity of manners, sincerity, purity, and piety.

For several years he was exercised in various places as a preacher of the gospel, but on account of the precarious state of his health never settled in the ministry.

For eighteen years he kept the grammar school in Dorchester;

chester ; for more than thirty was treasurer and selectman ; and for forty-seven was town clerk.

He was a great antiquarian, and had stored up a vast fund of information respecting the early settlement and history of this country. The late Dr. Belknap found great assistance in his most interesting researches from consulting him.

He deceased April 10, 1799, aged 82 ; leaving behind him a widow and six children.

A tribute of respect was paid to his memory, by the writer of this, on the Lord's day after his decease, in a sermon from those words, 2 Corinthians i. 12, in themselves strikingly descriptive of his manners, his conversation, his life, and his hope.

1741. Thomas Jones, A. M. minister at Woburn a number of years : died March 13, 1774, aged 53.

1742. Nathaniel Hatch, A. M.

1744. Edward Bass, A. M. and D. D. He was born at Dorchester, Nov. 23, 1726 ; and entered college at the early age of thirteen. From the time of taking his first degree, till he received that of Master of Arts, he was engaged in instructing a school, occupying his leisure hours in such studies as were suitable to the profession for which he was intended. From 1747 to 1751, he resided at the college, making progress in theological studies, and occasionally supplying vacant pulpits in the Congregational churches. In 1752, at the invitation of the Episcopal society in Newburyport, he went to England, and on the 24th day of May was ordained by the excellent Dr. Thomas Sherlock, then bishop of London, in his chapel at Fulham. In the autumn of the same year he returned to New-England, and soon after took charge of the church in Newbury, at that time vacant by the death of Rev. Matthias Plant.

In July, 1789, the university of Pennsylvania conferred on him the degree of Doctor in Divinity. In 1796, he was unanimously elected, by the convention of the Protestant Episcopal churches of the commonwealth of Massachusetts, to the office of bishop of that church ; and was accordingly consecrated in Christ Church on the 7th day of May, 1797, by the bishops of Pennsylvania, New-York, and

and Maryland. On the 27th day of the same month he was received and acknowledged in the most affectionate and respectful manner by the clergy of his diocese then assembled in Trinity Church, Boston. Some time after, the Episcopal churches in the state of Rhode-Island elected him their bishop, and the last summer a convention of the churches in New-Hampshire also put themselves under his jurisdiction.

Bishop Bass was a sound divine, a critical scholar, an accomplished gentleman, and an exemplary christian. On the 10th of September, 1803, after an illness of but two days, he died as he had lived, full of piety, resignation, and humility.

In the same class with Dr. Bass was Samuel Bird, of Dorchester; but he did not obtain his degree in consequence of some rash censures upon some of the governours of the college and the venerable clergyman of Cambridge, which were dictated by religious enthusiasm. He was afterwards settled as a minister at New-Haven, where he died.

— James Humphrey, A. M. the first minister at Pequog, since called Athol. Born March 20, 1722. Died May 8, 1796, aged 74.

1753. Thomas Oliver, A. M. lieutenant-governour in the year 1774.

1755. Jonathan Bowman, A. M. son of Rev. Jonathan Bowman of Dorchester. *Now living in the District of Maine.*

1760. James Baker, A. M. *Now living in Dorchester.*

1761. John Bass, brother to bishop Bass. *Now living.*

— Daniel Leeds, A. M. school-master at Dorchester about fifteen years. Died June 7, 1790, aged 57.

1764. William Bowman, A. M. son of Rev. Jonathan Bowman. *Now living.*

1769. James Blake. He entered college at the age of fifteen; and exhibited there an eminent pattern of studiousness and proficiency in learning. Distinguished for the purity of his morals, the exemplariness of his conduct, and the sweetness of his temper, he conciliated the love of all his fellow students, and the high approbation of his instructors. After taking his first degree, he went to Weymouth to take the charge of a school, which he kept to general satisfaction. That employment he resigned, in  
about

about nine months, and devoted himself to the study of divinity under the instruction of Rev. Mr. Smith.—“He pursued this his favourite study with unwearied assiduity for a year, and then began the important work of the ministry, but not without great reluctance; for he had determined not to preach till he had acquired a perfect knowledge in the fundamental parts of religion (which cannot be done in the small space of a year.) But Mr. Smith being sick, he was many times urged to supply his place until he recovered, which, after repeated denials, he did. Thus having made a beginning, he continued almost every sabbath till he died.”

“With respect to his publick character, he did not affect to be ostentatious, and to divert the minds of his hearers by a flow of words to little significancy, but his main design was to edify them in the way of their duty: accordingly his discourses were plain and instructive; and his delivery was easy and agreeable, accompanied with a few natural gestures.”

“In his private character he was sober and temperate, friendly and sociable, and in conversation entertaining and edifying. To these was joined an even temper and disposition of mind; all which made him very agreeable.”

He died November 17, 1771, after a very short illness, wanting one month of being twenty-one years old.

A small volume of his sermons was published by his friends, which discover a strength of mind, a clear and comprehensive intellect, a knowledge of theoretical and practical divinity, and an ardent piety, truly wonderful in so young a person. From the biographical sketch annexed to that work the above particulars are extracted.

1772. John Homans, A. M. During the American war a surgeon in the army, and afterwards settled as a physician in Boston. In 1790 he was elected a fellow of the Massachusetts Medical Society. “Dr. Homans had received from nature a great share of superiour sense, which was well cultivated, and evinced a mind rich in bright ideas and refinedly polished by education. As a physician he was not inferiour to any of his age; he was employed much, and greatly approved.” The duties of this profession

fession he discharged with great tenderness and humanity ; and in behalf of the poor with disinterested benevolence.

Having been several years quite an invalid, in the year 1800 he undertook a voyage to the north-west coast of America for the recovery of his health, but died on the second day after the departure of the vessel, June 3, in the 47th year of his age.

- 1782. Jonathan Bird, A. M.
- 1783. Daniel Leeds, A. M.
- 1787. Benjamin Beale, A. M.
- 1793. John Pierce, A. M. ordained at  
Brookline March 15, 1797.
- 1794. James Blake Howe.
- 1795. Samuel Topliff, A. M.
- 1796. Moses Everett, A. M.
- 1797. Elisha Clap, A. M. *Tutor.*
- Henry Gardner, A. M. M. B.
- 1802. Joseph Gardner.
- Benjamin Andrews Hitchborn.
- James Keadie Swan.

} *Now living.*

*Chronological particulars, extracted principally from the first book of the Church Records of Dorchester.\**

In the list of church members in the year 1636, are Rev. William Tompson, Rev. George Moxon, and Rev. Samuel Newman. Respecting the first I cannot obtain any information. Mr. Moxon was one of the ejected ministers.† He was the first minister of Springfield ; afterwards he returned to England, and died there September 15, 1687, aged 85. Mr. Newman preached sometime at Weymouth, and then settled as teacher of the church in Rehoboth. He compiled the work which passes under the name of “the Cambridge Concordance.” His decease was July 5, 1663.

1652. “A collection was made in the town for the maintenance of the President and Fellows of Harvard College, and for the assistance of poor scholars.”

1659. July 5. “The teaching and ruling elders met at  
Roxbury,

\* These are published as furnishing some important dates. A few notes are added.

† Calamy, Vol. II. page 128.

Roxbury, with the messengers of other churches, to hear the Indians make a relation of the work of God upon their soul. At which time there were six that made their relation in the Indian tongue, which was repeated by Mr. Eliot in English, and the truth of each relation was witnessed to by Mr. Pearson of Long-Island, by goodman Fordgier of Martha's Vineyard, and by Mr. Eliot's own son. And because the time would not permit for the other two Indians to make their relation there, that which they made the day before to Mr. Pearson was declared by him. Many questions were put to the Indians, in point of knowledge; and their answers were to the great rejoicing of the hearers."\*

1660. Aug. 26. "Roger Sumner was dismissed, that with other christians at Lancaster, a church might be begun there."

1661. April 28. "Mr. Eleazer Mather, William Clarke, Henry Curlisse, and Henry Woodward, were dismissed to join with some others for the gathering of a church at Northampton."

1664. July 17. "A letter was read to the church from the brethren dwelling at Nonandom; † who, intending to gather a church, desired messengers to be sent from this church to assist therein. The which was granted, and the teaching and ruling elders were chosen. The day appointed is the 20th of this inst. at which time Mr. John Eliot is to be ordained pastor, ‡ and Thomas Wiswall, a late member of this church, to be ruling elder."

— 14th day of 12th month. "Mr. Torrey ordained at Weymouth.

1665. Nov. 19. Mr. Shore ordained at Taunton."

1666. "A contribution was made for poor distressed Christians in England, on account of the great fire and plague in London. The whole amounted to £.40 13 9½."

1667.

---

\* The "Relations" of these Indians were afterwards published in a small pamphlet, from which some account of them is extracted, and annexed to this Chronology.

† Afterwards called Cambridge-Village, and since Newton.

‡ For some account of Mr. Eliot see Morton's *New-England's Memorial*, p. 242.

1667. April 7. "A contribution for the distressed people at Cape Fear: amount £.8 4 11½."

— September 9. "A contribution for the King's fleet at the Kirby Islands. £.20."

1668. May 3. Role-on-God, the son of Mr. John Cotton, baptized by virtue of communion of churches; his father being a member of the church at Boston, but there is no officer there to dispense the ordinance at present.\*

— Dec. 9. "Mr. Davenport ordained pastor, and Mr. Allen teacher in the church at Boston."

1670. May 4. "Mr. Oxenbridge ordained at Boston."

— Sept. 13. "Mr. Whitman ordained at Hull."

1672. Sept. 11. "Mr. Moses Fiske ordained at Braintree."†

1673. Dec. 3. "Mr. William Adams ordained at Dedham."‡

1674. Feb. 24. "Died Mr. William Poole, aged 81. He came hither from England; he was a sage, reverend and pious man of God. He was clerk of writs, and register of births, deaths, and marriages in Dorchester about ten years, and often a school-master in the town."

— Nov. 19. "Died Rev. Samuel Danforth of Roxbury, aged 47."

1675. Jan. 5. "A collection made for Mr. Corlet for his labour in preaching during Mr. Flint's sickness."||

1677. — "Mr. Shepherd of Charlestown died of the small-pox."

1678. March 31. "Rev. Mr. Willard installed over the third church in Boston. He had been minister at Groton, but his people there were scattered by reason of the war."§

— April 24. "There was a church gathered at Milton. It was constituted in our meeting-house at Dorchester,

\* The name was afterwards spelt *Roland*, but in the Records it is written as above. He was minister at Sandwich.

† He died Aug. 10, 1708, aged 66.

‡ He died Aug. 17, 1685.

|| Ammi-Ruhamah Corlet, Fellow of Harvard College, died March 1, 1678.

§ Died Sept. 12, 1707.

chester, by the assistance of the elders and messengers of the three churches in Boston and Weymouth, Braintree and Dedham. The magistrates were acquainted with it, but only the governour was here, by reason of the wet and snow season. Mr. Allen did first pray, and then Mr. Flint preached, and afterwards prayed. Afterward the brethren were called on, one after another to declare the work of grace that God had wrought on them to the number of seven; but before they began it was put to the whole assembly, both messengers and others, whether any had any just reason against their proceeding, but all were silent. After they had made their relations, a confession of faith was read by our Elder, unto which they all consented by lifting up of hands. Then those seven brethren were called down into the body of the assembly, and a covenant read unto them unto which they all consented by lifting up of hands. The brethren that entered into this covenant, and made publick relation were these :

Robert Tucker, member of Weymouth.

Anthony Newton	} Members of Dorchester church.
William Blake	
Thomas Swift	
George Sumner	
Ebenezer Clap	

Edward Blake, member of the second church in Boston.

After this was done, there were more of our brethren that did at the same time enter into the same covenant with the former, namely,

Thomas Holman,  
George Lyon,  
Ephraim Tucker,  
Manasseh Tucker and  
James Tucker.

And then Mr. Torey was appointed to give the right hand of fellowship; and Mr. Mather prayed, and a psalm was sung, and the assembly dismissed."

— Nov. 27. "Mr. Norton ordained at Hingham."

— Dec. 1. "Kept by the church as a day of Thanksgiving for the restoration of Capt. Clap to health again; he having been sick about a year and an half."

1680. Sept. 15. "A fast in Dorchester on account of Mr. Flint's sickness."



1681. June 1. "Mr. Thacher ordained at Milton."\*
1688. October 7. "Mr. Walter ordained at Roxbury."
1693. Nov. 29. "Rev. Joseph Bachelor ordained at Dedham."†
1696. April 8. "Mr. Wadsworth ordained at Boston."
1697. April 21. "Mr. Joseph Baxter ordained at Medfield."
1700. August 28. "Mr. Pemberton ordained at Boston."
1702. August. "The mortality at New-York is sore and dreadful. A fast, on account of the sickness there and here. The deaths in Boston in about twelve months amount to 500."
1703. Sept. 26. "Rev. James Bailey ordained at Weymouth."
- "Rev. Mr. Gardner of Lancaster shot by the centry by mistake."
1704. Dec. 10. "Rev. Mr. Thomas Clarke's death, of Chelmsford, lamented in a sermon on Acts xx. 25, &c."‡
1705. May 10. "Mr. T. Bridge ordained in Boston."
1707. April 21. "Rev. Mr. Torrey of Weymouth deceased, who had been 50 years in the ministry; an able, painful, faithful, minister of Christ. *Æt.* 76 or 77.— He was born some weeks before his time, and was kept in warm lamb-skins till the full proper time came."
- Nov. 26. "Peter Thacher, jun. (nephew to Rev. Mr. Thacher of Milton,) ordained at Weymouth."
1708. August 23. "Aged Mr. Chæever, a school-master in Boston died, aged 94."
- Dec. 9. "Rev. Mr. Higginson deceased."
1709. April. "Mr. Cotton, pastor of East-Hampton died suddenly."
- — 9. "Contribution for Mr. Joseph Mors, who preaches at our village."

1709.

---

\* Died Dec. 24, 1727, aged 77.

† Died April 27, 1723, aged 53.

‡ "A great loss to all our towns, and especially to our frontiers on that side of the country, who are greatly weakened with the loss of such a worthy man." Fairfield's MS. Journal.

1709. May 18. "Mr. Joseph Marsh ordained at Braintree." †
1711. May 23. "Mr. Samuel Niles ordained at Braintree, first precinct."
- Nov. 1. "Mr. John Avery ordained at Truro."
1712. Aug. 25. "Rev. Mr. Hobart of Newton deceased, aged 64. He had preached there about forty years; been ordained thirty-eight. *Vir doctus, prudens, pacificus.*"
- Nov. 26. "Mr. Thayer ordained pastor of the second church in Roxbury."
1714. June 11. "Dr. Smith died."
- Sept. 2. "Public fast on account of the drought. No rain until Sept. 22, saving a shower on the Lord's day evening preceding the fast at Dorchester on July 20th and on August 8th and once or twice a little sprinkling. Yet afterwards there was a good harvest of Indian corn."
- Oct. 18. "Mr. Thomas Danforth died at Surinam."
1716. May 23. "Mr. William Cooper ordained at Boston."
- — 24. "Fast at Dorchester, many being sick."
1717. Feb. 24. "Snow in drifts twenty-five feet deep; in the woods a yard generally on a level."
- Aug. 15. "In our village (Punkipog) seventy sick."
1718. June 11. "Mr. Ebenezer Gay ordained at Hingham."
1719. March 22. "Contribution for Mr. Mors."
1721. Oct. 4. "Mr. Perkins ordained at Bridgewater."
- Dec. 6. "Fast at Dorchester on account of the small-pox."
1722. June 6. "Mrs. Danforth died, aged 52."
1723. May 6. "Mr. Samuel Dexter ordained at Dedham." ‡
1724. May 18. "Voted to give from three to four pounds annually to subsist Rev. Mr. Moody at Providence."
- August 16. "Letter from Chatham from Mr. Godfrey and Mr. Morse; but the church would not send messengers so far." 1724.

---

† Died March 8, 1726, aged 41.

‡ Died January 29, 1755, aged 55.

1724. Nov. 17. "The council to which we sent messengers, approve of Mr. Fitch's asking a dismissal from the church at Ipswich, and accepting the invitation from Portsmouth."

"*Memorandum.* Before the last commencement Mr. Leverett, president of Harvard College, died suddenly : and in the end of September, governour Saltonstal died suddenly. Men of bright accomplishments."

1725. Nov. 24. "Mr. Ezra Carpenter ordained at Hull."

1726. March. "Mr. Glover died in London."

— July. "Rev. Theophilus Cotton of Hampton died."

— Sept. 5. "Rev. Mr. White was buried."

— Nov. 2. "Rev. John Hancock ordained at Braintree."\*

— — 5. "Rev. Zech. Whitman of Hull deceased, aged 82. *Vir pius, humilis, orthodoxus, utilissimus.*"

1727. October 27, and following; "several shocks of an earthquake."

— Nov. 7. "Fast at Dorchester on account of the earthquake."

— — 14. "Rev. Samuel Danforth of Taunton deceased to the public loss."

— — 15. "Rev. Mr. Dunbar ordained at Stoughton."

— Dec. 17. "Mr. Thacher of Milton died, aged 77."

1728, 9. Feb. 16. "Mr. Ebenezer Clap and Mr. Philips Payson chosen to go to Taunton with the ordained officers of the church to the ordination of Mr. Thomas Clap on the 26th inst."

— July. "Rev. John Williams of Deerfield, Rev. Mr. Blowers of Beverly, and the Rev. Mr. Cotton of Bristol, are lately deceased to the great loss of our churches."

### Notices of Pious Indians.

[Referred to in page 192.]

"Waban was the first that received the gospel. Our first meeting was at his house. The next time we met he had gathered a great company of his friends to hear the word,

\* Died May 7, 1744, aged 42.

word, in the which he hath been stedfast. When we framed ourselves in order in way of government, he was chosen a ruler of fifty. He hath approved himself to be a good christian in church order and in civil order; and a zealous, faithful, and stedfast ruler to his death."

"Piambohous. He was the second man next Waban that received the gospel. He brought with him to the second meeting at Waban's house many. When we formed them into government, he was chosen ruler of ten. When the church at *Hassenemassit* was gathered, he was called to be a ruler in it; when that was scattered by the war, they came back to *Natick* church so many as survived; and at *Natick* he died."

"Old Jacob. He was among the first that prayed to God. He had so good a memory that he could rehearse the whole catechize, both questions and answers. When he gave thanks at meat, he would sometimes only say the Lord's prayer."

"Antony. He was among the first that prayed to God. He was studious to read the scriptures and his catechize, so that he learned to be a teacher. But after the wars he became a lover of strong drink; was often admonished; and finally cast out from being a teacher."

He was exceedingly penitent at his death.

"Nehemiah. This hopeful young man was going out to hunt, with a companion who fell out with him, and stabbed him mortally and killed him. The wicked murderer fled."

"John Owussumug, sen. He was a young man when they began to pray to God. He did not at the present join with them. He would say to me, *I will first see to it, and when I understand it I will answer you.* He did after awhile enter into the civil covenant, but was not entered into church covenant before he died. He was propounded to join to the church, but was delayed, he being of a quick passionate temper. Some litigations prolonged it till his sickness; but had he recovered the church was satisfied to have received him by finishing well."

He was sick and in a great pain a whole year before his death.

"John Speen. He was among the first that prayed to God.

God. He was a diligent reader. He became a teacher, and carried well for divers years, until the sin of strong drink did infect us, and then he was so far infected with it that he was deservedly laid aside from teaching."

"Black James. He was in former times reputed by the English to be a *Pawaw*, but I cannot tell this. I know he renounced and repented of all his former ways, and desired to come to Christ and pray to God, and died well."

NOTES ON COMPTON, A TOWNSHIP IN NEWPORT COUNTY, STATE OF RHODE-ISLAND. SEPTEMBER, 1803.

*Situation. Boundaries.*

COMPTON is situated in north latitude  $41^{\circ}. 29'$ . west longitude from Greenwich  $71^{\circ}. 11'$ . It is bounded north by Tiverton; east by Westport (Mass.); south by the Atlantick ocean; and west by Taunton river, which is sometimes called the east part of Nantasket bay. This river separates Compton from Rhode-Island. It is seventy miles south from Boston; thirty miles south-east from Providence; and six miles east of Newport. The Indian name of the place is Seakonnet, Sagkonate, or Sogkonate. Sogkonate is the name which is used by Church in his history of Philip's war. Whence it assumed its present name is uncertain. It was incorporated Little Compton; but as there is no place of a similar name in America, if in the whole world, the term "Little" has of late been properly dropped, as a useless and cumbersome epithet.

*Ponds.*

There are four ponds in the place, which are called Quicksand, Tunipis or Tunipus, Long pond, and Round pond. The two first lie on the east part of the town; the two last near Sogkonate point. Quicksand is a mile long, fifty rods wide in the middle, from four to six feet deep, is fed by small brooks, and contains fish. Tunipis is fifty rods long, perhaps a mile in circuit, and has no fish. Long pond is nearly drained at the expense of sixty dollars, and has made forty acres of land worth one hundred dollars

lars an acre. Round pond is too inconsiderable to be described.

*Trees. Grass.*

Among the trees, which here seem to be indigenous, are the white, black, and red oak; maple; beech; hiccory; willow; poplar; and balm of Gilead.

On the upland and meadows grow burdens grass, ribwort, white weed, red top, clover, and herds grass.

*Soil. Produce.*

The soil of this township is superiour to that of the generality of land in the state. It is a mixture of clay and gravel at bottom, and the loam on the surface is blackish, heavy, and prolifick. It is well fitted to hold water and manure; sustains a drought unusually long; but when throughly dry, requires copious rains to supply it with water.

Indian corn is here better, than what commonly grows in Massachusetts. An acre often produces more than forty bushels. The common produce of the country is the produce of Compton. Flax, potatoes, oats, hay, butter, cheese, beef, pork, poultry, and barley, are produced in plenty. Not much rye is raised, on account of its being so frequently blasted. But barley is cultivated with great success. Ten thousand bushels are said to be annually exported.

*Mode of thrashing.*

There is a mode of thrashing barley practised here, which is uncommon, if not utterly new, in some parts of the country. When a barley heap is to be thrashed, previous care is taken to have it placed on a hard and level plat. A quantity of barley in the sheaf is then laid in a circular train to be trampled upon by horses. Sometimes three or four horses are ridden round upon the barley by boys; at other times a man stands in the centre of the circle, and with the reins in one hand, and a whip in the other, drives two or three pairs of young horses round upon the barley; whilst another person is employed with a rake to turn the barley, and expose it properly to the action of the horses' feet. When the grain of one layer is  
thus

thus throughly beaten from the straw, the latter is raked into an heap without the circle, and the former into an heap within. Another layer of barley forms a new sheet for the horses, and the driver on the heap of grain recommences the operation of driving them round. This manner of thrashing has been practised in this town four or five years, and succeeds so well, as to render the flail almost useless. In this way the grain is both effectually separated from the straw, and separated more expeditiously and cheaply than by the method ordinarily used in Massachusetts. Two men and six horses will thrash an hundred bushels of barley in one day.

#### *Stone Wall.*

The farmers here are particularly careful to fence their enclosures with stone wall, which is the only fence used. From the settlement of the place, it has been distinguished in this respect. Thomas Church, Esq. a representative of the town, when Compton was part of Massachusetts, told his fellow representatives, who were conversing on the agricultural improvements of the country, that there was stone wall enough in Compton to reach thence in a straight line to Boston. But they considered him as speaking in round numbers, and began to be somewhat merry with the 'squire, likening his account to stories, which any body might innocently tell, but which nobody would fully believe. Mr. Church returned home, and, in company with some of his calculating neighbours, made a pretty accurate estimate of the quantity of their stone wall. On again meeting his associates, at the next session of the General Court, he told them he had indeed committed an error concerning the stone wall; for he found on examination that there was enough to reach to Boston *on both sides of the way*. The Indians, who were formerly numerous in the town, and who were remarkable for the excellence of their stone wall, were much employed in this kind of labour. When they failed of fulfilling their contract with their employers, they were flagellated.

#### *Manure. Price of Labour.*

The farmers are now in the practice of gathering large quantities of sea weed on the shore for the purpose of

manure. Sometimes it is used alone, but more commonly mixed with the dunghills of the barn yard; and after fermenting there a season the compost is carted on to the grounds. This sea weed was formerly of no account.

The price of labour varies in the different seasons of the year. A common labourer has from fifty to eighty cents a day, and from ten to twelve dollars a month.

#### Windmills.

Windmills may be seen on almost every eminence in this part of the country; and in some instances they make a ragged and grotesque appearance. From the want of uniformity in their mechanism, it should seem, that the best principles of constructing these machines, so useful to agriculture and domestick convenience, are not yet settled.

#### Natural History.

Among the birds usually observed in this place are the robin red-breast, sparrow (*fringilla domestica*, L.) woodpecker (*picus eryocephalus*), yellow-bird (*emberiza citrinella*), Bob o' Lincoln, blue-bird (*motacilla sialis*), quail (*tetrao coturnix*), lark (*arvensis*), night-hawk, whip-poor-will, martin (*hirundico urbica*), house-swallow, wren (*motacilla troglodytes*), humming-bird, cat-bird, tame goose, duck, &c.

Of beasts there are here such as are common to New-England.

The fishes which are taken in the ponds, and among the rocks along the sea-shore are called the sheepshead, sea-bass, tautog, blue fish, cod, mackerel, squeterg, grunTERS, hat-fish, frost-fish or smelts, and eels.

Serpents, frogs, toads, and the common snake, (*coluber natrix*, L.) are found in the place; but no vipers nor rattlesnakes. The old Indians were used to say, that if the rattlesnakes should come from Tiverton woods, where they are numerous, *the pismires would eat their eyes out*. Rattlesnakes, formerly, were much dreaded in the vicinity of Tiverton; and their bite was more terrible to Church's men, in the war with Philip, than the arrows of the Indians.\*

Concerning the insects of this region there is nothing peculiar. The husbandman is here sometimes infested with

\* See Church's Hist. p. 16.



with earth worms, which are greatly injurious. The *white worm*, as it is called, has lately made its appearance, and is destructive of the corn and grass. But this worm is by no means so great a plague as the *gray worm*, perhaps the *palmer worm*, which visited this town about thirty-three years ago. These worms, which never before nor since were known in the place, were then so numerous, that a man could not set his foot on any part of his farm without treading upon eight or ten. Whole fields of barley fell before them; and after finishing their depredations, they gathered themselves in cart loads by the sides of stone walls, to die; as though, after blasting by their life the hope of the farmer with regard to his grain, they were determined by their death, to render the air unfit for respiration.

#### *Roads.*

The roads are laid out wide and straight; but they are not yet formed. A laudable practice obtains here of planting trees beside the road within the enclosures. They are at once useful and ornamental. The poorer class of people however are in a bad habit of filching part of the road, and fencing it in for the purpose of improvement. This practice not only spoils the beauty of the road in the daytime, but endangers the traveller by night. In some cases he is quite diverted from the straight course, and obliged to find his way along by the side of the wall.

#### *Houses. Inhabitants.*

There are in Compton about two hundred houses, which contain, perhaps, sixteen hundred persons. Their style of building, like that of their dress and tables is humble and unadorned. They are hospitable to strangers, and friendly in their intercourse with each other; but seem carefully to avoid every thing like extravagance in living and refinement in manners.

#### *Health. Longevity.*

The most common disorders are of the inflammatory kind. In the spring of the year pleurisies are sometimes prevalent. But on the whole, Compton is thought remarkable for the health and longevity of its inhabitants.

Probably

Probably one out of five of all the inhabitants, who have been born in the place, have lived to the age of seventy years. Fifty persons now living in the town have reached that period. A man and his wife, by the name of Wildboar, had nine children, who all lived to be above seventy. Many have lived to be between ninety and a hundred; but none has exceeded the last mentioned number.

#### *Indians.*

Many of the subjects of Awashonks, squaw sachem of the Sogkonate Indians, of whom the soil was originally purchased, continued inhabitants of the place, and lived in habits of amity with the English settlers for many years. At the commencement of the last century, these people were so numerous in the town, that they were in the practice of assembling together for religious worship, and formed a decent congregation. They had a meeting-house of their own, in which Rev. Mr. Billings instructed them once a month, on the Lord's-day. Their stated preacher was John Simon, one of their brethren; a man of strong mind; prevailingly temperate, but occasionally devious; whose object was the welfare of the Indians, and who thought it right to use cunning in obtaining it. So influential was this Indian preacher in maintaining order in his flock, that he was made a justice of the peace. Accordingly when the Indians were in fault, John was associated with the English justice to do away wrongs. It happened on a time that some Indians were delinquent. Col. Almy and John were judges in the case. After examination was had, said the former to the latter, concerning one and another of those in default, "how many stripes shall these Indians receive? I think they should receive *eight* or *ten* stripes." "No," said John, "*four* or *five* are enow: poor Indians are ignoraut, and it is not christian-like to punish so hardly those who are ignorant, as those who have knowledge." So John's opinion prevailed. But John's squaw was among the delinquents. "Well," said justice Almy, "what shall *she* receive?" "Double," replied John, "because she had knowledge to have done better." Col. A. however, knowing that John loved his wife, and thinking to do him a favour, had her punishment

ment wholly remitted. John was silent upon this subject whilst the offenders were present, but assigned another time and place, where he met Col. A. and severely remonstrated against his unjust sentence in favour of the squaw, saying, "To what purpose, Col. A. do we preach a religion of justice, if we do unrighteousness in judgment? Here, you have given stripes to such as were less guilty than my wife, but to her you have given none." The Colonel so poignantly felt the reproof, as most cordially to wish that the squaw had been flagellated.

About fifty years since a most destructive fever carried its ravages among the Indians in this quarter. From that time they have been rapidly wasting. There are now not more than ten Indians in the town.

#### *Ecclesiastical Affairs.*

There are here two religious sects only, Congregationalists and Quakers. The latter are not numerous. They have however a meeting-house, in which they assemble on Sundays and Wednesdays. There are a few persons who pretend to be a sort of Quakers, but who in fact are nothingarians. Among the lower ranks of society in this region marks of disaffection to religious and political institutions are often witnessed. The Congregational church was the original religious society. When the town was incorporated, a right of land was granted to the exclusive use of the ministry. This right was a thirty-second part of the whole town. Notwithstanding the appropriation, part of it by some means early got into the hands of the town, now remains there, and, from the circumstance of its alienation, is called Pilershire. Two hundred and thirty acres of land, worth nearly ten thousand dollars, continue successfully to answer the purpose of the primitive grant.

Nov. 1, 1700. Rev. Peter Thacher and Rev. John Danforth visited the town, preached to the people, and baptized sixty-five children.

Nov. 1, 1704. William Pabodie and Thomas Gray wrote to the above named gentlemen with others, who, on the 29th of the same month, came and ordained Rev. Richard Billings pastor of the church. Ten other members signed the church covenant. Mr. Billings was a native

tive of Dorchester, (Mass.) and a graduate of Harvard College in 1698. He was a facetious companion, spent much of his time among his parishioners, and, being fond of medical studies, ministered to their bodily as well as spiritual health.

Rev. Jonathan Ellis, formerly minister of Monument Ponds, Plymouth, was the successor of Mr. B. But of his settlement and death, and of Mr. Billings' death, the records of the church are silent.

Between the death of Mr. Billings and the installation of Mr. Ellis there was a division of sentiment in the parish, which opened way for the introduction of a Mr. Brown, called Domine Brown. He was reputed weak by his enemies, by his friends witty, and by all eccentric. He preached half the day on Lord's-days with Mr. Ellis for some time; but they differed so widely in theological opinions, that the adherents of both thought it expedient for them to preach in two houses. Mr. B. unregretted went hence to Boston, and finally died in the alms-house of that town.

Rev. Mase Shepard, a native of Norton, Mass. and graduate of Dartmouth College, succeeds Mr. Ellis in the pastoral office, and by his zeal for godliness and order enjoys the regards of his christian friends. *m n*

BIOGRAPHICAL MEMOIR OF WILLIAM FISK, ESQ. FELLOW OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY. BY HON. JAMES WINTHROP, ESQ.

OUR late worthy associate, William Fisk, Esq. was the son of Mr. Samuel Fisk, a worthy farmer of Waltham. He was, as far as I have been able to ascertain, born at Waltham in December, 1753. As he was designed for the university, he was at a proper age placed under the tuition of the late Rev. Mr. Woodward of Weston, who was at the time much esteemed not only for his professional, but for his classical learning. In July, 1768, Mr. Fisk was admitted at the university, and after four years of exemplary conduct and studious application obtained the honours of that society in 1772. He afterward applied

plied to the study of the law, and settled in the practice of that profession in his native town. His integrity and uniform virtue gave him an handsome support, and secured the confidence of those who knew him; and his social qualities and sportive fancy enlivened his conversation and endeared him to his friends. His love of learning made him active in establishing a town library. He was twice married, and by both wives became the parent of nine children, one of whom is now at the university, and it is hoped will rival the virtues and good qualities of his father. As a member of this literary society his attention to the antiquities of this country was unremitting, and his industry persevering. His belief in christianity produced uniform benevolence and candour to others; and even in politicks, though he was steady to his first attachment, he never considered it necessary to sacrifice the charities of private friendship to his attachment to party. He was inclined to corpulency, which induced him to use a great deal of exercise, and by this means perhaps he preserved his health in a less interrupted measure, than is usual for studious men. About a year before his death he found his health decreasing, but not in such a degree as to be alarming, or to interrupt his usual employments. On the 12th of August, 1803, he spent the evening abroad. Soon after his return to his house he was seized with a violent pain in his stomach. An illness of only five or six hours terminated his life.

*m n*

---

THE HISTORY OF THE PENOBSCOTT INDIANS. BY HON.  
JAMES SULLIVAN, ESQ. LL.D.

**T**HE Penobscott river collects its waters from a number of small lakes and ponds, remote from each other; but none of them at a great distance from the sea. The middle, which is the main branch, comes from two or three small ponds, which form a confluence of their streams not far south of the southerly branch of the river St. John, which empties its waters into the bay of Fundy, nearly two hundred miles north-easterly of the mouth of the Penobscott. This branch of the St. John, proceeding from a source found far to the west of the middle branch  
of

of Penobscott river, runs on a north-east course, washing the foot of the highest ground between the Atlantick and the St. Lawrence. The eastern branch of the Penobscott collects its waters from a chain of small ponds, situate north-easterly from its confluence with the main branch, and near to the western branch of the Passamaquoddy, which forms a part of the boundary between the United States and the British province of New-Brunswick, and runs into the bay of Fundy sixty miles south of the St. John. This branch of the Penobscott is called the Passadumky. The other branch of the Penobscott, called the Piscataonis, has its source near the east side of the river Kennebeck, and runs, in general, a north-east course about thirty miles, to its confluence with the other branches, which unite in one great river.

The Penobscott is navigable only for the length of forty miles from the sea. Vessels of the largest size may float freely, and without danger, on the tide of it, to the foot of the great fall which checks the inflowings of the ocean. The waters of this river are lost in the sea, among a number of respectable and fertile islands, situate between the 44th and 45th degrees of north latitude. This part of the great receptacle bears the name of Penobscott bay.

Wherever the means of subsistence, according to the various manners of different nations, can be most easily obtained, there the distinct tribes of men are seen to collect themselves together. The savages, who were found in the northen part of our continent, were more numerously settled on the banks of great rivers, where their wants were, in a great part, supplied by the abundance of fish which those streams produce. Whatever names they had among themselves to distinguish their tribes by, they were distinguished, by the first European adventurers, by the names of the rivers, or waters, on the banks of which they resided. The tribe, found on the Penobscott river, was always known to the English by the denomination of the Penobscott Indians.

There were various tribes within what is now the District of Maine, but none of them exist at the present day, besides the Penobscott Indians, and a small tribe of about one hundred and thirty persons, who live on the  
bank

bank of the Passamaquoddy river, from which they have their name. These being on the line which separates the United States from the province of New-Brunswick, reside in the summer within that province, remote from the sea, and employ themselves in hunting and taking small fish; but in the winter reside on the shores of the river near the sea, and within the state of Massachusetts, where they lead a beggarly, wretched life; feeding on clams and other shell-fish, enduring the most severe distresses of hunger and cold, until the slow returning spring opens with reluctance their path to the wilderness.

There was a principal tribe on the Kennebeck, called the Norridgewocks. This tribe was found under the guidance of Kenebis their chief, after whom the English called the river where they found him. Those Indians were always at war with the white people when those of Penobscott were; but were less openly hostile after the year 1724, when Moulton and Harmon subdued their fortification, and killed many of them, among whom one Ralle, a French priest, who had for a number of years resided with them, stimulating them to hostilities against the New-England people, was slain to the great joy and exultation of the people of Massachusetts.

That tribe afterwards affected to preserve a neutrality in the time of Indian wars; but Norridgewock served as a resting place for the Canada Indians, it being conveniently situated about half way between the sea and the high lands; and one third of the way from the mouth of the Kennebeck to the Canada settlements. It also furnished those hostile savages, who came on expeditions from Canada, with guides and intelligence necessary to the success of their enterprises. Exasperated at this, a number of young men fell upon a party of them in the spring of the year 1749, after the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, killed one and wounded several others. They were apprehended, all but one who escaped, by a warrant of justice Denny, who lived in Georgetown, but the publick opinion was so strong against the Indians, that the grand jury could not be induced to find a bill of indictment; the court then sat at York, the whole of the district of Maine, which is now greater in extent as to territory than all  
New-England

New-England besides, being in one county, called the county of York. The government however made presents to the relations of the deceased, and compensations to the wounded, with an intent to purchase off that insatiable revenge, which the savages always maintain after an injury of this kind.

It appears by the records of the governour and council, that some linen, a brass pail, a blanket, a variety of ornaments, and some money, were presented to the widow; and blankets, ornaments, and money, as well to the relations of the deceased, as to those who had been wounded. There was, soon after this, a treaty, which put an end to this tribe, as will be hereafter noticed.

There was one tribe called the *Wewenocks*, who inhabited at a place called Winnegance, at Montsweag, and Sheepscutt river; but they are now extinct. Further westward were the Androscoggins or Anasaguntacooks on Brunswick river; the Presumscott tribe, the Casco Indians, and the Pigwachuset tribe on Saco river. As branches of these, a few families were scattered on small streams on the Ossipee and other rivers. On what is now known by the name of Piscatawa river, there were a number of small tribes, known by the denominations of the *Piscataquas*, the *Newichawanocks*, &c., but the general name of all these tribes and families, was that of the *Abenagues*. All these are now exterminated, and the Penobscott tribe, consisting, as they were numbered, though by no publick order, in October, 1803, of three hundred and forty-seven souls, are the only native savages, which have lived unmixed with the white people and negroes, preserving the savage aboriginal manners of life, within the commonwealth of Massachusetts. The French adventurers were the first civilized people who settled on Penobscott; they called it Pentaguetville. The adventurers to Plymouth built a trading house there in 1626, and called the river *Penobscott*. The Indian name was *Penobscook*, or *Penobseag*.

The manners of the Penobscott Indians were similar to those of other tribes, found in the wilderness of that part of America, now composing the four northern states of our nation. The precise and gradual progress of any part of the human race, from a state of savage barbarity, where the



the use of iron, or the possession of flocks and herds were unknown, to a state of civilization, has never been marked by the eye of philosophy, or described by the pen of the historian. It is said, that the states of Greece were in so rude a situation, as to their manners and improvements, that they were ignorant of agriculture, of the use of bread, and of that of animal food; and that they fed altogether on herbs. This is rather a conclusion in argument, than a fact asserted by authority; and is made, as a deduction from this one fact, that they decreed divine honours to the person who taught them to feed on acorns. They did not arrive at any considerable degree of urbanity, until long after this, when the colonies from Egypt and Phœnicia taught them navigation, literature, commerce, and agriculture.\* These states finally arrived to such a pitch of politeness and literature, as to consider all other nations as barbarians. But the manner in which the Egyptians and Phœnicians planted and cultivated the arts among them; in what manner, or by what means they were improved, does not appear.

If those colonies subdued the country and made the aboriginals slaves, and thus compelled them to relinquish, as a body, their state of barbarism; and in the course of succeeding generations, changed the habits and propensities of their animal nature, it was a method which has never been tried upon the savages in America. If example, opportunity to be instructed, the love of wealth, the pride of power, the ambition of scientifick superiority, could move the heart of an American savage, there would long ago have been some marks of progress to a state of urbanity among them. As the country has been cultivated, those tribes, which lived near the Atlantick, have been wasted by intemperance and disease, or have gone back into the Canadas, where other nations have received them. There has been something in the conduct of the Penobscott Indians, which has denied to them the brotherly love of those of the more interiour parts of the country, and prevented their emigration. This will be mentioned in the sequel; and their decrease of numbers will be charged

---

\* Pelagius and Herod, as quoted by Rollin.

ged altogether on their intemperance and want of urbanity. There remains no other tribe of aborigines in the New-England states but this one, which yet subsist merely as savages.

The inquiry into the origin of the Penobscott savages would be as fruitless as the general inquiry into the origin of the savages on our continent, in general, has been. Whether they were originally Jews, Canaanites, Carthaginians, Phœnicians, Greeks, or Scythians, remains far beyond all the researches of which we are capable. There were no domestick animals found in America, nor any traits of character, any art or science, by which the affinity of the people there, could be traced with certainty, to any country or nation on the globe.

The immense regions of our continent, from Baffin's Bay on the north, to the Streights of Magellan on the south, were filled with inhabitants. Nor were the different situations of the various tribes and nations confined to the shores of the Atlantick, but extended over to the Southern Ocean on the west.

In all this vast extent of country, possessed by men composing various nations and tribes, there was no other dissimilarity of manners, than what was naturally produced by the difference of soil and climate. There has been nothing resembling this in any other part of the world. In Europe, a small local alteration would of course present a very different nation of men. The Germans were found by Julius Cæsar divided into various nations, each under a regular form of government, and with forms of government very unlike to each other. Some were complete despotisms, with the power of rule vested in one man, without limits or restrictions; others had an aristocracy, a nobility by whom the kings were elected; and in others the king or leader was chosen by the people at large. The origin of these nations could be traced to Gaul; they had herds and flocks, they raised barley and wheat, and fermented the juice of the grape to a spirit. Their food, as Tacitus informs us, was of the simplest kind, wild apples, coagulated milk, and the food of animals lately killed. Julius Cæsar mentions that they distilled a spirit from mares' milk, with which they were used to intoxicate themselves.

themselves. The savages of America raised a grain, now known by the appellation of Indian corn; they fed on fish, on the flesh of animals recently killed, or preserved by smoke, on acorns, ground roots, and herbs. They were ignorant of the art of procuring from milk, or vegetables, a fermented liquor, nor had they any other kind of intoxication than what arose from the use of tobacco smoaked in a stone pipe. This narcotick weed was the only repast which they took to regale themselves with.

The more northern tribes of the Germans had no houses or fixed habitations, but wandered from place to place with their herds. The aborigines of our country had permanent places of residence; and in the northern hemisphere, though their houses were formed only of bark, covering rafters laid on crotched sticks, stuck into the ground, yet these were their homes whereto they resorted, when their hunting and fishing seasons were over. These habitations were near to each other, forming small towns or villages: for, having no flocks or herds, they wanted but little extent of territory. That which was designated for raising corn, was parcelled out by the tribe to an individual for life, and reverted on his death. This principle bears a striking resemblance to one in the feudal system of Europe, which was the origin of a sum of money being paid by the tenant in *capite* to the lord of the manor for relief on the death of the tenant's ancestor.

Every nation of Germany avowed the right of slavery, and had numerous slaves; these were persons taken as prisoners in their wars on each other, or on more southern nations, and of children proceeding from their captured enemies. Our American Indians, in the northern part of our continent, made no wars on each other, that we know of; nor were there any slaves found amongst them. Yet they had chiefs and leaders, were in the habit of holding, and of being governed by the result of, councils, and when they had learned to make war with their European visitors, they claimed their captives as their property, and would never restore them but on ransom. Even when the French nation had agreed, in a treaty of peace, that captives should be restored, they were obliged to purchase them.

The

The natives of South-America, found there by the Spaniards, were somewhat nearer to a state, resembling a state of civilization, than the Indians in the more northern part of the continent were. Their houses, though reared without the use of iron, were, in some degree, elegant and commodious. The city of Mexico, the palaces of the king, the houses of persons of distinction, and the temples of their gods, had a considerable degree of magnificence in their appearance and structure: nothing of that kind was seen among the towns or habitations of our northern tribes. Gold and copper were found in the cliffs of the rocks there: in what is now New-England, the savages were as much unacquainted with these, as with iron. There, Montezuma, the chief, was attended with pomp and parade: the heads of the tribes had no other mark of distinction here, than the right to precede in, and govern the march, and to be heard with silent and sullen respect when they spoke. The southern hemisphere seemed to be divided into two great empires, formed and maintained by the coalition of various tribes: in the northern part of the continent there was no federation, or league among the tribes, but each was independent of the other. The people on all parts of the continent were strangers to labour and industry, unacquainted with the arts, and those of the northward had no other ideas of property, than what resulted from a usufructuary possession, of lands, or moveable goods. However they might appear to differ in some unimportant circumstances, yet their manners in general were so extremely rude, that the denomination of savages was justly applied to them all.

The tribes in the northern regions were temperate, because they had not the means of intoxication, before they were taught the practice of inebriety by the Europeans; now there are but a very few exceptions indeed to a most inordinate love of fermented liquors and ardent spirits among them. There is, once in a while, seen one or perhaps more who drink only water, but there is no instance where one indulges beyond that restriction without becoming a drunkard. When they are intoxicated they appear to be the most rude, wild, and ferocious animal that draws the breath of life.

The

The complexion of the American natives is nearly the same every where, with but very little allowance for the effect of climate. One universal languor of nerves, as to manual labour, and one common habit of laziness, seems to have spread itself over all the nations of this new world. Where the waters produce fish to satiate their hunger, and a very little food is required for that purpose, there they lie in a torpid, inactive state; but where they are urged to live in the forests, and depend upon hunting for subsistence, they appear to be more alert and active. It then follows of consequence, that the northern Indians, who are debarred by the ice a great part of the year from obtaining their food from the sea, the lakes, the rivers and brooks, are more robust and active than those in warmer climates. Yet where the soil and season will allow of agriculture in their rude manner, the uncertainty of a maintenance from the chase has urged them to the raising of corn or maize and pumpkins to alleviate the disagreeable sensation of hunger.

The people of South-America had cultivated the arts of war, and their distinctions of a nobility, &c. undoubtedly arose in that way. They paid honours to, and respected their heroes, but we have no history nor tradition of wars among our northern nations. The association of men into different clans or tribes seems to form separate interests and to lay the foundation for wars; but the northern part of our country, being thinly inhabited, there could be no contest for soil for the sake of agriculture; and the forests, held in common for no other use than that of hunting, were extensive enough for all; we therefore may reasonably conclude, that if our Indians had wars, they were temporary conflicts resulting from resentment or revenge, and not of much consequence.

The savages of North-America appear to have arrived at the highest perfection of stature, strength, and agility, between the 40th and 60th degrees of latitude. It is observed by Robertson and other writers, that there were never found any dwarfs or deformed persons among the savages. The precarious mode of procuring a subsistence might, in the more southern climates, lead parents to neglect their weak and deformed offspring; but though  
those

those writers do not pay much attention to the idea, yet it requires the highest degree of refinement in urbanity of manners to lay a foundation for the support of the aged, the infirm, the weak and the helpless, the widow and the orphan. To do this, there must be an habitual religious sense of the obligation to social duty, or the strong effects of refined publick opinion. There must be, likewise, funds and regular provision made for the helpless and poor. Among a people, where there is no accumulation of superfluous wealth; where a mere subsistence is the only end in view; and where a state of infirmity, weakness, or helpless decrepitude is so wretched and hopeless, there seems to be no inducement to rear any children, who are not apparently capable of procuring their own subsistence when they shall arrive to adult age. Indeed, it may be easily conceived, that among savages, where the ideas of a future state are but faint and glimmering, and the doctrine of future rewards and punishments hardly conceived of, there could be but a small inducement, in either parents or communities, to raise up subjects for an helpless state of dependence and wretchedness.

In the south, the vehemence of desire, and the ardour of the propensities, were much less than among the Europeans. They were still less, further to the northward. There have been a great variety of opinions and conjectures, in regard to female chastity among those Indians; the truth, no doubt, is, that they are never urged by the warmth of their inclinations, on the one hand, nor deterred, from principles of virtue or feelings of delicacy, on the other; a reward, that would satisfy their hunger, or gratify their pride for gaudy ornaments, has never failed to overcome them. The husband, who regards, as the first source of his comfort and honour, the chastity of his wife, is quite capable of experiencing the anguish of jealousy; but he, who is indifferent to the passion of love, and has no just notions of the refined principles of virtue, and no respect to a well cultivated publick opinion, pays very little attention to the value of female chastity. We therefore find it to have been a practice with our savages, to yield their bed to a traveller, or visitor.

It has been observed, that the savages between the 30th and

and 60th degrees of northern latitude, were more perfectly formed than the others. Those on the north, in the Esquimeaux country, and in Greenland, are small, disproportioned, and miserable creatures. There they live on seals, the carcasses of whales, and other fish, killed by the ice, and laying in a putrid rotten state, and which is devoured without cookery. On the south, as near the line as the Brazils, they neither sow, plant, gather, nor reap; not even the cassada is cultivated for bread; but through a vast extent of country, they live on what the hand of nature spontaneously offers; a few fish, wild roots, wild berries, and herbs. These are a race of miserable, helpless animals, hardly bearing the form of man. But our Penobscott Indians were men of elegant stature and agreeable form; tall as the Europeans commonly are, and much better proportioned. In war, and hunting, full of strength, vigour, and agility. To this were added a competent degree of intelligence for savage life, a due proportion of courage, and the same kind of low address or cunning which has been found in all the American savages. They have a full share of pride; a morose domineering disposition in regard to their wives, who are in a state of abject servitude; a haughty contempt for all labour, for the arts, and every thing but the feats of war, the achievements of the chase, and the insuring of the scaly tribes. This observation may be well relied on, that the region where the Penobscott tribe was found, contained the *achme* of perfection in savage life.

It is not probable that the Indians in the eastern part of Massachusetts, that is, in what is now called the district of Maine, ever formed an idea of the appearance of an European, before a French party, under the command of monsieur De Mott, landed at Passamaquoddy in 1604. We have no history of them before that memorable period; nor have we any reason to suppose, that they conceived of any world beyond the horizon which terminated their sight on the ocean. When the French adventurers found them, they were filled with awe and terrour at the appearance of the ships, but more so at the grandeur, noise, and effects of gunpowder. Implements and weapons of war, formed of

of iron, could not fail to fill them with the greatest astonishment.

The Indians at the south part of the continent had a simple form of worship, composed of two principles only; ours had not perhaps one principle in theirs. They had an idea of a great Creator of the universe; and believed him to be a good and benevolent being. They found that evil existed in the world, and did not attempt to account for it on any other principle, than that of its being produced by a malevolent being, over whom the good being had no control: they therefore paid divine honours to both.

As the French settlements were soon abandoned, we have no accurate or interesting accounts of the natives, at or near Penobscott, until more than forty years after, when the baron Castine came there from France. He was a nobleman of distinction, a colonel of the king's body-guards, and a man of intrigue and enterprise. He found an alliance with the savages necessary, in order to break up the English settlements, which had been made at Plymouth, Boston, and along the shore entirely to Penobscott, under grants and patents from the British crown. To promote his interest, and gratify his lust, he married, and had living with him, six wives of the native Indians at one time. His place of residence, capital, or palace, was on the east side, and near the mouth, of the river Penobscott. He had several priests in his train, whose conduct, from their religious rites and unintelligible ceremonies, was calculated to captivate and deceive a barbarous people. He taught the Indians the use of fire arms; and thereby obviated the greatest restraint, and overthrew the greatest security the Europeans had against them. He began this project with, and through the Penobscott tribe, about the year 1661, and, by the year 1675, the time of king Philip's war, the knowledge of gunpowder and fire arms was universally extended among the northern savages. Emboldened by this, and encouraged by the French nation, the Indians began their hostilities, which were continued by the Penobscott tribe, with very few intervals, from the year 1676 until the year 1749, when they submitted by a final treaty, and became subjects of the government of Massachusetts-Bay.

When



When the baron Castine was alive, he was, with great propriety, considered as the most dangerous enemy which New-England had then seen; divers campaigns were made to capture him, but though his fortress at Penobscott was taken and plundered, he escaped to the wilderness. He lived to the year 1687, and then left a number of sons, relations by blood to the Penobscott tribe. Upon these, as well as on their ancestor, the government of Massachusetts-Bay offered a large premium for their capture, until the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, at which time their influence was at an end, and the tribe with its appendages gave over their disposition to war with the English colonies.

Since the revolution, the legislature of Massachusetts has been generous in calling one county Washington, and another Hancock, and in calling divers towns by the names of men who had deserved well of their country. This was raising a mausoleum without expense, and doing those characters great honour; but when we hear the shire town of the county of Hancock called *Castine*, after the name of the greatest enemy the country ever had, we cannot but consider the honour done to the other characters as greatly lessened, if not wholly done away; provided it was done under a full view of the true character of the baron Castine; but it is clear that it was not.

The reduction of Louisburg, in 1745, filled the eastern Indians with terrour. They began to conceive, that the New-England colonies were very powerful; and that the strength of France in America could not be relied on against Great-Britain. There did not appear to be any hostilities between the two nations after the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 1747, until 1753; and yet the Penobscott Indians, being not expressly included in the treaty, they did not appear to be in a state of peace with the English.

In September, 1749, lieutenant-governour Phips communicated to the council a letter from captain Bradbury, who commanded the fort near Penobscott, informing them that the Indians there were desirous to treat with the government, and be at peace with it. The council advised his Honour to treat with them on conditions that they would be at peace; and an armed vessel was sent to bring their chiefs to Falmouth, now Portland; and provision

was

was made for their subsistence. In that treaty there appeared delegates from various tribes or people, which the ostentation, usual in savage life, induced them to send as representatives. The Penobscott tribe had its delegates. The Norridgewocks, who had been subdued by Harmon and Moulton, in the year 1724, sent their delegates; and a tribe, called in that treaty the Wewenocks, were represented, together with the Anasaguntacooks; some of these were very probably the remains of the Wiscassett Indians, which had been wasted by sickness and war, and were scattered in divers small villages as before mentioned.

All the tribes in Massachusetts and in the district of Maine, who had not submitted to our government on the treaty of October, in the year 1749, excepting the Passamaquoddy nation, appeared to unite themselves with, and place themselves under, the Penobscott tribe. Yet, in order to create parade, exhibit their importance, and to obtain presents, they appeared to act as a number of separate nations, and each one sent its ambassadors or commissioners. As the treaty, then made, terminated the existence of all those savages, besides the Penobscotts, as independent tribes and nations, and brought the Penobscotts into subjection to the English government, the treaty has become an important document in this subject, and is therefore, with the governour's consequent proclamation, added to this essay.

*The Submission and Agreement of the Eastern Indians.*

WHEREAS a war has for some years past been made and carried on by the Indians of the tribes of Penobscott, Norridgewock, St. Francois, and other Indians, inhabiting within his majesty's territories of New-England, against the governments of the Massachusetts-Bay and New-Hampshire, contrary to several treaties heretofore solemnly entered into: And the said Indians being now sensible of the miseries and troubles they have involved themselves in, and being desirous to be restored to his majesty's grace and favour, and to live in peace with all his majesty's subjects; and that all former acts of injury may be forgotten.

We the underwritten being delegated and impowered to

to represent and act for and in behalf of the Indians aforesaid, have concluded to make, and do by these presents in their name make, our submission unto his most excellent majesty George the second, by the grace of God of Great-Britain, France, and Ireland, king, defender of the faith, &c. in as full and ample a manner as any of our predecessors have heretofore done.

And we do by these presents engage with Thomas Hutchinson, John Choate, Israel Williams, and James Otis, Esqrs. commissioned by the Honourable Spencer Phips, Esq: as he is lieutenant-governour and commander in chief of the province of the Massachusetts-Bay, and with the governours or commanders in chief of said province for the time being.

That is to say, in the name and behalf of the tribes and Indians aforesaid, we do promise and engage, that at all times forever, from and after the date of these presents, we and they will cease and forbear all acts of hostility, injuries, and discords towards all the subjects of the crown of Great-Britain, and not suffer the least hurt, violence, or molestation to them or any of them, in their persons or estates; but will henceforth hold and maintain a firm and constant amity with all the English; and will never confederate or combine with any other nation to their prejudice.

That all the captives taken in this war shall forthwith be restored, without any ransom or payment to be made for them or any of them. That his majesty's subjects, the English, shall and may peaceably and quietly enter upon, improve, and enjoy all and singular their rights of land, and former settlements, properties, and possessions within the eastern parts of the said province of Massachusetts-Bay, together with all islands, islets, shores, beaches and fishery within the same, without any molestation or claims by us or any other Indians, and be no ways interrupted or disturbed therein: Saving to the tribes of Indians within his majesty's province aforesaid, and their natural descendants respectively, all their lands, liberties, and properties, not by them conveyed, or sold to, or possessed by any of the English subjects as aforesaid; as also the privilege of fishery, hunting and fowling as formerly.

That all trade and commerce, which hereafter may be

allowed between the English and the Indians, shall be under such management and regulation as the government of the Massachusetts province shall direct.

If any controversy or difference at any time hereafter happen to arise between any of the English and Indians, for any real or supposed wrong or injury done on either side, no private revenge shall be taken for the same, but a proper application shall be made to his majesty's government upon the place, for remedy or redress thereof, in a due course of justice; we submitting ourselves to be ruled and governed by his majesty's laws, and desiring to have the benefit of the same.

We do further engage, that if any Indians shall at any time hereafter commit any act of hostility against the English, we will join our young men with the English in reducing such Indians to reason.

In the next place, we the underwritten do promise and engage with Theodore Atkinson and John Downing, Esqrs. commissioned by his Excellency Benning Wentworth, Esq. governour and commander in chief of his majesty's province of New-Hampshire, and with the governours and commanders in chief of said province for the time being, that we, and the Indians we represent and appear for, shall and will henceforth cease and forbear all acts of hostility, injuries, and discords, towards all the subjects of his majesty, king George, within the said province. And we do understand and take it, that the said government of New-Hampshire is also included and comprehended in all and every the articles aforegoing, excepting that respecting the regulation of the trade with us.

In testimony whereof we have signed these presents, and affixed our seals.

<i>Anasaguntacooks and Wewenocks.</i>	<i>Norridgewocks.</i>	<i>Penobscotts.</i>
Sawwaramet, (Seal)	Toxus, (Seal)	Eger Ennut, (Seal)
Ausado, (S.)	Cneas, (S.)	Maganumba, (S.)
Waaununga, (S.)	Magawonbee, (S.)	Nutumbout, (S.)
Sauguish, (S.)	Harry, (S.)	Esparagoosaret, (S.)
Warcedeen, (S.)	Soosephnia, (S.)	Nesnoon, (S.)
Wawawnunka, (S.)	Noktoonos, (S.)	
	Nesagumbuit, (S.)	
	Peereer, (S.)	

The counterpart was signed and sealed by the commissioners of the province; firmly engaging peace, and an uninterrupted enjoyment of the Indians in their lands; but the quantity or boundaries were not described. It does not appear why the St. Francois tribe was named, as they lived on or near the St. Lawrence, in what is now Lower Canada. They do not appear to have been named in the lieutenant-governour's proclamation, but to be excluded even in the general description of "other tribes inhabiting within his majesty's territories in New-England." Perhaps, however, as it was then contended that the province of New-Hampshire run over to the south sea or Western Ocean, that the St. Francois tribe fell within that province. New-York claimed the same extent westward; and both provinces swallowed up what now composes both the Canadas. There were no delegates present from the St. Francois tribe, nor is there any subscription to the treaty in their names.

The governour's proclamation, in ratification of the treaty, was as follows.

---

*By the Honourable Spencer Phips, Esq. Lieutenant-Governour and commander in chief in and over his Majesty's province of the Massachusetts-Bay in New-England.*

#### A PROCLAMATION.

WHEREAS, at the request of the Indians of the Penobscott, Norridgewalk, Anasaguntacook, Wewenock, and other tribes, inhabiting within his majesty's territories of New-England, who have lately been at war with this government, signified by their delegates to his Excellency William Shirley, Esq. captain-general of the said province, at Boston, in the month of June last, a treaty was begun and held at Falmouth in Casco bay, upon the 14th of October instant, between commissioners by me appointed and impowered for that purpose, and certain chiefs and other Indians for and in behalf of the said tribes; and upon the 16th following, articles of peace and friendship between this government and the said Indians were agreed upon, finally settled and concluded.

I have

I have therefore thought fit, with the advice of his majesty's council, to issue this proclamation, that all persons within this government may be duly informed of the peace concluded as aforesaid. And I do hereby strictly command and require all his majesty's good subjects to live in peace and amity with the Indians of the Penobscott, Norridgewalk, Anasaguntacook and Wewenock tribes, and the other Indian tribes within the territories aforesaid, who have lately been at war with this government, and not to commit any acts of violence or hostility against the said Indians, or give them any trouble or molestation; but on the contrary to afford them all necessary comfort and assistance as occasion may require; and his majesty's justices of the peace, and all other officers, in such places where the said Indians may resort, are hereby commanded to use their utmost endeavours that no wrong or injury be offered to the said Indians, and that the good laws of this province be strictly observed and maintained in all dealings and transactions with them.

Given at the council chamber in Boston, upon Friday, the 27th day of October, 1749, in the 23d year of the reign of our sovereign lord George the second, by the grace of God, of Great-Britain, France and Ireland, king, defender of the faith, &c.

S. PHIPS.

By order of the Honourable the lieutenant-governour, with the advice of the council.

J. WILLARD, *Sec'y.*

God save the King!

---

By the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, in the year 1747, the controversies, in regard to the boundaries between the English and French colonies, were left unsettled. The French were in possession of the vast extent of territory incircling the British colonies from the mouth of the St. Lawrence to the gulf of Mexico; and their evident object was, to swallow up the whole country, containing what was within the English dominions then, and what was within the United States at the time when the English American colonies asserted their independence in 1776.

In

In the year 1754, the war assumed a very serious aspect, and the French government, in order to stimulate the savages to cruel and merciless depredations, provided a large premium for the scalp of every Anglo-American which the Indians should produce. This species of cruelty was not retaliated by the English government upon the French inhabitants of Canada, but a bounty was offered of £.100 on the scalps of Indians. In the year 1755, James Cargill of Bristol, then in the county of York, now in the county of Lincoln, lately known as a member of the legislature in Massachusetts, by the appellation of Colonel Cargill, and who is now alive, produced two scalps of Indians, and demanded a bounty of £.100 for each. The money was not then paid, because there was a suspicion, that the savages killed by him were of the Penobscott tribe, subjects of the king of Great-Britain, and under the protection of the laws of the province of Massachusetts-Bay. He was apprehended upon the charge, and committed for trial in the year 1756. He was indicted and tried in the county of York for the crime of murder, in June, 1757. The charge against him, was the felonious killing and murdering of one Baterne, an Indian man, in the peace of God and the king, at a place called the Owl's Head, on the 2d day of July, 1755. There was evidence, that Baterne and another Indian man were missing from the Penobscott tribe; they were never afterwards heard of. There were other circumstances bearing more than a suspicion, that the persons killed were of that tribe. Had the evidence been ever so strong, it would have been almost impossible to have persuaded a jury to hang a white man, in those times, for killing an Indian. The trial was conceived of, as rather a conciliatory measure with the Penobscotts, than as a serious issue on a charge of murder. Cargill being acquitted of killing friendly Indians, received his bounty for the scalps of hostile savages. This good effect was, on the whole, produced; the imprisonment of Cargill and the solemnity of his trial exhibited such a faithful attention in the government to their treaty, that the Indians were secure, and there was no complaint of an injury made afterwards.

The appearances of war were again observed in the year

1753. The Indians of Canada were fixed on the side of the French nation, and in an hereditary hatred to the English. The war of 1675 had shewn them their advantage in the use of fire arms and other metallic weapons, and had consequently relieved them from that dread, which a sense of their inferiority in the art and means of war had oppressed them with. None of those, who were then alive, remembered a time, when the white people, inhabiting New-England, were the friends of the natives; hostilities had always been continued with but short intervals of peace between the Indians and English.

The Norridgewocks, and other eastern Indians, appeared to recede from their subjection confessed in the treaty. This was not done by any publick act, but by a personal perfidiousness, in which they all, excepting three families at Norridgewock, went off and joined themselves to the Canadians, in order to carry on a war with the English. The Norridgewocks, Anasaguntacooks and Wewenocks disdained the act of the treaty, while the Canadians viewed the Penobscotts as perfidious and false brethren; and disclaimed all connexion with them. It was now necessary to preserve the subjection of that nation, or to exterminate them; for such an auxiliary, so situated, would give such advantages to the enemy, as would inevitably enable them to destroy the whole eastern country. For the purpose of keeping them in subjection, two forts were garrisoned; one on Penobscott, and one on George's river. Supplies of every kind, but those of arms and ammunition, were offered to the Penobscott tribe, and presents were constantly made to them. This held them, at least as friends in appearance, throughout the whole war which terminated in the year 1763, but fixed them down in a state of alienation and enmity with the Canadians, who, from the treaty of 1749, have considered them as a lost tribe. In the year 1769, the writer of this essay was on the Kennebeck, and saw a number, perhaps three hundred, of a tribe of Canadians, called the St. Francois tribe, proceeding, after having closed their hunt for the season, to St. John's, to see a French priest, who would pardon their sins; but they would not even consent to visit the Penobscott tribe. They halted on Kennebeck, sold skins, and enjoyed a  
drunken



drunken frolick, reserving money to pay the priest; but though the Penobscott tribe was directly in their way to St. John's, they did not consider that territory as a place for their visit.

After the peace between the French and English, in 1763, Canada being ceded to the latter, the fear of Indian hostilities ceased in America, and the savages were no longer dreaded as enemies. There was, however, a fort kept up at Penobscott, and a store, commonly called a truck house, kept there to supply the savages with those things necessary to them in the manner of living they had acquired. The prices of the articles were fixed by the government, and a penalty annexed to all acts of fraud or oppression committed against them. This regulation ceased on the commencement of hostilities in the revolutionary war, and has never been renewed. Those Indians took no part in that war; but remained at peace with the American and English forces, as they alternately held the fort of Penobscott.

The country on the river has been settled, since the revolution, as high as the falls; and some towns above. The government has assigned a quantity of land, about nine miles square, and some way above the falls, on the west side of the river, for the Indians. There they now reside in a full preservation of their native habits and savage manner of life. Their habitations are wigwams, as they call them; the covering is of bark supported by pales, as rafters, laid on crotched sticks stuck in the ground. The fire, which warms some of them, is in front of the hut, others in the centre. They sit generally on skins of bears, or other animals, laid on the ground, and sleep upon beds of the same. Their clothes are generally blankets with trowsers; a short jacket, cloth stockings, and mogasons. They have generally hats or bonnets. There is some distinction between the dress of the men and women, which is the result of convenience from their different occupations. There is some distinction in the appearance of their ranks, which is generally effected by ornaments of very little expense, and very contemptible in the eye of more enlightened and civilized people. Their food consists of a very little Indian corn, pumpkins, squashes, &c. which they produce  
by

by the labour of their women, on light and easy land. The country is now too much settled to afford any considerable support from game. There never were any considerable flocks of deer on Penobscott river. The reindeer inhabit the country farther north, and the fallow deer incline more to the south. The moose, a monstrous large animal, has been plenty there in former days, but it is rare to see one at the present time. There are bears, some beaver, raccoons, musquashes, &c. What those people acquire by the labour of their women in the summer, and by the hunting done by the men, lays up but very scanty provision for their long and cold winters. The sturgeon, the salmon, and the great fish, the men will condescend to take, but they feel themselves above the taking of small fish: the catching of shad and alewives they make the business of their women and children. The alewives taken, and some of the salmon, they preserve by hanging them in the smoke, but seldom salt them, as the white people do. The men will beg, they seldom steal, but they scorn to labour; they will suffer hunger, nakedness, and poverty, rather than to work with their hands: of course, having nothing in store for a tedious winter, they stroll down on the banks of the sea, beg where they can obtain any thing by it; and make the seals, the eels, clams, oysters and such other things as the margin of the sea will offer to them, their subsistence in the last resort for winter.

The attempts to civilize these people have been attended with not much more success than those which have been made to christianize them. They say, that the religion of the Congregationalists is too simple for them; and they are in some measure attached to the Roman Catholic religion, on account of its being more ceremonious. Some of them are regular in the forms of devotion, repeating their prayers, and crossing themselves at morning and evening. They treat the Roman Catholic priests with great respect, and have children baptized. They have no doubt of the power of the priests to pardon their sins, and are cheerfully willing to pay, to the utmost of their ability, for so great and necessary an accommodation.

A few years more will lessen those people, so that they will

will not preserve the appearance of a nation or tribe. The lands about them are granted, and must be settled and cultivated in a short space of time, when, as they never will till the earth for a living, or condescend to agriculture, they will go away to the westward of the Mississippi, and seek an asylum among the nations of savages which have never heard of them.

How the nations of American savages found their way from the other continent to this, remains in the common field of conjecture, where every antiquarian has a right to rove as his imagination shall prompt him, and will, no doubt, forever remain there. The idea of coming across on ice, near the north end of our continent, carries with it but merely the colour of possibility. If they came to the south end, they must have arrived in vessels capacious enough to have brought domestick animals; but none were found here. They might however have been produced from a few voyagers, who in the day when the compass was unknown had been driven away, and wrecked, or landed on these shores: and not coming under an idea of a permanent migration, might come without those animals. The Author of men has created those animals in all other countries where man has been found, and we ought not to suppose, that if these men were formed originally here, those animals would not have been created here also.

Were we to reason from analogy, we should, perhaps, conclude that the original ancestors of those barbarous nations landed in the middle or southern part of our continent. The father of the human race was created in the eastern part of the globe, and the ark probably rested in that quarter, perhaps about the 30th degree of north latitude. Men like a rolling tide issued towards the north, the climate whereof finally produced a stout hardy race, which, like the wave returning, after the resistance made to it by the shore, over run and conquered the effeminacy of the more warm climates; why should we not suppose, that the progress of settlement, was from the south to the north on our continent?

The complexion of the Indians under the equator, and on the north, and south of it, is nearly the same. We are told by men, in whose researches the world has confidence, that

that the difference in complexion, between the Europeans and Africans, arises from a difference in the texture of the *mucous membrane*, or under skin; and that the *scarf skin*, or outer *cuticula* are exactly alike in both. Others say, and perhaps consistently enough with the other hypothesis, that the variation of colour is occasioned by the difference of climate. To reconcile this to that mode of reasoning which we are compelled to found on the basis of history, we are told, that although the heat of the torrid zone can make no sensible alteration from white towards black in one generation, yet in the course of revolving centuries, it may have had such an effect as ought to satisfy our inquiries. This has no tendency to give us satisfaction in our investigations upon the fact, that the savages in America are black men, while those on the same degree of latitude, on, and to the northward of the 20th, are white; or in the reflections on the fact, that while in Africa, on the south of the equator, the hair of the people's head, which, in animal life, is only an extension of the fibres, is fine, like the finest wool, that of the savages in South-America, in the same degree, is coarse, and stiff as that of those in the northern hemisphere. It may be justly added here, that there is no instance, where change of climate has changed those signs of native difference, or where the progeny of mankind have changed the complexion of their original stock towards a conformity to those where their ancestors have been removed to.

The world, and its inhabitants, are a mystery to all men; and each man is a mystery to himself. We know not why we are produced in the manner we are; we know nothing of the occasion of different species of animals, or of different kinds of plants; we know not why the seed produces the same tree, stalk, or vegetable from which it came; we have no knowledge of even the manner in which we are nourished by the food that satisfies our hunger, or why every kind of food produces, ultimately, the same chyle in the stomach.

This we know, that we exist, that we are not the cause of our own existence; that we have perceptive, and rational faculties; that we are possessed of the passions of hope and fear, and can suffer and can enjoy; that we have  
a natural

a natural aversion to annihilation, which aversion is common to the whole human race. We are capable of comprehending so much of the universe, as to convince us of the existence of a great first cause, from whom all proceeds. We are satisfied, that there must be one great cause who has produced the universe whereof we are but atoms, and of which the part we discover is merely the threshold. That he governs the whole, and delights in the happiness of his intelligent offspring. Should we attempt to form a history of our own race, our conjectures would be absurd and ridiculous in our own eye. On the history given by the Hebrew sage, we find, fitly engrafted, principles, sentiments, and precepts, intirely congenial to our rational ideas of comfort here, and happiness hereafter. "Men would be angels, angels would be gods; where we cannot unriddle, we must learn to trust." The history of our race, as given by Moses, and the system of religion seemingly to proceed from it, is not more mysterious to us, than every moment of our own existence is, and we had therefore better repose ourselves, with all our inquiries, in the arms of the great first cause, who is without beginning of days or end of years: whose being can never fail, whose wisdom can never err, whose power is infinite, and whose justice can never be corrupted.

---

#### POSTSCRIPT.

IN the year 1690, Sir William Phips conquered the country at and eastward of Penobscott. And on a treaty held with the Indians there, in 1693, by commissioners under the English crown, the Castine family submitted themselves as British subjects, which so effectually destroyed their influence with the savages, that they went away to Canada about the year 1704.

The Penobscott tribe have no forms of trial in civil or criminal cases; nor any forms or established rules of justice among them. It is very probable, that the advice of their old men compromises their controversies in regard to property, while their native strength avenges their personal insults. There never has been an instance, where any one of them has been a party to a suit, either civil or criminal,

criminal, in the courts of our government. If they have stolen, or injured any white person, he has gained his recompense in his own way. In other parts of the country the natives have been made amenable in courts of justice.

They know nothing of written contracts, excepting in treaties, and sale of lands; and they do not confide much in their verbal agreements with each other.

When the French people came to the St. Croix, in 1604, bigamy was found to be in practice among the natives, more especially among their chiefs; but it was soon after disused, perhaps from the precepts and prohibitions of the Catholick priests. The marriage covenant appears to be the most sacred with them; and divorce is not in practice: But they treat their wives as slaves; and in their paroxisms of drunkenness, appear to direct all their fury and revenge towards them. The women, at such times, are obliged to flee and conceal themselves until the intoxication of their husbands (or sanaps, as they call them) subsides.

They appear to be austere, but tender towards their children. They have no fixed time of age, when their children can act for themselves independent of, and without regard to an obedience to their parents. The time of their emancipation is progressive, as they gain ability to provide for themselves; like the wolf, which becomes independent of its mother as soon as it can gain prey for its own subsistence, so those young savages become independent as they acquire a capacity to provide for themselves. Yet they always treat their parents with a respectful veneration, and frequently provide for them when they become aged and infirm.

*m n*

LETTER FROM REV. T. ALDEN TO REV. DR. ELIOT, ON  
EARTHQUAKES.

*Portsmouth, (N. H.) 2d March, 1804.*

Reverend and dear Sir,

**T**HE following account, on presumption you have received no other, of several small earthquakes, which have happened since the 20th of November, 1799, the  
time

time of my settlement in this town, is respectfully presented to the Massachusetts Historical Society, by your humble servant,

TIMOTHY ALDEN, jun.

THE shock of an earthquake was felt at Hanover and other places in the western part of New-Hampshire, on Friday evening, the 19th of December, 1800.

There was another shock, at various places, in the interior of this state, as well as on our western boundary, the ensuing evening; but, in neither instance was any thing of the kind perceived in any of the towns near the Piscataqua.

The above statement is drawn principally from several newspapers.

At about half after three in the afternoon, on the sabbath, the first of March, 1801, we had an earthquake of considerable extent. The sound, which lasted about twenty, or possibly thirty seconds, appeared to come from the north-west. From its strength and rumbling nature, it could not easily be distinguished from the noise of a coach passing moderately over frozen ground. Some, who were in their houses, at first, thought that their chimnies were on fire and directly their windows began to clatter, as, in that case, they sometimes do. Scarcely any, however, by the time the noise ceased, doubted its real cause. A tremulous motion was perceptible in all parts of Portsmouth. It was more so, I believe, at the Episcopal church, which stands on a considerable eminence nigh the river, than at any of our churches. In the south church, this tremulous motion was noticed by people who were sitting, although it was not sufficient for me to perceive it, as I stood in the pulpit. At one house, standing on our highest land within the town plat, it threw down a waiter, which stood edgewise under a table. At another house, where the situation was much lower, the jar was great enough to strike a little bell, which was fixed in such a manner that the tongue rested on its side. In various instances, there was a gentle clattering on shelves of crockery ware. Cattle and fowls exhibited signs of fear, as is common in time of an earthquake. The shock was noticed on board of vessels in our harbour.

harbour. At Durham the people immediately retired from the house of worship.

According to the best information I have been able to gain, this earthquake pervaded the whole of New-Hampshire. It was perceived in Maine, as far as Kennebeck river, and how much farther, in that direction, I have never understood. It was observed in many towns north of Boston, in Massachusetts; but nothing of it, as I could ever learn, was heard in Connecticut, Rhode-Island, or the southern part of the bay state.

The sky was clear. The weather was uncommonly mild and pleasant with scarcely a breath of air.

Some people thought that, about two o'clock the following night, there was a repetition of the shock, but in a smaller degree.

Two earthquakes were perceived, at sundry places, in the vicinity of Kennebeck river, at about two o'clock in the morning, the 21st of February, 1802. These were sufficient to occasion a slight motion, perceptible to people, who were on their beds; but their local extent I have not ascertained. My informants, relative to these, are Joseph Wingate, Esq. who lives in Hallowell, and my brother, Martin Alden, who was then at Belgrade about a dozen miles west from the river.

#### HISTORICAL SCRAPS.

**T**HE Indian tribes, from Massachusetts to Canso, in 1690, were 4310 souls. In the year 1726, there were but 505: a loss of 3804 in thirty-six years.

In 1730, there was an Indian at the conference, St. George's fort, named Adamhegan, who was then, by the account given by the Indians, 115 years old.

*Of the word SCHOONER: A Communication from Cotton Tufts, Esq.*

Being at Gloucester, Sept. 8, 1790, I was informed (and committed the same to writing) that the kind of vessels, called *Schooners*, derived their name from this circumstance, viz. Mr. Andrew Robinson of that place having constructed a vessel which he masted and rigged in the same manner as *schooners* are at this day, on her going off the



the stocks and passing into the water, a bystander cried out, *Oh, how she scoons!* Robinson instantly replied, *A schooner let her be.* From which time, vessels thus masted and rigged have gone by the name of schooners; before which, vessels of this description were not known in Europe nor America.

This account was confirmed to me by a great number of persons in Gloucester. I made particular inquiry of an aged sea captain, who informed me that he had not, in any of his voyages to Europe or in America, seen any of those vessels prior to Robinson's construction.

---

BILL OF MORTALITY FOR MIDDLEBOROUGH IN THE YEARS  
1802 AND 1803. BY HON. I. THOMPSON.

*Middleborough, January 1st, A. D. 1804.*

Reverend Sir,

**A** GREEABLY to my promise I hereby inform you, that in the first precinct in Middleborough, which consists of between thirteen and fourteen hundred inhabitants, there died, in the year of our Lord 1802,

- 1 person over ninety years of age,
- 3 between eighty and ninety years of age,
- 2 between seventy and eighty years of age,
- 2 between fifty and seventy years of age,
- 3 between twenty and fifty years of age,
- and 8 under twenty years of age.

In all in that year there died 19.

And in the same precinct there died, in the year of our Lord 1803,

- 1 person over ninety years of age,
- 4 between eighty and ninety years of age,
- 2 between seventy and eighty years of age,
- 4 between fifty and seventy years of age,
- 4 between twenty and fifty years of age,
- and 16 under twenty years of age.

So the whole number that died the last year is 31.

I am, Sir, with esteem yours in sincerity,

ISAAC THOMPSON.

*To Rev. Dr. ELIOT, Corresponding Secretary to the Historical Society in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.*

## BILL OF MORTALITY, FOR PORTSMOUTH, NEWHAMPSHIRE, A. D. 1801.

To the Committee of Publications.

Gentlemen,

I SEND you a bill of mortality for Portsmouth, Newhampshire, for the three first years of the present century, by LYMAN SPALDING, M. B. &c. It will be deemed, I am sure, a valuable article in your Collections, and, I hope, will stimulate other gentlemen of the medical profession to furnish you hereafter with similar records.

m n

COMPLAINT.	AGE.	Jan.	Feb.	Mar.	April.	May.	June.	July.	Aug.	Sept.	Oct.	Nov.	Dec.	Total.
Aphtha	3 weeks								1					1
Apoplexy	39 years												1	1
Atrophy	{ 3 weeks. 50, 3 years. 4 months. 55 years. }	1					2			1			1	5
Cancer	65. 76 years								1		1			2
Cholera Infantum	6 to 18 months							1	1	2	3			7
Consumption	{ 54, 50, 56, 75. 44. 35. 37, 83, 65, 69. 56, 50, 60. 44. 39, 55. 26, 40. 48, 32. }	4	1		1	3		1	3	1	2	2	2	20
Debauchery	25. 29 years				1				1					2
Dropsy	28. 41 years						1	1						2
Dropsy in the brain	12 months.				1									1
Epilepsy	4 w. 10 y. 8 w.	1		1					1					3
Fever, billious	{ 26, 30. 45. 18, 28. 18, 14. } 64. 8, 33.			2		1	2			2	1		2	10
Fever, pulmonick	12 d. 15. 21. 84 y.		1		1						1		1	4

Hooping cough	3 m. to 4 yrs.									4	7		11
Illiac passion	95 years										1		1
Mortification	60 years	1											1
Nephritis	74. 66 years						1			1			2
Old age	82, 99. 75. 76. 80	2						1		1	1		5
Palsy	{ 54, 42. 68, 64. 77, 46, 64. 64, 43. } 60, 19, 80.		1	2	2		3			2		3	12
Phrenitis	31 years												1
Scrophula	8 years				1								1
Still born		1											1
CASUALTIES.	Burnt	71 years										1	1
	Drowned	60. 18. 45 yrs.					1				1	1	3
	Fall	17 years									1		1
	Frozen	38 years	1										1
	Paregorick	6 months									1		1
Total		11	3	6	6	4	10	4	8	9	15	12	100

Portsmouth, situated 43°. 5'. north, 70°. 41'. west from London, contains 5511 inhabitants. The town has been very healthful, not one in fifty-five having died. A billious remitting fever prevailed the whole year, which in several instances, in September and October, manifested the malignant type. From June to October, the cholera infantum was prevalent. From September to the end of the year, the hooping cough was endemick, very few children escaped it. A fifth part have died of phthisis pulmonalis!!! "Is there no balm in Gilead? Is there no physician there?"

BILL OF MORTALITY, FOR PORTSMOUTH, NEWHAMPSHIRE, A. D. 1802.

COMPLAINT.	AGE.	Jan.	Feb.	Mar.	April.	May.	June.	July.	Aug.	Sept.	Oct.	Nov.	Dec.	Total.
Aptha	4, 4 weeks									2				2
Apoplexy	66. 33. 55. 43. 63 years	1		1					1		1	1		5
Atrophy	55. 69. 40. 55,3m,60 years			1				1		1			3	6
Cancer	55. 63,60 years										1	2		3
Cankerrash	8. 2. 5,7m,2,16,23,4 years										1	1	6	8
Cholera of infants	6 to 24 months							1	6	2	3		1	13
Cholick, billious	42 years											1		1
Consumption	{ 14,74. 53,47. 53,30,69,17. 33,30,60. 14,33,18. } { 69,61,60,33. 28. 48,52,18. 29,50. 63,28. 22,30 }	2	2	4	3	7		1	3		2	2	2	28
Debauchery	55. 38 years						1					1		2
Dropsy	69. 50. 84. 52,89. 24 years		1			1		1		2			1	6
Dropsy in the brain	3. 7. 7. 8. 13 years	1	1	1			1		1					5
Dysentery	3,2. 2 years									2	1			3
Epilepsy	64. 2,2 years									1	2			3
Fever and Ague	33 years										1			1
Fever, billious	74. 30. 27 years			1	1							1		3
Fever, billious malignant	44. 31,41,13,35,21,30,40,30,13							1	9					10
Fever, pulmonick	65,45 years	2												2
Gout	52 years					1								1
Gravel	41 years								1					1
Hooping cough	10 weeks to 1 year	3	3				1			1				8
Infantile complaints	6 days. 4 weeks			1				1						2

Measles	7.1,20,4,9m.	2,7,1,2,1.	2 years				1	4	5	1					11	
Mortification	7 m.	1 year				1						1			2	
Old age	94,90.	78,76 years				2							2		4	
Palsy	60. 74.	64. 50 yrs.		1	1					1				1	4	
Phrenitis	30.	12 years						1		1					2	
Premature birth				2			1	1	1			1			6	
Quinsy	3 years							1							1	
Scald head	1 year				1										1	
Small pox, natural	33 years					1									1	
Small pox, inoculated	1 year					1									1	
CASUALTIES.	{	Drowned	48. 60 years					1						1	2	
		Fall	55 years									1			1	
		Frozen	82 years											1	1	
		Poisoned by opium	4 months													1
		Suicide	32 years			1					1					1
Total				12	10	14	6	17	9	7	24	12	13	12	16	152

Portsmouth, situated 43°. 5'. north, 70°. 41'. west from London, contains 5600 inhabitants. The town has been very unhealthful, some epidemick having raged the whole year. The hooping cough in January and February was very prevalent, and some sporadick cases continued till September. The measles made its appearance about the middle of March and was very prevalent till July; at which time a billious malignant fever made its appearance, and continued till August; when the cholera and cankerash commenced and continued through the year.



Fever and Ague	18 years	1																	1
Fever, billious	17. 40 years		2						1										2
Fever, pulmonick	50. 22, 46. 50, 72, 23, 62, 56. 70, 72. 7. 77. 35	4	9						1	2	5	2		1	1	1			13
Fever, typhus	71. 53 years	1	1						1										2
Inflammation of the bowels	23 years	1									1								1
Jaundice	49 years	1				1													1
Lock-jaw	38 years	1				1													1
Nephritis	43 years	1										1							1
Old age	87, 88, 74. 80. 74, 82. 78. 78. 86, 86 y.	2	8	3	1	2		1	1	2									10
Palsy	58. 82. 36 years		3					1	1									1	3
Phrenzy	48. 24 years	2								1									2
Premature birth		1	1					1				1							2
Quincy	2. 22 years	1	1											1					2
Scrophula	12 years		1			1													1
CASUAL- TIES. { Overlaid	1 month		1					1											1
{ Suicide	28 years	1										1							1
BIRTHS { Males 106 } Total 213		61	86	19	11	19	9	11	14	16	12	7	13	6	10				147

Portsmouth, situated 43°. 5'. north; 6°. 26'. east longitude from Washington, contains about 6000 inhabitants.

---

EXTRACTS FROM A JOURNAL KEPT ON BOARD SHIP  
ATAHUALPA, BOUND ON A VOYAGE FROM BOSTON TO  
THE N. W. COAST AND SANDWICH ISLANDS.

*Mon. Nov. 30, 1801.*

THE following is an account of the weather for November, 1801, at a harbour in the latitude of  $51^{\circ}$ . north, in the island of Gillians and Valdes on the north-west coast. The thermometer was correctly noted three times a day. The first between eight or nine o'clock in the morning, second at noon, and third at sunset; it was always placed on deck in a shady situation.

The mean height for the month in the morning was  $44^{\circ}$ . at noon  $43\frac{3}{4}^{\circ}$ . evening  $45^{\circ}$ . and the mean of the three, for the month  $45\frac{3}{8}^{\circ}$ . The greatest rise and depression of the mercury was as follows, on the morning of the 8th,  $51^{\circ}$ . and on the 20th,  $31^{\circ}$ .; on the noon of the 1st,  $58^{\circ}$ . and 21st,  $40^{\circ}$ .; eve of the 7th,  $51^{\circ}$ . and on the 21st and 26th,  $41^{\circ}$ . At midnight on the 19th the mercury fell to  $30^{\circ}$ . and on the 20th to  $3\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ . above 0. The weather during the month has been bad, a great deal of rain has fallen, with a little snow and hail, and the easterly winds have prevailed, much of the time blowing very strong.

---

*August 25th, 1802.*

I had some conversation with Cou respecting some tribes of natives, who inhabit the inland country back of Stikeen; he had his information from Cockshoo the Stikeen chief, who has repeatedly been among them for purposes of trade. He describes them, as of similar complexion, but of larger size, than the natives hereabouts. The men have short hair curling over their heads, the women are not disfigured with lip ornaments or anything of the kind. They are a timid race; upon the approach of danger they usually flee to some hiding place and set up a dismal cry. They dress with a coat or kind of frock, and in another garment something in the fashion of trowsers, both made of the skins of deer dressed nearly in the same manner as clammel (war garments) at the southward.



ward. They subsist on the flesh of deer, bears, &c. which they obtain by hunting, using bows and arrows of a larger size, and handsomer than those of the natives of the sea-coast. They possess a champaign country, and are expert travellers. When the ground is covered with snow, they use snow-shoes. The languages of these tribes are entirely different from those of Stikeen. They were not acquainted with the use of iron till lately, the Stikeen people have supplied them with knives and forks, &c. taking in return an article of food (I cannot learn what.)

Cou also informs, that the place called Nass or "Uwon-nass" spoken of by Vancouver, by the natives in Chebassa strait is the mouth of a river of very considerable extent (but unknown), navigable for small vessels or large canoes. On the banks of this river are many villages and tribes extending one beyond another, until you reach a fine open country, whose inhabitants never visit the sea-coast.

---

*Off Attooi, 25th Oct. 1802.*

I was highly diverted to see the natives swimming backwards and forwards from the outside canoes, bringing their arms full of articles to dispose of, and diving under the canoes, that were in the way. Sometimes a fellow would catch up a pretty large sized hog under his arm, plunge under water, and after passing under four or five canoes, came up with his half drowned hog along side of the ship. It is surprising to observe how active they are in the water; they appear to be as much at home in that element as the fish themselves. I remark that they can swim faster under water, than on the surface: when the ship has way on her, and they happen to get astern, they commonly plunge and swim under water till they come up with her.

---

*November 2, 1802. Woahoo.*

Tamaahmaah's government is very mild, considering it is absolutely arbitrary. Since the year after he took Woahoo, in 1796, not above ten or a dozen persons have been sacrificed yearly at the morai. Considering the large population, and that all criminals, who suffer capitally, perish there,

there, this number is certainly very small. Capt. Stewart says, he never knew an innocent person to be sacrificed; on the contrary, it is none but old hardened criminals, who have been guilty of the worst of crimes, that suffer, and many go unpunished, whom the laws of their country condemn.

Criminals are sacrificed at the morai at some great taboo. During the interval between the commission of their crimes and their death, they are suffered to follow their usual occupations unmolested, and ignorant of their destiny. The law condemns him to death, who is guilty of fraud in some, if not in all instances. A man, who under pretence of being sent by the king, obtains from another any articles for his own use, comes under this law. Such instances seldom occur, or if they do are winked at.

The opinion that the people of this country are cannibals, which Cook's voyage gave rise to, and which was supported by Capt. King, was ill founded. They despise the idea.

Their tradition hands down the names of nine hundred and fifty and odd kings, who have reigned over these islands, including his present majesty, and his son Ereehoo reho a child about five years old, apparent heir to the throne: their characters are also handed down, and they say, no one has ever caused so few of his subjects to be killed, as the present king. To allow ten years upon an average for the reign of each king, would make the world much older, than it is generally allowed among us to be.

They have a tradition of a flood, which deluged all the islands, the summit of Mowna koah in Owhyhee only remained dry, and there a pair of each kind of man and beast, and every living creature were saved alive.

---

Nov. 4, 1802. *Oneehno.*

They are the most inconsiderate and lively creatures in the world, they laugh and sing for hours and hours together, and do not seem to know what trouble is. Although during our stay here the ship was continually crowded, yet I certainly never saw one of them with a sad or downcast countenance. To judge from their actions,

tions and appearance, one would suppose them free from vices and dissensions, and incapable of doing mischief. If you beat them out of the ship, they shew no marks of displeasure; if their canoes are broken, or upset, and their whole contents sunk, (of which I saw more than one instance) they still retain their cheerfulness, and pass it off with a laugh: they never pretend to fret and worry about such accidents as trouble us. Their country, which has been so well described by Cook and Vancouver, is certainly one of the finest in the world; its produce affords its inhabitants ample subsistence, requiring so little labour in cultivation, that it may almost be deemed spontaneous. Their tarro is a very rich root, which I am extremely partial to, and in this respect I am not singular; it has when baked more of the taste and consistency of bread, than the bread fruit itself; I think it is intitled to the appellation of bread root; could it be obtained at home I am sure I should never eat any more bread.

The potatoes are large and good, most of them sweet like the Carolina potatoes; there are several kinds of them, one has exactly the colour and taste of the pumpkin, and another kind is of a deep red, or purple colour, like a beet.

Plantains and bananas when ripe, taste like what we call orange pears. Tea-root has a sugar-candy taste, and makes good beer and vinegar. m n

---

CURIOUS EXTRACT FROM REV. COTTON MATHER'S MEMOIRS OF REMARKABLES IN THE LIFE OF HIS FATHER, DR. I. MATHER, CONTAINING A CONVERSATION BETWEEN DR. M. WHEN MASSACHUSETTS AGENT, AND KING WILLIAM, &c.

ON March 14, 1689, the lord Wharton, introduced him to king William; and Mr. Mather knowing that the King desired none but very short speeches, only said, *I congratulate your Majesties happy accession to the crown, and I humbly implore your favour to New-England.*

*King.* You may rest assured, that I will shew them all the favour, which it is in my power to do.

*Math.*

*Math.* I may humbly and freely speak it ; the very prayers of that people, will be of some service to your majesty. They are a good and a praying people.

*King.* I believe they are a good people ; but I doubt, there have been irregularities in their government.

*Math.* I durst engage, that they shall at the first word reform any irregularities they shall be advised of.

*Ld. Wharton.*—And I'll be their guarantee, and here is Mr. Mather the rector of the College there, shall be the other. We two will stand bound for New-England, that they shall act regularly for the future.

*King.* I will forthwith give order, that Sr. Edmund Andros shall be removed from the government of New-England, and be called unto an account for his male-administration. And I will direct, that the present King and Queen shall be proclaimed by their former magistrates.

*Math.* Syr, they will do it with the joyfullest hearts in the world.

§. 3. This true New-England-man considering how wonderfully New-England had prospered under the Old Charter, and how desirous the people for whom he was now concerned, were to have it restored ; he advised with the wisest friends he could find, about this momentous affair. Their concurrent judgment was, That the best course would be to endeavour for a reversion of the judgment against the Massachuset-Charter by an Act of Parliament ; and afterwards petition to the King for the additional privileges, without which the Old Charter would not answer the occasions, and necessities of the people. Mr. Mather hereupon made most indefatigable applications unto the principal men in that Convention Parliament ; the effect of which was, That in the House of Commons the Charters of New-England were expressly put into the Charter-Bill : It was voted, That the taking of them away was a grievance, and that they should be restored. And a great interest was also made in the House of Lords, that when the Bill should come up to them, for their concurrence, New-England might be there also favoured. At the same time, [July 4, 1689.] Mr. Mather was again introduced by the Lord Wharton unto the King at Hampton Court : and said,

*Math.*

*Math.* I presume your Majesty has been informed, of the great service, which your subjects in New-England, have done for your Majesty, and for this nation, and for the Protestant interest, in securing that territory for king William.

*King.* I have seen some letters that speak of it, and I kindly accept of what they have done.

*Math.* If your Majesty would please to command that your kind acceptance of what they have done shall be signified unto them, it will be a great encouragement.

*King.* I will give order to the Secretary of State, that a letter be written to them, to let them understand, that what they have done is acceptable to me.

*Math.* Your Majesty may, by the assistance of New-England, whenever you please, become the Emperour of America. I durst engage, that your subjects there, will readily venture their lives and estates in your service. All that is humbly desired on their behalf, is only that they may enjoy their ancient rights and privileges.

*King.* I do assure you, I will do all that it is in my power to do, that it may be so.

Mr. Mead being with him, told the King, that he could not possibly do any thing more grateful to his dissenting subjects in England, than in being kind unto New-England in the restoring of their former privileges. The King bad them rest satisfied, *That it should be done.*

But behold, while the Charter Bill was depending, the Convention-Parliament was unexpectedly prorogued, and then dissolved; and Mr. Mather found the Sisyphean labour of a whole year come to nothing.

§. 4. The disposition of the next Parliament soon appeared such, that nothing in the favour of New-England was to be expected there. Mr. Mather then made some essays, to see if by a writ of error in judgment, the case relating to the Massachuset-Colony might be brought out of chancery into the King's Bench; but this attempt also was defeated by so surprizing a providence, that Mr. Mather declared upon it; *Never did I see a more signal hand of Heaven in any matter, than in disappointing all hopes, for the obtaining the so much desired full restitution of all our charter privileges, by a reversion of the judgment entered against them.*

All

All hopes of obtaining the restoration of the Old Charter being at an end, there was no way left, but a flight unto the royal favour; for though it was not in the King's power to reverse the judgment against the Old Charter, yet his Majesty had power to re-incorporate his good subjects there, and grant them a New Charter, that should contain all the old, with new and more ample privileges; without which, the old would not have been sufficient.

Mr. Mather, with two other agents, which the Massachuset-Colony had then joined with him, now signed a petition to the King for such a New Charter: which petition the Right Honourable Earl of Monmouth condescended so far, as to deliver with his own truly noble hand. Whereupon Mr. Mather obtained the intercession of a great personage, which prevailed with the King to refer the affair of New-England unto the consideration of the two Lord Chief Justices, with his Majesties Attorney and Solicitor-General: All of whom had by Mr. Mathers powerful and assiduous applications been brought into the New English interests. They met three or four times, and kindly gave him leave to be present with them at all their consultations. The heads of the Massachuset Old Charter, and Sr. Ferdinando Gorges, were presented in writing, together with such additional privileges, as were then pray'd for: And they all judged, there was nothing unreasonable, or prejudicial to the Kings interest, in what was proposed. They were presented unto the King, by the lord chief justice Holt; and the King ordered him to present them unto the Council; who did accordingly; and from thence they were transferred unto the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations.

§. 5. Immediately upon this, the King took his voyage for Holland; and before his return, there was no more to be done. But still Mr. Mather would be doing of something for the good of his country. He published, *Reasons for the confirmation of Charter-privileges, granted to the Massachuset-Colony*, which he dispersed among the Lords of his Majesties most honourable Privy-Council; and personally addressed himself unto the most of them; humbly praying their lordships favour to New-England, in a matter that appeared so equal. His maxim was, That in  
all

all affairs, a few did all; and his method was, to find out the most potent leaders in all affairs, and make sure of them. If he knew any N. C. minister, who had an interest in any person of quality, he would engage that minister to employ his interest on the behalf of New-England; one way of engaging him, was by preaching for him: And, this also introduced him into the same acquaintance. There were several noblemen, who likewise brought him into the knowledge and favour of others. But none did more for him that way, than that cordial and constant lover of all good men, the aged lord Wharton, who was the last surviving member of that famous assembly of divines at Westminster. Among those eminent persons, who admitted him to be familiar with them, I will particularly mention two that were of an ecclesiastical character, for the sake of the good that was done to New-England by his acquaintance with them. The one was Dr. Tillotson, the arch-bishop of Canterbury: who did, at his desire, often concern himself to do kind offices for the country, and pray, both the King and Queen to put marks of their favour on their faithful subjects there; and once he went so far as to tell the King, *It would by no means do well for him to take away any of those privileges from the people of New-England, which K. Charles I. had granted them.* And indeed Mr. Mather often spoke of the Catholick spirit, with which the arch-bishop of Canterbury blamed the conduct of his predecessor Laud, in his discourses with him. The other was, Dr. Burnet, the bishop of Salisbury: who besides many real and weighty expressions of his kindness for the country, told him, that he would on the first opportunity declare openly in the House of Lords, *That there was a greater sacredness in the Charter of New-England, than in those of the Corporations in England; because those were only acts of grace, whereas the Charter of New-England was a contract between the King and the first Patentees: They promised the King to enlarge his dominions, on their own charges, provided, that they and their posterity might enjoy such and such privileges: They had performed their part; now for the King to deprive their posterity of the privileges therein granted unto them, would carry a face of injustice in it.* A Lord great in the Court, then told Mr. Mather, That

his

his having engaged the bishop of Salisbury to appear for New-England, was the *best jobb he had done these seven years.*

§. 6. But a greater than any of these, must not be left unsolicited. Mr. Mather was by Madam Lockart introduced unto the Queen, on April 9. 1691. and she left him alone with her Majesty, that he might the more freely represent the case of New-England unto her.

The discourse was, as followeth.

*Math.* I do most humbly pray your Majesties favour to your good subjects in New-England. There are none in the world more in your interest than they; nor any that do with greater devotion pray for your long and happy reign. They have indeed been exposed unto great troubles on the account of their loyalty unto your Majesty. For the French at Canada, who have invaded them, and have destroyed several of their plantations, gave that as the reason of what they did; because the people there have declared for king William and queen Mary. They now only pray, that they may be resettled in the enjoyment of those privileges, which they were possessed of, until the last year of king Charles II.

*Queen.* That matter has been a long time before the Council. I would have that which is just done for them; and not only so, but that something of favour should be shown to them.

*Math.* I most humbly thank your Majesty, for the kind words which your Majesty was pleased to speak to my lady Southerland about New-England.

*Queen.* Mr. Mather, I have had a great character of you, from my lady Southerland. I have spoken to the King on the behalf of New-England. He told me, the matter was before the Council.

*Math.* It has been referr'd unto the two Lord Chief Justices, with the Attorney and Sollicitor-General; we only pray, that the articles approved by them, may be allowed and confirmed to us.

*Queen.* That seems reasonable; and I doubt not, but it will be done for you.

*Math.* I humbly beg, that your Majesty will please to speak so kind a word unto the King upon his return. You will



will thereby bring the blessing of the prayers of a good people on your royal person and government.

*Queen.* I shall be willing to do all I can for them.

*Math.* I have reason to believe, that your good subjects there have been misrepresented unto your majesty. Some that bear them ill will, have printed many reflections on them.

*Queen.* I have not seen all the pamphlets.

*Math.* Sr. William Phips has, with many of your Majesties subjects, endeavoured to enlarge your Majesties dominions; and they are willing again to expose themselves in your Majesties service.

*Queen.* Are they able to do it? I hear they are but in a bad condition.

*Math.* They are in a bad condition; but one great reason of it is, because their government yet remains unsettled.

*Queen.* That I believe; it must needs be so.

*Math.* If by your Majesties favour, they shall be restored unto their former privileges, they will revive, and become able to serve your Majesties interest.

*Queen.* I doubt, there have been differences there, as well as here, about church-government.

*Math.* In New-England they are generally those that are called Non-Conformists: But they carry it with all due respect unto others: We judge some of them to be better men than ourselves. This nation has cause to bless God, for the King, and for your Majesty, in regard of that act of indulgence, and the liberty of conscience, which through your Majesties favour we now enjoy.

*Queen.* 'Tis what I am for. It is not in the power of men to believe what they please; and therefore I think, they should not be forced in matters of religion, contrary to their perswasions and their consciences. I wish all good men were of one mind; however in the mean time, I would have them live peaceably, and love one another.

*O mentis aureæ verba bracteata!* My ink, too vile a liquor art thou, to write so divine a sentence!

§. 7. Before the month was out, the King returned from Holland; and though he staid but a fortnight in England, Mr. Mather twice had the honour of waiting on him. The first time he only presented an address from the

the

the General Court at Boston, with a petition from a considerable number of merchants in London, praying that Charter-privileges might be restored unto New-England. But Mr. Mather was desirous once more to plead with him for favour to his country : and therefore by the mediation of the Duke of Devonshire, he was, on April 28. admitted a second time, and it was now into the Kings bed-chamber : Where what then passed was, as followeth.

*Math.* I most humbly thank your Majesty, in that you were graciously pleased to signify unto my lord Devonshire, that I might have leave to wait on your Majesty on the behalf of New-England. None of your subjects, are or can be more in your interests than they ; none pray more heartily for your long life, and your happy reign, and the success of your arms.

*King.* Syr, what do you desire, that I should do for them !

*Math.* May it please your Majesty, that they may be restored unto their ancient privileges ; and that their settlement may be expedited. They have an humble confidence, that through your Majesties goodness, they shall be made happy, in having their ancient privileges restored unto them ; which will oblige your subjects there to be your servants forever. Your Majesty has been graciously pleased to refer the consideration of this affair to the two Lord Chief Justices, with the Attorney and Solicitor General. We only pray humbly that what they have thought reasonable for us to desire, may be granted by your Majesty.

*King.* I expect within two or three days, to have a report from the Lords of the Committee for Trade and Plantations ; and then shall see what may be done.

*Math.* Your Majesties subjects have been willing to venture their lives that they may enlarge your dominions : And are willing to do the like again, if your Majesty encourage them. Will your Majesty please, in your great wisdom, to consider the circumstances of that people ; as in your wisdom you have considered the circumstances of England and of Scotland. In New-England they differ from other plantations ; they are such as are called Congregational and Presbyterian. So that such a Governour will not suit  
with

with the people of New-England, as may be very proper for the other English plantations.

Having so spoken, he bowed unto the King; who then retired into his closet.

OBSERVATIONS UPON THE NATURAL PRODUCTION OF IRON ORES, WITH A DESCRIPTION OF SMELTING FURNACES, AND SOME ACCOUNT OF THE IRON MANUFACTURE IN THE COUNTY OF PLYMOUTH. BY DR. JAMES THACHER.

**T**HE abundant production of mineral ores, and the important manufacture dependent upon their discovery, have not frequently been the subject of investigation in our country. The art of metallurgy and the discovery of iron may probably be classed among the antediluvian events, and from high antiquity iron has been held in estimation as the most useful of all the metals. We have in the writings of Moses, who was born more than 1500 years before the Christian era, ample proof, that even prior to his days furnaces were constructed, by the aid of which iron was extracted from its ores, and by the skill of the artists converted into swords, knives, axes, &c.\* Since that period mankind have acquired the art not only of converting iron into the ordinary instruments of agriculture and utensils of domestick life, but into the more formidable weapons of war. It is from the discovery of iron, that we are indebted for the rods, which shield our dwellings from lightning, and for the compass, that invaluable guide to the mariner.

Iron possesses principles, which pervade the various kingdoms of nature, and is distinguished from all other metals by its medicinal effects upon the human system, imparting, like oxygen, invigourating and restorative powers to the valetudinarian. And since every art and manufacture is more or less dependent upon this useful metal, Infinite Wisdom has provided, that in the bowels of the earth

\* Gen. iv. 22.  
Numb. xxxv. 16.  
Deut. iv. 20.

Deut. xix. 5.  
Ibid. viii. 9.  
Ibid. xxvii. 5.

Job xix. 29.  
Ibid. xl. 18.

earth it shall abound in a degree commensurate with its vast utility to mankind.

The very numerous and abundant sources of mineral ores, with which our earth is so richly impregnated, afford an ample and interesting field for the inquisitive naturalist to explore. A chemical analysis of their particular character and properties will not be expected from one, who has no claim to proficiency in the science of mineralogy. My endeavours, therefore, will be limited by a simple description of their more obvious appearances, and some cursory observations. Specimens of the various kinds of ore produced in this county, or used in our works, will for farther satisfaction accompany this communication.

There are in the county of Plymouth several ponds, in which are found copious beds of iron ore; of these Assawampsit in Middleboro', Monponsett in Halifax, and Sampson's pond in Carver, are the most distinguished for their prolific virtues in this respect. It is now about sixty years since ore was first taken from the ponds, the former of which during a considerable period afforded an annual supply of six hundred tons; but is now so far exhausted, that not more than three hundred tons can be procured; and about one hundred tons is also taken annually from each of the others.

The generating principle and process of nature in producing iron ore in these ponds afford a phenomenon, which will probably elude the assiduity of philosophical research. The period of its growth is supposed to be about twenty-five years; and it is found in various depths of water from two to twenty feet. A man accustomed to the employment being in a small boat, with an instrument similar to oyster tongs, can raise from its watery bed about half a ton of this ore in a day.

From the great mechanical ingenuity displayed to the honour of some of our citizens, we are encouraged to hope for the application of some machinery, as an advantageous substitute for the very operose and expensive method hitherto practised.

Of this ore we distinguish three varieties:—1st. Found on ledges in shoal water in various forms, some from the size of peas to that of bullets; others in oblong or flat pieces

pieces of a reddish brown, called ledge or shot ore, yields nearly 25 per cent. of good iron. Some pieces of this ore, having a hard external covering, include in a cavity a nucleus like a kernel in a nut; others have small stones adhering to them as if cemented together. By investigating their internal texture, the process of metallisation from earthy and stony substances appears to be clearly demonstrated. In one fragment the stone, or original substance, is found just assuming the metallick character, another exhibits the process in a more advanced state resembling mouldering wood, and in the third the stone or earthy substance is obliterated and the process perfected; a species of slate is the stone with which this ore appears to have a particular affinity. 2d. Resembling in shape and size a Turkey fig, found in a depth from two to six feet of water, of a dark brown colour called pancake ore, yields from 20 to 30 per cent. Clams and muscles in a living state are frequently found intermixed with these ores, and in some instances their entire shells have formed a nucleus enclosed as in a matrix. 3d. Denominated black ore, found in deep water on a muddy bottom in cakes of a dirty black colour, and of an earthy appearance, whose metallick particles are so loosely connected together, that it easily crumbles in pieces. This ore is esteemed not so much for the quantity of iron it contains, as for its peculiar quality in meliorating and promoting the fusion of the more refractory ores. The average price of the above ores is six dollars per ton at the furnace.

About the year 1751 Joseph Holmes, whilst angling in Jones river pond in Kingston, fortunately discovered, by his hook, that it contained a bed of iron ore; and, on exploring the whole circumference of the pond, ore was found in great abundance and of various forms and appearances. About 3000 tons were in a few years taken from it, some of which yielded 25 per cent. of excellent iron; and a considerable quantity of cannon shot were manufactured from it during the American war. But the bed being exhausted and the growth remarkably slow, very little ore has been produced from it for twenty years past. Bog ore abounds in swamps and other low places, subject to an overflow of water issuing from springs, particularly

ticularly in the vicinity of the several ore ponds; between which and the sea almost every bog is impregnated with it, extending even to the margin of salt marshes. Its growth is observed to be more rapid where springs most abound, and diverting the course of the water subverts the production of ore no less effectually than vegetation is destroyed by depriving the stamina of its nutriment. This ore is disposed in beds or strata of various depths from the surface, and of divers irregular shapes. From some strata, four feet thick, masses have been digged weighing from one hundred to five hundred pounds; more frequently, however, it is found widely disseminated and intermixed with a kind of loam. Veins of this ore have been traced from bogs to the adjacent hills, the natural matrix of minerals and probably the generating source of bog-ores. It is of a rusty brown colour, yielding about 18 per cent. and worth four dollars per ton at the furnace.

There is another kind found in bogs and swamps, which the workmen call swamp or mud ore; it is a ferruginous earth, or glebe, resembling black mould, externally destitute of any metallick appearance; but being washed with water, small granulated particles of iron subside to the bottom. On examining a quantity of this earth, my attention was attracted by some pieces of a beautiful sky-blue. It is found four feet below the surface, and when first discovered is of a pale yellow; but coming in contact with the air, is soon changed to that of native Prussian blue.\* This admixture affords some iron, and is deemed an indispensable ingredient to qualify, and render more fusible, hard and refractory ores. Bog ore being all digged from its bed, the workmen are careful to cover the cavity with loose earth, leaves, bushes, and other rubbish, calculating upon another growth in ten or fifteen years; not unfrequently, however, this expectation is realized in seven years, and it may be remarked, as a curious fact in natural history, that in the short period of four or five years,

---

\* "Native Prussian blue consists of clay mixed with iron, and coloured with some unknown tinging substance, generally found in swampy grounds or bogs. It is first white, but when exposed to the air is of a light or deep blue. Mr. Woulfe found this kind of ore in Scotland on the surface of the earth." *Encyclo. article Iron.*

years, those vegetable substances, even branches of trees, suffer a complete transition to a metallick state. Does not this indicate an analogy between metallick and organick substances ?

*Upland Ores.* There is on the island of Martha's Vineyard a mine of iron ore of considerable extent and value. It is brought to our works in large lumps of a reddish brown colour, affording about 25 per cent. and is worth six dollars per ton. Iron from this ore exhibits a peculiar degree of smoothness and lustre.

A very considerable proportion of ore smelted in our furnaces is procured from the very productive mines at Egg-harbour, in the state of New-Jersey. This is produced in large masses compact and ponderous, some weighing 100 lb. each, of a reddish brown colour, producing from 30 to 40 per cent. of excellent iron. The usual price is  $6\frac{50}{100}$  dollars per ton. The founder finds it expedient to calcine and pulverize the large lumps previous to its being committed to the operation of the furnace.

There is at Cape Elizabeth, near Portland, a mine, which is supposed to be valuable ; but a few tons of the ore having been essayed at the Federal furnace, it proved to be unproductive, being of that description, which the founder terms dead ore. On inquiry it is ascertained, that the quantity referred to was taken from the surface, which by long exposure to the air had suffered a spontaneous calcination, and was in a great measure divested of its metallick principle. It is, however, extremely probable, that by exploring the internal parts of the mine a rich and productive ore may be obtained. Some of the above described ores, being roasted and pulverized, are attracted by the magnet ; but being destitute of a good one, and not being versed in the operation, my experiments are deemed unimportant.

Smelting of iron ores is performed in large blast furnaces composed of stone. The success of the process very much depends upon the skill and judgment of the founder ; some ore by itself sustains the most vehement degree of heat, that art has hitherto been able to excite ; but by a judicious admixture of two or more varieties their fusibility is effectuated with great facility. Charcoal is the only fuel,

fuel, and marine shells (a substitute for lime stone or calcareous earth,) is the only fluxing material that our workmen employ. The experienced founder having acquired an accurate knowledge of the intrinsic dissimilarity and distinguishing characteristics of the various kinds of ore, which become the subject of his operation, will in the course of the process draw inferences from the greater or less degree of fluidity of the scoria and the appearance of sulphur, which is expelled from the ore upon its surface; by these indications he will learn whether to increase or diminish the power of the bellows, and how to proportion the fuel to the ore and shells.

The first furnace for smelting iron ore, known in the county of Plymouth, was erected in the year 1702, by Lambert Despard (a founder) and the family of Barkers, his associates, at the mouth of Mattakesset pond in the town of Pembroke, but the wood in the vicinity being exhausted, the works were long since abandoned.

Furnaces for the purpose of converting iron ores into pig iron, and those which produce the various kinds of castings, are not variant in their construction. The former manufacture, however, is not, I believe, prosecuted in this Commonwealth; but there are in the county of Plymouth ten blast furnaces of the latter description.

A situation fraught with all the advantages, which nature in some instances so wonderfully combines, does not frequently present itself to our choice. A rivulet issuing from a good and permanent head of water, a forest of pine or other wood, calculated to support a vast consumption of charcoal, and an inexhaustible source of the various kinds of iron ore in its vicinity, form the essential requisites. A scite most favourable to the views of the founder being selected, a capacious edifice of proper dimensions is to be erected. The most valuable structure of this description, with which I am acquainted is the Federal furnace, situated in Carver, seven miles and an half from Plymouth. It was erected in the year 1794, and the manufacture is there prosecuted to great extent and advantage. The area is twenty-four feet, in the centre of which is a well dug with a drain to carry off the moisture. The wall is seven feet thick on all sides, leaving in the centre of the edifice



edifice a cavity of about ten feet diameter, and twenty feet high, within which another wall formed of fire-stone (a soft slate) is carried up converging at the top. A circular canal, eight feet diameter at the widest part, is thus formed in the centre of the building, nearly resembling an hen's egg standing on its largest end. Near the top, on one side, an aperture is left for the purpose of charging the furnace with fuel and ore, and upon the summit of the canal stands a brick funnel to convey off the blaze and smoke. At the commencement of the blast an hearth is placed on the basis of the canal, so constructed as to form a square cavity fifteen by eighteen inches, and extending five feet high, the top in the form of a miller's hopper for the reception of the fluid metal. At the bottom of an arch in the front of the furnace is an aperture, from which the workmen remove the scoria and dip out the metal. And in another arch on one side, there is a small aperture for the insertion of the pipes of two large bellows twenty-two feet long and four feet wide, which being kept in constant alternate motion by the agency of a water-wheel twenty-five feet diameter, a powerful current of air is excited; and being impelled upon the surface of the fuel, the fusion of the metal is greatly accelerated. The whole of this machinery is included in a large wooden building, affording accommodation to the workmen with their apparatus for moulding and casting. Both the form and materials of the bellows in common use at our large works are liable to important objections. The leather, of which their base and sides are composed, is found to be extremely difficult to preserve perfectly tight; some portion of the air also, instead of being impelled through the pipe, rushes into their sides, and being retained impedes the ingress of external air through the valve. Their alternate action too affords, instead of a continued current, only an interrupted blast not calculated to excite the requisite degree of heat. A complete remedy for all these evils is, I learn, found in a valuable substitute now employed in the large foundries in Europe. This consists of three or more cast iron cylinders of about three feet diameter, each having a valve at the bottom and furnished with a piston carried by a water-wheel. A pipe from each cylinder conveys the air into

into the furnace, if not in a constant current, yet the interruption is scarcely perceivable; and even this may be prevented by the addition of a large iron reservoir, which should receive the air from the several cylinders through valves opening into it, and from these it is conveyed by a single pipe into the furnace in a manner perfectly equable and regular.

*Hearth Stone.* It has long been an important object of inquiry to procure a stone for the hearth, possessing qualities calculated to sustain for a length of time the heat of a furnace without melting, a casualty which not unfrequently occurs soon after the commencement of a blast, subjecting the proprietors to great expense and disappointment. A stone for this purpose, of the granite kind, has been procured at Bridgewater, which in some instances has succeeded, as also the common coarse griud-stone from Nova-Scotia. A kind of free stone from Smithfield, Connecticut, has also obtained some repute. But the stone, which in the opinion of our founders has acquired a decided superiority, is procured from a large quarry at Stratford in Connecticut. It is a white free stone, and by the assistance of a drill and sledge may be separated into any desirable form. It is curiously laminated, some of the layers may be separated into very thin pieces, and it appears as if composed of sand cemented together, exhibiting fine glittering spangles, like the scales of fishes. Being exposed to intense heat the internal surface becomes vitrified, and in process of time is converted into a substance hard as marble. After being exposed, however, to the action of the bellows and to vehement heat sixteen or eighteen weeks it becomes so worn as to suffer the ore, fuel, and scoria to fall together into the receiver with the pure metal. It then becomes expedient to discontinue the blast until a new hearth can be erected. Five tons or sixty feet of this stone is the usual quantity for an hearth, the expense of which is seventy-six dollars.

Heating the furnace for fusing the ore should be done gradually and with care to prevent the wall receiving injury by cracking. Ten days is the usual period, and fifty loads of charcoal of eighty bushels each, is consumed during the process of ignition. So powerfully is heat conducted by

by the substances in contact, that even the external part of a seven feet wall is observed to be replete with calorick. In this connection the query occurs, whether in an economical view very important advantages would not result from the application of Count Rumford's new principle of the philosophy of calorick (heat.) The cavity between the external and internal walls, instead of being filled with sand and rubbish possessing strong conducting powers, may be left to be occupied by air alone, or filled with some substance, demonstrated to be a non-conductor of heat. Should this theory be put in practice the consumption of a considerable quantity of fuel might probably be avoided.

The observation is familiar to the consumers of charcoal, that by age it acquires a property, which renders it essentially more valuable, affording a degree of heat more intense and durable.

I am not confident, that I can satisfactorily account for this phenomenon upon philosophical principles. But the fact is, that charcoal being remarkably replete with pores has, when fresh made, a strong attraction for atmospherical air, which it continues to absorb for a considerable length of time; in consequence of which its density and specific gravity are greatly increased. With a view of ascertaining the quantity of air absorbed, Dr. Priestly exposed on the 4th of September a piece of charcoal newly charred from dry oak, weighing 364 grains. Two or three days after it weighed 390, and on the 24th of October 419 grains. Having a similar end in view, I have experienced the following results.

A piece of charcoal, fresh made from green pine wood and taken immediately from the pit, weighed April 9th in a dry atmosphere 442 grains, being exposed in an upper chamber till the 13th, being a rainy day, weighed 465 grns.

And on the 17th, in a dry atmosphere, 465

On 24th, in a damp atmosphere, 476

It is obvious, therefore, upon the principle of economy, charcoal when taken from the pit should be secured under cover for some months before it be used, and the consumer will realize a profit adequate to his care and trouble.

*Moulding.* The sand used for moulding is of a peculiar kind, being of a soft yellowish and cohesive nature. It is found

found in particular places about six inches below the surface of the earth in a strata about four inches thick, and bedded on another of coarse sand or gravel. Being freed from gravel and other impurities by sifting, it is worked over upon the floor with a kind of roller until sufficiently prepared for the process of moulding. This operation is performed in wooden frames or flasks of a size and form proportioned to the utensil intended to be cast; these being filled with sand a little moistened to render it more cohesive, the moulds or patterns are to be so applied and pressed into the sand as to leave their impression. Pots, tea-kettles, and other vessels, being larger at the bottom than the top cannot, it is evident, be moulded but with patterns cut into two separate parts, each of which are pressed together in moulding. A peculiar dexterity is displayed in withdrawing the patterns without injuring the impression. This being done the several parts of the flasks are closely pressed together and secured by hooks and pins; and, when the whole of them are arranged in order, the fluid metal is poured into them, through a small channel left for that purpose. The patterns, by which the moulds are formed for casting the several utensils, should be composed of brass, or some other metal, and made very thin, that the vessels may be as light as possible. Owing to a want of attention in this particular those articles imported from England have in many instances commanded the preference.

When the whole internal furnace has acquired a strong white heat, the bellows are put in motion, and the ore, charcoal, and shells, being duly proportioned, are thrown in at the top by small quantities every hour. The ore descending to the hottest part of the furnace, at length, gradually melting, drops down through the fuel into the receiver, where at an aperture left for the purpose, the scoria floating on the surface of the metal, resembling lava from a volcano, is occasionally removed by a long iron hook. A sufficient quantity of pure iron being collected in the receiver, the action of the bellows is discontinued for the space of about twenty minutes for the purpose of casting. This operation occurs at the end of every nine or ten hours, and a ton of iron is taken out at each casting. The fluid

fluid metal is dipped out at the aperture with iron ladles well covered with a composition of clay, &c. and with them is poured into the several moulds prepared for the purpose, and is thus formed into the various utensils and machinery for which cast iron is a proper material. Immediately after casting, the several articles are taken out of the moulds and carried to the dresser, whose duty it is with files and brushes to render them clean and smooth ready for the market.

The specifick articles manufactured at the Federal furnace are, besides hollow ware of every description, Seymour's patent rolls for slitting mills, of a superiour quality, cast in iron cylinders, pot-ash kettles, stoves, fire-backs and jambs, plates, gudgeons, anvils, large hammers, cannon shot of every kind, with a vast variety of machinery for mills, &c.

The period of a blast does not exceed sixteen or eighteen weeks, but two or three blasts occupy about six months annually, during which 360 tons of hollow ware, or other castings equivalent\* are manufactured, and the following expenditures occur, viz.

	Dolls.	Cts.
2130 cords of wood converted into 1420 loads		
of charcoal, at <i>D.</i> 2 50 - - - - -	3550	00
726 tons of ore, at 6 dollars - - - - -	4356	00
Two sets of stone for hearth - - - - -	153	32
Compensation to the founder, at <i>D.</i> 1 pr. ton	360	00
Do. moulders and other workmen - - - - -	2331	00
	Dolls. 10,750 32	

The whole quantity of iron ware, manufactured in the county of Plymouth by the several furnaces, may be estimated at fifteen hundred tons annually.

The manufacture of wrought iron from crude ore is not carried to great extent in this county; but there are ten forges, which are employed principally in working old iron

---

\* In estimating a ton of hollow ware it is not to be understood as meaning a ton in weight, but a nominal ton, consisting of an assortment of large and small articles, which in fact will not weigh more than twelve hundred.

iron scraps, broken pots, kettles, &c. And produce about two hundred tons of bar iron per annum.

The other branches of iron manufacture, such as produce anchors, shovels and spades, scythes, nails, iron for ship building, &c. are pursued to an extent, which furnishes unquestionable attestation to the spirit of industry and enterprize, which prevails among our citizens.

Shovels and spades, manufactured in this county, were formerly conceived to be of a quality, but little inferior to those imported; but unfortunately their reputation has of late become greatly diminished, and those articles now sell at a reduced price in our market. Could this subject attract the attention of our legislature, that an inspection law might be enacted relative to these articles, the most important advantage would result from the measure, as our manufactures would in a few years afford a supply adequate to the demand in the United States.

While investigating this subject an opportunity offers, and is cheerfully improved, to render justice to the meritorious services of a late respectable and worthy fellow citizen, the Hon. HUGH ORR, Esquire. He was born January 13, 1717, in Lochwinnoch in the shire of Renfrew in Scotland, where he was educated a *gunsmith and house-lock filer*. Having at the age of twenty emigrated to America he spent one year in his employment at Easton in the county of Bristol. But with the view of a more eligible situation he removed to Bridgewater, where he erected a shop and the first trip hammer known in this part of the country. He commenced his experiments in the manufacture of scythes, and it was by his exertions, prompted by an ardent desire of promoting the useful arts in an infant country, that the scythe and axe manufactory were introduced in the states of Rhode-Island and Connecticut. And such were the happy resources of his mind and love of enterprize, that there was no branch of iron manufactory, that did not at some period become the object of his pursuit, nor was there any obstacle too formidable for his perseverance to surmount. For several years he was the only edge tool maker in this part of the country, and ship carpenters, mill-wrights, &c. in this county, and state of Rhode-Island, constantly resorted to him for supply. And, indeed,

indeed, such was his fame, that applications were frequently made to him from the distance of twenty miles, for the purpose of having an axe, an adze, or auger new tempered by his hands.

About the year 1748 he made five hundred stands of arms for the province of Massachusetts-Bay, which were deposited in Castle William; nearly all, however, were carried off by the British, when they evacuated the town of Boston.

The perilous state of our country after the commencement of the revolutionary war afforded new scope for his enterprising genius, and fresh impulse to his sentiments of patriotism. Instances were not numerous of foreigners entering with cordiality into the merits of our cause; he was one of its early advocates and continued among its firm supporters, notwithstanding the reiterated entreaties of his friends and correspondents in Europe. The publick interest and prosperity were dear to his heart, and his mind glowed with a zealous solicitude for the exigences of his adopted country. He was again employed in manufacturing a number of stands of arms, and under his superintendance, in concert with a French gentleman, a foundry for casting cannon was erected. Iron ordnance were till within a few years of this period cast with a cylindrical cavity, of a diameter somewhat smaller than the intended caliber, which was afterwards bored out to a proper size; but this method was found by experience to be attended with inconveniences. The guns were extremely liable to be spongy in that part where strength and smoothness are required. To remedy this evil an improved method had recently been introduced in Europe. The gun was to be cast solid, and the caliber afterwards, with a boring bar-iron and cutter to be perforated and smoothed out to its proper diameter. This method, however difficult and laborious, was adopted by Mr. Orr at the new foundry at Bridgewater, and from his exertions a great number of pieces of iron, and several pieces of brass ordnance, from 3 to 42 pounders, besides a vast quantity of cannon shot, were produced, which being distributed to different parts of our army proved, at that critical conjuncture of affairs, an acquisition of inestimable value.

His knowledge of minerals and ores was so extensive, that from every newly discovered mine in the country he was immediately furnished with specimens of its quality, and a few years previous to his death he was in possession of a valuable collection of them.

At an early period of his residence in Bridgewater, observing that our farmers had not been in the habit of preserving their flax-seed for market, he endeavored to inculcate among them the expediency of preserving and preparing that article for exportation. The suggestion, however, instead of being favourably received, excited in many instances considerable animosity. Having imbibed the chimerical idea, that seed exported to Europe would enable them to cultivate flax to an extent, that might eventually prove subversive of our own cultivation; some, even of those who were allied to him by the ties of friendship, actually destroyed their flax-seed, lest it should fall into his hands. But impressed with its importance, and resolving to accomplish the interesting object, he became himself the purchaser; and having constructed a curious and useful machine, of which he was the original inventor, for the purpose of cleaning the flax-seed, and having accumulated a large quantity, conveyed it to Boston, whence he exported it to Scotland, and received a profitable return. Thus he became the first exporter of flax-seed from the county of Plymouth, if not from New-England, and to the exertions of this gentleman are we indebted for the introduction of that valuable article of commerce, which had not before been considered worth preservation.

After the establishment of our independence, he exhibited another proof of his extensive and disinterested views by his attempt to introduce the cotton manufactory. For the purpose of effecting this project, he obtained the aid and patronage of our Legislature. But to construct a machinery of so complicated and intricate a nature as that for carding and spinning cotton required the skill and experience of the most perfect artist. Having engaged two men of mechanical ingenuity, who had been employed in repairing similar works in Scotland, they commenced, and at length executed, the arduous undertaking. The machine, by the direction of our government, was deposited in



in the care of Mr. Orr, as a model for general inspection. A machine for weaving cotton cloth and others of less importance were also the result of his enterprising spirit. But in consequence of these laudable pursuits he was again subjected to the unjust reproach of his disingenuous neighbours, alleging that his machines would supersede the industrious labourers in their employment.

In social life the subject of this memoir was remarkable for the endearing qualities of his mind and a happy talent in animating conversation, by a display of satirick, but chaste wit and pleasantry.

From his religious adherence to sound principles, ornamented by domestick virtues and exemplary manners, his character was deemed unexceptionable, and he was for several years elected a member of the senate for the county of Plymouth, where he exhibited genuine patriotism and publick virtue. His strong and vigourous mind and correct judgment were regarded with honour; and confidence was reposed in the rectitude of his counsel.

In the year 1786, when the foundation of our government was agitated by the alarming spirit of insurrection, he was a confidential friend of governour Bowdoin, and no man could be more firm and decided in support of energetick measures calculated to re-establish the authority of government.

Having arrived at the eighty-second year of his age he died in December, 1798. It may not be improper to observe here, that the present improved method of making scythes by the trip hammer is the result of the successful experiments of Robert Orr, Esq. son of the subject of this memoir, who also introduced the iron shovel manufactory in this state. He is now master armourer of the publick arsenal at Springfield.\*

Having now concluded my observations upon this subject, these pages are with great diffidence submitted to the liberality and candour of the members of the Historical Society, for whom I have the honour of expressing the highest

---

\* For much of this information I am indebted to Dr. Hector Orr, of Bridgewater, who inherits a liberal share of that intelligence and virtue, which distinguished the character of his grandfather.

eat respect, and of subscribing myself their devoted and obedient servant,

JAMES THACHER.

*Plymouth, May 10, 1804.*

---

“AN ACCOUNT OF A CONFERENCE BETWEEN THE LATE MR. GRENVILLE AND THE SEVERAL COLONY AGENTS, IN THE YEAR 1764, PREVIOUS TO THE PASSING THE STAMP ACT.”

THE following conversation between Mr. Grenville and the colony agents ascertains a material point in history, and is worthy of being more generally known. It is from a book of Israel Mauduit which is interleaved, and many remarks made in his own hand-writing. Having the confidence of the people of Massachusetts, and being a mercenary scribbler for the ministry, he durst not put his name to the pamphlet he wrote, but after his death, his library being sold, his own works, in manuscript as well as in print, were procured by a gentleman who presented them to the Historical Society.

In Minot's history the character of I. M. is accurately described:—“The brother of Jasper Mauduit, who had made himself of importance to ministers by his writings and other active measures in politicks; and who was afterwards partially united in the agency. These causes, and perhaps we may add the circumstance of Mr. Bollan's being a member of the Church of England and Mr. Mauduit a Dissenter, placed the agent on that poise with the General Court, which it was said, the influence of the governour could turn either way.”

The people of Massachusetts had great reason to repent making the exchange of Mr. Bollan for either of the Mauduits. Notwithstanding the unkind treatment he received, he continued a firm friend to New-England, and interested himself in their affairs to the day of his death.

---

THE agent for New-York, Mr. Burke, spake thus in the House of Commons:

“THERE is also another circulation abroad (spread with a malignant intention, which I cannot attribute to those

“ those who say the same thing in this House) that Mr. Grenville gave the colony-agents an option for their assemblies to tax themselves; which they had refused. I find that much stress is laid on this, as a fact. However, it happens neither to be true nor possible. I will observe first, that Mr. Grenville never thought fit to make this apology for himself in the innumerable debates that were had upon this subject. He might have proposed to the colony-agents, that they should agree in some mode of taxation, as the ground of an act of parliament: but he never could have proposed that they should tax themselves on requisition; which is the assertion of the day. Indeed, Mr. Grenville well knew, that the colony-agents could have no general powers to consent to it; and they had no time to consult their assemblies for particular powers, before he passed his first Revenue Act. If you compare dates you will find it impossible.”

After having so often admired the perspicuity as well as the luxuriant eloquence of this author, I think it a singular infelicity, to find this only paragraph so very obscure, that I am utterly at a loss to guess at its meaning. What the uninformed reader will be led to conclude from it is obvious enough. But, after a careful perusal, I confess that I cannot determine what it is, which the writer wishes to affirm, or to deny.

Without attempting therefore to penetrate into the meaning of a sentence guarded within such well-chosen terms of ambiguity, I shall give a plain narration of facts, which fell within my own knowledge, and which, therefore, I think it a debt, due from me to Mr. Grenville's memory, to relate.

In the beginning of March, 1764, a number of resolutions, relative to the Plantation Trade, were proposed by Mr. Grenville, and passed in the House of Commons.

The fifteenth of these was: “ That, towards the further defraying the said expences, it may be proper to charge certain stamp duties in the said colonies and plantations.”

The other resolutions were formed into the Plantation Act: but the fifteenth was put off till the next session: Mr. Grenville declaring, that he was willing to give time  
to

to the Colonies to consider of it, and to make their option of raising that, or some other tax. The agents waited separately on Grenville upon this matter, and wrote to their several colonies. At the end of the sessions we went to him, all of us together, to know if he still intended to bring in such a bill. He answered, he did. And then repeated to us in form, what I had before heard him say private, and in the House of Commons: "That the late war had found us seventy millions, and left us more than one hundred and forty millions in debt. He knew that all men wished not to be taxed: but that in these unhappy circumstances, it was his duty, as a steward for the publick, to make use of every just means of improving the publick revenue: that he never meant, however, to charge the Colonies with any part of the interest of the national debt. But, besides that publick debt, the nation had incurred a great annual expence in the maintaining of the several new conquests, which we had made during the war, and by which the Colonies were so much benefited. That the American civil and military establishment, after the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, was only £.70,000 *per ann.* It was now increased to £.350,000. This was a great additional expence incurred upon an American account: And he thought, therefore, that America ought to contribute towards it. He did not expect that the Colonies should raise the whole; but some part of it he thought they ought to raise. And this Stamp Duty was intended for that purpose.

"That he judged this method of raising the money the easiest and most equitable; that it was a tax which would fall only upon property; would be collected by the fewest officers; and would be equally spread over America and the West-Indies; so that all would bear their share of the publick burthen."

He then went on: "I am not, however, set upon this tax: If the Americans dislike it, and prefer any other method of raising the money themselves, I shall be content. Write therefore to your several Colonies; and if they choose any other mode, I shall be satisfied, provided the money be but raised."

Upon reading over this narration with Mr. Montagu,  
who

who was then agent for Virginia, and present at this conference with Mr. Grenville, I have his authority to say, that he entirely assents to every particular.

All these particulars I had before heard from Mr. Grenville, in the House of Commons, and at his own house; and had wrote to the Massachusetts' Assembly accordingly.

The following extracts contain their answer on this head.

“ Boston, June 14, 1764. .

“ SIR,

“ The House of Representatives have received your  
 “ several letters, &c. \* \* \* \* \*  
 \* \* \* \* \*

“ The actual laying the Stamp Duty, you say, is deferred till next year, Mr. Grenville being willing to give  
 “ the provinces their option to raise that, or some equivalent tax; desirous, as he was pleased to express himself,  
 “ to consult the ease and quiet, and the good will of the  
 “ Colonies.’

“ If the ease, the quiet, and the good will of the Colonies are of any importance to Great-Britain, no measures could be hit upon, that have a more natural and direct tendency to enervate those principles, than the resolutions you inclosed.

“ The kind offer of suspending the Stamp Duty in the manner, and upon the condition, you mention, amounts  
 “ to no more than this, that if the Colonies will not tax themselves, as they may be directed, the Parliament will  
 “ tax them.

“ You are to remonstrate against these measures, and, if possible, to obtain a repeal of the Sugar Act, and prevent the imposition of any further duties or taxes on  
 “ the colonies. Measures will be taken that you may be  
 “ joined by all the other agents.”

One of these measures was the printing this letter, and sending it to the other colony assemblies.

After their own express acknowledgment, therefore, no one, I suppose, will doubt but that they had the offer of raising the money themselves; and that they refused it. Which is all that I am concerned to prove.

---

*A Note in Manuscript.*

IF any man wish to know what a very honest enthusiast, from his own visionary ideas of the perfection of civil liberty, may fancy that the constitution of the colonies *ought* to be, let him read Dr. Price.

If he think it of more importance to know what the constitution of the colonies really is, this history will clearly prove to him, from the evidence of facts.

The constitution of the colonies did not wait for Dr. Price's fancies, but existed a hundred years before he was born; having been already formed by their charters; by the conditions upon which they made their settlements; under which they have been considered as parts of the British empire; and under which they have enjoyed the protection and the privileges of British subjects: (to say nothing of the constant usage of the crown, and then of the parliament, to tax them).

The constitution of our government, like that of the human body, is a system that is already formed; and not a new thing, now to be fancied. And we may apply to it what Boerhaave used to say to us in confutation of fancied theories, *Corpus humanum fit, non fingitur.*

---

*Extract from the History of the New-England Colonies, concerning the Charter of William and Mary.*

IF we look into the history of the passing of this Charter, every part of it shews, that nothing could be farther from the thoughts of the King and Council, than the granting of any such exemption. And the account of these transactions will fully illustrate every thing which has been said, both of the former charter and of this.

Upon the accession of king William, the people at Boston seized upon their Governour, and called a convention. This Assembly added two more agents to the two, which were before in England, and sent them over with instructions "to solicit the confirmation of their antient Charter, and all its rights and privileges; and, if there  
" should

“ should be opportunity, to endeavour the obtaining such farther privileges, as might be of benefit to the Colony.”

The House of Commons had resolved, that the seising of the Charters of the Corporations and Colonies in king Charles's time was illegal : And a bill had been brought in for the renewal of them, though it did not pass. The agents therefore hoped, that they might be allowed to re-assume their Charter. The colony of Connecticut, having never stood a trial, but only passively submitted, in the year 1684, and having had no judgment entered against their Charter, nor any surrendry thereof upon record, actually did re-assume theirs. But the case of Massachusetts was different, they having stood trial, and having had judgment entered against them. The same great lawyers, therefore, Ward, Somers, and Treby, who found that Connecticut might resume their former Charter, determined that Massachusetts could not.

The king resolved therefore to grant them a new charter ; and to reserve to himself the naming of a Governour and some other officers ; and directed the Attorney and Solicitor General to draw one. The first draught was thought too loose, and was rejected. A second being drawn more agreeably to the King's instructions, was shewn to the Agents, with a liberty given them to offer any objections. But upon Mr. Mather's saying that he would sooner part with his life than consent to it, they were told that the consent of the Agents was not desired : That the Agents from New-England were not plenipotentiaries from a sovereign state : And that, if they declared they would not submit to the king's pleasure, his Majesty would settle the country, and they might take what would follow.

Two of the Agents still insisted on their old Charter, to which the province at that time was strongly attached, though with very little reason. For the state of their case having been referred to council, the opinion given upon it was as follows :

“ That a bare restitution of the Charters, and especially of the Massachusetts, would be of no service at all ; as appears both from the Charter itself and from the practice of that Colony, who have hardly pursued the terms thereof

“ thereof in any one instance. As to the Charter itself, that  
 “ colony, if they should have it, would want,

I. “ A power to call a select assembly ; for there many  
 “ thousand freemen have an equal right to sit in the as-  
 “ ssembly.

II. “ A power to lay taxes and raise money, especially  
 “ on inhabitants not freemen, and strangers coming to trade  
 “ there.

III. “ They have no admiralty.

IV. “ They have no power to keep a prerogative court,  
 “ to prove wills, &c.

V. “ Nor to erect courts of judicature, especially chan-  
 “ cery courts.”

The reader easily sees, that the Charter having been originally given to a company resident in England, all these things were then provided for here in the king's Courts.

The other two agents, Mr. Mather and Sir William Ashurst, drew up their objections against the minutes ; which were presented to the Attorney-General and laid before the Council ; and a copy sent to the King in Flanders : who disapproved of the objections, and ordered the Charter to be drawn up according to the minutes. It was still urged on the part of the province, that they thought it would be a singularly hard case, that the effects of the late tyranny should be felt by them alone, of all their Majesty's subjects : all the other charters having by one means or other been restored. But to this it was answered, that there was this difference between the case of the Massachusetts, and most of the other charters. In general, there was no room for legal exception to the powers exercised by the corporations ; but the Massachusetts Charter not being intended when it was granted for such government, as is necessary to be exercised in a colony remote from its mother country, a reversion of the former judgment would have been of no service : \*And Sir George Treby declared to Mr. Mather, Sir John Somers, and the two Lords Chief Justices being present, and assenting to it, that “ if  
 “ the judgment against the Charter should be revers-  
 “ ed, and the government should exercise those powers,  
 “ which,

\* Hutchinson, page 414.



“ which, before the *quo warranto*, they had done, a new writ would issue out against them in Westminster-hall, and there would be a judgment against them, and such an one as there would be no room for a writ of error.” By the old Charter, it was said, they had power to imprison or inflict punishment in criminal cases, according to the course of corporations in England, but that, unless capital cases be expressly mentioned, the power would not reach them. That no power was given to erect judicatories, or courts for probate of wills; or with admiralty jurisdiction; nor had they any power to constitute a house of deputies or representatives, nor to impose taxes on the inhabitants; nor to incorporate towns, colleges, schools, &c. which powers and privileges had been notwithstanding usurped.

SEVERAL REASONS PROVING THAT INOCULATING OR TRANSPLANTING THE SMALL POX, IS A LAWFUL PRACTICE, AND THAT IT HAS BEEN BLESSED BY GOD FOR THE SAVING OF MANY A LIFE.\* BY INCREASE MATHER, D. D.

Exod. xx. 13. *Thou shalt not kill.*—Gal. i. 10. *Do I seek to please men? if I please men, I should not be a servant of Christ.*

IT has been questioned, Whether inoculating the Small Pox be a lawful practice? I incline to the affirmative, for these reasons. I. Because I have read, that in Smyrna, Constantinople, and other places, thousands of lives have been saved by inoculation, and not one of thousands has miscarried by it. This is related by wise and learned men who would not have imposed on the world a false narrative. Which also has been published by the Royal Society; therefore a great regard is due to it.

II. We hear that several physicians have recommended the practice hereof to his Majesty, as a means to preserve the lives of his subjects, and that his wise and excellent Majesty

\* When this was written, only one physician, two or three magistrates, and the clergy of Boston durst step forth in defence of Inoculation. The success established the reputation of those who favoured it.

Majesty King George, as also his Royal Highness the Prince have approved hereof, and that it is now coming into practice in the nation. In one of the publick prints are these words, *Inoculating the Small Pox is a safe and universally useful experiment.* Several worthy persons lately arrived from England inform us, that it is a successful practice there: If wise and learned men in England declare their approbation of this practice, for us to declare our disapprobation will not be for our honour.

III. God has graciously owned the practice of inoculation, among us in Boston, where some scores, yea above an hundred have been inoculated, and not one miscarried; but they bless God, for his discovering this experiment to them. It has been objected, that one that was inoculated, died, viz. Mrs. D——ll: but she had the small pox, in the common way before, and her friends and nearest relations declare that she received no hurt by inoculation, but was by a fright put into fits that caused her death. It is then a wonderful providence of God, that all that were inoculated should have their lives preserved; so that the safety and usefulness of this experiment is confirmed to us by ocular demonstration; I confess I am afraid, that the discouraging of this practice may cause many a life to be lost, which, for my own part, I should be loth to have any hand in, because of the sixth commandment.

IV. It cannot be denied but that some wise and judicious persons among us, approve of inoculation, both magistrates and ministers; among ministers I am one, who have been a poor preacher of the gospel in Boston above threescore years, and am the most aged, weak and unworthy minister now in New-England. My sentiments, and my son's also, about this matter are well known. Also we hear that the reverend and learned Mr. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton concurs with us; so doth the reverend Mr. Wise of Ipswich, and many other younger divines, not only in Boston, but in the country, join with their fathers. Furthermore, I have made some enquiry, whether there are many persons of a prophane life and conversation, that do approve and defend inoculation, and I have been answered, that they know but of very few such. This is to me a weighty consideration. But on the other hand,  
though

though there are some worthy persons, that are not clear about it; nevertheless, it cannot be denied, but that the known children of the wicked one, are generally fierce enemies to inoculation. It is a grave saying of old Seneca, *Pessimi argumentum turba est*. For my part I should be ashamed to joyn with such persons; *O my soul, come not thou into their secret, unto their assembly be not thou united*. I am far from reflecting upon all that are against inoculation. I know there are very worthy persons (with whom I desire to live and die) that are not clear in their judgments for it, and they are greatly to be commended and honoured in that they will not act against a doubting conscience; yet it may be some of them might change their minds, if they would advise with those who are best able to afford them scripture light in this as well as in other cases of conscience.

November 20. 1721.

---

*That the cause may have two witnesses, here are subjoyned the sentiments of another, well known in our churches, of which I declare my hearty approbation.*

#### SENTIMENTS ON THE SMALL POX INOCULATED.

A MOST successful, and allowable method of preventing death, and many other grievous miseries by the small pox, is not only *lawful* but a *duty*, to be used by those who apprehend their lives immediately endanger'd by the terrible distemper.

But the method of managing and governing the small pox in the way of inoculation, is a most successful and allowable method of preventing death, and many other grievous miseries by this dreadful distemper. Therefore, 'tis not only lawful, but also a duty to make use of it. None but very foolish, and very wicked people will deny the proposition in this argument; the assumption is all that is disputed. But now, that this is a most successful method we have all the evidence that humane reason can ask for it.

Men of honour, and learning, and incontestible veracity, not one or two, but a considerable number of them, agree in the relation they give us, of it's being used with constant

stant success in the Levant. It has been used upon vast multitudes, even many thousands, and for some scores of years : And when regularly used, it yet appears not, that ever one person miscarried of it, or had the small pox after it. We have sufficient proofs that it is a growing practice in those countries. If it had been unsuccessful, or been attended with bad consequences, it must needs have been put out of countenance, and have ceased long ago. Such testimonies on the other side, as our people have been frightened withal, are not worth a straw. No man of sense that considers them can lay weight upon them : Ask us not, why we say so !

And we have an army of Africans among ourselves, who have themselves been under it, and given us all the assurance, which a rational mind can desire, that it has long been used with the like success in Africa. Yea, *Behold, ye yourselves have seen it.* The operation has been performed on an hundred and more, in the town of Boston : And not one of them has miscarried : They have every one of them hitherto done well. They all give thanks to our merciful Redeemer for leading them into it. They would every one of them rather undergo it again, and many times over, than suffer the small pox as people ordinarily suffer it in the common way of infection. The story of one dying after it, is trump'd up with so much folly and falsehood, that it is unworthy to have any answer given to it. In fine ; experience has declared, that there never was a more unfailing remedy employed among the children of men.

That this is an allowable method, is plain ; because there can be no objection brought against it, but what will also lie against the use of all the preventing physick that is used in the world. The objector must maintain, that it is unlawful for a man, who would preserve his life and health, to make himself sick in a way that constantly tends to preservation. But a very familiar case will so illustrate the matter, as to put it beyond all dispute. Suppose, there is a bloody flux prevailing in the town where I live, which proves mortal to a great part of them that have it ; many more than four hundred perish by it in a month. A physician is master of a purge, which, whosoever takes it, is, in an ordinary way, delivered from the danger of that mortal distemper. An  
artificial

artificial purge seasonably taken saves him from death by the natural purge, which he is exposed unto. Will any scruple the taking of this artificial purge? Surely, none but such as want a purge of hellebore! Here the man makes himself sick, while he is well: and thinks that he is not *the whole who has no need of a physician*, while he has the humours in him which render him obnoxious to a deadly sickness. He won't think it his duty to stay till God send the sickness in another way upon him; when it will be too late for him to seek relief; but he will give thanks to God for teaching him, how to make himself sick, in a way that will save his life. He most properly takes God's time to fall sick: He does it seasonably, and in the time when God has commanded him to do it.

Many good people, who are sensible how weak their own judgments are, will for a case of conscience be much assisted by the judgments of the most able divines in the country. Now every body knows how they concur in their approbation of this practice.

The design and the spirit, (evidently of no good original) with which the fierce opposition to this practice is carried on, will also go a great way towards determining of good people in favour of it. The conclusion will be victorious; that when people have their lives endangered by the small pox hovering about them, they not only *may* use the method of inoculation, to save their lives, but they even *ought to do it*, if they can. They keep not in good terms with the sixth commandment, if they do it not.

#### *Inferences.*

I. Hence the physicians may do well to beware, of going too far, and of taking wrong steps, for the frightening of people from this practice, lest they unawares have more to answer for than men of their profession should be willing to.

II. Hence, the parents, and masters, and husbands and wives, whose relatives have beg'd as for their lives, that they might have leave to save their lives, by this method, should not by their obstinate violence hinder them from it, least on the loss of their lives they have sad matter of reflection left unto them.

III. Hence,

III. Hence, a people will do well, not to be too hasty in resolves, that should forbid their neighbours, to do what God has made their duty for the preservation of their lives in this method; lest they do in effect forbid obedience to the sixth commandment. Especially, when the bugbear of the pestilential consequences, is a falsehood, that has not the least shadow of reason for it, and has the experience of all the countries under heaven, where they use the inoculation, to confute it. Nor has it ever been known of later ages, that the plague ever began any where but in the East-Indies, from whence it has always been brought unto the western world. And when the King, and Prince, and most eminent physicians in London and Dublin, and elsewhere, have declared their approbation of it; it seems not much for our honour, to declare that we disapprove it.

IV. Hence to rave, and rail with such bitter execrations, as are too commonly used, against the ministers, and other serious Christians, who favour this practice, is a very crying iniquity; and to call it a *work of the devil*, and a *going to the devil*, is a shocking blasphemy; and much more likely to bring the plague among us, than the practice, which they so ignorantly and maliciously do charge with such imaginary consequences.

EXTRACTS FROM THE ORIGINAL DRAUGHT OF A LETTER  
WRITTEN BY A LONDON MERCHANT TO HIS FRIEND IN  
VIRGINIA.

*London, 9 Jan. 1775.*

NO address or signature is requisite to this, as it is purely political, and you know the writer. Your eulogium for wisdom, ability, and amiable publick principles, are resounded here from every part of America, since your shining in Congress. This you may be sure is most grateful to me, who love you so much and have an Hampdean ardour for liberty.

The publick papers will inform you of the proceedings of the London merchants and traders, which it is supposed will be followed by Bristol, Liverpool, Glasgow, Birmingham, Leeds, Manchester, &c. as the leading men in those towns had before wrote, painting in strong terms the distress

tress of commerce and the poor manufacturers on the very slight beginning of stopping your importations; from this you may easily guess what will be the case when your *exports* are stopped. The ministers being totally confounded at the unanimity of America, are at a stand; this, together with the clamours from Liverpool, &c. has occasioned the proceedings in London; but do not from thence conclude that any thing effectual will be done this session of Parliament. The K—, your inveterate enemy, has ordered the ministers to persevere in the old plan, which from principle, they wish to do, if they find it practicable; but this they will not find in twelve months time, if America perseveres in the plan adopted by the Congress. You may rely on it that I have the very best authority for assuring you, that there is no disposition in the cabinet to give America any redress; but, on the contrary, it is absolutely determined by the *secret ruling power* to distress you as much as possible. There is one comfort; this ruler is the veriest coward that human nature can know, and when the spirit appears, that must show itself in the House of Commons when the several petitions are delivered, fear will take place, and may produce a repeal of some of the last Massachusetts acts; this is the utmost that can be expected this session, which for a time may quiet people here in expectation of the Congress in May receding from your association. But should the May Congress continue firmly united as that in September was, and persevere in the plan of stopping your imports and exports, till *all* your grievances are redressed, by the next session of Parliament one half of the kingdom for want of bread will be at Westminster to fight your battles, in which every West-Indian must join or starve.

The advice I am going to give, you must allow, will be more particularly injurious to myself than to almost any man in North-America; but my ardent love of liberty will ever prevail over selfish considerations. Should your grievances, as stated in the association, be not *fully* redressed before the meeting of Congress in May, (of which there is not the least glimmering of hope at present) by all means confirm your non-importation and non-exportation,

tation, and adopt such farther measures as by that time you will find necessary. In the mean while, to make the measure as little injurious as possible to America, employ every nerve to prepare within yourselves necessary cloathing and implements for manufactures of the useful kind, instead of raising raw materials to purchase the manufactures of this country. No effort should be left untried to get a sufficiency of arms and ammunition, for it is more than probable that you may have occasion for them; therefore it is absolutely necessary, through all America, to pay great attention to training the militia. Thus acting, and thus provided, I will pawn my life on every thing being properly settled next winter.

The plan of despotism is too deeply settled to give up the contest without full redress; especially as America is infinitely better able to contend now, than she will be ten or twenty years hence, if the Quebec bill remains. Had your exports as well as imports stopped last December, your grievances must have been completely settled this winter: as it is, by your own determinations, the business is spun out so long, I hope you have firmness to persevere, and will by every possible means provide against the last extremity. You must not rely on any man or body of men here, therefore you yourselves must work out your own salvation, which you are fully able to do if you have but virtue enough; and if you have not . . . . .

This country is, in comparison of what it was, weak to an extreme with profligacy, debauchery and luxury. The highest and lowest orders of men are as abandoned to every vice, as the Romans were in the age of the Cæsars. In the middling class there is yet a great deal of true sterling independency; among them your friends were always numerous, and among the others, necessity will very soon make you many more. Lords Temple, Chatham (who are now perfectly united) Camden, Shelburne, and the amiable bishop of St. Asaph, are the only real friends you have among the great. I speak of the two first from my own personal knowledge, and of the others from report, their publick conduct, and writings. The Rockinghams, with Burke, their political pilot, still obstinately persevere in the right of parliament to tax America, and therefore  
cannot



cannot be your friends; places, &c. being their object. They will nevertheless support you against the present ministry, to distress and overturn them if they can. The proceedings of Congress are universally admired, and the compositions compared to those of the patriots in the reign of Charles 1st. I have mentioned my own private capital objection, respecting your delay of non-exportation, by which I understand remittances of every kind; and I beg leave to caution against any strictures on the Roman Catholic religion, as it will be much more advantageous for you to conciliate to you the Canadians, than to exasperate or rouse the people here; let us alone to do that. When your assembly meets, surely your governour will be severely reprehended for not immediately issuing writs on the last dissolution; for the iniquitous Indian war he has so wickedly kindled, which has already cost the lives of so many brave Virginians, and will cost so much money, if you are simple enough to pay for his madness; and for his contemptuous treatment in not meeting the assembly, &c. These are grounds amply sufficient for a strong remonstrance to the throne, for his removal. I have just received your letter of September 20, from Philadelphia, through the London post-office, which is the only one since that from Rousby Hall. This convinces me several of your letters must have miscarried. So very few of the merchants here are in the least friendly to you, that it seems to me an essential political principle for every independent American to put his business only into the hands of such men whom they are certain, in times like these, will boldly stand forth and openly support your rights whenever they may be injured. 'Tis very hard indeed if every colony cannot find honest and trusty natives sufficient to send here that can do their business.

---

---

## LITERARY NOTICE.



A MEMBER of the Massachusetts Historical Society has it in contemplation to publish a work, to be entitled,

### *AMERICAN ANNALS.*

It will commence with the discovery of America, by Christopher Columbus, in 1492, and extend to the present time; and is designed to give a concise history of the most important events, that have taken place, within that period, on the continent of North and South America, and in the West India islands; and of such events, in foreign parts, as had special relation to this country, or ultimately affected its interests. Beginning with the causes, means, and circumstances, of the first discovery of America, it will proceed to notice its subsequent settlement by the various nations of Europe; the principal charters, granted by European princes to individuals, or to companies; the principal emigrations from the Eastern Continent to the Western; the causes of those emigrations; the number of the emigrants; the places to which they removed; the towns which they built; the colonies which they planted; the churches which they founded; and the principal persons concerned in the several enterprises for the settlement of America, whether navigators, adventurers, statesmen, divines, or warriors, with biographical sketches: the most material facts in the progress of the American settlements; the population of the natives, and of the colonists, at different periods; the formation of new colonies or states; the foundation of colleges and other seminaries of learning; the establishment of societies for promoting useful knowledge; the progress of arts and sciences; the progress of commerce; new inventions, or useful improvements; military and naval strength; civil wars, or insurrections; wars with the Indians; memorable battles; the principal events of the late revolutionary war; changes in the civil and ecclesiastical state; deaths and ages of eminent men; and providential occurrences.

It is the design of the author, to relate events in the order of time, on the plan of chronology, and yet to dilate on articles of peculiar importance, after the manner of history. The authorities will be given with precision; and the work will probably consist of two octavo volumes.

---

---

# COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS

HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

—◆—  
VOL. X.  
—◆—



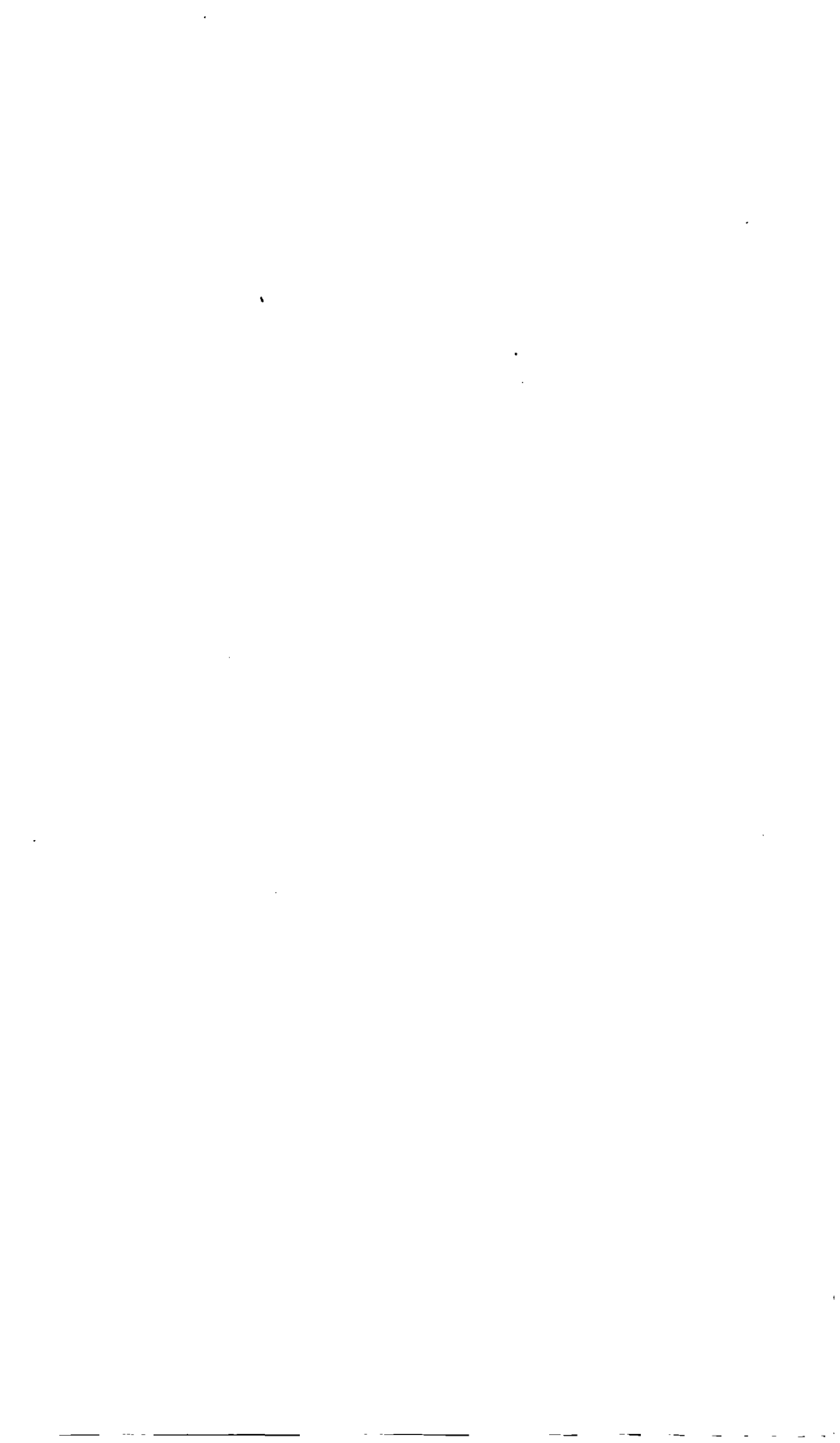
---

BOSTON,

PRINTED BY MUNROE, FRANCIS AND PARKER, NO. 4 CORNHILL,  
Printers to the Historical Society.

1809.

REPRINTED BY T. E. MARVIN, MDCCCLVII.



## CONTENTS.

<i>Ecclesiastical history of Massachusetts</i>	1
<i>Account of the religious societies in Portsmouth, N. H.</i>	37
<i>Topographical description of Brewster</i>	72
<i>Account of Halifax</i>	79
<i>Estimate of the inhabitants of Nova-Scotia</i>	81
<i>Note on Southborough</i>	82
<i>Account of Stow</i>	83
<i>Account of Westborough</i>	84
<i>Memoir of Sudbury</i>	86
<i>Account of Harvard</i>	88
<i>Note on Marlborough</i>	89
<i>Memoir of Marlborough association</i>	ib.
<i>History of Guilford</i>	90
<i>Memoir of the Pequots</i>	101
<i>Additional memoir of the Pequots</i>	102
<i>Number of the Nyhantic indians</i>	103
<i>Number of king Ninegret's tribe</i>	104
<i>Indians on Connecticut river</i>	ib.
<i>Account of the Montauk indians</i>	105
<i>Memoir of Block island</i>	111
<i>Account of the Stratford indians</i>	ib.
<i>Number of the Potenummecut indians</i>	112
<i>Mashpee indians</i>	113
<i>Monymoyk indians</i>	114
<i>Saconet indians</i>	ib.
<i>Eastern indians</i>	ib.
<i>Account of the indians in Acadie</i>	115
<i>Number of indians in Connecticut, 1774</i>	117
<i>Number of indians in Rhode-Island, 1774</i>	119
<i>Account of the several nations of southern indians</i>	ib.
<i>Indians at a treaty, A. D. 1764</i>	121

<i>Estimate of the indian warriors employed by the British in the revolutionary war</i>	123
<i>Estimate of the number of indians in the battle of Miami</i>	ib.
<i>Eliot's account of indian churches in New-England, 1673</i>	124
<i>Account of Rawson and Danforth's indian visitation, A. D. 1698</i>	129
<i>List of Indians in Natick, 1749</i>	134
<i>Numbers in the Mohawk language</i>	137
<i>Numbers in the Norridgewog language</i>	ib.
<i>Account of the surprize and defeat of a body of indians near Wrentham</i>	138
<i>Edwards' letter, relating to the indian school at Stock-bridge, 1751</i>	142
<i>Chauncy's sketch of eminent men in New-England</i>	154
<i>Barnard's sketch of eminent ministers in New-England</i>	166
<i>Life of President Chauncy</i>	171
<i>Memoirs of Edward Tyng, esq.</i>	180
<i>Memoirs of hon. William Tyng, esq.</i>	183
<i>Anecdote of John Eliot of Roxbury</i>	186
<i>Grant made to William Hubbard for writing his history</i>	187
<i>John Adams the author of an essay on feudal and canon law</i>	ib.
<i>Bill of mortality for Middleborough</i>	188
<i>Memoir of Andrew Eliot</i>	ib.
<i>Memoir of Thomas Pemberton</i>	190
<i>List of resident members</i>	191
<i>List of corresponding members</i>	192
<i>General table of contents of the ten volumes</i>	193
<i>Chronological table of the most remarkable events recorded in the ten volumes</i>	202
<i>General index to the ten volumes</i>	227
<i>Index of authors</i>	299
<i>Laws of the society</i>	303
<i>Officers of the society</i>	307
<i>List of deceased members</i>	308
<i>Errours corrected</i>	ib.

---

---

# COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

---

## ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF MASSACHUSETTS.

Continued from Vol. IX. p. 49.

*Account of the New-England Platform; of the attempts made to convert the Natives; and the state of Religion, and order of the Churches from 1648, during the commonwealth in Great-Britain.*

**I**N the earliest period of our history, the churches of New-England enjoyed religious freedom beyond what could be expected by their brethren in Europe, and were subject to their own religious discipline and order. The clergy aimed not at much power, but were highly respected by the magistrates, who asked their advice upon the most important occasions. From this it has been supposed they had great influence upon the affairs of the community. But what influence they had was more owing to their character, than their office. The magistrates, as members of the churches, were able to give a check to clergymen who thought too highly of themselves. They also were well versed in the scriptures, and had more knowledge of ecclesiastical history than most preachers of the gospel.

If we look into the church at Plymouth, how very able ought a teacher to be, when governour Bradford and elder Brewster were among the church members? And such great men as Cotton and R. Williams not only looked with respect upon governour Winthrop, as their magistrate, but also consid-

ered him as one mighty in that sacred eloquence, for which they were distinguished.\*

The 'New-England Platform of Church Discipline,' composed at the desire of the people by laymen and ministers, contains ideas as favourable to the wishes of the brethren, as the pastors. In all disputes, where the ministers have been accused of making an improper use of their powers, or usurping authority, recourse has been had to their foundation of church government, and generally their opposers have been successful.

"Ordinary church power is either the power of office, i. e. such as is proper to the eldership, or power of privilege, such as belongs to the brotherhood. The latter is in the brethren formally and immediately from Christ; that is, so that it may be acted or exercised immediately by themselves. The former is not in them formally or immediately, and therefore cannot be acted or exercised immediately by them, but is said to

\* In *Winthrop's Journal* there is frequent mention of his mingling with the pastors and officers of the church.—July 21. 1631. The governour, and deputy, and Mr. Nowell the elder of the congregation at Boston, went to Watertown to confer with Mr. Phillips the pastor, and Mr. Broom the elder of the congregation there, about an opinion they had published, that the churches of Rome were the true churches. The matter was debated before many of both congregations, and by the approbation of all the assembly except three, was concluded an error.

"1632. October 25. The governour with Mr. Wilson, &c. went to Plymouth. The governour of Plymouth, Mr. William Bradford (a very discreet, grave man), with Mr. Brewster the elder, came forth and met them without the town, and conducted them to the governour's house, where they were kindly entertained, &c. On the Lord's-day there was a sacrament which they did all partake in, and in the afternoon Mr. Roger Williams (according to their custom) propounded a question, to which the pastor, Mr. Smith, spake briefly, then Mr. Williams prophesied, and after the governour of Plymouth spoke to the question; after him the elder, then some two or three more of the congregation. Then the elder desired the governour of Massachusetts and Mr. Wilson to speak to it, which they did. When this was ended, the deacon, Mr. Fuller, put the congregation in mind of their duty of contribution, upon which the governour and all the rest went down to the deacon's seat and put into the bag, and then returned."

This custom of all the church members going to the deacon's seat has been retained in some churches to very late years. It may now be the case where we are not acquainted.



to be in them, in that they design the persons immediately to office, who only are to act, or to exercise this power.”

Such a platform would not have been composed by the succeeding generations. For the ministers soon obtained, and were very ready to exercise more authority, than they could derive from it. They adhered more to the comments, which were made by clergymen, than to the book itself. And the people, or brethren, less disposed to altercate the subject, rather chose to bend their wills to the opinions of their pastors.

The *causes* of this change will be manifest as we pursue the thread of our history. The *fact* is established by a comparison of the Saybrook, with the Cambridge Platform; and by the alarm made in Massachusetts in the next half-century, when the churches' quarrel was espoused by some clergymen of eminence, and many laymen, who expressed their astonishment at the attempts made to support the authority and strengthen the hands of the clergy; it also appears from the frequent controversies, which have ensued, where the ministers have claimed a power to negative the proceedings of the brethren.\*

The Cambridge Platform was adopted in 1648. It was the constitution of our churches from that period to the American revolution; and it is now frequently appealed to by those who desire to walk in the steps of their fathers. All denominations of Christians must venerate this wise specimen of ecclesiastical polity which was not merely calculated for the age; but, with some small alterations, would serve for all ages. The

\* Mr. Cotton, in a written copy of the Keys, maintained, that in the government of the church, “*Authority* is peculiar to the elders only;” and he answers all the arguments of the Brownists to the contrary.

There were some of the First Church in Boston, who were against *synods*, wisely considering that liberty of conscience was infringed. Had they not reason? They took not powers from the civil magistrate, like the Papists, but they gave power, as *having the keys* to judge of heresies, and their advice to punish them.

Heresies, meaning opinion, ought never to be punished by the civil magistrate; but where any *sects*, whether nominated Christians, or otherwise, disturb the peace of the community, they are to be considered as under the discipline of the law; hence the rods of the civil authority are shaken at them to prevent those mischiefs, which the enemies of social order would introduce.

The following remarks of Mr. Hubbard, in his MS. history, are very just, and perhaps have had their influence upon the order of our churches. Ecclesiastical policy, church government, or church discipline, is nothing else, but that form or order, which is to be observed in the church of Christ on earth, both for the constitution of it, and all the administrations which therein are to be performed, the parts of which are all described in the word of God, and it is not left in the power of any to alter, add, or diminish any thing therein.

2. There is a catholick visible church, viz. the company of those who profess the firm faith, whether in church order or not; but there is no political catholick church, the state of the members of the visible church, since the coming of Christ being only congregational.

3. A congregational church, by the institution of Christ, is a part of the visible church, consisting of a company of saints by calling, united into one body, for the publick worship of God, and the mutual edification one of another, in the fellowship of the Lord Jesus Christ; the matter of which, as to its qualification, ought to consist of such persons as have attained the knowledge of the profession of their faith and repentance, walk in blameless obedience to the word of God; as to its quantity, it ought not to be of greater number than can ordinarily meet together in one place, nor fewer than can conveniently carry on church work. The form of such a church is an agreement, consent, or visible covenant, whereby they give themselves up to the Lord to the observing of the ordinances of Christ together in the same society.

4. The fraternity of such a church is the first subject of all ordinary church power, which is either a power of office or privilege. But the power of privilege is in the brethren formally and immediately; the other is in them no otherwise, than that they design the persons into office, who only are to act and exercise that power.

5. The ordinary officers of the church are such as concern their spiritual and moral, or temporal and natural good. Of the first of which are pastors, teachers, ruling elders. 1 Tim. v. 17. In the last mentioned, most of the churches in New-England agree; as many of the congregational churches elsewhere are not so well agreed, accounting ruling elders should be able to teach.

6. It

6. It is in the power of the churches to call their own officers, and remove them from their office again, if there be just cause, yet so as the advice of neighbouring churches, where it may conveniently be done, be first had. They who are to officiate ought to be tried and proved, before they be elected. 1 Tim. v. 22.

7. Elders are to be ordained by the imposition of hands, which is to be performed by the elders of the same church, if it be furnished with any, or those of neighbouring churches, and it may be done by some of the brethren deputed thereunto, which latter is also disapproved by the learned Dr. Hornbeck, professor of Leyden, from Numbers viii. 10.

8. The powers of government in a congregational church ought to proceed after the manner of a mixed administration; for, in an organick church, no act can be consummate without the consent both of the elders and brethren, so as the power of government or rule in the elders prejudice not the power of privilege in the brethren, nor the power of privilege in them prejudice the power of rule, seated in the elders, seeing both may severally agree together.

9. For the maintenance of the ministers of the church, all that are taught are to communicate to him that teaches, in all good things; and in case of neglect, the magistrates ought to see that the ministers be duly provided for.

10. For the admission of members there ought to be a personal relation in publick, or by the elders, acquainting the church what satisfaction they have received from the persons in private. The things, wherein satisfaction is required, are faith and repentance, which ought to be found in all church members.

11. Where members of churches are called to remove from one church to another, it is convenient, for order's sake, that it be done by letters of recommendation or of dismissal.

12. The censures of the church, which are for the preventing, removing or healing of offences, are excommunication or admonition, wherein the church ought to proceed according to the rule, Matt. xviii. 15, 16, wherein the offence is brought to the church by the mouth of the elders.

13. Particular churches, although they are distinct, and have not power over one another, yet because they are united to Christ, not only as a mystical head, but a political head, ought

ought to have communion one with another, by way of mutual care, consultation, admonition, and participation in the same ordinances.

14. Synods orderly assembled, and rightly proceeding, according to the pattern of Acts xv. are the ordinance of Christ, and if not absolutely necessary, being yet necessary to the well being of churches, for the establishment of peace and truth therein. And many churches may so assemble together by their messengers and elders. And their directions and determinations, so far as consonant to the word of God, are to be received with reverence and submission, not only for their agreement therewith, without which they bind not at all, but also for the power whereby they are made, are an ordinance of God, appointed thereunto in his word.

15. Church government and civil government may well stand together, it being the duty of the magistrate to take care of matters of religion, and to improve his civil authority for the observing the duties commanded in the first as well as the second table, seeing the end of their office is not only the quiet and peaceable life of the subject in matters of righteousness and honesty, but also in matters of godliness. I Tim. ii. 1, 2.

These views of the discipline and order and practice of the churches in Massachusetts, which are chiefly taken from Mr. Hubbard's MS. history, do not exhibit the exact view of the platform, but the exact state of our ecclesiastical affairs at the latter end of the century, when he wrote; and are similar to sentiments contained in a book published about that time by Dr. I. Mather, upon "the order of the churches."

The last article does not differ much from the third article of our present constitution of civil government; but would hardly be allowed by the Independents, including among these the Dissenters in England, as well as the various sects scattered in the several states in New-England.

Mr. Hutchinson, who published this state of the churches in the first volume of his history, makes this remark, "After all that may be said in favour of the constitution, the strength of it lay in the union, declared in the last article, with the civil authority. The usual way of deciding differences and controversies in churches, it is true, was by a council, consisting of elders and other messengers of neighbouring churches, and  
where

where there was a general agreement in such councils, the contending parties generally acquiesced ; but if the council happened to differ in apprehensions among themselves, or if either of the contending parties were contumacious, it was a common thing for the civil magistrate to interpose and put an end to the dispute.”\*

It may be permitted an ecclesiastical historian to be more particular in giving an account of this synod, though not the first in order, and because we here find the judgment and practice of our fathers, concerning the government of the church, fully expressed in their platform. This includes not only the form and discipline of the New-England churches, but also their ideas of the doctrines of christianity. For they declare, in the preface to their book, that they believe and profess the same doctrine with the reformed churches in Europe. For though it be not one native country that can bring us of one mind, nor ought we to have the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ with respect of persons ; yet as Paul, who was himself a jew, professed to hold forth the doctrine of justification by faith, and of the resurrection of the dead, according as his godly countrymen did, who were jews by nature, so we, who are by nature Englishmen, do desire to hold forth the same doctrine of religion, which we know to be held by the churches in England, according to the truth of the gospel.

Having perused the publick confession of faith, agreed upon by the Rev. Assembly of Divines of Westminster, and finding

\* If the dispute were about a contract, and could not be settled by a reference, as frequently took place where the council disagreed, people went to law with their brethren. But this was not a common case, as one would suppose from reading Mr. Hutchinson's remark. Being a magistrate, and very eminent, scarcely an instance could escape his observation, where there was an interposition of the civil authority ; but very many disputes were settled in an ecclesiastical way, which the magistrates knew nothing of.

We certainly think that author, who generally is a correct historian, was much mistaken in saying, that the strength of our ecclesiastical constitution lay in the union with the civil authority. It lay in the general respect which the people had for the platform of church discipline. This prevented them from litigious disputes, which would have been in most of the parishes, if their church affairs had been mingled with the courts of justice, however well administered. Some years before the Revolution, this was practised in two or three instances ; only in one county, and left undecided.

finding the sum and substance thereof (in matters of doctrine) to express, not their judgments only, but ours also; and being likewise called upon by our godly magistrates, to draw up a publick confession of that faith, which is constantly thought and generally professed among us. We thought it good to present unto them, and with them all the churches of Christ abroad, our professed and hearty assent and attestation to the whole confession of faith, which the assembly presented to the religious and honourable parliament of England. Excepting only some sections in the 25th, 30th, and 32d chapters of their confession which concern discipline, touching which we refer ourselves to the draught of church discipline in the ensuing treatise.

During the government of Cromwell, the churches of New-England had peace, and there was no very serious attack upon their order and discipline. That evangelick spirit, which warmed every bosom with the love of the gospel, prompted them also to spread the knowledge of it among the aboriginals of the land. The famous John Eliot was then minister of the Roxbury plantation, which bordered upon some of the Indian tribes, to whom he could have easy access, and he improved the opportunity to bring them over to the faith of the gospel; and also to give them a taste for civilized and cultivated society. This man possessed zeal, and uncommon talents for the service. We admire his ardour and perseverance; and the effect of his mission equalled his various exertions. Many have planted, many have watered, but no one ever met with more success in this kind of spiritual husbandry.

His abilities gave him a name among the first divines of the country. He was a popular preacher, and yet preferred the life of an evangelist, that he might benefit an unhappy race of mortals, who had been excluded from the advantages the rest of the world enjoyed. He gained a name, however, superiour to any literary reputation, and will always be styled the Apostle to the Indians. He made himself acquainted with their language; spent nights as well as days in conversing with them; he preached and expounded the doctrines of the gospel to men and women, and gave continual instruction to their children.\* The prospect was fair of bringing whole tribes over from the error of their ways; and many worthy men in Europe,

\* Vide Life of John Eliot, in vol. viii. of Hist. Coll.

Europe, as well as in these regions, enjoyed a luxury of pious sentiment, and while they rejoiced in the lustre of his ministry, freely imparted their offerings to aid the undertaking. Such liberal contributions were made in England, that he was enabled to translate the whole bible into the language of the Indians, which passed through a second edition, with a grammar to assist others, who would become instructors. The book is now preserved in many libraries. It serves to gratify many, who view it as an object of curiosity; and it may hereafter afford light to those scholars, who search into the origin of languages, or compare the various tongues which have been used in the various parts of the globe.\*

It was a great object with Mr. Eliot, general Gookin, and such men as felt an interest in this business, to provide the Indians with clothing, and with many conveniences, as well as all the necessaries of life. They persuaded them to build a town.

---

\* It is not an easy thing to procure an Indian bible at the present day, but there are several to be found, to which those may have access, who have a desire to know what language was spoken by the former inhabitants of New-England. Some words of similar sound, and which ought to be spelt in the same manner, were in use among the different tribes scattered over the American deserts. An Indian could formerly travel to an immense distance, and be understood by the several nations whom he visited, or would very soon become acquainted with the language of other tribes. If we could judge rightly by our observation upon their guttural pronunciation and expressive attitudes, we should say, they all spoke the same language. It is not so with the European nations, which have an exuberant manner of speaking. We see some move their lips, others their tongue, and certainly there is a strange variety of oral contractions. Some have said, that all the Indians to the south of the river St. Lawrence speak the Huron language; or the Indians, as far as Virginia, as a late writer observes; though it is certain, that a different dialect is in every village. Even the five nations, now six, have so much difference, that an interpreter must become acquainted with each tribe, though they can all speak, as one, among themselves. The French priests discover more imagination than judgment, when they say, that the Huron language has a common origin with the Greek; that words of a similar sound and signification occur in each. Had they said, that it has great energy, elevation, and pathos, and nothing about the origin, they might have gained more credit. It is said, the Algonquins have a tongue smooth and elegant. From the various conjectures of scholars and travellers, for nothing else can we call the opinions of those who pretend to know and talk it, the radical difference is great. The Hurons and Algonquins cannot understand each other more than the Italians and High Dutch.

town. The venerable apostle spent a large part of his time in this place, the first Indian town constructed after the European manner, and here the dwelling of the preacher answered several purposes. It was their church, their storehouse, and school room. The Indians soon became acquainted with the Indian language, and some of them were able to preach, or to instruct catechumens; others were made magistrates, in consequence of the wise methods agreed upon, and the benefit was not confined to the natives. The same measures which procured instruction, and established good order among them, tended to promote the peace, tranquillity, and advancement of the true interests of the colony.

It is natural to compare the attempts of the Spaniards to convert the natives of South-America with the most charitable and successful efforts of our fathers in New-England. Their zeal was as great, and perhaps they laboured more. Warriours and priests were engaged in the same cause; and where they could not persuade, they were ready to drive men into the acknowledgment of the religion they propagated. If the poor, untutored Indian could have read the pages of the divine word, he would have said,—Your Master came into the world, not to destroy men's lives, but to save them. He might have desired them to preach from these words, *If the Son of God make you free, you shall be free indeed.* A certain prince, to whom they made the offer of going to heaven after they had deprived him of every earthly blessing, asked them, Whether heaven was the place, where the Spaniards went after death? Upon the reply in the affirmative, Then, said he, let me go to another place. This was the language of nature; but it may convey instruction to men of thought, observation, and experience. Some of their priests were, however, men of humanity. They studied and improved every method of resisting oppression, and making the circumstances of the Indians easy and happy. But in general the priests, as well as the warriours, were cruel. Their bigotry made them so. How very different from the fathers of New-Plymouth and Massachusetts! When Massasoit was sick at Mount Hope, he was attended with every mark of kindness, and he found among them the physician, as well as friend. When any of these Indians died, it was their desire to go and be 'with the Englishman's God.' The spirit of the gospel makes the heart  
tender



tender by impressions of humanity, and there is no instance of a native being forced into an acknowledgment of christianity by the first planters of these northern regions. The missionaries were humble and meek, seeking not their own things, but the good of the poor natives; hence the natives, with all their prejudices about them, could not resist the means of conviction.

The next generation of New-England christians were not so humane and well disposed towards the Indians, as may be learned from the account of that period. But, at present, we are to describe the first attempts.

Among those, who were most earnest for propagating the gospel in North America, we must reckon the worthy Dr. Lake, bishop of Bath and Wells, who declared, that but for his age, he would devote himself to this service. He was one of many, in the old country, who assisted the work by their prayers and their alms.

*The day-breaking of the gospel* \* to the aborigines of Massachusetts was the 28th of October, A. D. 1646. Mr. Eliot had sent a messenger to the tribes in his neighbourhood, acquainting them with his views, and that he should offer to them the glad tidings of salvation. This day he met five or six of them, with Wauban, a man of sobriety, though not a sachem, who had considerable influence with the men of his tribe. When the preacher and his companions had made a kind of salutation, the Indians introduced them to a large assembly, who were gathered to hear the new doctrines preached. In a very apostolick manner the divine addressed them. He began with a prayer to the God of heaven, and then read the ten commandments. He gave a short explanation of each, and then told them of the bad consequences, which would follow the breach of them. He then told them who Jesus Christ was; that he was the Saviour of mankind; that the benefits of his mission were not confined to one nation, or to people of any particular colour, but offered to all who would receive them; that he died for the sons of men, that he had gone into heaven, and would appear again to take with him his friends and followers, and to punish the disobedient. He spake to them of the creation of the world, and the fall of man. He described the joys of heaven, and the torments of hell, testifying repentance towards God, and faith in our lord Jesus Christ. Perhaps

\* See a pamphlet with this title, quoted by Mr. Neal.

Perhaps no hour, since the primitive age of the church, was spent in a more edifying and evangelical manner. When the preacher had done speaking to them in the form of a discourse, he asked them questions, and desired them freely to propose their questions to himself. Upon which one stood up and said, *How am I to know Jesus Christ?* Another asked, *Whether Englishmen were ever so ignorant of Jesus Christ as themselves?* A third, *Whether Jesus Christ could understand prayers which were made in the Indian language?*

A curious question one proposed, which may have arisen from the preacher's discourse, *How there could be an image of God?* Another asked this; *If the father be wicked, and the child good, will God be offended with this child?* Doubtless these things arose from the expressions of the second commandment.

The last question proposed at this meeting was, *How all the world could become full of people, if they were all once drowned in the flood?*

After this conference, which lasted more than three hours, Mr. Eliot and his friend returned to Roxbury. The distance of this town from the place of meeting is about ten or twelve miles.

Upon the 11th of November they gave the Indians another meeting, and then discussed several things of a religious nature. Some of the questions were in the form of a catechism, and discovered how much they knew of the truths delivered at a former meeting.\*

On the 26th of the same month they met the Indians a third time, but the assembly was not so large as formerly, owing to the

---

\* See a particular account of this conference in the biographical memoirs of John Eliot, Hist. Collec. vol. viii., and in the history of Newton, vol. vi. The books from which they are taken are scarce, and some of them not to be obtained, such as *Day-breaking of the Gospel, &c.*, and *The clear Sunshine of the Gospel upon the Indians*; also *Whitfield's Discovery of the present State of the Indians*, pr. London, 1651; *Manifestation of the further Progress of the Gospel in New-England*. Mr. Neal had free access to these writings; but no library in America now contains them. Perhaps the substance of them is contained in his *History of New-England*, and in the *Magnalia*; they may, however, contain valuable information to us at the present day, which Neal and Mather may have passed by. It would be a gratification to the *curious* to have the books in their possession.

the influence of their powaws, a certain kind of priests among them, who were jealous of their own authority, and doubtless felt attached to the customs and superstitions of their ancestors. Those who attended the sermon of Mr. Eliot were very serious, and being moved by his manner of speaking and zeal to serve them, not only received his lessons concerning the christian faith, but his exhortations to change their modes of life. Wampas, a man of wisdom and note, came to Mr. E. bringing several companions, and his son also, to be instructed, and this was a sufficient foundation to establish a school.

The general court gave land for a town, where the Indian converts met together. They called the place *Noonetomen*, which is their term for *rejoicing*. That they formed something like a state of civil society may be seen from their lives and ordinances, which would not discredit a more cultivated and civilized people.\*

The following order was made by the Massachusetts legislature, dated May 26, 1647 :

“ Upon information that the Indians, dwelling among us, are by the ministry of the word brought to some civility, and are desirous to have a court of ordinary judicature set up among them ; it is therefore ordered by the authority of this court, that one or more of the magistrates shall, once every quarter, keep a court, where the Indians ordinarily assemble to hear the word of God, to hear and determine all causes both civil and criminal, not being capital, concerning the Indians only ; and that the Indian sachems shall have liberty to take orders, in the nature of summons and attachments, to bring any of their people to the said courts, and to keep a court of themselves every month, if they see occasion, to determine all causes of a civil nature, and such smaller criminal causes, as the said magistrates shall refer unto them : And the said sachems shall appoint officers to serve warrants, and to execute the judgments or warrants of either of the said courts, which officers shall be allowed from time to time by the said magistrates in the quarter courts, or by the governour. And that all fines, to be imposed upon any Indian in any of the said courts, shall go and be bestowed towards building some meetinghouses for the education of their poorer children in learning, or other publick use, by the advice of the said magistrates,

\* Biographical Memoirs, Hist. Coll. vol. viii.

istrates, and of Mr. Eliot, or of such other elder as shall ordinarily instruct them in the true religion. And it is the desire of this court, that these magistrates and Mr. Eliot, or such other elders as shall attend the meeting of said courts, will carefully endeavour to make the Indians understand our most useful laws, and the principles of reason, justice, and equity, whereon they are grounded, and it is desired that some care may be taken of the Indians on the Lord's day."

While things were so conducted in one part of the country, other Indians also desired to be instructed in the christian faith. In the month of February several sachems met near the place, which our fathers named Concord, and begged the government to form a town, and bring them into a like religious community.\*

They agreed to set aside their old ceremonies; to pray in their wigwams; and to say grace before meat, and after they had done eating. A similar code of laws was also made for them as for those at Nanitomen.

Beside the labours of Mr. Eliot, the Indians were favoured with other instruction. The Rev. Mr. Wilson of Boston, Mr. Allyn of Dedham, Mr. Shepard of Cambridge, and Mr. Dunster, late president of Harvard College, held a conference with these new converts the 3d day of March, 1647.

The ministers desired the Indian women, if they had any difficulties with regard to the christian religion, to propose them, either by acquainting their husbands or the interpreter privately with them. Accordingly one asked, whether she prayed, if she only joined with her husband in his prayer?—Another, if her husband's prayer signified any thing, if he continued to be angry with her, and beat her? At this and every meeting, the English made presents, especially of clothing, so that they appeared decently dressed, men, women, and children, on future occasions.

Mr. Eliot also went to other places, feeling a strong desire to raise the natives from the degraded state, to which they were reduced. Like other apostles, he was in journeyings oft, in perils of water, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness. In a letter to one of his friends, after mentioning how much he had to go through, he says, "he was

---

\* They proposed the side of Bear swamp, or the east side of the pond, since called Flint's pond.

was not to be discouraged." And indeed opposition only renewed his ardour. An Indian sachem once threatened to put him to death. He told him, he dared not do it. His own courage was of admirable use to him; for the way to manage Indians is to let them know, you are not afraid of them. They also were afraid of offending the English government; and they fully believed, that *he* had some connection with the invisible world, as their own powwaws, or priests, had in their deluded imaginations. His usual reply was, when they insulted him, that he did not fear them, because he was under the protection of the God of heaven. The celebrated Philip, king of the Wompanaoges, treated him with scorn, yet dared not injure him. He took hold of his button, saying, he cared no more for the gospel, than for *that button*.\* A sachem of less note, though not less fierce, Cutshamoquin, one time in his resentment against the English protested against the building of a town. This man afterwards became a Christian. When Uncas, sachem of the Mohegans, heard what was doing in Massachusetts, he went to Hartford, and declared, the gospel should not be preached among them. Yet the number of praying Indians, as they were called, amounted to thousands. They were scattered through the settlements in Massachusetts and New-Plymouth, and that part of Rhode-Island, where Roger Williams† resided, called the *Providence Plantations*.

---

\* Neal.

† Roger Williams came over to New-England A. D. 1630. He was then a young man, very respectable as a preacher, but singular in his opinions, which he was disposed to propagate upon all occasions. Hence he disgusted the inhabitants of Boston, and provoked the magistrates. For he would not join with any of the churches, except they would say, that they repented "having communed with the churches of England while they tarried there." He said also, that "Magistrates could not punish the breaches of the first table;" which was a direct censure upon the government of New-England, for they had made severe penalties against breaking the sabbath.

From Boston he went to Plymouth, where he resided two years, teaching the things contained in the New Testament; and also speaking his own opinions upon other matters, without giving offence: for the first settlers of the Old Colony were virulent in their opposition to Episcopacy. Some of them had been Brownists, and they were all of them peculiar in their notions of religious freedom, and the power of the brethren.

He was, however, unwilling to remain among this people, and went

tations. His services can never be forgotten. He did much to tame the savage spirit of the Indians. He had an influence, where Mr. Eliot never could have acquired it. But he did not succeed in serving their spiritual interest, though he did  
 much

---

to Salem while Mr. Skelton was living, in whose pulpit he prophesied, according to the language of the times, when a man preached who had not been inducted into the office of pastor or teacher.

From the early history of this country we learn, that the people who came over with Endicott, and set down at Salem, were more rigid separatists, than those who came in the *Arabella* with governour Winthrop, and, in their views of church government, were jealous of every thing which encouraged priestly power. As an instance of particular jealousy of Presbyterian associations, the conduct of Mr. Skelton and R. Williams is recorded in Winthrop's Journal. It seems, that the ministers of the Bay, including Saugus, or Lynn, as it is now called, met once a fortnight at each other's houses, where some question was debated: at which these gentlemen took exception, "as fearing it would grow into a presbytery, or superintendency, to the prejudice of the church liberties." But this fear was without foundation, as the journalist well observes, because they were all clear in this point, that no church or person can have power over another church, neither did they in their meetings exercise any jurisdiction.

As soon as Mr. Skelton died, the people of Salem fixed upon Mr. Williams to be their pastor. He certainly was a man of admirable good sense, and his pulpit talents were among the very first. But it was a matter of grief and surprise to the magistrates, that the Salem church should proceed in this election, without advising with the council about it: and the court wrote to Mr. Endicott to prevent it, or to delay till they discussed the business.

They proceeded, however, in their own method. Either they did not think the magistrates impartial, or they might suppose the ministers of the Bay had an influence, which the inhabitants of Salem were not obliged to exercise over their church. A reconciliation with the government had taken place, why then should they interfere to embarrass their proceedings? The fact was, a new ground of offence was taken. The subject was of a private nature, and yet made publick. Mr. Williams had written a book, when he was at Plymouth, which contained reflections upon the government of Massachusetts. This was never published; but, while he was there, he read certain parts of it to particular friends. He was called upon to show this copy, by the government, after he again resided in Massachusetts. He acknowledged writing the same, and confessed his fault; but in some measure to exculpate himself, said, that he wrote it at the request of individuals, and that he never had any design of publishing it.

None doubted, nor do any even at this day, but that he was sincere. Yet he again discovered the eccentricities of his temper. We find him very soon accused of breaking his promise, as he preached against the

much good ; and prevented those evils, which would have hurried on their more immediate ruin. Several considerations will account for his being less successful in converting them, than Mr. Eliot, Mr. Mayhew, and others, who formed churches

patent, for which he was ordered to appear before the next court. When he appeared, the other charges were brought against him ; indeed, all the complaints were summed up in four charges, which were specified before the General Court, which met in the month of September, 1635 \* The opinions held and propagated by Mr. Williams were declared to be erroneous ; and the sentence pronounced against him involved the society with which he was connected. They were required to give satisfaction, and he was allowed time to reflect upon the subject, till the next session. The advice of the ministers was asked upon this occasion, which they were equally ready to give ; and it was plainly this : All who imbibe such opinions ought to be removed ; according to the principles of Roger Williams the churches might run into heresy, apostacy and tyranny ; defy the civil magistrate to interfere with any authority ; and introduce confusion and every evil work into society.

What effect the sentence of the court, or the opinion of his brethren had upon him, appears from his conduct immediately upon receiving the accounts of the censure upon himself and people. Being sick, he was unable to meet with his church, and speak on the occasion, but he wrote to them a protestation, that " he would not communicate with the churches in the Bay ; neither would he communicate with the people of his own church, except they would first refuse communication with the rest."

Upon some occasions he had seemed like " the wave which is tossed," but here he resembled the rock, unmoved by the billows striking against it. His church were very much grieved at his conduct. They were very fond of their minister, but well knew that a separation must take place, if he were so fixed in his resolution ; and which took place soon after this pointed address. We learn from governour Winthrop, that when the court met, he was ordered to appear before them, and " the other ministers in the Bay being desired to be present, he was charged with those two letters ; *that to the churches, complaining of the magistrates for injustice, extreme oppression, &c.* and the other to his own church, *to persuade them to renounce communion with all the churches in the Bay, as full of antichristian pollution, &c.* He justified both these letters, and maintained all his opinions, and being offered further conference, or disputation, and a month's respite, he chose to dispute presently ; so Mr. Hooker was chosen to dispute with him, but could not reduce him from any of his errors ; the next morning the court ordered him to depart out of its jurisdiction in six weeks ; all the ministers, save one, approving of the sentence ; and his own church also had him under question for the same cause, who openly

\* Vide Hist. Col. vol. ix.

churches in the American wilderness. He was much discouraged, not only by want of a lawful warrant, "or an immediate commission to be an Apostle to them, but the insuperable difficulty of preaching Christianity to them in their own language with any propriety, without inspiration."\*

He

disclaimed his errors, and wrote a humble submission to the magistrates, acknowledging their fault in joining with Mr. Williams in that letter to the churches against them," &c.

Hugh Peters, of famous memory, was appointed his successor. It seems, however, that some of his opinions prevailed among the members of this ancient church. They were so bigotted, especially against Episcopalians, as led to a controversy, and to a number of questions, which were answered by the elders of other churches.

The magistrates agreed to send Mr. Williams to England by a ship ready to depart, though liberty had been given him to remain till the spring. The reason of such a determination was, that he used to entertain people at his house, and preach to them upon the very points, which had brought him into difficulty; and he had persuaded about twenty persons to be of his opinion. These men had agreed to make a settlement in Narraganset bay, where they might live in peace, and yet have influence over the other settlements. When they went to take him, they found he had left the place, and they could make no conjecture where he was. It appeared afterwards that he went to Secunke, since called Rehoboth, where he procured a grant of lands from the chief sachem of those parts. This place was said to be within the jurisdiction of New Plymouth. Hence he expected further trouble, and resolved to remove. It is said, he used words like these; "A bull of excommunication follows me wherever I go."

He then fixed upon a place, called by the natives Mooshausick, which he named Providence, from a sense of the divine care and protection, when all worldly prospects had faded away, and most of his friends had forsaken him. There were some, who adhered to him amidst the winter's storm, and gloominess of the forest, having followed him to the spot, when he chose his habitation.

The banishment of Mr. Williams was in the winter of 1635, and, by a very strange concurrence of events, this very man, in the year 1637, was employed by the government of Massachusetts to be their agent in the business they transacted with the Indian tribes. Some time before, we find a correspondence opened between him and governour Winthrop. But, this year, he was employed by the magistrates of the colony to make a league, offensive and defensive, with the Narragansets. In all these concerns he acted with wisdom, disinterestedness, and fidelity.

The correspondence began with a letter from Mr. Williams to the governour in behalf of the Indian sachems, who had not been concern-

\* Callender's Discourse.



He had a worse opinion of their character, than the other missionaries, and perhaps he had a worse people to deal with. The Massachusetts Indians had been distressed before the English came among them. Adversity will bend the soul of a  
savage.

---

ed in the murder of captain Oldham; and from this they proceeded to discuss other subjects, till a treaty was finished to the satisfaction of all parties.

The Indian sachems express their gratitude for the kindness and services he had done for them with their friends of Massachusetts; and his former associates, who never willingly renounced him, felt their former friendship revive. They always respected the virtue of the *mon*, his abilities, and integrity; as much as they disliked his bigotry, his singularity, and pride.

From this time we are to view Mr. Williams as a very different character, from what he was, when teacher of a particular congregation in Salem; or would have been, had he continued in Massachusetts among the pastors of the churches. His sphere of usefulness was very extensive, and, where religious opinions had no influence, he conducted wisely, and beyond what could be expected from a man, who had shown such strange prejudices, and whose education gave him but little knowledge of the world. We are to view him, as the father of one of the provinces, and a writer in favour of civil and religious freedom, more bold, and just, and liberal, than any other, who appeared in that generation.

Many would smile at seeing the name of Roger Williams enrolled with the legislators of ancient times, or with the statesmen of modern Europe, or with such a man as Penn, the proprietor of Pennsylvania, whose steps were more majestick upon the theatre of the great world. But this man was equal to conducting the affairs of this infant colony as well, as if a complete system of legislation was formed: and, as a mediator between the aboriginals and the English inhabitants, if he were the instrument of preserving peace, of teaching the Indians some of the arts of life, and of illuminating the minds of the heathen with the *light* of christianity, he is certainly worthy of more credit, than some mighty hunters of the earth, or those sages, whose maxims have made men fierce and revengeful, and caused human blood to flow in streams.

Mr. Callender calls Mr. Williams "one of the most disinterested men that ever lived, a most pious and heavenly soul." Dr. Mather describes him to be a windmill, whose rapid motion set the churches on fire.

As a head of a religious sect, or as an opposer of all the religious sects then professing the religion of Christ in New-England, he is now censured or applauded by persons, who differ in their sentiments upon the discipline of the churches, or the effects of publick worship on the social character of a people. But, leaving this consideration till we review his writings, let us attend to those publick concerns, in which his local situation, his active and benevolent turn of mind, or his love of

savage. Mr. Williams describes the tribes with whom he dwelt, as worse than any other of that degraded species of human beings; or it may be said that he considered all as equally immoral, wretched, and brutal. "The distinction," says he,

fame, might stimulate him to exertion. And here we may discover some political wisdom with his moral worth.

He was very instrumental in settling Rhode-Island, or procuring the grant of land, which Mr. Coddington and others had chosen for their plantation, when they left Boston. The historian of that colony has favoured us with a MS. of his, which he says is in *perpetuam rei memoriam*.

"It was not price and money, that could have purchased *Rhode-Island*, but was obtained by love, that love and favour, which that honoured gentleman, Sir H. Vane, and myself, had with the great sachem, Miantinomo, about the league, which I procured between the Massachusetts English and the Narragansetts in the Pequot war. This I mention, as the truly noble Sir H. Vane had been so great an instrument in the hand of God for procuring this island from the barbarians, as also for procuring and confirming the charter, that it may be recorded with all thankfulness," &c.

If any land was ever fairly purchased of the natives, it was Rhode-Island. Mr. Williams not only satisfied the Narraganset Indians, but also the Wompanaogs, who had once possessed these lands, but which had been taken from them by the superiour force of the other tribe, more numerous, though not more warlike. He thought it good policy to make them gratuities to prevent any dispute in future. Surely that money is well spent, which prevents evil, and serves the cause of humanity.

In 1643 Mr. Williams went to England as agent, and it was there, by the assistance of Vane, he obtained "*A Charter of Civil Incorporation by Name of Providence Plantations in the Narraganset Bay of New-England*." It was dated 7th of March; which form of government subsisted till 1651. Then upon differences, they sent their former agent, and joined Mr. Clarke with him, who transacted the business to the advantage of the colony, and the satisfaction of a large majority of the people.

The Narraganset Indians were disposed to keep peace with the people of this plantation, but there was a time when they were ready to make war upon the people of Massachusetts. They meant to do this suddenly, and would have done much mischief, had not Mr. Williams given early information, for which Mr. Hutchinson gives him great credit, with whom he is no great favourite. For this gentleman, whatever may have been his political errors, was a strenuous friend to the *order and discipline of the New-England churches*. He might also dislike the freedom of Mr. Williams' sentiments upon civil affairs, as well as religious institutions. He tells us, however, that he was much esteemed in England; and quotes a letter to the governour of Massa-

be, "between sober and drunken sachems, is both lamentable and ridiculous; lamentable, that all Pagans are given to drunkenness; and ridiculous, that those (of whom he is speaking) are excepted. It is notoriously known, what consciences all Pagans

chusetts from very respectable characters, noblemen, and others, in which they declare his "good affections and conscience;" "his great industry and travels," and in which they advise the good people of Massachusetts to receive him in all good fellowship. He remarks upon this letter, that it produced a readiness to all offices of christian love and correspondence, but unless he could be brought to lay down his dangerous principles of separation, they saw no reason why they should concede to him, or any so persuaded, free liberty of ingress and egress, lest the people should be drawn away by erroneous opinions.

Roger Williams lived to a great age. He died 1682, forty-eight years after his banishment. The various scenes of his life did not make him alter his sentiments on religious freedom; and his latitudinarian principles had no ill effect in plantations, where there was no church rule or authority. But had they been introduced into Massachusetts, the propagation of them would have disturbed the peace of the community, somewhat like certain ideas on the *rights of men*, which being suddenly diffused, allowing them to be plausible in theory, have caused great civil commotions, and marred the beauty of society.

The first of Mr. Williams' publications was a dialogue between *Truth and Peace*, a book of 247 pages, printed in London, 1644.

It required great boldness of thinking, and uncommon abilities, to write this work. Here are disclosed sentiments which have been admired in the writings of Milton and Furneaux. His ideas of toleration he carried further than Mr. Locke, but not beyond the generality of dissenters in England. The book was answered by Mr. Cotton, whose zeal and knowledge would give him a name among christian worthies in any age of the church, and who was the most distinguished of the clergy in Massachusetts. But so far from supposing himself confuted, Mr. Williams replied with great spirit and argument, which reply has been since published, together with Mr. Cotton's attack upon him, which he called the *Bloody Tenent, washed in the blood of the Lamb*, in allusion to the first writing of Mr. Williams, which he styled *The Bloody Tenent, or Dialogue between Truth and Peace, meaning that the idea of the interference of the magistracy, in matters of religion, is a bloody tenent*.

After writing this treatise the conduct of Mr. Williams was strange; though it did not necessarily flow from the sentiment he had discussed, but was owing perhaps to the singularity of his temper or an oddity to which his solitary condition contributed; which is a lesson to us all not to banish ourselves from society, lest the heart grow cold, and condense a mass of vapours in the imagination. This man now conceived, that there must be new apostles; that christianity had been corrupted and defaced; that there was need of a special commission to restore the modes of posi-

Pagans make of lying, stealing, whoring, murdering, &c." Mr. Callender, to whom we are indebted for this extract, makes some judicious remarks concerning the morals and worship of the Indians. Their faith was much like other tribes.

---

tive worship, according to the original institution. Several of our historians call Mr. R. Williams a Baptist, and say that he founded the first Baptist church in the country. Mr. Callender denies this upon better grounds than *they* assert it. He says Mr. Williams never joined with the Baptist church there; only that he allowed them to be nearer the rule of the primitive church.

The latter days of Mr. Williams were disturbed by other sources of contention, than he had ever experienced. It would be strange if a man of his cast should live to old age, and have his sun set clear, or the evening gilded with tranquillity.

He was called to similar trials, and had to exercise the same patience, and discovered the same irritability, when the order of his little community was disturbed by the Quakers; as the fathers of Massachusetts manifested when *he* first set his face against their proceedings. Many who dwelt in *Rhode-Island*, and the *Providence-Plantations*, joined these *new lights* of the christian commonwealth. Mr. Williams opposed the increase of their numbers every way he could, being disgusted with their doctrines, and their behaviour. George Fox had several publick disputes with him, of which each gives the account, as different as the light of truth, and shades of error. They wrote against each other, and their language is the extreme of vulgarity and abuse. They call the rudest names, such as we hear only from men who rake in the dirt, and appear to despise every thing which looks like courtesy of manners, or the charity of the gospel.

The titles of their books of controversy are as follows:—"George Fox, *digged out of his burrows, &c.* by Roger Williams." The answer—"A New-England *fire-brand* quenched, being an answer to a lying, slanderous book, &c. by one Roger Williams, confuting his blasphemous assertions, by George Fox and John Burnyeat." These controversial pieces were printed about the years 1676—1678, and the contents of a large volume are similar to the title pages.

Many tracts are ascribed to Mr. Williams as a writer. He wrote letters to individuals of his acquaintance, and to gentlemen in office, which are among the most valuable antiquarian stores; some of them very curious and rare. In a letter to major Mason, which is preserved in the first volume of the Historical Collections, he gives a particular account of the friendship of governour Winthrop, when he was "unkindly and unchristianly" driven from Salem; and shows a grateful remembrance of the kindness he received from governour Bradford, and other of his "godly" council. It pleased the Father of mercies to touch many hearts, said he, dear to him with many relentings, amongst which that great and pious soul, Mr. Winslow, melted, and

tribes. They believed in one great and good God, who lived somewhere at a great distance in the south-west, and that the spirits of good men do reside with him. But the government of the world is left in the hands of an evil being, to whom they paid their worship. They had also their festivals, called Nicemmores, which Mr. Williams calls devilish feasts.

That the Indians were among the least improved of any of the human species will be readily granted. They had little or no knowledge of any of the arts of life. Their laziness and love of strong drink have prevented them from making any progress in civilization; especially as they have an aversion to agriculture. The success of the Massachusetts ministers is therefore more the subject of wonder. But, while we admire the zeal of Mr. Eliot, and the prudence as well as diligence of all who assisted him in his evangelick labours, we must allow a great deal for the support, they had from the civil authority. Had not the general court of Massachusetts been as piously disposed, and made the like exertions, the ungrateful soil would never have yielded so rich a harvest.

From

kindly visited me at Providence, and put a piece of gold into the hands of my wife, for a supply.

In this letter he also sends a challenge to the *sages* of the several colonies, and offers to dispute publickly at Boston, Hartford, and Plymouth, against all *forced worship*; affirming that it denies Christ Jesus yet to come, and makes the church yet national, figurative, and ceremonial. He also declares there is no express precept for keeping the Sabbath, or for infant baptism; and says this depends upon the church's pleasure.

It is a desirable object to collect the MSS. of Mr. Williams. He mentions receiving scores of letters from his excellent friend, governour Winthrop. Doubtless there are many letters of his writing, as well as his correspondents, which would be accounted precious by those who desire to know the history of their own country.

The people of Providence have discovered more than common attachment to this father of their city and plantation. For several generations it was their practice to carry all strangers to the spot where he fixed his habitation, and to drink from the spring which run before his door. The present generation still manifest a fondness for his name, having called one of their banks the *Roger Williams Bank*.

A most valuable book was published by the subject of this memoir, upon the language of *savage* America. It is called a *Key* to the language of the *Indians of New-England*. It was printed in 1643, a small duodecimo. The original is in the library of the Historical Society; and most of the contents have been published in their Collections.

From this view of the Indian tribes during a period, when there was a more probable and lively hope of their conversion than has been indulged since, we may turn our attention to the state of religion in our Congregational Churches, which enjoyed rest, and were at peace among themselves, till new causes of dissension arose, and another synod assembled. During the government of the *commonwealth* in England, and the usurpation of Cromwell, their old enemies, the friends of Episcopacy, had no power to vex them. Even the Presbyterians had lost their influence. Every thing served for a cause of triumph to the Independents.

The Independent divines of Great-Britain were warm friends to New-England, though they did not all of them approve our platform of church discipline. There was however such a relation to each other, that, among foreign writers, and many English authors, they have been supposed to be the same body of christians, and ranked among Independents. But this name they never would suffer to be fixed upon them. The churches of New-England are nominally and professedly *Congregational*, says one who wrote in their defence, and they “abhor those principles of Independency, which would prevent them from giving an account of themselves, or their matters, to their brethren of neighbouring societies, regularly demanding it of them.”

They had their opinion, that this form of church government was pointed out in the scriptures, and as firmly fixed, as the Presbyterians, the Lutherans, or the members of the Church of England. They had something, which bordered on a national establishment, if we may compare the inhabitants of this country to a nation, who were, indeed, more like sheep scattered in the wilderness. There certainly was some alliance between church and state during that period of our history, which we are narrating, as is evident from facts.

In the year 1651 the civil authority showed what influence it had over the churches in Massachusetts, by interfering in an affair, which the present age views as purely ecclesiastical. This agreed with the opinion of Hubbard, Norton, and other great divines, who expressed the opinion of the times in which they lived, that the power of the civil ruler is *custos tabulæ utriusque*. The church of Malden made choice of one to be their minister, without consulting the neighbouring churches, which

was considered as a spiritual misdemeanour, a high offence against church and state. The general court at their next session took up the matter, and fined all who were actors in this business. We do not learn what opinion the ministers in the neighbourhood of Malden had, nor is mention made of any ecclesiastical censure. It was first taken up by the civil authority, who gave judgment, and fixed the penalty. In consequence of which the people of Malden rescinded their act, humbled themselves before the publick, and had their fine remitted. Mr. Hubbard says the people of Malden themselves came to see, and also were willing to acknowledge their miscarriage; and thereby gave occasion to others to acknowledge the power of the civil authority in matters of religion, as well as in the affairs of righteousness and honesty, according to the judgment of all sober divines.

For the prevention of the like latitudinarian sentiments and practices in the country, it was soon after made into an order by the general court, that no minister should be called into office in any of the churches within their jurisdiction, without the approbation and *allowance* of some of the magistrates, as well as some of the neighbouring churches.

Upon the same ground the civil authority again interfered A. D. 1653. The church, at North Boston, the second that was built in the town, and thirtieth in the plantation, proceeded to choose Mr. Powel, a man of sense and good character, but who had not a learned education, to be their pastor. The civil authority forbid the connection. They would not suffer a gifted, but illiterate brother to be a publick teacher, lest occasion should be given to introduce such more generally, if allowed in a particular instance. If such persons display considerable natural talents, are they able to instruct the sober-minded, and convince gainsayers? "If they intrude themselves into the sacred function, there is danger of bringing the profession into contempt."

A writer of a narrative ought not to give his own opinion, nor be any ways biassed by party spirit. It is his province only to mention facts. The fathers of this country were so much afraid of ill consequences, that they did not permit even the pastors of the churches to guide this business. They were jealous lest some, more pious than judicious, would assist in ordaining illiterate men, of peculiar gifts, whom they might

suppose earnest in propagating divine truth. The objection to Mr. Powel was not that he was a layman, but that he was wanting in learning; and the people contented themselves with choosing him their ruling elder, as they could not have him for their pastor.\* The

---

\* It is Johnson who calls the second church in Boston, the thirtieth, the church in Plymouth not included. Mr. Higginson's church in Salem is the first in order; the second, the church in Charlestown, Mr. Wilson; 3d. Dorchester, Mr. Maverick; 4th. Boston, Mr. Wilson; 5th. Roxbury, Mr. Eliot; 6th. Lynne, Mr. Bachelor; 7th. Watertown, Mr. Phillips. These seven churches kept a day of thanksgiving for the mercies granted to the country, 16th of October, 1633.

This same year a church was gathered in Newton, afterwards called Cambridge, when it became the seat of the muses.

In 1634, there was a church gathered in Ipswich, their first minister was Mr. Ward, the ingenious author of the *Simple Cobbler* of Agawam. The church at Newbury also, Mr. Parker and Noyes ministers, 1634 or 5. In 1636, Hartford, Messrs. Hooker and Stone; Concord, Mr. Buckley; Hingham, Mr. Hobart; Duxboro', Mr. Partridge; Newhaven, Mr. Davenport in 1637; also Dedham, Mr. Allen; Weymouth, Mr. Thacher; Rowley, Mr. Rogers. From 1636 to 1642, Hampton, Mr. Daulton; Salisbury, Mr. Worcester; Sudbury, Mr. Brown; Braintree, Mr. Thomson; Gloucester, Mr. Blinman; Woburn, Mr. Carter.

From 1642 to 1648, Reading, Mr. Green; Wenham, Mr. Fiske; Haverhill, Mr. Ward; Springfield, *the twenty-seventh church*, Mr. Moxon; Malden, Mr. Sargent; Andover, Mr. Woodbridge; Boston, 2d church. The first sermon preached in it, was by Samuel Mather, son of Richard Mather of Dorchester, and elder brother of the famous Dr. Increase Mather, who was the minister of the church from 1662.

Dr. Cotton Mather tells us, that the gathering of the 2d church in Boston, was very much against the interest of Mr. Cotton, his worthy grandfather, but his name was John, and he reckoned his joy fulfilled in this, that in his own *decrease*, the interest of Christ would *increase*; and therefore with exemplary self-denial, he set himself to encourage the foundation of this church. And that it pleased the Lord so to order it, that his self-denial should turn out to some account, in the opportunities which that *very church* had given to his *children* to glorify the Lord Jesus Christ in the conduct of it. His son-in-law for more than thrice ten years, and his grandson for more than twice seven years, being the minister of the gospel in that *very church*, accommodated with happy opportunities to serve their generation.

In Dorchester burial ground the epitaph upon Mr. Mather the minister, shews the poetry and taste of that day, and also that others had the like opinion of them that they had of themselves—

Under this stone lies Richard Mather,  
Who had a son greater than the father,  
And eke a grandson greater than either.

The elder son, Samuel, is not alluded to in this epitaph, only Dr. Increase, and the author of the *Magnalia*. But Mr. S. Mather was as con-



The conduct of the Massachusetts planters was conformable to the practice of the reformed churches in Europe. It was their earnest endeavour to prevent illiterate men from holding ecclesiastical offices ; or rather the office of pastor, and

---

spicuous in the old country, as any of the family in this. He was one of the chaplains in Magdalen college, Oxford : after that, a senior fellow of Trinity college, Dublin, and pastor of a church in that city, where he died. A biographical sketch of the man, which is compressed from a very considerable surface of the Magnalia, may be agreeable to some readers.

He graduated at Harvard college the second year after the admission of the alumni to degrees. He was the first who ever held the office of fellow, which then was the same as instructor or tutor. He was invited to settle at Rowley and North Boston. When he preached his first sermon to this people, they had their eyes upon him to be their pastor, and Mr. Cotton said, "that such a sermon, from so young a man as this, is a matter of much more satisfaction, than such an one from an elder man, for this young man is *spes gregis*. He continued with this people the ensuing winter ; but he had a desire to visit England before he fixed the place of his habitation ; and he left his native country in 1650, with an expectation of soon returning. The Right Hon. Thomas Andrews esq. was then lord mayor of London, and took such notice of our young American preacher, as to make him his chaplain ; hence he became acquainted with the most eminent men and eminent ministers in the kingdom.

Mr. Mather was invited to settle in many places as a Congregational minister, but he preferred a collegiate life. He retired to Oxford, having proceeded to the degree of master of arts in both universities. When the *English commissioners* went into Scotland, it was their object to select some of the most accomplished divines to accompany them. Mr. M. was one of the persons chosen for that service, and he continued preaching the gospel at Leigh about two years. In 1655 he returned into England, and when lord Henry Cromwell went over to Ireland, as lord lieutenant, he chose him for one of his chaplains, who went to diffuse christian knowledge in the various cities. Dr. Harrison, Mr. Charnock, and others, whose names are well known, and their works much read in New-England, were his associates. He took a degree, and was made senior fellow of Trinity college, Dublin. Dr. Mather, his nephew, says, he might have received further theological distinction, but declined in the words of Melancthon, *Nemo me perperelle potuit, ut illum quamlibet honorificum titulum Doctoris mihi decerni sinerem*. He was elected to the pastoral charge of the church in that city, and as a preacher was highly esteemed, and had extraordinary success. Here he continued till the restoration of Charles 2d. He was then suspended not merely on account of non-conformity, but on account of two sermons, which were styled seditious. He received, however, some attention and kindness from the other party on account of his former conduct, to whom he was always condescending and courteous when the Independents were in power.

and teacher. The *lights* of Geneva would adorn any golden *candlestick*. Hence the protestants in France obtained such a character, and so much influence, being opposed to the most learned of the catholicks. Hence those celebrated divines of England and Holland were able to make such a noble stand against the claims of the hierarchy. Their learning and piety were equally conspicuous, and they gained a reputation, which the wasps of detraction could never injure.

Even Samuel Gorton, the enemy of the New-England churches, thought it necessary to declare his literary qualifications. This I doubt not of, said he, that there has been as much use of the languages in the places where I live, as in any of the churches in New-England.†

At this time all orders of men in civil life had been levelled, and the most ignorant fanaticks set up for preachers in Old England, to serve the purposes of the usurper, who viewed himself as the mirror of the people's majesty. We should bear this in our mind, to account for the conduct of our venerable ancestors who were so jealous, so vigilant, so fixed in their opinion of the order of the churches, and acted so inconsistent with the general sentiments of the Puritans; and which they were so ready to express before they left their native soil. Our fathers were afraid of those men, who one day were soldiers and the next day preachers, and who boasted of belonging to no church, but of possessing all knowledge without

---

Though his preaching was of the puritan cast, he hated persecution in every shape, and treated the royalists with so much urbanity, that they interested themselves in his favour. His sermons however were the cause of his being silenced in Dublin, and he went over to England and preached till the act, which ejected all dissenting teachers, was passed, August 14, 1662. He afterwards preached in his own hired house in Dublin. And he there wrote many treatises—*A defence of the Protestant religion against Popery*—also his *Irenicum*;—and a book against impostors—also a course of sermons upon the types, which he preached 1660—1668, which have this title, *Types of the evangelical mysteries in the dispensation of the Old Testament*.

A. D. 1636, he married the sister of Sir John Stevens, and she died 1668. He did not long survive her, but was called to the reward of his labours October 29, 1671, aged 46.

*Diu vixit, licet non diu fuit.*

† See his letter to Morton.

without the ordinary means of information. Human nature is fond of extremes ; and hence, in one age of the church, nothing more is required, than the sanctified effluvia of episcopal fingers ; in another, when men despise this superstition, they will make no distinction between being heated with any subject, and being gifted by the divine affection. But, the more ignorant and extravagant declaimers, so they are more wise unto salvation : our fathers being persuaded that learning and virtue are essential to the character of pastor of a church, hold forth the rods of their power, which in their opinion would answer two purposes—To keep illiterate men from being ministers of the *word* ; and keep the most learned of the clerical order in subjection to the magistrates. “ Disorders and confusions in the church will not be avoided by the advice, and counsel, and determination of synods, or other messengers of the churches, unless they be a little actuated by the civil authority. All men are so wedded to their own apprehensions, that unless there be a coercive power to restrain, the order and rule of the gospel will never be observed.” This is the language of the times we speak of, and it certainly exhibits a picture of men and manners.

It was during this period that they took into consideration how ministers were to be maintained. The plantations of New-England had never been acquainted with the way of paying tythes. Some protestant churches considered this as blameworthy, if not unlawful. Others thought it was not against the letter of scripture, though not convenient, especially for new countries, such as the towns and villages of New-England. It was left therefore to the power of the county court, throughout the whole jurisdiction, to make sufficient provision for the maintenance of the ministry in the respective towns of the colony, and to rectify the defect upon any complaint, if any such, for want of means for a comfortable subsistence.

Among the magistrates, who were most zealous to support the civil power and order of the churches ; who resisted innovations, and openly opposed tolerations, was governour Thomas Dudley, who died 1653, aged 77 years. He was one of the founders of the colony, and a pillar of the temple. His temper was irritable and his mind was not expanded with the liberal sentiments and polite education of governour Winthrop,

Winthrop, his predecessor; but he always approved himself a lover of justice and a friend of truth. His bigotry arose from his being an enemy to all disorder, heresy, and corrupt doctrine; he discovered the habit of his soul in writing his own epitaph, "I am no libertine."

Besides Winthrop and Dudley, who led in the ecclesiastical as well as civil affairs of the plantation, they lost *three* of their first divines, Hooker, Cotton, and Shepard. Such a loss would be felt at any time, but they were needed especially at this period; for they could no longer expect Puritans of the first character for their pulpit talents and extensive erudition, to leave Great-Britain, as they once did. Such men found sufficient employment at home. It was also unfortunate for the interests of the country, that they had sent away two very eminent divines, Mr. Welde and Hugh Peters, to be their agents in the mother country. They were calculated to do good as preachers of the gospel, and were highly esteemed by the people of their charge, but not famed for political wisdom; nor was it a time of life for them to be made wise by observations on human artifice and deception. They did very little service to the plantation, to which they never returned. Of the men of worth, who remained, beside Mr. Wilson and Mr. Eliot, we may reckon Mr. Norton, to whom the church in Boston turned their eyes, as the successor of Mr. Cotton. He was a very respectable divine, and as a scholar, except president Chauncy, had not his equal.

The people of Ipswich were not willing to part with their minister, but the magistrates and ministers aided the people of Boston, thinking it would serve the interests of religion to have Mr. Norton where his talents could be so well employed, and his usefulness increased.

He was settled in Boston, A. D. 1653. It was one great advantage to the churches of Massachusetts, that Mr. Chauncy remained. He was invited to return to his people at Ware, but was prevailed upon by the earnest wishes of the inhabitants of this province to take the charge and oversight of the college, president Dunster having left the chair on account of his embracing principles of antipedobaptism. Mr. Chauncy was a great defender of the practice of baptising infants; but said they ought to be immersed, which is the

the opinion of the church of England, in which he had been educated, and of the Greek church; but was not the opinion of reformed churches in general. The church of England allow it to be the primitive practice, or most of their divines, and in the ancient buildings there was a font provided for this purpose, but they never made the form essential to baptism; and they now practice sprinkling, as much as any of the Calvinists. It is not our business to discuss the subject, or decide what was the practice of the primitive church, but relate the customs of the churches in this country. There were baptists here many years before a church was built. President Dunster, one of our first scholars and excellent divines, was of the opinion, that infants ought not to be baptised; and president Chauncy thought they ought to be, as soon as they were born, and that they should be dipped in the water. The fathers of New-England were otherwise minded, but they were not so set and particular in their opinion of the form, as to suffer it to be a ground of difference about fixing a person in the chair of Harvard college. Mr. Chauncy was a star of the first magnitude. His name was known and celebrated in Europe; he was well skilled in many oriental languages, but especially the Hebrew, which he knew by close study, and by daily conversation with a Jew who lived in the same house. The heads of both houses elected him professor in the university of Cambridge, before his controversy with archbishop Laud. He changed this branch of instruction to oblige Dr. Williams, the vice-chancellor, and was made professor of the Greek language, in which he was as much an adept. In Leigh's *Critica Sacra*, is a Latin address to the author, by a friend who is called *Vir doctissimus*, which was written by Mr. Chauncy. It is a commendation of the work in a handsome style.

Mr. Chauncy performed the office of president of Harvard college till the year 1671. Under his care the institution grew and flourished; and our churches were furnished with ministers of gifts and talents, who would have been burning and shining lights in any parts of Christendom. Such were several sons of Richard Mather, such was Mr. Mitchel, minister of Cambridge; and others also who adorned their stations in *civil* life, as well as the worthies who discharged their duty in ecclesiastical functions. Mr. Woodbridge and Mr.

Mr. Hubbard were educated under Mr. Dunster. They were also famous men, useful in their stations, one of them minister of Ipswich, and ever to be esteemed for his historical researches. The other was as much known in England. His virtues, his sufferings, and his talents are mentioned, with high respect of his character, by English historians, who give an account of those times. He was one who suffered by the Bartholomew act of Charles 2d, when so many of the best men, and best preachers in England were obliged to put off their priestly robes, and bear every reproach from a vindictive clergy, and a licentious court.\*

Upon

---

\* Mr. Benjamin Woodbridge was educated partly at Magdalen college, Oxon, and then went to New-England, where he finished his academical studies. He was the first graduate of Harvard college. In the language of Dr. Calamy, he was the first fruits, and lasting glory of that institution, as bishop Usher was of Dublin. In the catalogue of our college he is a doctor of divinity. Neither Dr. Calamy, nor Dr. Mather mention this. It must have been under the reign of Cromwell, at the university of Oxford, for under no other administration could a puritan divine receive this honourary distinction from that place. He was one of king Charles's chaplains in ordinary after the restoration. And had the choice of being canon of Windsor, if he would conform; and of ejection, if he would not. He preferred the latter. He had succeeded the famous Dr. Twiss at Newbury, where he continued preaching after he was silenced. In 1671, by king Charles's indulgence, he preached more publickly. Though he was favoured more than nonconformists in general, yet he suffered a great deal, and met with enemies, who had some influence, though of little worth. He died in the year 1684, having been minister of Newbury above forty years, and a great part of his time being able to attend his duty.

His character for learning, piety and moderation, and activity in the line of his profession, highly deserved praise. It must give pleasure to the alumni of the college to hear of his good name, as he was the eldest son of our *alma mater*. He was truly a great man. As a preacher, a christian, a casuist, a scholar, he had more than common reputation. He was called a charming preacher, his voice was remarkable, and his manner graceful. It is said, that his temper was cheerful, his behaviour genteel and obliging. His catholick spirit was manifested when he was one of the commissioners at Savoy. He was very desirous of an accommodation; and concerned to find that his endeavours were fruitless.

Mr. William Hubbard, was also in the first class of graduates in Harvard college. In the book of "Wonder-working Providence," mention is made of William Hubbard, one of the representatives of the general court from the town of Ipswich. It is said, he was among the most able speakers in the assembly 1640. One gentleman from Salem

Upon a retrospect of the times when our churches were at rest, we may consider this to be their state from the assembling of the divines at Westminster, to the restitution of Charles 2d. For there was then no prelatick power to lord over

he allowed to be more fluent, but none more solid and argumentative. This gentleman is supposed to be father of Mr. Hubbard the historian, who was called to be teacher of the Ipswich church, where he continued till the year 1704. He died 24th September, aged 83 years. The year of his ordination I have never been able to obtain; the records of the church of Ipswich not being preserved. His gravestone is not to be found, and none of the present generation can recollect much about him. The oldest men in the town, who tell of those former divines who were contemporary, with him, such as Rogers, Norton, Cobbet, &c. whose manner of preaching they have heard their fathers describe, have no impressions made upon their minds of the character of Mr. Hubbard, who certainly was for many years the most eminent minister in the county of Essex; equal to any in the province for learning and candour, and superiour to all his contemporaries as a writer. Perhaps he was not so fervent a preacher as some. He might want a voice and manner, or that animation in the pulpit which some preachers have, and which will be more talked of, than the still sound of wisdom. Or perhaps he lived too long for his reputation. When a man's life is cut short in the midst of his days and usefulness, the excellences of his name and character are the subjects of remark for many generations. If another continues to old age, and mental imbecilities succeed the more vigorous intellect, he is remembered only in the last stage in life, and he drops into the grave without emotions of sorrow. His name is seldom mentioned in the neighbourhood where he dwelt, while those at a distance, who have heard of his fame when he appeared upon the stage of life with engaging virtue, or read his works with delight, wish to know what were the more minute parts of his character.

Whether these observations apply generally or not, they certainly apply to the subject of this memoir. He has been quoted by all who give accounts of New-England, but few, very few notices of him are in the records of the town, where he spent his days. A letter from the late worthy minister of Ipswich has the following particulars: "Mr. Hubbard was born in 1621; died 1704. I should be happy to furnish you with some anecdotes concerning him, but have inquired of the most aged people, without answering my expectations. Mr. Foster, a deacon of Dr. Dana's society, ninety years old, whose memory is good, says he has heard of Mr. H. as a worthy good man, and reputable minister. That he lived in a house about 100 rods from Dr. Dana's meeting-house, near the high banks of Ipswich river, commonly known here by the name of Turkey shore, and of his house the place and cellar is yet to be seen. The deacon says, that according to his best remembrance Mr. H. married in his old age a second wife, which displeased

over their heritage, and they were entirely free from the spirit of persecution from abroad. But can we suppose such a season to last long, without having some internal differences? and such disturbances as must cause strifes among christians, and perhaps mar the order of the community?

In

his parish very much, for though she was a serious worthy woman, she was rather in the lower scenes of life, and not sufficiently fitted, as they thought, for the station: for people think, said the good deacon, that they have a good right to judge and chuse for a minister in all things, even in the affair of getting a wife." This letter from Mr. Frisbie was written January 26, 1804; and in May following, he wrote, "I have made further inquiry of those elderly men, but cannot learn the precise time of the event so interesting to you from your laudable partiality," &c. "I have searched the town records of Ipswich, and find that there was a Mr. Wm. Hubbard, a man of note and influence, about the year 1640; that he was employed in running the line and marking the bounds between Ipswich, Salem, and Topsfield. In 1643 lands were granted to him in consideration of an highway, which run through his farm. There is no mention of his being representative, nor can I tell whether he was the father of the minister. It is evident, that Mr. H. the minister was preaching in Ipswich 1656, but not settled. Mr. Rogers and he were preaching at this time, and the town had a desire to settle one of them. Mr. Nathaniel Rogers died in 1655. Mr. Cobbet had been settled a colleague with him; and we may presume, that Mr. Hubbard was soon after joined with Mr. Cobbet. For in 1659, I find his name as one of a committee to settle some affairs of the town, which implies that he was an inhabitant. Mr. Cobbet died 1685. There is on the records an account of grants of money to purchase large quantities of sugar, cyder, wine, and other articles to refresh the attendants, and reward a considerable number of men for the services they performed upon that great and solemn occasion. But at Mr. Hubbard's funeral there is no mention made of any expences. You may wonder at this. But some circumstances will assist in explaining it. Mr. John Rogers was settled in 1692. Mr. Fitch was ordained in 1703, and Mr. Hubbard died 1704. They had therefore three ministers at the same time; it was a relief unto them to have one taken away who was useless by age and infirmities. "Alas! the dire effects of loner here."

In the year 1676 Mr. Hubbard preached the election sermon, which is among the very good ones published during that century. He was among the seventeen ministers who bore testimony against the old church in Boston when they settled Mr. Davenport, and also when the general assembly approved of the act of the first church, and censured the proceedings of the third church, commonly called the Old South. The division excited upon this occasion interested the passions of the people at large, so as to give a new complexion to publick affairs. Most of the deputies, who had so severely censured the brethren who built



In the year 1656 the churches of New-England began to feel some inquietudes from certain questions, that were agitated among themselves, and caused vehement disputes among brethren who held communion with each other, as members of the same body, and which were not settled till a synod was called to advise, and determine the future discipline of the churches.

About this time also the Quakers made their first appearance in Massachusetts. And the spirit of persecution was extended to the Baptists.

It may be proper to relate the causes of strife and contention in the order here laid down, and also the several events, which happened in consequence of the tumult that was excited.

The first source of uneasiness was the question concerning baptism of children; whether any should have this privilege, except the children of those who partook of the Lord's supper. Doubts and differences had arisen in the minds of some divines; others were fixed in their opinion, that no alterations should be made. In the same church, was frequently  
manifested

the Old South church, *for their spirit of innovation, and leaving the good old path of their fathers*, were left out, and new members chosen. The town of Ipswich took an active part in this matter; and Mr. Hubbard's influence had considerable effect upon their proceedings.

In 1684 Mr. Hubbard presided at the commencement. This was after the death of President Rogers. But though Dr. Increase Mather was in the neighbourhood, the Senatus Academicus saw fit to send for a minister from the county of Essex; so respectable was his character among the literary men of his profession.

The publications of Mr. Hubbard were not very numerous. They consist of several volumes in duodecimo. One of which is a narrative of the Indian Wars; memoirs of Maj. Gen. Dennison, &c. But his chief attention was paid to his MS. history, which was founded upon the plan of Winthrop's journal. For some reason or other neither of these MSS. were permitted to be seen by the publick, till lately the journal has been printed. In all his histories Mr. Hubbard appears a steady friend to the Constitution of the Churches. He expressed indignant feelings at the erection of the church in Brattle-street upon a more liberal plan than our fathers were willing to adopt.

There is nothing of this said in his MS. history, which only comes down to 1680, but he speaks pointedly in his private letters to several gentlemen, and in the last thing which he published, his Dying Testimony to the Order of the Churches, which he wrote jointly with Mr. Higginson of Salem.

manifested a difference of opinion between the pastor and certain of the brethren. The first settlers, with the exception of very few, were members of the churches where they lived, and they confined baptism to the offspring of believers who, in their opinion, would come as readily to one ordinance as the other. But when the plantation increased, and new churches were gathered, some of them expressed a different opinion.

There were sundry families, who had received this privilege in the European churches; and to be denied it in New-England they thought a strange thing.

This occasioned many debates among the ministers of this country. Zeal excited party spirit. It is a delicate and difficult matter to make innovations. It is peculiarly so, if we have to stem the torrent of prejudice; or where prejudices of a religious nature, warp the minds of the disputants, or heat them with zeal.

There has seldom been a case more delicately circumstanced than this, in ecclesiastical affairs. The ministers, who were willing to have the privilege of baptism, met with opposition in their own societies, as well as with their brethren in the ministry. Such as were popular carried their point, but others, who had less influence, were obliged either to yield their opinion, or to use the language of the psalmist, "Wo is me that I sojourn in Mesech, and dwell in the tents of Kedar."

This dispute first arose in Connecticut. As it was customary in each colony to consult the magistrates upon every important subject, whether civil or religious; the rulers of Connecticut sent to the magistrates of Massachusetts to hold a council upon the subject of baptism. The meeting was held in the town of Boston the 4th of June 1657. They mutually agreed to call some of the clergy to the conference, in whose wisdom and prudence they could confide. About twenty ministers assembled; and the magistrates recommended to them, that they should search the scriptures upon this point; and compare the practice of other churches with the practice of their own. The result of their deliberations, after debate of considerable earnestness, was presented to the magistrates of each jurisdiction. "These careful *nursing* fathers," says Mr. Hubbard, "foreseeing many difficulties would arise, took the prudent course for the clearing up of the truth in controversy,  
unto

unto universal satisfaction, lest otherwise differences in judgment should beget or occasion uncomfortable animosities, if not paroxysms of contention, that might in this way be more easily prevented, than healed, if they once broke out, which the event made too evident afterwards."

The object of both magistrates and ministers was peace. Knowing how great a matter a little fire kindleth, they were afraid of a general conflagration, and would not finish their result till they were all agreed; or if they were not all of the same opinion, the unity of affection should not be disturbed. Very contrary to what Gregory Nazianzen observes of ecclesiastical councils: for it was his opinion, that they always cause contentions, and end in disorder.

They submitted their questions and answers to the magistrates, for the service and improvement of the churches, both in Connecticut and Massachusetts.

Some papers, which contained the result of these consultations, were sent to England, and made publick by the gentleman to whom they were committed. No publication of them had been made in these parts, as might be expected, therefore he, in the year 1659, caused them to be emitted from the press.

A book containing the substance of the disputation was entitled, *A dispute concerning church members, and their children, in answer to twenty-one questions.*

These questions, with their answers, may with great propriety be combined with the materials of our church history.

*(To be continued.)*

---

AN ACCOUNT OF THE SEVERAL RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES IN PORTSMOUTH, NEW-HAMPSHIRE, FROM THEIR FIRST ESTABLISHMENT, AND OF THE MINISTERS OF EACH, TO THE FIRST OF JANUARY, 1805. BY TIMOTHY ALDEN, JUN., MEMBER OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY AND OF THE SOCIETY IN THE STATE OF NEW-YORK FOR THE PROMOTION OF AGRICULTURE, ARTS, AND MANUFACTURES.

**I**T is a subject of regret, that the first volume of the Portsmouth town records has not been preserved. The second, after

after exhibiting a few extracts from the former, commences with the transactions of the year 1652. It is considerably mutilated with age, and ought, ere now, to have been transcribed. Nothing is to be found in it, from which we can learn who were employed, as preachers of the gospel, in this place, which was first settled by Europeans in 1623, prior to Richard Gibson.

A grant was made, by the ancient inhabitants of the lower end of Pascataqua, of fifty acres of land for a glebe, on the 25th of May, 1640. From the instrument,\* by which this sequestration was effected, it appears that a parsonage house and chapel† were already erected on the premises, and that the people had chosen Mr. Richard Gibson for “their first parson.”

“He‡ was sent from England, as minister to a fishing plantation, belonging to one Trelawney. He was wholly addicted to the hierarchy and discipline of England, and exercised his ministerial function, according to the ritual. He was summoned before the court, at Boston, for scandalizing the government there and denying their title; but, upon his submission, they discharged him without fine or punishment, being a stranger and about to depart the country.”

The inhabitants of Portsmouth, having been left, in 1638, by the widow, who was the executrix of Mason, the original proprietor, to shift for themselves, were, for several years, under a government of their own formation, as were those of Dover and Exeter, respectively; but, in April, 1641, these petty republicks put themselves under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. It was, probably, about this time, or soon after, that Gibson took his departure.

“In December,§ 1642, those of the lower part of Pascataqua invited Mr. James Parker, of Weymouth, [near Boston] a godly man to be their minister. He by advising with divers of the magistrates and elders accepted the call and went and taught among them, this winter, and it pleased God to give great success to his labours, so as above forty of them, whereof the most had been very profane, and some of them professed enemies to the way of our churches, wrote to the magistrates

---

\* Town records.

† Appendix, note A.

‡ Belknap's New-Hampshire.

§ Winthrop's Journal.

magistrates and elders, acknowledging the sinful course they had lived in, and bewailing the same, and blessing God for calling them out of it, and earnestly desiring that Mr. Parker might be settled among them. Most of them fell back again, in time embracing this present world."

Doctor Belknap asserts, that he had been a deputy in Massachusetts, that he was a scholar, and that, after leaving Portsmouth, he removed to Barbadoes and settled there.

At a town-meeting,\* 11 April, 1655, the inhabitants "generally acknowledged themselves willing" that Mr. Browne should continue their minister, as he had been, if he were so pleased. Whence he came, how long he tarried, and whither he went is not known.

At a town-meeting,\* 27 October, 1656, it was voted to send to Mr. Samuel Dudley, son of the deputy governour, with whom the selectmen† agreed, on the 10 of the following month, to be their minister, to come the next spring, and to have fourscore pounds a year. He settled in Exeter, where he died, in 1683, at the age of 77.

The selectmen‡ sent Henry Sherburne, 7 September, 1657, to a Mr. Woster,§ with a call from the inhabitants of Portsmouth to be their minister, in case they and he should agree, he giving them a visit. Whether he came, or not, does not appear.

Although several candidates were successively employed in this town; yet no one was ordained, till almost fifty years, from the time of its first settlement, were elapsed. Of the temporary preachers, already mentioned, Gibson|| was the only one, who followed the ritual of the English church.

The selectmen,¶ Brian Pendleton, John Cutt, Richard Cutt, William Seavey, and Henry Sherburne were empowered by the town, 27 August, 1657, to build a new meeting house. This was, accordingly, erected on the rise of land a few paces to the southward of Pickerin's mill dam, and, in 1664, it was furnished with a bell. In 1660, Richard Cutt was chosen by the selectmen to superintend the work of transforming the old meeting-house, which, in 1640, was called a chapel, into a dwelling-house for the use of the minister.

The

\* Town records.

† Called *townsmen* frequently at that period.

‡ Town records.

§ So written in the town records.

|| Langdon in reply to Ogden.

¶ Town records.

The reverend Joshua Moodey,\* the first, who was ordained in Portsmouth, is supposed to have begun his labours here, early in 1658. He was then supported by eighty-six subscribers. There was a formal vote of the town, 5 March, 1660, for his regular establishment in the ministry. A church, however, was not gathered, in this place, till the year 1671; though Mr. Moodey appears to have preached here steadily from the time of his first coming. This part of the country owed much to the talents, the christian example, and the pastoral fidelity and zeal of this distinguished character. His account of gathering and carrying on the church of Christ in Portsmouth, which is written in a fair hand, will, no doubt, be more acceptable, than any abridgment of it, which the author of this compilation can offer. It has therefore been copied from his records and is here subjoined.

“Portsmouth, N. E. anno 1671. After many serious endeavours, which had been used by the then minister of the place, since the pastor of the church there, in publick, and by several of the inhabitants in private, the Lord, without whose presence and blessing man builds but in vain, was pleased, at length, to lay the foundation of an house for himself in this place, of the beginning and progress whereof here follows a brief but true account.”

“In the winter time of the foregoing year, viz. 1670, there were several meetings together of the minister with several of the inhabitants, who were members of other congregations in the country, and by providence settled inhabitants in Portsmouth, to discourse and confer about that great work and necessary duty of entering into church fellowship, that themselves might enjoy all the ordinances of the Lord’s house and their little ones also might be laid near God’s altars and brought up under the instruction and discipline of his house. Nor could they, that were members of other churches, any longer satisfy themselves to live without the enjoyment of these edifying and strengthening ordinances, that their souls had, in some measure, formerly tasted the good of, though now, for some years, been kept from. Others also well affected to the work professed their longings after those fat and marrowed things in God’s house,  
and

---

\* So spelled by him.

and their readiness to join with them in helping to build, if they should be found fit for the same."

"Hereupon, several assembled in private, and sought the Lord by fasting\* and prayer, that he would discover to us a right way, there being many fears and discouragements before us, for ourselves and our little ones, and we hope we may say he was entreated of us, as the event hath in some measure, blessed be his name, made manifest."

"It was agreed that those, which were in full communion with other congregations abroad, should acquaint the respective churches, to which they did belong, with the motion on foot, and desire their advice, approbation, countenance, and prayers therein, which was accordingly done."

"There was a meeting appointed in a private house, wherein all, that had given in their names for the work, were to assemble and to read each to other a reason of the hope, that was in them, by giving account of their knowledge and experience, that so they might be satisfied one in another, and be capable of joining together as members of the same body. Several days were spent in this exercise, to the mutual refreshing and endearing of the speaker, and to the awakening and warning of others of the neighbours that were, as they had liberty to be, present at these exercises."

"In fine, there was another meeting to inquire whether all, that had made relations, were so satisfied one in another, as to their relations and conversations, as that they could with freedom of spirit join in a body together, and unite in the same society, according to the rules of Christ. What ground of scruple lay upon the spirits of any, with reference to one or other of the forementioned company, was lovingly and plainly propounded, and satisfaction was ingenuously tendered on the one party and accepted by the other. Furthermore, we did discourse of and discover our apprehensions and persuasions concerning the order and discipline of the house of God. And there was a unanimous consent unto what had been publickly delivered in many sermons in the latter end of the year 1670, and the beginning of the year 1671, from Ezekiel xliii. 10, 11, 12, about the laws, ordinances, and forms of the house, with the goings out thereof and the comings in thereof.

'Of

\* Ezra viii. 21, 22, 23.

Of such high concernment did and do we account it to be for peace and edification of the whole, that both pastor and people should in these matters, at least for the substance, and as near as may be in mere circumstantialia also, speak the same things."

"Hereupon, there were some appointed to acquaint the civil authority, according to the law of the country, with what was thought on among us, that by the good liking and encouragement of the same, we might make an orderly and comfortable procedure in the work before us. Which being done, several churches were sent to and entreated to send their elders and messengers upon the ———, which was appointed for the gathering of the church and ordination of officers therein. The church of Cambridge was sent to, because the pastor did belong to that church. They brought his dismission. Also the church of Ipswich, Rowley, and Hampton. They met accordingly, and governour Leverett came also."

"He that was appointed pastor preached in the morning out of Ezekiel xlvi. ult. After sermon some intermission was made, and, on their meeting again, the pastor with all those, who were to be the beginners of the new church, made their relations, and those, who were members of other churches, had their dismissions, and all made their relations whether members or non-members, and they were approved of by the messengers of churches and embodied into a church by an explicit covenant. Then the pastor was ordained after the unanimous vote of the church for choice of him and liberty given to all the congregation to object, if they had ought to say. He was ordained by several of the elders at the desire of the church, Mr. Cabot giving him his charge, and Mr. Wheelwright the right hand of fellowship. Then the pastor ordained Samuel Haines deacon, with imposition of hand and prayer. A psalm was sung and the congregation dismissed by the pastor with a prayer and blessing."

"The church covenant that those, who first embodied, did on that day publickly and solemnly enter into."

"We do this day solemnly and publickly, in the presence of God and his people, avouch the one only living and true God, Father, Son, and Spirit, to be our God, and his word or revealed will to be our rule, and do with ourselves give up  
our



our children to be the Lord's. We do also professedly and heartily subject ourselves to Jesus Christ, as the head of his church, and do covenant and promise that we will submit ourselves to the government of Christ in this particular church, according to the laws of his house, that we will watch over our brethren and be watched over by them, according to rule, and that we will in all things so demean ourselves towards our pastor and fellow members, as also towards all others, as becomes the gospel, that the Lord may dwell among us and bless us, and we may be a peculiar people to his service and glory. And all this we promise by the help of Jesus Christ, and in his name, looking up to him for his assistance, as being of ourselves capable of doing nothing. Subscribed by Joshua Moodey, John Cutt, Richard Cutt, Elias Stileman, Richard Martyn, Samuel Haines, James Pendleton, John Fletcher, and John Tucker."

In 1684, while lieutenant governour Cranfield was at the head of the province, a very extraordinary kind of persecution, for this part of the world, took place. Mr. Moodey had distinguished himself by his independent and faithful manner of preaching and the strictness of his church discipline. The following anecdote\* is given in brief; but shows something of the man.

A Scotch ketch had been seized and carried out of the harbour, by night, the owner of which, G\*\*\*\*\* J\*\*\*\*\*, a member of the church, swore, upon trial, that he had not had a hand in sending her away, and that he knew nothing about it; but, the circumstances were such, there were strong suspicions that he had perjured himself. He found means, however, to settle the matter with Cranfield, so that "he forgave him all;" but Mr. Moodey judged it necessary, notwithstanding what the governour had done, to do something to vindicate the honour of his church. He preached a sermon "upon swearing and the evil of false swearing," had several church meetings, called the offender to account, and, at length, brought him to a publick confession. This proceeding, on the part of Moodey, irritated Cranfield to the highest degree. In order to have opportunity to let off the artillery of his vengeance upon the persevering and conscientious pastor, he was determined to put the uniformity act into operation; the consequence

\* Drawn from Moodey's records.

sequence of which was, that Mr. Moodey was indicted, 5 February, 1684, and was imprisoned for thirteen weeks. The following statement is in his own language.

“The pastor was indicted by governour Cranfield for refusing to administer the sacrament of the Lord’s supper unto him, after the way of the church of England, and because he had often administered it after another way. He pleaded liberty of conscience, allowed by the commission, but was impleaded by Joseph Raynes, king’s attorney, and was sent to prison, where he continued thirteen weeks, and then, by the intercession of some friends, was dismissed with a charge to preach no more on penalty of further imprisonment. The persecution being personal, and his mouth utterly stopped, while the other ministers in the province were undisturbed, and there being a door opened to preach elsewhere, it was thought adviseable for him to take up with a call to the old church in Boston, where he continued preaching till the year 1692, and then by advice of a council, he returned to Portsmouth again in the beginning of the year 1693. The judge of the court was [captain of the fort] Walter Barefoot, the justices Mr. Fryer, Peter Coffin, Thomas Edgerly, Henry Green, and Henry Robey. Overnight, four of the six dissented from his imprisonment; but, before next morning, Peter Coffin, being hectorred by Cranfield, drew off Robey and Green. Only Mr. Fryer and Edgerly refused to consent, but by the major part he was committed. Not long after, Green repented and made his acknowledgment to the pastor, who frankly forgave him. Robey was excommunicated out of Hampton church for a common drunkard, and died excommunicate, and was by his friends thrown into a hole, near his house, for fear of an arrest of his carcass. Barefoot fell into a languishing distemper, whereof he died. Coffin was taken by the Indians and his house and mills burnt, himself not slain but dismissed. The Lord give him repentance, though no sign of it have appeared. Ps. ix. 16.”

“The church was often visited by the pastor, in this interval, and kept up their private meetings and fasts, and so held together, though some removed, and others were taken away by death.”\*

After the departure of Cranfield, messengers were, several times,

\* Moodey’s records, in the hands of Rev. Dr. Buckminster.

times, sent from Portsmouth to Boston to treat with Mr. Moodey about his return. Copies of the letters, which passed between him and the selectmen upon this subject, are preserved in our town records, from which it appears that the affection between him and the people of his former charge was mutually retained. Some difficulty, however, seems to have subsisted in his mind, so that he thought it adviseable not to leave Boston without the recommendation of a council. He was, accordingly, urgent that the church at Portsmouth should concur in a measure, which he considered as important. The people, for what reason it is uncertain, did not second his proposal, and at length, as Mr. Moodey made it a *sine qua non*, relinquished the expectation of his return.

During Mr. Moodey's absence, one Gilbert Laurey preached at Portsmouth for a season. John Cotton, son of Seaborn Cotton, who afterwards succeeded his father in the ministry at Hampton, was invited to settle in this place and take the oversight of the flock; but he\* advised that further application should be made to Mr. Moodey, who, in the beginning of 1693, by recommendation of an ecclesiastical council, previously obtained, resumed his pastoral charge over a people, by whom he had been greatly esteemed, and with whom he spent the remainder of his days in usefulness, harmony, and love.

Joshua Moodey was born in England, as is supposed, and was brought to this country when very young. His father,† William Moodey, was one of the early settlers of Newbury, and lived on a place about a mile to the southward of Rev. Mr. Popkin's meeting house. Joshua Moodey was graduated, at Harvard College, in 1653. From the catalogue it appears that he was one of the fellows of his alma mater, and Belknap‡ asserts that he was invited, upon the death of president Rogers, which happened, in 1684, to take the oversight of the College, which he modestly declined.

Being on a visit to Boston, he died, after a short illness, on the sabbath, 4 July, 1697, in the 65 year of his age. Doctor Cotton Mather preached his funeral sermon from these words, "Looking steadfastly on him, they saw his face, as it had

---

\* Town records.

† Letter from Rev. Silas Moodey, of Arundel, to the author. App. note B.

‡ Hist. New-Hampshire.

had been the face of an angel." His eulogist calls him *that man of God*. *Quam multa quam paucis!* He gives him a very excellent character to which\* the reader is referred, as the limits of this compilation would be too much extended by quoting it entire.

The list of Mr. Moodey's baptisms amounts to one hundred and ten only. The number of communicants, which had been admitted into the church at Portsmouth, previous to 1697, is one hundred and sixty.

One work, of which Mr. Moodey was the author, was printed at Boston by Richard Pierce, in 1685, 12mo. p. 109. It is entitled "A practical discourse concerning the choice benefit of communion with God in his house, witnessed unto by the experience of saints as the best improvement of time, being the sum of several sermons on Psalm 84, 10, preached at Boston, on lecture days." This little volume is accompanied with a preparatory address, to the reader, by Rev. James Allen, which gives it a handsome and just encomium. What other works he published is not known.

The *ninety-third volume* of Mr. Moodey's manuscript sermons, the last of which is numbered 4070, and dated, 30 September, 1688, is in possession of the author of this account; and, likewise, a copy of a very solemn *exhortation*, delivered by this noted divine, 6 March, 1686, before the execution of a malefactor, who had been convicted of murder. This copy is supposed to be in the hand writing of John Templestone, to whom it belonged, in 1687.

The settlers of Strawberry Bank, as the town plat of Portsmouth, especially that part of it comprising and in the vicinity of Church Hill, was originally called; of Great Island, or Newcastle; of Sandy Beach, a part of Rye; of Sagamore, or Witch Creek; and of Greenland† used to resort to the Bank, or Portsmouth, for publick worship till about the last of the seventeenth century.

Rev. Nathanael Rogers was ordained in this place, 3 May, 1699. He was a descendant from John Rogers, who suffered martyrdom in the reign of queen Mary, and inherited so much of the spirit and talents of his renowned ancestor, that his labours in this part of the vineyard, like those of his learned

\* Magnalia.

† App. note C.

learned and pious predecessor, were abundantly blessed by the great Head of the church.

An unhappy division, as it gave rise to considerable animosity, originated among the inhabitants of Portsmouth, in 1712. At that time, it was thought expedient to build a new meeting house; and, as the northern part of the town was then become populous, it seemed reasonable that it should be fixed in a situation more central, than was the antient one, at Pickerin's dam. It is said that the people at the south end were willing that the new meeting house should have been erected on the spot where Mr. Joseph Haven's house now stands, or on the rise of ground nigh it. This, however, was too far from the north end to meet the ideas of the inhabitants in that quarter. They had determined upon the northeastern corner of the twelve acre lot, reserved as part of the glebe, for building the new house of worship. The tradition is, as handed down by some, that the people of Greenland,\* who were desirous of a separation from Portsmouth, were induced to come forward, in a spirited manner, to aid in carrying the vote of the town agreeably to the wishes of the north end, and that those, whom they thus befriended, were, in their turn, to assist in making Greenland a separate corporation. The point was gained, and Greenland experienced the kindness, which tradition says had been promised.

The author of this compilation has been told that, although the minister and a majority of the town were in favour of repairing to the new house, when completed, for publick worship, yet a majority of the antient church was in the opposition. If this were a fact, it is probable that some of them were so far advanced in life, or otherwise so infirm, as not to be able to attend in the sanctuary; because there is a regular vote of the church, in the records kept by Mr. Rogers, dated 7 January, 1713, authorising and directing him, on "the next sabbath comę se'nnight, to preach in the new meeting house, and to continue preaching there, as formerly at the old meeting, and to perform all other offices, which appertain to his function."

The people, at the south end, appear to have much resented

---

\* Newcastle, to which Rye was attached, was set off several years before.

ed the proceedings of the major part. At a general town meeting 9 September, 1713, captain John Pickerin, who was warm in the cause of the south end, was chosen moderator. After passing two votes, it is said, disorders arose and the justices dissolved the meeting; yet Pickerin put a number of things to vote, which were carried; such as, that\* the old meeting house shall continue town meeting house forever, and, when too much decayed with age to be repaired, that a new one shall be erected in its place; that the glebe land formerly given by the town for the use of the ministry shall wholly remain to the benefit of the minister, who shall officiate in said house; that a committee shall wait upon Mr. Rogers to see if it be his pleasure to continue preaching at the old meeting house, during his abode in the town, if not, that the said committee shall provide an able minister, for the said place of worship, and agree with him for his salary, which agreement, so made, shall be ratified and fulfilled by the town, &c.

It is hardly probable that there would have been such an unhappy misunderstanding in the town, were it not for the advantage, which, as some thought *unfairly*, the north end gained over the south, relative to the glebe. However, it is certain the patronage of the glebe, or the right of presentation, according to the original grant, was to be in the "parishioners, or greater part of them, forever;" so that, if the vote for placing the new meeting house, on the spot, where it now stands, were in all respects fairly obtained, the inhabitants, at the south end of the town, had no reason to complain, seeing they chose to forego the privilege of their part of the glebe† rather than be under the necessity of walking a few rods further to attend publick worship.

When Mr. Emerson came to preach in the old meeting house, it gave dissatisfaction to Mr. Rogers and his church, insomuch that they made attempts for calling a council to advise upon the subject. Whether any council ever met and, if it did, what was the result, is unknown.

The reverend Nathanael Rogers‡ was son of John Rogers,  
president

---

\* Town records.

† This glebe land, which would now be of great value, was mostly disposed of, at long leases, many years ago, for a trifling consideration.

‡ App. note D.

president of Harvard College, and was born at Ipswich, 22 February, 1669. He was graduated at Cambridge, in 1687, and died, 3 October, 1723, and was interred, as was his successor also, in the ancient burial ground, usually called the *Point of Graves*. The slate, which was let into his monumental stone, and upon which his epitaph was written, is not to be found. The late president Stiles, when a preacher in this town, copied off the inscription, which by that mean, has been preserved and is here subjoined, as the best eulogium in the power of the compiler to offer the Historical Society.

Hic sepelitur reverendus Nathanael Rogers, A. M.

Jesu Christi minister fidelis ;  
 prosapiâ studiis evangeliiis devotâ  
 oriundus ;  
 ingenio, eruditione, integritate,  
 moribusque suavissimis  
 valde ornatus ;  
 benevolentiæ, fidei, pietatis  
 exemplar illustre ;  
 theologiæ consultissimus ;  
 concionator præclarus  
 ecclesiæ pastor vigilantissimus ;  
 natus est Ipsvici, 7mo. kalendas Martii,  
 MDCLXIX.

In Jesu sinum efflavit animam  
 5to. nonas Octobris,  
 MDCCXXIII.

זכר צדיק לברכה :

Mr. Rogers kept a record of his baptisms, admissions into the church, and marriages ; but, as some part has been lost, the number of neither can be determined. He was repeatedly solicited to publish some of his sermons, but ever declined.

The reverend Jabez Fitch succeeded Mr. Rogers. His church records, if he kept any, are supposed to be lost. The time of his installation is unknown.

Being a resident\* at Cambridge, he was invited, in the latter part of 1702, by the antient parish of Ipswich, to settle as  
 colleague

\* Letter from Reverend Levi Frisbie to the author.

colleague with reverend John Rogers. He was, accordingly, ordained in the course of the following year.

On the 13 of December, 1723, soon after the vacancy at Portsmouth, he withdrew\* from his pastoral office at Ipswich, on account of the incompetency of his support, and was probably established here, in a short time after. The people of his former charge were displeased at his leaving them; yet, such appears to have been their regard, they repeatedly exerted themselves for his return. It is not certain that his removal was ever sanctioned by the voice of an ecclesiastical council. Pecuniary differences, between him and the people of Ipswich, were not finally adjusted till 22 September, 1726, and then by way of arbitration.

He was born† at Norwich in Connecticut, in April, 1672, and was the fourth son, by a second marriage, of reverend James Fitch. He was graduated at Harvard College, in 1694, and was both a tutor and a fellow of that seminary. From this circumstance it may be conjectured that he was a gentleman of distinguished talents and learning; and, especially, as he was called to a settlement at Ipswich, which, at that period, was one of the principal parishes in the country, and had been furnished with a series of ministers of the first reputation. He died of a nervous fever, 22 November, 1746, in the 75 year of his age, after a pious and useful ministry in Portsmouth of more than 20 years' continuance.

He had a taste for historical researches and made a collection of facts, relative to New-Hampshire, of which doctor Belknap availed himself, when writing upon this state, and for which he has given credit.

Four sermons are extant, which Mr. Fitch published while at Portsmouth. The first, from Psalm xxviii. 5. was occasioned by the great earthquake, which happened, 29 October, 1727. The second was preached in Gosport, on one of the Isles of Shoals, 26 July, 1732, at the ordination of reverend John Tucke, from these words, "I will make you fishers of men;" Matthew, iv. 19. The other two, from Jeremiah xiv. 8, 9. were designed to lead people to a religious improvement of the *throat distemper*, which prevailed in 1735 and 6. He also published an account of that fatal disorder,

\* See note in the preceding page.

† App. note E.



as it appeared, in New-Hampshire, for fourteen months prior to 26 July, 1736.

The north Parish, 6 November, 1745, invited Mr. Samuel Langdon, he having been the grammar school master in Portsmouth, to assist Mr. Fitch. It was stipulated that he should have liberty to continue his school, so long as the aged minister should be able to perform the duties of his station, and then become his successor in office.

Mr. Langdon was not ordained till 4 February, 1747. At this time the number of communicants, in the church committed to his care, exceeded one hundred and sixty.

Being invited to take the oversight of Harvard College, his ministry in this town ceased, 9 October, 1774. In 1780, he resigned the presidency of that institution and, once more, entered on the milder task of teaching a church of Christ. He was installed at Hamptonfalls, 18 January, 1781. His extensive knowledge, hospitality, patriotism, and piety secured to him, in this calm retreat, the affection and respect of the people of his charge and of his numerous acquaintance. He departed this life, 29 November, 1797, having nearly completed the 75 year of his age.

He was a native\* of Boston and became a graduate of Harvard College, in 1740. He received the degree of doctor of divinity from the university of Aberdeen, in Scotland, and was a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

The following is a list of the doctor's publications. Possibly some are omitted. 1. A sermon, from Jeremiah xxiii. 28, 29, delivered in Greenland, 3 November, 1756, at the ordination of the late reverend Samuel Macclintock, D. D. 2. Joy and gratitude to God for the long life of a good king and the conquest of Quebec, a thanksgiving sermon, preached at Portsmouth, 10 November, 1759, from the 13 first verses of Psalm xxi. 3. An impartial examination of Mr. Robert Sandeman's letters on Theron and Aspasio, printed in 1765. 4. A summary of christian faith and practice, drawn up, principally, in scripture language, printed in 1768. 5. A sermon, from Micah iv. 5. on the coincidence of natural with revealed religion, delivered at the Dudleian lecture, in Cambridge, 1 November, 1775. 6. A sermon, from 1 Thessalonians, ii. 13, preached

\* App. note F.

preached in Dublin, New-Hampshire, at the ordination of reverend Edward Sprague, 12 November, 1777. 7. A sermon, from Ecclesiastes, vii. 1, delivered in Cambridge, 9 May, 1779, occasioned by the death of professor Winthrop. 8. A sermon from Deuteronomy, iv. 5, 6, 7, 8, preached at Concord, at the annual New-Hampshire election, 5 June, 1788. 9. Observations on the revelations of Jesus Christ to saint John. 8vo. p. 337, printed in 1791. 10. A discourse, from 1 Timothy, iii. 14, 15, delivered in Portsmouth, before the Piscataqua Association, 26 January, 1792. 11. Corrections of some great mistakes committed by reverend John Cosens Ogden, printed in 1792. 12. Remarks on the leading sentiments of reverend doctor Hopkins' system of doctrines, in a letter to a friend, printed in April, 1794. In 1761, colonel Joseph Blanchard and doctor Langdon, having taken great pains to prepare, published a map of New-Hampshire, which they inscribed to honourable Charles Townsend, esquire, his majesty's secretary at war and one of the privy council.

The late doctor Stiles\* preached his first sermon in the north parish, 6 April, 1777, and agreed to remove to Portsmouth and carry on the work of the ministry, for one year, or till he should return to his flock in Newport. He, accordingly, on the 29 of May following, brought his family to this place, and staid till the summer of the next year, when he repaired to New-Haven, having been previously chosen president of Yale College. From the benefit of his instructions and example, and from the acquaintance, which the people formed with him, during his continuance here, his name will long be mentioned with respect, in this part of the country.

In 1776, reverend David Macclure, D. D. now settled at East Windsor, in Connecticut, had an invitation, which he did not accept, to take the pastoral care of this church and congregation.

Reverend Joseph Buckminster, D. D. was ordained, 27 January, 1779. The baptisms from that time to the present, amount to nearly eight hundred, and the admissions into his church, in the same period, to seventy-five. From the records of Samuel Penhallow, esquire, who has been clerk of the north church, ever since June, 1757, the number of baptisms,  
from

\* Church records.

from that date to this, is sixteen hundred and sixty-seven, and the admissions one hundred and sixty-one.

Haines, Fletcher, Keais, and Morse were deacons, in this town, at an early period. Since the time of Mr. Rogers the following is a list of those, who have filled the office of deacon in the north church. Captain Tobias Langdon, Samuel Hart, Thomas Peirce, Thomas Peirce, son to the former, Samuel Sherburne, Samuel Penhallow, esquire, William Parker, esquire, father of the late bishop Parker of Boston, Daniel Lunt, Elisha Hill, Ammi Ruhamah Hall, and Job Harris. The two last and deacon Penhallow are still living.

The plate belonging to this church consists in six cups of antique form, dated 1705; a christening bason, dated 1714; a tankard, given, in 1764, by Mrs. Mary Gambling, widow of honourable Benjamin Gambling, esquire; and two large flagons, the silver for making which was given by Thomas Wibird, esquire, who died 12 November, 1765, in the 59 year of his age.\*

#### SOUTH PARISH NOT INCORPORATED.

It has already been suggested that a part of the inhabitants of Portsmouth, at the time a majority repaired to the new, or north meeting house, in 1713, chose to continue the assembling of themselves together, for publick worship, at the ancient building near Pickerin's dam.

Rev. John Emerson was invited, 24 May, 1703,† to settle in the ministry at Newcastle, where he was soon after ordained by reverend messieurs John Cotton, John Pike, and John Clark. In 1712, for what reasons the author of this work has not been able to ascertain, his pastoral relation was dissolved. Having, for some time, preached in the old meeting house, in Portsmouth, he was installed there, 23 March, 1715. Rev. Christopher Toppan,‡ in presence of reverend Caleb Cushing and Theophilus Cotton, gave him the customary charge.

Mr. Emerson was a native of Ipswich and received the honours of Harvard College, where he was educated, in 1689. He very providentially escaped || with his life, 27 June, the same

---

\* North parish incorporated 1791.

† Newcastle records.

‡ Emerson's records.

|| Belknap's New-Hampshire.

same year, by declining, though strongly urged, to lodge at the house of major Waldron, in Dover, on the fatal night, when the Indians wreaked their vengeance on the unsuspecting inhabitants of that place. He crossed the Atlantick, in 1708, spent some time in the city of London, and was handsomely noticed by queen Ann. He died, on the 21 of June, 1732, in the 62 year of his age, and was interred in the Cotton burial ground.

The old meeting house was constantly used, during the life of Mr. Emerson; but, soon after his death, was converted into a dwelling house. In 1731, the present south meeting house was built. After it was raised, Mr. Emerson made a prayer upon a stage, fixed in the frame for the occasion, and it is still recollected, by the aged, that he particularly gave thanks, that no accident had happened in preparing, and putting the frame together. This was the last publick exercise he performed.

During his ministry, in Portsmouth, he baptized seven hundred and sixty-two, and received into his church one hundred and twenty-four. Forty of these were added in course of a year after the great earthquake of 1727. Mr. Emerson took care to cherish a becoming remembrance of that alarming providence by preaching an occasional discourse, ever after, on the evening of the 29 of October. It is to be regretted that none of his sermons were published, as they would, no doubt, have done honour to his memory. He is said to have been an agreeable companion and a faithful preacher of the gospel.\*

Rev. William Shurtleff was ordained at Newcastle, in 1712. He was invited, upon the death, to become the successor, of Mr. Emerson. He was, accordingly, installed in the south parish of Portsmouth, 21 February, 1733.

Mr. Shurtleff † was a native of Plymouth, in Massachusetts, and was numbered among the graduates of Harvard College, in 1707. He left this world for a better, 9 May, 1747. His remains, as were those of Mr. Strong, were deposited under the communion table of his church. No stone has been erected to his memory. His name, however, will long be mentioned with respect, for his uncommon meekness and patience under great trials, and for distinguished piety as well as pastoral fidelity. During his ministry in this place, he baptized more than seven hundred, and admitted one hundred and

\* App. note G.

† App. note H.

and thirty communicants. He was a great friend and promoter of the revival of religion, which became so general about the time of 1742. In the course of this year, he had sixty-three added to his church.\*

Mr. Shurtleff published, 1. A sermon, from Galatians ii. 2, which he preached in the parish of Rye in Newcastle, 14 September, 1726, at the ordination of reverend Nathanael Morril. 2. A sermon from Psalm cxvi. 3, 4, 5, delivered at Newcastle, 1 January, 1727, in commemoration of the sufferings, preservation, and deliverance of a company of mariners, some years before, shipwrecked on Boon Island; with an address to hon. John Wentworth, esq. 3. A sermon, from Revelations ii. 1, preached at North Hill, in Hampton, 31 October, 1739, at the ordination of reverend Nathanael Gookin. 4. A sermon, from Luke xxiii. 42, occasioned by the execution of Sarah Simpson and Penelope Kenny,† and in the hearing of the former, delivered 27 December, 1739. This sermon is preceded by an address to the reader, of which Mr. Fitch was the author. 5. A sermon, from Romans x. 1, preached in Boston, 18 September, 1741, at a monthly evening lecture. 6. An account of the revival of religion at Portsmouth, published in the 22 and 48 numbers of the Christian History for 1743.

After the decease of Mr. Shurtleff, several candidates were employed in the South Parish. Of those, who officiated the longest, were Mr. Samuel Moody, the late preceptor of Dummer Academy; the late John Phillips, LL. D. the munificent founder of the Academy at Exeter; and reverend Daniel Little, the late esteemed pastor of the church at Kennebunk, in the town of Wells.

Reverend Job Strong was ordained, 28 June, 1749. He was a native of Northampton,‡ in Massachusetts, and was graduated at Yale College, in 1747. It is much to the honour of this young Melancthon, that he was one, of the two, particularly recommended§ by the pious David Brainerd to the commissioners at Boston, as a promising character for missionary

---

\* Shurtleff's records.

† These were the first executions in the state of New-Hampshire.

‡ App. note I.

§ See Brainerd's Life.

sionary labours among the Indians. He sat out for Ohonoquaugo\* the last of 1747; but, having reached Schoharie, he was taken unwell, and stopped four days' journey short of the place of destination. However, he spent about six months on this tour, and returned so full of the expectation of future usefulness among the poor natives of the wilderness, that he was determined, having put his hand to the plough, not to look back. The people of Portsmouth had heard an excellent account of Mr. Stroug, and delegated Matthew Livermore and Henry Sherburne, esquires, to Northampton, to invite him to this place. Mr. Edwards, supposing him to be raised up in providence to water the seed, which Brainerd had successfully sown, was unwilling he should go to Portsmouth, but upon the express condition, that he should shortly resume his missionary labours. The gentlemen, who went after him, were obliged to promise Mr. Edwards, that they would not use their influence for his establishment in this place. However, though *they* kept their word, the people here soon gave Mr. Strong an invitation to settle with them. He gave a negative answer, and went to the commissioners in order to receive directions, as to his further services among the aborigines; but, his health was so impaired, they were fearful of his inability for the task, and relinquished their claim to him. The call at Portsmouth was renewed and accepted; but the people had opportunity to rejoice in his light only for a little while. He died after a short and painful illness, on Monday, 30 September, 1751, at about the age of 27. His baptisms were one hundred and four, and his admissions eleven.

The author of this work has seen no publication from his pen, except a letter, preserved in Brainerd's life, addressed to his parents, which, in some measure, evinces the piety of his heart, and the interest he took in the religious welfare of the poor Indian tribes.

Reverend Samuel Haven, D. D. the present senior minister of the South Parish in Portsmouth, was ordained, 6 May, 1752. At the time of his settlement, the church consisted of two hundred members. The baptisms, from the period of doctor Haven's establishment, to 1 January, 1805, amount to  
about

---

\* Information from Rev. Gideon Hawley, who was a missionary also among the Indians.

about two thousand, and the admissions to two hundred and thirty.

Rev. Timothy Alden, junior, was ordained collegiate pastor, 20 November, 1799.

The following is a list of those, who have officiated as deacons in this church, so far as can readily be determined. Richard Shortridge, James Sherburne, captain Mark Langdon, Daniel Jackson, Isaac Williams, John Marshall, John Noble, Nadab Moses, John Marshall, son of the former of that name, Jonathan Locke, and Solomon Cotton. The three last are still living.

The plate belonging to the south church consists in six antient cups, without date; a christening bason, the fruit of a bequest, made by captain George Walker, in 1740; and a tankard given by Mrs. Mary Shurtleff, widow of the minister before mentioned.

Deacon Noble, who died 19 October, 1801, aged 67, gave the income of two shares in the Piscataqua bridge to a helpless grand daughter, and, after her decease, to the poor of the parish forever.\*

#### EPISCOPAL SOCIETY INCORPORATED, 1792.

About the year 1732, some gentlemen, who were fond of the mode of worship practised in the church of England, contributed to the erection of a building for the purpose. Mr. Thomlinson† was greatly instrumental in procuring aid in England for completing and furnishing it. The consecration of this edifice, which was originally called Queen's chapel, but now St. John's church, took place in 1734.

Rev. Arthur Browne,‡ a native of Drogheda, in Ireland, became the first incumbent, in 1736. He was educated § at Trinity College in Dublin, and received the degree of master of arts, 29 July, 1729. He was ordained by the bishop of London

---

\* The south meeting-house is an important land mark for mariners coming into Piscataqua harbour. The steeple was struck with lightning, 7 May, 1759, and was greatly injured. A particular narrative of the effects was written by doctor Haven, and was published in Fowle's New-Hampshire Gazette, number 136. It was also struck once before.

† Belknap's New-Hampshire.

‡ App. note K.

§ Letter from rev. Asa M'Farland, who obtained the substance of this paragraph from Mrs. Roche.

London for a society in Providence, Rhode-Island, whither he repaired, and tarried till his removal for this place. He spent the remainder of his days, as a missionary, with the episcopal church in Portsmouth, and died, soon after Mrs. Browne, in 1773, having just entered his 74th year.

His character is respectfully given in the following quotation from a letter \* addressed by the bereaved church, 2 July, 1773, to the secretary of the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts. "Good conduct, a most noble and benevolent disposition, excellent preaching, sound doctrines, and good oratory were qualifications regularly exhibited and ever conspicuous in our late faithful divine."

He published, 1. A sermon from Proverbs xxii. 6, delivered 27 December, 1739, the day appointed for the execution of Penelope Kenny. 2. A sermon from Proverbs xxiv. 21, on the folly and perjury of the rebellion in Scotland, preached at Portsmouth, 23 February, 1746. 3. A sermon from Isaiah i. 20, delivered on the annual fast, 6 May, 1757. 4. A sermon, on the doctrine of election, from 1 Peter i. 2, preached at Portsmouth, 1757. 5. Remarks on doctor Mayhew's *Incidental Reflections*, by a son of the church of England, printed in 1763, are supposed to have been written by Mr. Browne.

After the death of this gentleman, the episcopal church was for many years neglected, having only transient supplies.

Rev. John Cosens Ogden, a native of New-Jersey, and ordained by bishop Seabury, became his successor, in December, 1786. He was a preacher of popular talents, but too great a bigot for this age of catholicism. Some imprudences, which were more the fault of his head, than of his heart, occasioned dissatisfaction in the minds of his people, so that he found it expedient to leave them, in 1793. He afterwards, at times, showed symptoms of a mental derangement, and is said to have died suddenly at Chestertown, Maryland, in 1800.†

His publications, which the author has seen, are, 1. A sermon from Nehemiah v. 19, delivered in Concord, New-Hampshire, at the annual election, in June, 1790. 2. A sermon from 1 Corinthians i. 10, preached in Nottingham, 7 September, 1790, before the Columbian Lodge. 3. An address delivered at the opening of Mr. Benjamin Dearborn's academy

\* Church files.

† App. note L.



academy in Portsmouth, on Easter Monday, 1791. 4. Letters occasioned by the publication of an epistolary correspondence, which had been carried on between him and the late doctor M'Clintock.

Rev. Joseph Willard, the present rector of Saint John's church, was ordained deacon, in the city of New-York, 22 February, 1795, and priest, on the 24 of the same month, by right rev. Samuel Provost, D. D. His baptisms amount to nearly four hundred.

Many valuable donations have in times past been made to this church, which, from one cause and another, have been lost. The plate, at present belonging to it, consists in two large flagons, a christening bason, a cup, and a salver, with the royal stamp, said to have been presented by the queen of England, at an early period of the church, in honour of whom it was called, originally, Queen's Chapel; and a cup given by captain Christopher Rymes, in 1736.

The late Theodore Atkinson, esquire, gave two hundred pounds sterling, the interest of which is laid out in bread, which is distributed, every sabbath, among the poor of the church, agreeably to an article in his will.

An elegantly printed bible, from the Clarendon press, was presented, in 1793, by Arthur Browne,\* esquire, representative in parliament for the university of Dublin, in Ireland, to this church, in token of his affection and respect for a congregation of which his grandfather was formerly pastor.

An elegant marble baptismal vase stands by the altar with a brazen cover, upon which is the following inscription, said to have been written by Wiseman Clagett, esquire, viz. "Sara, Catharina, et Anna Elizabetha, Johannis Tufton Mason cohortis structoris filiæ ornatissimæ hoc *baptistorium*, ex Gallicis manubiis apud Sinegalliam, sub auspiciis predicti Johannis acquisitum, ecclesiæ Anglicanæ apud Portsmouth in provinciâ, vulgo vocatâ New-Hampshire, liberaliter contulerunt Anno Domini, 1761, et vicesimo sexto prædicationis Arthuri Browne, Wiseman Clagett, et Samuel Livermore ecclesiæ procuratoribus."

IN-

---

\* Arthur Browne, LL. D. late fellow of Trinity College, Dublin, and king's professor of Greek, was a son of rev. Marmaduke Browne of Newport. [1807.] See Literary Miscellany.

INDEPENDENT CONGREGATIONAL SOCIETY, INCORPORATED IN  
1796.

In 1757, a number of persons, of both sexes, withdrew from the congregational churches in this town. They stated\* that, in their opinion, the Cambridge platform for discipline and the New-England confession of faith for doctrine ought to be followed, as being agreeable to God's word, and established by authority.

In 1758, the foundation of a third congregational society was laid, and, in November, 1760, land was purchased for building a meeting-house,† which was so far completed as to be opened by the 17 of May, 1761. The principal people concerned, in the formation of this society, were Joseph Cotton, John Elliot, Abraham Elliot, Perkins Ayers, Ebenezer Jose, of the church, and Benjamin Mackay of the congregation. The church was embodied 14 October, 1758, being assisted by the reverend messieurs John Palmer and Paul Parks, the former of whom occasionally visited this new church, and administered the ordinances till the time of Mr. Drown's settlement.

Reverend Samuel Drown, a native of Bristol, Rhode-Island, was ordained 2 November, 1761, by reverend Alexander Miller of Plainfield, Paul Parks of Preston, and John Palmer of Windham, Connecticut. He was principally distinguished by an honest sincerity and zeal in the Redeemer's cause. He was beloved by his people, and laboured among them in the work of the ministry till his death, which took place, in his 50 year, 17 January, 1770. The baptisms in this church, at the time of his decease, had amounted to eighty-one, and the communicants to seventy-six. Of these sixteen were received in 1764.

After the death of Mr. Drown, reverend Joseph Marshall, of Canterbury in Connecticut, had an invitation to become his successor; but he declined on account of some domestic afflictions.

In 1779, reverend Curtis Coe, now of Durham, having received a call from this church, answered in the affirmative; and

\* Letter from the aggrieved, preserved among doctor Haven's records.

† App. note M.

and the day for ordination was appointed. The council was convened, but did not agree, to the disappointment of the people, and Mr. Coe withdrew.

Reverend Joseph Walton, the present pastor of this church, became a ruling elder in 1777. He used to read and expound the scriptures, on the sabbath, while without a minister, till, at length, the church invited him into the pulpit. His performances were so acceptable that he received an invitation to take the pastoral oversight of the flock, and was ordained by his church, 22 September, 1789, without other assistance. His baptisms are seventy, and admissions thirty-four. Fifty-seven were baptized by various ministers, in the interval, previous to his settlement.

The Cambridge platform, with a few exceptions, was adopted at the first formation of this society. Accordingly, the following, at sundry times, have been chosen, and have officiated, as ruling elders, viz. Joseph Cotton, John Elliot, who afterwards became a Sandemanian, Theodore Moses, George Jerry Osborne, and Anthony Langford, the two last living; and the following, as deacons, viz. Abraham Elliot, Perkins Ayers, Samuel Bowles, Samuel Drown, son of the former pastor, and James Day, the two last of whom are still living.\*

#### SANDEMANIAN SOCIETY.

Mr. Robert Sandeman† came to this country about the year 1764. His peculiar tenets attracted the attention of many, and gave rise to a new denomination in the christian world. Several societies were soon formed, which are called by his name. The most of them, however, are reduced to a small number of members. One of these societies was formed in Portsmouth. A building was erected, for a place of publick worship, which stood on Pleasant-street, nigh the spot where, since its demolition, colonel Thomas Thompson has built his dwelling-house. Daniel Humphreys, esquire, has stately officiated, for a number of years, as a teacher to this little flock.

UNI-

---

\* The author is indebted for a considerable part of the information relative to the independent congregational society, to rev. Mr. Walton.

† App. note N.

**UNIVERSAL SOCIETY, INCORPORATED IN 1793.**

The first formation of a society of universalists, in Portsmouth, was about the year 1780. Regular meetings commenced in 1782, and, in two years after, Mr. Noah Parker began his ministrations, which continued till his death, 17 August, 1787. From this period, the supplies of the pulpit were only occasional, till 1794, when reverend George Richards received an invitation to settle here, which he accepted, and was ordained, in July, 1799.

The meeting-house was built, in 1784, under the superintendence of the honourable George Atkinson, Jeremiah Libbey, and Jacob Treadwell, esquires. Mr. Atkinson was a liberal benefactor. At present no church is formed. Children are received by dedication and prayer, but water is not used, unless their parents conscientiously request it. Upwards of a hundred have passed this form since the establishment of Mr. Richards in this place.\*

**BAPTIST SOCIETY.**

In September, 1802, a baptist society was formed in Portsmouth, by the instrumentality of elder Elias Smith. The church, which was first gathered in March, 1803, consists, at present, of one hundred and seventy-five members, twenty-four of whom belong to other towns.

**LASTLY.**

At a certain period, while there was but one religious society in Portsmouth, there was an attempt to form a parish at the Plains, two miles from the state-house. A building was erected, in which there was occasional preaching, till about the middle of the last century, when it was taken down.

\* App. note O. Intelligence from reverend Mr. Richards.

—  
APPENDIX.

The following notes, connected with a work necessarily comprising many minutæ, may not, perhaps, be unacceptable to the readers of the Historical Collections.

*Note A.*

Twelve acres of the glebe were within the present town plat, abutting, forty-four poles, upon Pleasant and Court-streets, and extending to the westward.

The parsonage house is said to have stood upon the spot, where the late doctor Langdon erected his dwelling-house, now owned by honourable John Goddard, esquire.

The building, which, in 1640, was called a chapel, appears ever after to have been called a meeting-house, when any thing was said about it.

The late Mr. Ogden supposed, from the manner in which the instrument of conveyance was worded, that the original donors of the glebe designed their gift for the support of the episcopalian mode of worship. His intemperate publication on the subject, in 1791, drew forth a reply from doctor Langdon, which gives a rational statement of the matter. It was while the inhabitants of Portsmouth were under a government of their own fabrication, in 1640, that they made a grant of fifty acres of land for a parsonage, in the words of doctor Langdon, "With a general pious design, that the advantages of publick religious worship might be enjoyed among them, as they had endeavoured to form a civil government. But in the first beginnings of their government, they had no laws to render votes of town-meetings valid, with respect to property; nor any forms of conveyance of any kind, but such as were taken from the laws of England. Therefore, the inhabitants thought it necessary to confirm their vote of a parsonage by a legal deed, and no other forms existed, but such as were peculiarly accommodated to the church of England. Accordingly, they drew a deed in the best manner they were able, which was signed and authenticated by the governour and some [nineteen] of the inhabitants, and in which several appropriate church terms were unavoidably used. But, that they might secure to themselves the sole management and benefits

benefits of this parsonage, they expressly reserved in the deed the right of presentation, that is, of patronage; by which reservation, they had a right to chuse and induct whatever ministers they pleased, and consequently to worship in any form which they should think best."

In the deed, alluded to, fifty acres of land for a glebe are granted to "Thomas Walford and Henry Sherburne, *church wardens*, and their successors forever, as feoffees in trust." Hence, officers under this name were appointed from time to time in the antient congregational society of Portsmouth; and although, when the society was at length divided into two, the one retained the glebe, the other as well, as that, followed the practice, and does to this day, of chusing, annually, three or four wardens.

#### *Note B.*

William Moodey had three sons, Samuel, Joshua, and Caleb, who, according to tradition, were born in England. Mr. Moody of Arundel is a descendant from Samuel, and those in York, district of Maine, of this name, from Caleb.\*

The pear trees were, not long since, standing in Newbury, which Joshua Moodey engrafted while an undergraduate.\*

Nothing very satisfactory has been ascertained as to the names or the number of reverend Joshua Moodey's children. He had one daughter, who married — Pike, several of whose children were baptized by their grandfather. Rev. Jonathan Russell of Barnstable, grandfather of the late Eleazar Russell, esquire, of Portsmouth, married another daughter. It is presumed that Samuel Moodey, who was a temporary preacher at Newcastle, prior to the settlement of Mr. Emerson, and who, in 1705, was an inhabitant of Boston, was his son.

.....

After this compilation was finished, the author received a letter from rev. William Bentley of Salem, from which the following extract is subjoined, as exhibiting an honourable testimony to the manly independence and benevolent disposition of Mr. Moodey.

"In the times of the witchcraft in Salem village, no person, distinguished for property, and known in the commercial

\* Rev. Silas Moody's letter to the author.

cial world, was accused but Philip English. He came young into America from the island of Jersey, lived in the family of Mr. Hollingworth, a rich inhabitant of Salem, and afterwards married his only daughter and child, Susanna. The wife had received a better education, than is common even at this day, as proofs, I hold, sufficiently discover."

"From some prejudices, as early as 21 April, 1692, she was accused of witchcraft, examined, and committed to prison in Salem. Her firmness is memorable. Six weeks she was confined; but, being visited by a fond husband, her husband was also accused and confined in the same prison. By the intercession of friends, and by a plea that the prison was crowded, they were removed to Arnold's gaol in Boston till the time of trial."

"In Boston, upon giving bail, they had the liberty of the town, only lodging in prison. Upon their arrival Messrs. Willard and Moody visited them, and discovered every disposition to console them in their distress. On the day before they were to return to Salem for trial, Mr. Moody waited upon them in the prison, and invited them to the publick worship. On the occasion he chose for the text, *IF THEY PERSECUTE YOU IN ONE CITY, FLEE TO ANOTHER.* In the discourse with a manly freedom he justified every attempt to escape from the forms of justice, when justice was violated in them. After service Mr. Moody visited the prisoners in the gaol, and asked Mr. English whether he took notice of his discourse? Mr. English said he did not know whether he had applied it as he ought, and wished some conversation upon the subject. Mr. Moody then frankly told him that his life was in danger, and he ought by all means to provide for an escape. Many, said he, have suffered. Mr. English then replied, God will not suffer them to hurt me. Upon this reply, Mrs. English said to her husband, do you not think that they, who have suffered already, are innocent? He said, yes. Why then may not we suffer also? Take Mr. Moody's advice. Mr. Moody then told Mr. English that, if he would not carry his wife away, he would. He then informed him that he had persuaded several worthy persons in Boston to make provision for their conveyance out of the colony, and that a conveyance had been obtained, encouraged

aged by the governour, gaoler, &c. which would come at midnight, and that proper recommendations had been obtained to governour Fletcher of New-York, so that he might give himself no concern about any one circumstance of the journey; that all things were amply provided. The governour also gave letters to governour Fletcher, and, at the time appointed, Mr. English, his wife, and daughter were taken and conveyed to New-York. He found before his arrival, that Mr. Moodey had dispatched letters, and the governour, with many private gentlemen, came out to meet him; and the governour entertained him at his own house, and paid him every attention while he remained in the city. On the next year he returned."

"In all this business, Mr. Moodey openly justified Mr. English, and, in defiance of all the prejudices which prevailed, expressed his abhorrence of the measures, which had obliged a useful citizen to flee from the executioners. Mr. Moodey was commended by all discerning men, but he felt the angry resentment of the deluded multitude of his own times, among whom some of high rank were included. He soon after left Boston and returned to Portsmouth."

"Mrs. English died in 1694, at 42 years of age, in consequence of the ungenerous treatment she had received. Her husband died at 84 years of age, in 1734."

"This is the substance of the communication made to me at different times from madam Susanna Harthorne, his great-granddaughter, who died in Salem 28 August, 1802, at the age of 80 years, who received the account from the descendants of Mr. English, who dwelt upon his obligations to Mr. Moodey with great pleasure."

#### *Note C.*

In the early settlement of this part of the country, such was the attention to the preached word, women used frequently to walk from Greenland to Portsmouth, six or eight miles, in order to attend publick worship.

#### *Note D.*

At the ordination of Mr. Rogers, reverend William Hubbard of Ipswich gave the pastoral charge, Mr. Pike of Dover  
the



the right hand of fellowship, Mr. Payson of Rowley began, and Mr. Cotton of Hampton concluded\* the service of the day with prayer.

The Mr. Rogers† of Portsmouth was one of the sons of John Rogers,‡ a physician by profession, but occasionally a preacher, who, in 1682, became the president of Harvard College. He was therefore a grandson of the Nathanael Rogers, who came to New-England in 1636, and settled at Ipswich. The Nathanael last mentioned was son§ of the celebrated John Rogers, of Dedham, in England, who was a grandson of John Rogers, the first martyr in queen Mary's reign. In other words, the grandfather of Mr. Rogers of Portsmouth was a great-grandson of him, who nobly suffered at the stake in Smithfield, 4 February, 1555.

Mr. Rogers of Portsmouth married Sarah Purkiss. Her mother was originally a Pemberton, and living in her second widowhood, then of the name Elatson, in the family of Mr. Rogers, in 1704, when the antient parsonage was burnt, she was so scorched, as to survive only a few weeks. At the same time an infant child of Mr. Rogers, and a negro woman, likewise perished.

The following is a list of the children of reverend Nathanael and Sarah Rogers. 1. Honourable Nathanael Rogers, esquire, physician, whose wife was the widow Rymes, but originally Dorothy Sherburne, and whose only child is honourable judge Rogers of Exeter. 2. Sarah, the wife of reverend Joshua Gee of Boston. 3. Elizabeth, who lost her life in the flames, as before suggested, at the age of seventeen months. 4. George, a merchant, who married Lydia, a sister of governor Hutchinson. 5. Elizabeth, the wife of reverend John Taylor of Milton. 6. Mary, the wife of Matthew Livermore,|| esquire, of Portsmouth. 7. John, who died at the age of five years. 8. Daniel, an apothecary in Portsmouth, who married Mehetabel Rindge. 9. Margaret, who died at the age of twenty-two, unmarried.

*Note*

---

\* Records left by Rogers. † Letter from Mr. Frisbie.

‡ President Leverett married a daughter of president Rogers.

§ See Magnalia.

|| Mrs. Greenwood, his daughter, helped the author to this list of Mr. Rogers' children.

*Note E.*

Mr. Fitch married Elizabeth Appleton, daughter of colonel John Appleton of Ipswich and sister of the late reverend doctor Appleton of Cambridge. These are their children. 1. Elizabeth, who was the wife of John Wibird, esquire. The late reverend Anthony Wibird of Quincy was their son. 2. Margaret, who was the wife of a son of reverend Henry Gibbs of Watertown. 3. Mary, who was the wife of Francis Cabot, esquire, of Salem. 4. Ann, who was the first wife of reverend Nathanael Gookin of North-Hampton. 5. John, who was graduated, at Harvard College, in 1728, studied physick with doctor Nathanael Sargent of Hampton, and died in early life.

Two brothers,\* Thomas and James Fitch, or in the antient way of writing the name, Fytche, came from Bocking in the county of Essex, England, to America, in 1638. Thomas settled at Norwalk, in Connecticut, and was the father of Thomas Fitch, the governour of the state. The history of reverend James Fitch is handsomely given in his epitaph, as may be seen at Lebanon, in Connecticut, and is here added.

“In hoc sepulchro depositæ sunt reliquæ viri vere reverendi domini Jacobi Fitch, D. D. Natus fuit apud Bocking in comitatu Essexiæ in Angliâ Anno Domini, 1622, decembris 24; qui postquam linguis et literis optime institutus fuisset, in Nov-Angliam venit, ætatis 16, et deinde vitam degit Harfordiæ per septennium sub institutione virorum celeberrimorum domini Hooker et domini Stone. Postea munere pastoralis functus est apud Saybrook per annos 14. Illinc, cum ecclesiæ majori parte Norvicem migravit et ibi cæteros vitæ annos transegit in opere evangelico. In senectute vero præ corporis infirmitate necessario cessabat ab opere publico; tandemque recessit liberis apud Lebanon, ubi, semi-anno fere exacto, obdormivit in Jesu, anno 1702, novembris 18, ætatis suæ 80; vir ingenii acumine, pondere judicii, prudentiâ, charitate sancta, laboribus, et omni modâ vitæ sanctitate, peritia quoque, et vi concionandi nulli secundus.” †

This

---

\* Extracted from a letter to the author, dated 28 February, 1803, written by reverend Ebenezer Fitch, D. D. president of Williams College.

† Supposed to have been written by Mr. Fitch of Portsmouth.

This Mr. Fitch married for his first wife Abigail Whitfield, a daughter of reverend Henry Whitfield of Guilford, Connecticut, of whom some account is given in *Magnalia*. Their children were James, Abigail, Elizabeth, Hannah, Samuel, and Dorothy. Reverend James Fitch married for his second wife Priscilla, a daughter of major John Mason of Norwich. Their children were Daniel, John, Jeremiah, Jabez, Ann, Nathanael, Joseph, and Eleazer. These fourteen, except the last, lived to have families of children, from whom a numerous progeny has descended.

*Note F.*

At the ordination of Mr. Langdon, reverend Mr. Cotton of Hampton begun with prayer, Mr. Shurtleff gave the charge, and Mr. Adams of Newington gave the right hand of fellowship and concluded with prayer.

Doctor Langdon married Elizabeth Brown, a daughter of reverend Richard Brown of Reading, in Massachusetts, by whom he had nine children, four of them died in infancy. The other five arrived at mature age and had families. 1. Samuel, who is not living. 2. Paul, a graduate of Harvard College in 1770. 3. Richard. 4. Elizabeth, the present wife of the honourable David Sewall, esquire, of York. 5. Mary, the present wife of the honourable John Goddard, esq. of Portsmouth.

*Note G.*

Mr. Emerson married Mary Barter of Salem, by whom he had the following children, who survived their father. 1. Mary, who was the wife of Francis Winkley, of Kittery. 2. Elizabeth, who was never married. 3. Ann, who was the wife of captain Stephen Greenleaf, of Portsmouth. 4. Sarah, who was the wife of — Davis, of Portsmouth. 5. Dorothy, who was the wife of Elihu Gunnison, esquire, of Kittery. 6. Martha, who was the wife of — Flint, of Plastow. There were several others, who died young.

*Note H.*

Mr. Shurtleff married Mary Atkinson, a sister of the late Theodore Atkinson, esquire. Several anecdotes are related of this lady, from which it seems that she was not that amiable and endearing bosom friend, which so good a man deserves.

Mr.

Mr. Shurtleff had no children, but many brothers and sisters, the following of whom lived to mature age, viz. Jabez, Thomas, Ichabod, John, Barnabas, Samuel, Nathanael, Susanna, Sarah, and Abigail. He was the second son and was named for his father, who, in advanced age, removed to that part of Plympton now called Carver. His mother was a daughter of Barnabas Lothrop, who was a son of reverend John Lothrop of Barnstable.

The name of reverend Mr. Shurtleff's grandfather was William also. He lived in Marshfield and was killed with lightning,\* in 1666. The tradition is that he was endeavouring to comfort his wife, who was much terrified at the severity of the tempest, and had just taken an infant from her arms and was seated, having one child between his knees and the other two in his lap; yet the flash of lightning, which killed him, did neither of them nor his wife any injury.

*Note I.*

Rev. Jonathan Edwards preached a sermon from John xiii. 15, 16, at the ordination of Mr. Strong, which was printed. Rev. messieurs Jeremiah Wise of Berwick, Joseph Adams of Newington, John Rogers of Kittery, Samuel Chandler of York, and Samuel Langdon of Portsmouth were also of his council.

Mr. Strong married Abigail Gilman, daughter of colonel Peter Gilman, of Exeter, 6 December, 1750. His infant, whom he named Nathanael, prematurely born, died, and was buried, 28 September, 1751. He preached on the following day, which was the sabbath, from these words, "Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil." He was seized with the bilious colick between meetings, and on Monday, departed this life for a better, greatly lamented.

*Note K.*

Mr. Browne was a son of rev. John Browne, who removed from Scotland to Ireland. He married Mary Cox, a daughter of rev. Thomas Cox, D. D. of Drogheda, by whom he had

---

\* This part is mentioned in *New-England's Memorial*, though not so minutely as some of his descendants, at Plymouth, have related to the author.

had nine children, viz. 1. Thomas, who was born in Dublin, in 1728, and died at Portsmouth. 2. Marmaduke, who was born in Providence, was educated at Trinity College in Dublin, was ordained by the bishop of London, and settled at Newport, Rhode-Island, where he ended his days. 3. Lucy, whom Mr. Smith, a British officer married. 4. Jane, whom the late honourable Samuel Livermore, esquire, married. 5. Mary, whom reverend Mr. Sargeant, formerly of Cambridge, married. The three last were born in Providence, the following at Portsmouth. 6. Ann, whom Mr. Saint Loe, a British officer, married. 7. Elizabeth, who was first the wife of major Robert Rogers, but now of captain Roche at Concord, New-Hampshire. 8. Arthur. 9. Peter.

*Note L.*

Mr. Ogden married Mary Wooster, the only daughter of the late general Wooster, by whom he had three children, viz. Mary, David, and Aaron, the second of whom is not living.

*Note M.*

This meeting house was built at Durham Point, where it was the place of publick worship in the days of rev. Hugo Adams. It was taken apart to be brought to Portsmouth, and was originally about fifty by forty feet ; but, in 1767, was lengthened by the insertion of twenty feet. Both the other congregational churches as well as the episcopal, were enlarged, in 1761.

*Note N.*

Mr. Sandeman's epitaph, as may be seen at Danbury, in Connecticut. "Here lies, until the resurrection, the body of Robert Sandeman, a native of Perth, Northbritain, who, in the face of continual opposition from all sorts of men, long and boldly contended for the antient faith, that the bare work of Jesus Christ, without a deed or thought, on the part of man, is sufficient to present the chief of sinners spotless before God. To declare this blessed truth, as testified in the holy scriptures, he left his country, he left his friends, and after much patient sufferings, finished his labours at Danbury, 2 April, 1771, aged 53 years."

" Deign, Christ, to come so nigh to us,  
As not to count it shame,  
To call us brethren. Shall we blush  
At aught, that bears his name ?

Nay,

Nay, let us boast in his reproach,  
 And glory in his cross.  
 When he appears one smile from him  
 Shall far o'erpay our loss."

*Note O.*

Reverend Mr. Murray, now of Boston, first preached the doctrine of universal salvation, in Portsmouth, about the commencement of the revolutionary war.

In 1790, a general convention of the universal societies met at Philadelphia and published articles of faith and a plan of church government. A general convention, of this denomination in the New-England states, assembled, 1794, in Massachusetts, and has continued to hold an annual meeting, in September, ever since, when from thirty to forty societies are usually represented.

*Rev. John Eliot, D. D. Cor. Sec. Mass. His. Society.*

A TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION OF BREWSTER, IN THE COUNTY OF BARNSTABLE. JANUARY, 1806. BY REV. JOHN SIMPKINS.

**B**REWSTER is a township on Cape-Cod, situated S. E. and by S. from Boston, from which it is distant by water 23 leagues, and 84 miles by land, according to the circuitous route usually travelled before the erection of the several turnpikes recently formed, which shorten the distance from Plymouth to Boston.

*Harwich*, the town to which it formerly belonged, was incorporated Sept. 14th, A. D. 1694. The first church in Harwich was gathered A. D. 1700. The meeting-house stood about half a mile from the north shore. Another parish was formed in the south part of the town, and incorporated as the second south parish, 1747.\* The

\* The Act of the Legislature, incorporating the town of Harwich, states, that it comprizes "the inhabitants settled on a tract of land called *Satucket*, from the head of Bound Brook to the head of *Mamskeket*, being about 10 miles in length, and 7 in breadth extending from sea to sea." The two Indian names here mentioned are in very common use at the present

The first, or North Parish, (excepting a few remonstrants against a division of the town, who had liberty to belong either to Harwich or Brewster) was incorporated as a town, Feb. 19th, 1803, and took the name of BREWSTER, in honourable remembrance of elder Brewster, one of the principal characters among the first settlers of Plymouth colony, who was justly held in high repute for his wisdom and virtues, by the venerable fathers of New-England.

It is bounded E. by Orleans; S. by Harwich; W. by Dennis; N. by Barnstable bay. It is about 8 miles in length. Its breadth is various; the average may be about  $3\frac{3}{4}$  miles. It holds a central situation in regard to the Cape, being about 36 miles from Provincetown at the lower end, the same distance from Falmouth the S. W. extremity, and 25 miles from Sandwich at the upper end.

The face of the country is diversified by a mixture of hilly and level land. In travelling the county road that runs through the town, you pass over several eminences which afford a pleasant and extensive view of the town. The eye, passing over the lands at the northward of the road, beholds the waters of the Atlantick ocean rolling into the Bay, and is presented with the form of the Cape, as it bends round to Provincetown. A very sudden curvature commences three or four miles below Brewster, where the Cape becomes so narrow as to give the traveller a fair prospect of the waters on either side, and enables him to discern, at one view, vessels that are passing round the Cape, and those which are sailing up the Bay.

---

day, and familiarly appropriated by the inhabitants, the former to the west, and the latter to the east, part of the town of Brewster.

The following sketch, selected from the report of a viewing committee appointed by the Legislature to repair to Harwich, in 1801, gives a pretty clear view of the local situation of the two parishes. "It extends across the Cape from shore to shore, and is divided into two parishes by a line running E. and W. very nearly through the centre of the town. The committee, in viewing the town, found that a very great proportion of the inhabitants have placed themselves down very near the north and south shores; particularly those in the North Parish. They found that on the line of separation of the parishes, there is a chain of narrow ponds, extending probably two-thirds of the whole length of the line, and on each side of these ponds, and nearly the whole length of the town, is an extent of unsettled and uncultivated poor land, consisting mostly of pitch pines and shrub oaks.

Bay. This curvature, which, at the point above mentioned, may be considered as the inner side of the elbow of the Cape, throws also into view to the inhabitants of Brewster the meeting-house, and other buildings in Eastham, at a distance of eight and ten miles; and at certain seasons, the reflection of the sun upon the windows of the houses in Wellfleet and Truro is discernible by the naked eye, at a distance of eighteen miles and upwards on the county road.

In or near the centre, as it respects the east and west boundaries of the town, is erected on a gentle rise of ground a convenient house for public worship; which, being enlarged A. D. 1796, is 72 feet by 45. It is a wooden building, but handsomely painted and ornamented, with a well proportioned tower and steeple at the west end, which rises to the height of 110 feet.

In 1799, Lombardy poplars were planted at a convenient distance in front, and at each end of this building, which, with a grove of willows in a bottom adjacent, and several thriving orchards in the vicinity, give to this spot a very rural aspect, agreeably enlivened by a water prospect.

From the meeting-house to the western bounds, and north of the county road, the land is for the most part either of a clayey or heavy loamy soil, capable of a high state of cultivation, and may be called the *good land*. This excepted, there is comparatively but little land in the town suitable for upland mowing. Upon passing to the southward of the county road, and especially to the eastward of the meeting-house, the soil rapidly depreciates, and becomes *in general* thin and sandy, though in some parts tolerably adapted to tillage. During the revolutionary war betwixt Great-Britain and America, lands of this description received great, and in some instances *irreparable* injury. Interrupted in their maritime pursuits, and deprived of employment in the fisheries, many of the inhabitants were compelled to resort to the land for subsistence. They were driven by necessity from year to year to diminish the value of their lands by severe tillage, breaking up a large quantity at a time, giving it little or no manure, until a soil, naturally free for grain, became reduced to the extreme of poverty. In some parts of the Cape, which lie open to the full rake of the north and north-west winds, the sands being once set in motion, have rapidly encroached on the adjoining territory,



territory, cutting away or burying up the soil, and spreading devastation over acres of once valuable land. This has been largely experienced in Eastham, a neighbouring town, and has been in some degree witnessed in this place. But even land thus destroyed is capable of being made conducive to the support of cattle in grazing, by setting out beach grass, which speedily takes root in the sand, and, if enclosed for a time, forms at length a firm and compact covering, and serves as an effectual barrier against further encroachments.

Lands, which have been greatly impoverished, though not completely destroyed, by means above mentioned, have since been greatly recruited by the hand of cultivation. Experience has taught the inhabitants to adopt a different mode of husbandry. Less land and less is broken up, and more plentifully manured, and the cultivator reaps his reward in a crop proportionably liberal. Some valuable improvements have of late been made in the cultivation of low swampy lands, which form the best resource for grass, not being so liable to suffer by droughts, by which our upland is sometimes severely affected.

More attention is also now paid to orchards, which had heretofore been greatly neglected. Twelve or fifteen years ago, about the time the writer commenced his residence here, the idea seemed to be generally prevalent, that the most must be made of the orchards which remained, as the attempt to raise others would be fruitless. The attempt however was made, and has abundantly succeeded. In April, 1793, about sixty apple trees were set out, and have flourished beyond the most sanguine expectations, producing plentifully fruit both large and fair. Since that time several other orchards have arisen; and in general a young man, who erects a dwelling-house, if he have a sufficiency of land, thinks as much of setting out an orchard, as of laying out a garden. It is judged expedient, however, to break the force of the sea breezes by a border of trees.

Sea-weed, which not long since was almost neglected, is now diligently collected by the farmer, and carted into the barn-yard, to be trampled by cattle, or thrown into heaps to rot, by which means much valuable manure is made. Sometimes it is carted from the shore to be spread over the surface of the land, and turned under the furrow by the plough.

It is asserted in Dr. Morse's Geography, that "there are  
few

few or no stones below Barnstable." This is an error; as no small portion of the land in this town is enclosed or fenced by stone wall.

From eighty to ninety tons of English hay are cut in this place, which is a much greater quantity than was formerly made here, and the quantity is annually increasing, as more land is sown with grass seeds, and better cultivated. But the inhabitants depend chiefly on fresh meadow and salt hay for fodder. Considerable quantities of Indian corn and rye are raised, but not sufficient of the former for the consumption of the inhabitants.

The wood land is for the most part owned by a few individuals, which, with the general scarcity of the article, the distance of conveyance, and the high price of labour, has raised it to seven dollars per cord for oak, six dollars for pine. The scarcity of fuel, however, is at length happily remedied by the discovery of *peat*, which greatly abounds in swamps, that are liberally interspersed throughout the town. Several families make use of it in some degree the present winter; but it is expected that large quantities will be dug up another season, and those in needy circumstances relieved from all apprehensions of being distressed through want of fuel.

Of ponds there is no scarcity. There is in the south-west part of the town, a chain of ponds, about  $2\frac{1}{4}$  miles in length, and on an average about  $\frac{1}{3}$  of a mile in breadth, which give birth to a considerable stream, that affords a never failing supply of water to a grist-mill and fulling-mill, which are nearly opposite to each other, contiguous to the county road, about two miles west of the meeting-house, and one from the sea. In the months of April and May, alewives make their way up this stream into the mill-pond.

Another chain of ponds, about  $3\frac{3}{8}$  miles in length, run nearly east and west, and form no inconsiderable part of the line that divides Brewster from Harwich, the line of division passing through the centre of these ponds. Other ponds are, Pine pond, the Slough pond, Wing pond, White pond, Foster's pond, Sheep pond, Baker's pond, Clift pond, Myrick's and Freeman's pond, &c. In some ponds and springs are found excellent eels. The flats extend about one mile into the sea. A middling course of tides gives about eight feet of water at full sea. There is no harbour, but the town lies open to the full

full swell of the sea in Barnstable bay, except that it is in some measure broken by a bar, which borders upon the flats one mile from the shore. It is supposed by judicious persons, that a convenient shelter might be formed for vessels by erecting a pier at the expense of about \$10,000, and a complete one for 30,000.

The number of inhabitants in the town of Harwich, previous to its separation from this town, was, according to the last census, 2857. The census preceding gave but 2392; \* leaving an increase of 465, notwithstanding from Brewster, the then north parish, several had emigrated, and during one or two years many had fallen a sacrifice to disease in the West Indies. This statement speaks favourably of the climate as conducive to health; and the small number of deaths that annually occur upon the land abundantly confirms it. Of 2857 inhabitants in Harwich, A. D. 1801, 1353 were in the north, and 1504 in the south parish. It may here be observed, that the sea-faring men in the south almost universally devoted their attention to the fisheries, while a great proportion of those in the north were employed in foreign voyages, and even many of the fishermen in the winter sailed either to the southern states, or West Indies.

The inhabitants are industrious, enterprising, hospitable, and social. Social intercourse with each other is free and frequent. No persons appear to have a greater relish for the social circle and domestick pleasures. They are not in the habit of frequenting taverns, unless on publick occasions. I know not of a proper idler or tavern-haunter in the place.

*Neatness* is conspicuous within and around their buildings. Their houses *in general* consist of one story, with a roof so constructed as to give room for two convenient chambers. They have usually two good rooms in front, bed-rooms, kitchen, wash-room, and other convenient apartments in the rear. Their houses, though the greater part of them be low, are well finished; in some instances handsomely furnished. Some, belonging to the more affluent, are in a style of elegance.

More than three-fourths of the inhabitants, as they come forward upon the stage, are employed at sea. The greater part

---

\* In 1764, there were in Harwich 1772 inhabitants (including 91 Indians); and in 1776, 1865 inhabitants.

part of these enter on board merchantmen. There are more *masters* and *mates* of vessels, who sail on foreign voyages, belonging to this place, than to any other town in the county.

There are but two fishing vessels owned here, though some of our fishermen sail from other places. The fishery has given way to merchant voyages, and the erection of *salt-works*, of which we have now from 60 to 70,000 feet, reckoning according to their usual mode, 1 foot in length, and 10 feet in width to be a foot. There are some coasting vessels and packets.

The inhabitants are desirous of procuring a good school education for their children, and have for some years maintained a man's school throughout the year. They readily subscribed \$3,000 towards the support of an academy, on condition that the Legislature would locate it in this town, and furnish them with the usual grant of eastern lands for their assistance.

We have a social library, consisting of 151 volumes, which cost \$137,53 cts.

#### *Ecclesiastical History.*

The first church was formed Oct. 16, A. D. 1700, the covenant signed by eight males, including Rev. Nathanael Stone, who was ordained as their pastor on the same day. He was a man of piety, of talents, and of firmness; much revered and beloved by the people of his charge. He was born at Watertown, 1667; graduated at Harvard College, 1690; and was married, Nov. 15, 1698, to Reliance Hinkley, daughter of Governour Hinkley. She was baptized on the day of the memorable swamp fight at Narraganset, when the English, with whom her father was present, completely routed the Indians; and received from Rev. Mr. Russell, minister at Barnstable, the name of *Reliance*, in token, as he said, of a firm reliance on Divine Providence. He published a small volume, A. D. 1731, entitled, "The wretched state of man by the fall," &c. and a sermon before the first Supreme Judicial Court holden at Barnstable. He died Feb. 1755, aged 88. Although Calvinistick in his sentiments, he was firmly opposed to the itinerant preachers who were so highly caressed by many in his day; and a church censure was passed on one of his people, who undertook to preach, and being very illiterate, was rebuked for undertaking an office for which he was no ways qualified. No sectarian society has ever existed here,  
and

and the people, with a very few exceptions, have ever been firmly attached to the congregational society in this place. It is even at the present day considered as quite unfashionable not to attend the publick worship.

Rev. Isaiah Dunster was born at Cambridge, where he received the degree of A. B. 1741 ; ordained as colleague with Rev. Nathanael Stone, 1748 ; died January, 1791, aged 72. The author of this history is the present minister, and was ordained October, 1791 ; being but the third minister settled over this society since A. D. 1700.

---

AN ACCOUNT OF HALIFAX. IN A LETTER FROM MR. ALEXANDER GRANT TO REV. MR. STILES, DATED AT HALIFAX, MAY, 1760.

*Rev. Sir,*

**Y**OUR esteemed favour of the 11 March is just now delivered me, and you have my best thanks for the very particular account it contains of the publick affairs of New-England, and of my friends and acquaintance in Newport. Before the receipt of your's I had procured a map of Nova-Scotia, which comes to you by Mr. Mumford, with the magazines for August and September last ; a vessel which had them aboard for me down to February, was blown off to the West-Indies and taken. If you expect any useful or curious observations on the place of my present residence, I shall disappoint you. It furnishes none, and my time has been engrossed in another way. The bearer can give you all the information I am master of, which is not much.

This place is divided into three towns : Halifax, Irish town, and Dutch town. The whole may contain about one thousand houses, great and small, many of which are employed as barracks, hospitals for the army and navy, and other publick uses. The inhabitants may be about three thousand, one third of which are Irish, and many of them Roman catholicks ; about one fourth Germans and Dutch, the most industrious and useful settlers among us ; and the rest English, with a very small number of Scotch. We have upwards of one hundred licenced houses, and perhaps as many more which retail spirituous liquors without licence ; so that the business  
of

of one half the town is to sell rum, and of the other half to drink it. You may from this single circumstance judge of our morals, and naturally infer that we are not enthusiasts in religion. There is a large fine church (episcopalian), and one orthodox (presbyterian). In the former a missionary (with an assistant) officiates, who, with the several places, perquisites, and sinecures he enjoys, makes, I compute, 500*l.* sterling per annum. They have no established minister in the meeting, but the pulpit is occasionally filled by one Mr. Brown, chaplain to a detachment of the Massachusetts provincials, doing duty here.

The next settlement to this is Lunenburg, or Mallegash, inhabited by about sixteen hundred Dutch, above six hundred of which are under the age of thirteen. Grants are made out to above four thousand families from New-England, who have engaged to settle the fine fertile lands about Pisquid and Minas, lately possessed by the French Neutrals, improperly so called, and by all accounts no part of the continent surpasses it in fertility; but in a month or two, if the Indians suffer me to pass and repass, I shall be able to give you my own remarks on that part of the country. Between this and Cape Sable are many fine harbours, commodiously situated for the cod-fishery; and the rivers furnish great abundance of salmon; and by what I can learn the land furnishes plenty of large timber suitable for masts for the navy. And as these lands are granted to be settled immediately, we shall be able soon to supply not only the ships of war here, but send them to Britain much cheaper than those cut in the king's forests about Piscatua and Casco bay. There is erected here, and erecting, a large, commodious dock-yard for naval stores, and cleaning and repairing his majesty's ships, which has already cost £.50,000 sterling, and will make this the place of rendezvous for all the ships stationed between Cape Race and Cape Florida, once a year. A plan is come over from the Board of Ordnance for fortifying a hill back of the town, called Citadel Hill; if completed agreeable to that plan, the cost will not fall short of £.40,000 sterling, and it will be inaccessible. Though our present fortifications have expended immense sums of money, at least the government has given, and is charged with immense sums (how much of it has been misapplied I will not take upon me to say), yet I would now  
engage

engage that two ships of the line would destroy the whole settlement; but that will not be the case when the citadel is completed, as it overlooks the town, commands the harbour, and lies too high for ships to reach or make any impression on it. The fleets and armies which have been here during the war have enriched this town, but given a mortal blow to industry, which necessity will revive on the return of peace, and that alone can do it. Agriculture, which is now neglected, will be attended to, and the natural advantages of our situation for pushing the mackerel and codfishery improved, which, with a proper use being made of the fine lands in the interior parts of the country, will, I doubt not, in a few years make this a flourishing province, which, on account of its vicinity and the military force, which must be kept up even in peace, will check the power of the French in Canada, keep the Indians in awe, and serve as a barrier to the New-England provinces. But one of the first things to be done after a peace takes place, will be to make carriage roads from this to the several intended settlements of Pisquid, Minas, &c. and if the same plan is pursued that was in Scotland during the last peace, of employing the troops in that way, it may be accomplished in two or three summers with great ease, and at a moderate expense to the government of only an additional six pence per man per diem.

I am sorry I cannot gratify you with the exact longitude of Halifax, observed by an eclipse. We have but few people of genius among us; and not one discovers a thirst after knowledge either useful or speculative.

I remain very sincerely,

Dear Sir, your's, &c.

ALEXANDER GRANT.

*Rev. Mr. Ezra Stiles.*



AN ESTIMATE OF THE INHABITANTS IN NOVA-SCOTIA, A. D. 1764. BY HON. ALEXANDER GRANT, ESQ. AT THE REQUEST OF DR. STILES.

	No. Souls.		No. Souls.
" Halifax - - -	3000	Horton - - -	670
Lunenburg - - -	1600	Cornwallis - - -	518
Liverpool - - -	500	Falmouth - - -	278
Annapolis county - - -	1000	Newport - - -	251
Fort Cumberland do. - - -	750	Dublin - - -	100

<i>Brought over</i>	-	8667	Exclusive of Louisbourg	}	10,000
Chester	-	100	and St. John's Island		
Cobequid	-	400	River St. John's		400
Barrington	-	300	French Acadians, still in	}	2,600
Yarmouth	-	150	the Province, about		
Dispersed along the coast, say 383					13,000

"Indians about 70 fighting men.

"Mr. Breynton of Halifax wrote to the Society Dec. 8, 1753, that the inhabitants of Halifax did not then exceed 1300."

LETTER FROM REV. NATHAN STONE TO REV. DR. STILES  
(INCLOSING THE FOLLOWING ACCOUNTS OF STOW, WEST-  
BOROUGH, SUDBURY, HARVARD, AND MARLBOROUGH)  
DATED SOUTHBOROUGH, MARCH 30, 1767.

*Rev. Sir,*

**A** GREEABLE to your desire I have obtained the inclosed Collections. Some of them are upon a more extensive plan than you proposed, which the gentlemen, as I suppose, were led into by Mr. Prince's printed heads of materials for his Chronology. Such as are to your purpose you will use.

From what I heard upon the Cape of your enquiring after the Indian names of ponds and places, I thought possibly it might be your design to retain them; therefore at my motion they are inserted.

The Indian name of Hopkinton was Moogunkawg. A church was gathered there Sept. 2, 1724, when Rev. Samuel Barret was ordained its pastor. Nov. 4, 1741, a church was gathered at Bolton, and Rev. Thomas Goss, was ordained. Oct. 21, 1730, a church was formed here [Southborough], when the subscriber was ordained. The town was taken wholly from Marlborough, is small, not quite the contents of four miles square; the church is proportionably so, consisting of 28 males and 46 females; yet there are 30 males and 61 females that reside and communicate with us. I wish you success in all your services for the church of God and the gospel of his Son, and am, &c.

NATHAN STONE.



AN ACCOUNT OF THE TOWN OF STOW (MASS.) IN A LETTER FROM REV. JOHN GARDNER TO REV. NATHAN STONE, DATED "STOW, MARCH 9, 1767."

*Rev. Sir,*

THE Indian names of this place were Pompociticut and Shabbukin, from two notable hills. It was granted for a township May 13, 1670, and incorporated May 16, 1689, by the name of Stow, and was then and is yet in the ancient county of Middlesex; after which I find there was ordinarily preaching among them, but do not find any one called to the pastorate till the 13 of May 1700; when Mr. John Eveleth was called to the ministerial work: these things I have from the town book of records, but as to his ordination and the gathering of the church I cannot be so precise with regard to the time, but as nearly as I can collect, it was about three or four years after his call. The number of males of which it consisted was about eleven. As to record, Mr. Eveleth told me they had none.

Mr. Eveleth was dismissed from his office the latter end of the year 1717. I was ordained to the pastoral office here November 26, 1718, and the church then consisted of fifteen males and about the same number of females. As to the number of males I can be precise, for the ordination council advised us to covenant anew, the foundation covenant being lost. The number of members in full communion at this day is forty males and sixty-nine females; having dismissed near forty at several times to other churches, the most of whom are yet living.

As for men of liberal education among us, there have been but very few, only three sons of mine, viz. Samuel, who was graduated at our College A. D. 1746, and Henry in 1750, and Francis in 1755. You may see their names in our Catalogue.

As for any remarkables, I am of the mind there have been the fewest of any town of our standing in the Province. It is one of our smaller towns, and besides this, have set off a fifth part of our land to build up other towns. I can't call to mind above one thing worthy of publick notice, and that is the grave of Mr. John Green, once an inhabitant of Charlestown in this

this Province, but returning to England, being a man of great abilities, was in high favour under the lord protector Cromwell, and was made captain of the guard at the king's dock-yard at Deptford, and clerk of the exchequer, as appears from his commissions, which I have seen, and had by me. He, upon the restoration, came again to New-England with his sister and her husband (whether he was excluded the Act of Oblivion or not I cannot tell) but sometime after his arrival he came with them to Stow, and here he lived and died, and lies buried in this place.

This is what I have collected toward such a chronology as is proposed, agreeable to the minutes you left with me; and you may give this letter to the doctor,\* or extract such particulars, if any such you find, as are worth transmitting to him. These with all due regard, &c.

JOHN GARDNER.

*Rev. Mr. Nathan Stone, Southborough.*



AN ACCOUNT OF WESTBOROUGH (MASS.) BY REV. EBENEZER PARKMAN, JANUARY 28, 1767.

**T**HIS town was formerly part of *Marlborough*, and called *Chauncy*. It is said that in early times one Mr. *Chauncy* was lost in one of the swamps here; and that from thence this part of the town had its name. Two ponds, a greater and a less, are also called *Chauncy*; most probably from the same cause.†

Marlborough was divided by an Act of the General Court November 19, 1717; and with the addition of 3000 acres of Province

---

\* Dr. Stiles.

† There are six ponds here, the largest of them, or great Chauncy pond, is in the midst of the township, as originally granted, and is about a mile in length. It was by the Indians anciently termed *Nagyanoomcom*, or great pond. There is another pond, which was called *Hobbamoeka*, from some supposed infernal influence, which a man was unhappily under nigh that pond, from morning till the sun set. The river Assabet (I never knew the meaning of that name) flows through this town. Its source is a little above us. Passing through several other towns, at length it falls into Merrimack.

Province land, and some farm lands, this township was erected. In the fall of the next year, the first meeting-house was raised. The first families were 27. All the first settlers were about 40.

In June 1728, a part of Sutton land, about 1900 acres, having ten settlers upon it, was laid to us; and there have been some small additions of land from other towns since: four places from the south-east part of *Shrewsbury*; and three from the north-west part of *Upton*.

\* A church was gathered here Oct. 28, 1724; there being twelve members, besides the writer, who was that day ordained the pastor. Rev. Mr. *John Prentice* of Lancaster preached from 2 Cor. xii. 15. He also gave the solemn charge; and Rev. Mr. *Israel Loring* of Sudbury the right hand of fellowship. The number of families, when I came here, was 58.

October 20, 1744, the town of *Westborough*, consisting of 125 families, was, by an Act of the General Court, divided into two precincts; the north part being indeed very small.

April 30, 1745, the north meeting-house was raised.

May 21, 1746, a church was gathered in the north precinct, and Rev. Mr. *John Martyn*, was ordained the pastor. [Rev. Mr.] *Parkman* preached on that occasion from Heb. xiii. 17; Rev. Mr. *Prentice* aforesaid gave the charge; and Rev. Mr. *Cushing* of *Shrewsbury* the right hand.

May 3, 1749, the meeting-house in the first precinct was raised: and Sept. 3d following we first met in it.

In the year 1765, the north precinct was, by an Act of the General Court, made a *district* by the name of *Northborough*. The number of communicants in *Northborough* is 21 males and 23 females.

The present number of families here, in the *town*, is 120; of church members, including those who occasionally communicate

---

\* Mr. *Daniel Elmer*, a candidate for the ministry, from Connecticut river, preached here several years, and received a call from the people; but there arose dissention; and though he built upon the farm which was given for the first settled minister, and dwelt upon it, yet by the advice of an ecclesiastical council he desisted from preaching here; and a quit claim being given him of the farm, he sold, and with his family removed to *Springfield* in 1724. He was afterwards settled in the ministry at *Cohanzy* in the *Jerseys*; and I suppose died there.

nicate with us, as members of other churches, and a number who, living so contiguous to us, as to be nigher here than to their own meeting-houses, have therefore joined to our church, but without counting many who are gone into various parts of the country, and are not dismissed from us, 130.

Male members who dwell here	-	-	-	42	} 48
do. who dwell on the borders	-	-	-	3	
Occasional, who dwell here	-	-	-	3	

Educated at Harvard College, were,

Rev. Eli Forbes, Pastor of 2d Church in Brookfield,	
Asaph Rice	- - - Westminster,
Jonathan Livermore	- - - Wilton,
Joseph Bowman	- - - Oxford,
Thomas Rice, Esq. who is at Pownalborough,	
Ebenezer Rice, A. B.	
Jacob Rice, A. B.	

Among the *Remarkable Providences* has been the mischief by the Indians.

On Aug. 8, 1704, ten Indians rushed down from an hill upon a number of boys who were with divers persons that were spreading flax on the plain below: They slew one of the boys immediately, and captivated four, three of which continued and grew up in *Canada*. One of them\* was a sachem many years ago, and well known to *Hendrick* the Mohawk chief when he was here. Colonel *Lydius* of Albany informs me, that he is the present principal sachem of the *Caghnawaga* tribe, near Montreal.



MEMOIR OF SUDBURY [MASS.] WRITTEN A. D. 1767.  
[PROBABLY BY REV. ISRAEL LORING OF THAT TOWN.]

SUDBURY, in the county of Middlesex, was granted in the year 1638. The number of original sharers and settlers was 54.

Mr. *Edmund Brown*, the first settled minister, was ordained in August 1640; died June 22, 1677.

Mr.

\* Timothy Rice: his Indian name was *Oughtzorongoughton*.

Mr. *Sherman* began to preach at Sudbury in 1677; in July 1705 was "deposed from his pastoral office;" died in 1718.

Mr. *Israel Loring* was ordained pastor of the church Nov. 20, 1706. Upon the division of the town by the General Court, the inhabitants of the west side of the river invited him to come over and settle with them July 10, 1722. He accepted their invitation.

Feb. 11, 1722-3 the church was by a vote of the church divided into two distinct churches. March 18, 1724-5, which was a day of solemn prayer and fasting, the west church renewed their covenant with God.

Mr. *Cooke* was ordained pastor of the church on the east side of the river March 20, 1723. Died Nov. 12, 1760.

Mr. *Bridge* was ordained Nov. 4, 1761.

Mr. Noyes Paris	took his first degree	at Harvard College,	A. D. 1721.
William Brintnal	- -	at Yale College,	1721.
Thomas Frink	- -	at Harvard College,	1722.
John Loring	- -	at Harvard College,	1729.
Jonathan Loring	- -	at Harvard College,	1738.
William Cooke	- -	at Harvard College,	1748.
William Baldwin	- -	at Harvard College,	1748.
Gideon Richardson	- -	at Harvard College,	1749.
Samuel Baldwin	- -	at Harvard College,	1752.

April 18, 1676. The Indians came down upon the town of Sudbury in great numbers, and killed many persons; of which Mr. Hubbard, in his history of the war with the Indians, has given the publick an account.

March 1, 1691, there was the greatest flood, by several feet perpendicular, that was ever remembered by English or Indians then surviving.

In 1765, the number of houses on the west side was	151
do. do. east side	112
No. of houses in the town,	263
No. of families on the west side	187
do. east side	129
No. of families in the town	316
No. of white people on the west side	1047
do. east side	698
No. of white people in the town	1745

Negro

*Account of Harvard.*

	Negro Males	15	} Blacks			
	Females	12				28
	Indian Male	1				
				Total	1773	
1767. Male members of the West (First) Church					76	
Female					127	
				Total	203	



AN ACCOUNT OF HARVARD. IN A LETTER FROM REV. JOSEPH WHEELER TO REV. NATHAN STONE, DATED HARVARD, FEBRUARY 24, 1767.

*Rev. Sir,*

I HAVE lately received a letter from you, informing me of Dr. Stiles's desire to know the state of the towns and churches in our association. As to Harvard, I find that it was taken from three other towns, viz. Lancaster, Groton, and Stow. It had no Indian name peculiar to itself. It was incorporated July A. D. 1732; and was supposed to contain about sixty families at the time of its incorporation. In October, 1733, a church was gathered in Harvard, consisting of thirty male members, and Rev. Mr. John Seccomb was ordained to the pastoral care of the church, who continued that relation until September, 1757, when he was dismissed by a vote of the church, upon his own request, and by the consent of an ecclesiastical council. The church continued vacant until December 12, 1759, at which time I was ordained to the pastoral care of the church. The present number of inhabitants is reckoned at two hundred families; the number of communicants one hundred and ninety-five. I know of no remarkable occurrences which have happened in the town, that would be worth mentioning. The land is mountainous, yet fruitful. We have one farmer, who annually sows upwards of ninety acres of English grain, chiefly wheat. There are two ponds in the town; one of them above three miles in circumference, and famous for the abundance of fish that are caught in it. Fronting the house that was built by Rev. Mr. Seccomb is supposed to be the longest row of elm trees in New-England, set in exact order, and leading directly toward the meeting-house.

house. This is all that I think of at present worth mentioning, and therefore shall conclude by subscribing myself, &c.

JOSEPH WHEELER.

Rev. Mr. Nathan Stone, Southborough.



NOTE ON MARLBOROUGH. BY REV. AARON SMITH,  
A. D. 1767.

WHEN the church was gathered is not known, the inhabitants of the town being driven off by the Indians, A. D. 1676. Rev. Mr. William Brimsmead was ordained 3 October, 1666,\* and died commencement morning, 1701. The number of communicants [1767] male 79, female 85. [See *A Description of Marlborough*, in Coll. Hist. Soc. iv. 46-50.]



MEMOIR OF MARLBOROUGH ASSOCIATION. BY REV.  
NATHAN STONE.

THIS Association of Ministers was formed at Marlborough, June 5, 1725, "with design and aim herein to advance the interest of Christ, the service of their respective charges, and their own mutual edification in their great work." They agreed to meet four times in a year; choose a moderator and clerk, from time to time, &c. The articles were then signed by

John Swift, pastor in Framingham,		Job Cushing, Shrewsbury,
Robert Breck, Marlborough,		John Gardner, Stow,
John Prentice, Lancaster,		Eben. Parkman, Westboro'.
Israel Loring, West-Sudbury,		

In process of time the Association became "so numerous," by the addition of pastors of other churches, and the members  
were

---

\* The Rev. Mr. Packard, in his Description of Marlborough, says, "Mr. Brimsmead was minister to this religious society, September 20, 1660." He might at that time be *unordained*; and the two accounts reconciled by a remark of Dr. Stiles: "The times of gathering the churches, especially the ancient ones, do not indicate the first formation of the congregation. Anciently among the first new parishes arising from population, they had religious assemblies, and constant preaching for years before the church was gathered, or the minister ordained. And a minister would often be invited to preach stately, and continue four or five years before his ordination."

were at so "great a distance from one another," that it spontaneously divided, Aug. 10, 1762.

---

EDITORIAL NOTE RESPECTING RUGGLES'S HISTORY OF  
GUILFORD.

IN the fourth volume of the Collections of our Society is published "A Sketch of a History of Guilford, in Connecticut, from a manuscript of Rev. Thomas Ruggles."\* On discovering among the MSS. of the late President Stiles, "Extracts from Ruggles's MS. History of Guilford," we compared those "Extracts" with the printed "Sketch," and found that they contained several curious and interesting articles, which are not in the printed account. In the hope of obtaining notice, if not possession, of the *original manuscript*, we wrote to Rev. Dr. Trumbull, of North-Haven, and made inquiry respecting it; but he wrote to us, in reply, that he "knew nothing" of it, and that he "never saw, or so much as heard of it." "I had frequent opportunities," he observes, "of conversing with Mr. Ruggles, though he was an aged gentleman when I first came into publick life. He never mentioned to me any such manuscript."

The MS. History was dated February 3, 1769. Dr. Stiles, who received it about that time, appears to have returned it in June, 1770, to the author, who died in the following November. We think it probable, therefore, that it was composed at the request of Dr. Stiles, to assist him in his projected Ecclesiastical History; and that, when he had made such extracts from it, as were material to his purpose, he returned it. A derangement of papers by the death of Mr. Ruggles may easily account for Dr. Trumbull's want of knowledge respecting the manuscript. Whether our conjectures are well founded or not, we judge it expedient to publish in this volume all that we find in the "Extracts," not already printed in the "Sketch," without waiting for farther search after the original; that the account of a very ancient and

---

\* That SKETCH, the Corresponding Secretary informs us, was communicated to the Historical Society by NATHANIEL BISHOP, Esq. of Richmond, and published exactly according to the manuscript.



and respectable town may be as complete as we can make it, before the publication of the GENERAL INDEX, which is to embrace the ten first volumes of our Collections.



EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM REV. MR. RUGGLES,  
AUTHOR OF THE HISTORY OF GUILFORD, TO DR.  
STILES.

*Guilford, June 21, 1770.*

*Rev. Sir,*

YOUR favour, with the History, I received, for which I return you my thanks. \*\*\*\*\* You have set me a very large task. I will begin by answering some of your many queries. And with regard to the church in Guilford.... They never had, and upon principle never would, admit a ruling elder. Although in all other things Mr. Whitfield and Mr. Davenport and their churches exactly agreed and practised, yet in this they were quite different. I have made diligent inquiry into the subject many years ago, with old people who were personally acquainted with the first members of the church. They all invariably agree, that as Mr. Whitfield was never ordained in any sense at Guilford, but officiated as their pastor in virtue of his ordination in England; so neither he nor the church would allow of a ruling elder: and the ancient tradition in the church here was, that New-Haven, and afterward other churches in the colony, conformed their judgment and practice to Mr. Whitfield's and his church's judgment, who were strictly Congregational.

I said, the church of Guilford and New-Haven in all other things were one in opinion and practice. Members were admitted by relations [of experiences], and by holding up the hands of the brethren. The conformity was uniform.

I cannot gratify you with the Agreement in Mr. Newman's barn at New-Haven, that great foundation of the rules in church and state, according to which they conducted. It is not upon our records. Mr. Trumbull has told me he has seen it, and that he would procure me a copy.\* You may  
be

\* See Trumbull's *Hist. Connecticut*, i. 99-101.

be furnished by him, as I suppose. I expect he will send me one. And when you come to Guilford, if you incline, you may see our doctrine of faith and covenant. It is too long for me at present to transcribe.

I cannot gratify you with an account of the General Association, as you desire. My copy is not to be found, but I will endeavour to obtain what you desire concerning it; if I should, I shall endeavour to feed your inquiring curiosity.

Let us hear as often as you can how the world goes, and don't forget your sincere, though antiquated friend, &c.

THOMAS RUGGLES.

*Rev. Ezra Stiles.*



EXTRACTS FROM RUGGLES'S MS. HISTORY.

“SO early as 1643, a congregational church was gathered, or rather they then combined into a visible church state. They adopted Mr. Davenport's notions; and formed the church by covenant upon *seven pillars*, as they termed it. The names of the seven pillars were

Mr. Henry Whitfield,  
Mr. John Higginson,  
Mr. Samuel Desborow,  
Mr. William Leete,

Mr. Jacob Sheeffe,  
John Mipham, and  
John Hoadly;

and on the nineteenth day of the month of April (probably the very day the church was thus settled) the records say, the feoffees in trust formally in writing resigned the lands purchased by them to the church, &c.”

“The manner of gathering or forming the church was this, viz. a doctrine of faith was drawn up and assented to as the foundation of their connexion. And then they mutually entered into covenant, first with God to be his people in Jesus Christ; then one with another, to walk together in attending all the duties of the christian religion, and enjoyment of all the ordinances that belong to a particular visible church. Their doctrine of faith was judiciously drawn. It is short, comprehensive, and rational, upon true primitive, Calvinistical, and Congregational principles. This *doctrine of faith* with

with the *covenant* is continued and made use of constantly in admitting church members to this day by the first church."

\* \* \* \* \* Mr. Higginson continued in the ministry at Guilford about twelve years, "and then determined to go to England to Mr. Whitfield.\* Accordingly he shipt himself and family, and sailed. But meeting with bad weather, the vessel put into Salem for harbour. Going ashore to his father's people, they, wanting a pastor, prevailed with him to preach, and then unship his family and goods, and settle with them. He accepted their call; was ordained their pastor; and left a numerous posterity, which have been in renown in their several generations. This is the account he gives of himself in a book of sermons printed by him in his old age, and dedicated by him to the church and people of God at Salem, Guilford, and Saybrook, where he preached at first in the time of the Pequod war."†

After Mr. Higginson's removal, while "they had no ordained pastor," and "fell into great confusion by diversity of religious opinions, many of the planters removed, especially to Killingworth, which was then settling, particularly Dr. Rosseter, Meigs, the Stevens family, and Chatfield, &c. who were useful in that town, and continue to be respectable in church and state there. Some of these returned, especially Rosseter and Meigs, after the town was restored to a peaceable settlement of a pastor."

"After they had waded through these troublesome times, Providence provided for them a pastor after God's own heart, to feed them with knowledge and understanding. For about the year 1664 or 1665, the renowned Mr. Joseph Eliot, son of the famous and pious Mr. John Eliot of Roxbury, (the Indian New-England apostle) was called and introduced, and by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery, was ordained to the pastoral office in the church. Mr. Mather of Northampton, with whom Mr. Eliot had lived some time before

---

\* See vol. iv. 187.

† Mr. Higginson was settled at Salem, A. D. 1660. He and his wife were received members of the church of Salem, "by letters of recommendation and dismissal from the church of Guilford after the usual manner." [Rev. Dr. Barnard's MS. letter.]—He died A. D. 1708, *ætat.* XCIII years. See Coll. Hist. Soc. vol. vi. 264. Edrr.

before he came to Guilford, being the chief in the ordination. The church and town greatly flourished under his successful ministry."

"After this burning and shining light had ministered to this good people about thirty years, he deceased May 24, 1694, to the inexpressible grief of his beloved flock, whose memory is not forgotten to this day. Some time in the summer of this year, the Rev. and pious Mr. Thomas Ruggles, likewise from Roxbury, was persuaded to come and preach to them as a candidate for the ministry, and in the fall of the year 1695, was ordained pastor of this church, by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery."

\* \* \* \* \* "After he had faithfully fed the flock, he deceased June 1, 1728, in the thirty-fourth year of his ministry, and fifty-eighth year of his age."

"His eldest son, Thomas Ruggles,\* was called to succeed him, and was ordained by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery, March 26, 1729."

#### SECOND CHURCH IN GUILFORD.

"May, 1703, the honourable General Assembly divided the town by forming a society at the desire of those inhabitants who lived upon the eastern parts of the town." This new society received the name of East-Guilford. "The Rev. and learned Mr. John Hart, who came from Farmington, was by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery ordained the first pastor of the new gathered church in this new society. He proved one of the first eminence of preachers in his day. He died March 4, 1732, ætat. XLIX." He was ordained in November, 1707.

"The Rev. Mr. Jonathan Todd from New-Haven was ordained their next pastor, October 24, 1733, by the hands of the presbytery, who is still living their excellent pastor."

#### THIRD CHURCH.

"Out of the first or western society the General Assembly, upon the desire of the inhabitants and consent of the society,  
made

---

\* The author of this history, who died 20 November, 1770. Rev. Amos Fowler was ordained his colleague, 8 June, 1757.

made another society, calling it North-Guilford: and in June, 1725, the Rev. Mr. Samuel Russel from Branford was by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery ordained the first pastor of the new church gathered there. He proved a worthy and faithful minister. He deceased January 19, 1746: and Rev. Mr. John Richards, from Waterbury, was ordained by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery, pastor of the church, in the month of November, 1748."

"He, at his desire, was, by the counsel of the Consociation of New-Haven county, dismissed December, 1765, from his pastoral office there: and Mr. Thomas Wells Bray, from Farmington, was ordained pastor of the church, December 31, 1766."

## FOURTH CHURCH.

"Within the limits of the first, the General Assembly made another, calling it the Fourth Society in Guilford, May 10, 1733. Mr. Edmund Ward of Guilford was ordained their pastor; but being soon dismissed, they did in August, 1743, call and ordain Mr. James Sprout, of Middleborough, their pastor; who being dismissed from them in October, 1768,\* they now are destitute of a settled pastor."

## FIFTH CHURCH.

\* \* \* \* \* "The honourable General Assembly made another society in the N. E. part of the town, partly out of the First Society, and partly out of East-Guilford. They gave the name of North Bristol to this society. And the Rev. Mr. Richard Ely, from Lyme, was by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery ordained the pastor over them June 8, 1757, who now continues in that relation to the church and people there."

## CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

"In the year 1743 a number of the inhabitants of the First Society declared themselves of the communion of the Church of England, and built a house for their publick worship. They have no curate, their number small, but meet every sabbath to attend church service. And in 1748 a number at  
North-

\* He was resettled in Philadelphia, and afterward D. D.

North-Guilford also declared for the church, having built a house, and meet on sabbaths for worship. Perhaps there may be about sixty or seventy in all, young and old, belonging to the whole town, of that communion.”



“ It is uncertain who were the first or original planters. The first account of names upon record is so late down as 1650. These forty-six persons following are entered and named as such, viz.

Henry Whitfield	John Parmelin, sen.	Richard ——
Samuel Desborow	Thomas Betts	George Chatfield
John Higginson	Richard Guttridge	William Stone
William Leete	Richard Bristow	John Stephens
Robert Kitchil	John Parmelin, jun.	Benjamin Wright
William Chittenden	Jasper Stillwell	John ——
Thomas Jordan	George Bartlet	John Sheder
George Hubbard	John Scramton	Samuel Blatchley
John Hodley	John Fowler	Thomas French
Thomas Jones	Edward Benton	Stephen Bishop
William Dudley	Abraham Cruttenden	Thomas Stephens
Thomas Cook	John Evarts	William Boreman
Henry Kingsnoth	John Bishop, jun.	Edward ——
John Stone	Francis Bushnell	George Highland
William Hall	Henry Dowd	Abraham Cruttenden, jr.

“ It is a thing evident by this list of planters, that the account of all the original names is not ascertained ; for some of the first planters are not mentioned in it, particularly Mr. Coffinge, who was one of the purchasers from the Indians. Tradition concerning him is, that he soon died, leaving no other memorial of his name but a small island in the salt meadow near the sea, called to this day Coffing’s island. And some that are named it is certain were not original planters or purchasers, particularly Hubbard and Fowler ; they came from Hartford or Weathersfield, and as many others were, who came into the town afterwards, admitted planters in it, and had land laid out and assigned to them. Among such was Dr. Bryan Rosseter. One of this Dr. Rosseter’s daughters married a Cotton, and his posterity continue to this time in town. Dr. Rosseter purchased Mr. Desborow’s house

house and lands of him when he left the town with Mr. Whitfield, and returned to England." \*

—◆—

CIVIL AFFAIRS.

"As this plantation was connected with New-Haven, so they carefully conformed to the agreement in Mr. Newman's barn in all their affairs religious and civil. Like their brethren at New-Haven, they adopted and acted upon that unhappy mistake, that it is a thing of more importance to save and be governed by the steeple than the state.

"Besides [having mentioned the magistrates' Court, and Town Meetings, or General Courts, as in Coll. Hist. Soc. iv. 185.] they held a Court of Probate. By which court, as often as there was occasion, wills as well as intestate estates were settled. The whole lands belonged to the community. And the title to any particular lands was by order of the town in their meetings. So upon this principle that the fee was really in the community, they in settling estates sometimes departed from the rule of East-Greenwich tenure: And sometimes settled the intestate estates upon the widow, sometimes on one of the children; or sometimes on a stranger called to the family, as best served the general good of the family, and the prosperity of the infant plantation, in its minority.

"But neither this court nor this practice continued long. As soon as New-Haven colony government became better settled and more fixed, settling estates was transferred and determined by the court of assistants at New-Haven, agreeable to the present rules of the court of probate." [Town officers, and military order and discipline are next mentioned; but this paragraph is inserted in Vol. iv. of the Collections.]

"As the town was an immediate part of New-Haven government,

\* REMARKS BY DR. STILES.....1. This list may contain only the freeholders; there might be many more settlers. 2. If in 1650 there were but forty-six, probably in 1639 fewer. 3. If Rosseter bought Desborow's right, it should seem that he and Mr. Whitfield went for England after 1650.

[*Dr. Trumbull (Hist. Connect. i. 309.) says Mr. Whitfield "embarked for his native country some time in the year 1650."* EDIT.]

ernment, they were from the early times allowed an assistant or magistrate. Mr. Samuel Desborow,\* who next to Mr. Whitfield was esteemed the first and richest of the planters, was the first assistant. The next assistant in the town was Mr. William Leete. He came from England a young but a very hopeful man, as he proved to be afterwards both in New-Haven, and, after the union, in Connecticut colony. The family tradition is, that in England he was a clerk in the quarter sessions of the county, bred for the law. He was an excellent writer, and for many years served as secretary or clerk of the town, all the ancient records being written in his hand; and had a good understanding in the law. His eldest son John Leete, it is said, was the first child born in the town; and has left a numerous posterity. He was deputy governor of New-Haven colony: and after the union was governor of the colony. He removed to Hartford, and there died and was buried.

“The

---

\* “Samuel Desborough, Esq. was certainly related to the major-general.† He was some years in New-England, in America, whither he went, probably, to enjoy his religious opinions; from whence he returned in 1650-1. He was one of the commissioners of the revenues, and the same year represented the city of Edinburgh in parlement. At a council held at Whitehall, May 4, 1655, he was appointed one of the nine counsellors for the kingdom of Scotland; and in the same year keeper of the great seal of that nation, and allowed 2,000*l.* annually, paying out of it a salary to an under officer. In the year following he was returned a member of the British parlement, for the sheriffdom of Mid-Lothian, and was continued in all his employments under the protector Richard, and served in his parlement for the last place.” *Noble's Memoirs of Cromwell family*, ii. 254.

† *Major-general John Desborough, or Desborow, in the parliament army, married one of Oliver Cromwell's sisters. He was once nominated among Charles' judges, but refused to sit; was one of Oliver's council of state, and in high improvement under the protectorate. At the restoration he was excepted out of the list of those pardoned, yet his life was spared. He left the kingdom, but in 1665 was required by proclamation to be in England before July 23, in the following year; and in 1686, by another proclamation, published by James II., again required to return into the kingdom; but he did not, unless perhaps at the revolution....* NOTE BY DR. STILES. See a particular account of John Desborough, in *Noble's Memoirs of Cromwell family*, vol. II. No. XIX.



“The next magistrate in town was his second son Mr. Andrew Leete. He married a daughter of Mr. Jordan one of the original planters. Like his father he proved an excellent man, who, it is said and believed, was the principal hand in securing and preserving the Charter, when it was just upon the point of being given up to Sir Edmond Andross. In his house it found a safe retirement until better times. Next after Mr. Leete was Mr. Josiah Rosseter, son of Dr. Rosseter, and since him Mr. Abraham Fowler, son of John Fowler.

“The first planters who came to the town were of two ranks, viz. such who in England are called gentlemen and commonalty. None were poor men, and few or no servants. The gentlemen were all men of wealth, and they bare the appellation of Mr. as Mr. Desborow, &c. while according to the plain customs of those times the commonalty were named only *Goodman* or *Neighbour*, such or such an one. How greatly are times now changed? Every man almost is called Mr. every woman, *Miss*, *Madam*, or *Lady*. Popularity destroys all civil distinction.

“The first planters, whether *Gentlemen* or *Yeomen*, were almost all of them husbandmen by profession: few tradesmen; not one blacksmith among them; it was with great cost the town obtained one to live among them. In this respect they were quite different from the first settlers of New-Haven, although they came with them. The good people who came with Mr. Davenport were Londoners, bred to merchandize, and fixed upon a place proper for trading, which was their design. But Mr. Whitfield's people were quite the reverse, country people, and therefore chose their lands for different ends. Milford and Guilford were some time under consideration; but at length they fixed their choice upon Guilford. As they came from Kent, &c. so they chose for their plantation land as near like those as they could.”——“And what justly deserves to be remembered is, that the antient skill and spirit of the first planters in husbandry has descended and still continues among their posterity. There is a certain niceness and delicacy, wherein the perfection of husbandry consists. This is conspicuously to be found among them. It would be looked upon as a piece of vanity unsufferable, to say all the good husbandry in the country has been learnt from these skilful people.

people. But it is no vanity to say, there is no where better to be found. All strangers and Europeans agree to say, there is no place in the country to be found where the husbandry so nearly resembles the husbandry in England, especially in the fine piece of land called the Great Plain.

“As the first planters of the town were, like Jacob, plain men, bred to tillage and keeping cattle : so a great deal of the same temper, and spirit, and manners remains among their descendants to this day, as it was in Israel among the Rechabites. Industry, labour, and frugality are in general the reigning spirit of the inhabitants. There is no such thing as tavern haunting, and little wasting of time in drinking or fruitless diversions, the inhabitants are perhaps as little in debt as any town, and possess of as much solid estate : yet with grief it must be said, that of late years fashionable vices, by a flowing in of strangers, and a great increase of sailors, and some other incidents, are too sadly predominant. Thus evil communication will ever corrupt good manners. It is a disease, as catching, as deadly, as the plague itself. Alas, what a pity is it, that the country in general is so much overspread with and polluted by luxury and its attendants ; and these recommended by the fair character of politeness and good breeding !

#### SACHEM'S HEAD.

“The harbour lies south of the town [of Guilford]. We go through the great plains to it. It is a very poor thing, shallow, and encumbered with many rocks. But then about two miles westward from it is an excellent though small harbour. It is landlocked on all sides, but the southwest. The entrance or mouth narrow. It is well known by coasters. It is called *Sachem's Head*. It may not be unentertaining to mention the occasion of its taking this extraordinary name. After the Pequod Indians were driven from their forts at Mystic river, they fled to the westward towards Fairfield, the English pursued them, and though most of the forces went from the fort at Saybrook by water, a number of soldiers with UNCAS and his Indians scoured the shores near the sea, lest any of the Pequods should lurk there. Not a great way from this harbour, they came across a Pequod sachem with a few Indians, whom they pursued. As the south side of the harbour

bour is formed by a long narrow point of land, the Pequods went on to this point, hoping their pursuers would have passed by them. But Uncas knew Indians craft, and ordered some of his men to search that point. The Pequods, perceiving that they were pursued, swam over the mouth of the harbour, which is narrow. But they were way-laid, and taken as they landed. The sachem was sentenced to be shot to death. Uncas shot him with an arrow, cut off his head, and stuck it up in the crotch of a large oak tree near the harbour, where the skull remained for a great many years. Thus from this extraordinary incident, the name was adopted to the harbour."

MEMOIR OF THE PEQUOTS. COLLECTED FROM THE ITINERARIES AND OTHER MANUSCRIPTS OF PRESIDENT STILES.

**A**BOUT A. D. 1755, the Pequot tribe consisted of about 72 souls above 14 years of age, according to an account then taken. The Moheges have no communication with Pequots.

Names of Indians who, November 18, 1651, acceded to an agreement with the townsmen of Pequot [New-London] signed "Casesymamon his mark."

1 Casasinamon,	6 Neesouweégun, alias Daniel,
2 Poquotoognause,	7 Cutchánaguin,
3 Orkêneuse, alias Nicholas,	8 Máhmawámbam."
4 Codypoonush,	9 _____
5 Obbachickwood,	

Signed by Casasinamon "in his own behalf and the behalf of the rest of Nameeag Indians."

In 1651 New-London was called, in the town records, Pequot: "The townsmen of Pequot." In a deed on record, 1654, New-London is styled "Pequot, alias Mameeag and Tawawog." In the registry of deeds it is called Pequot till 1658, then New-London.

The last sachem of the Pequots, or rather of the Casasinamon branch of the Pequots, was, I think, Schandaub, who died about 1740. The Pequots were a tribe that came from the northward, a little before the English came. Old Sassacus

cus was their last grand sachem, who never had any sucessor in the sachemdom.

Massachusetts in 1658 began a dispute, claiming a share in the Pequot country, by virtue of the assistance which that colony afforded in the conquest of the Pequots. Commissioners gave their opinion, that Pequot extended from "Naihantick to a place called Weapauge, about 10 miles east from Mistick river."



ADDITIONAL MEMOIR A. D. 1762.

**T**HE remnant of the PEQUOT TRIBE reside on lands appropriated or reserved for them in the north-east part of Groton [Connecticut], called Maushantuxet. There may be 20 or 30 families. Mr. Isaac Smith of Groton gave me the following principal names of the families, March 4, 1762.

		Ætat.	Children (estimated not counted.)
Charles Schuddaub	(Sachem)	60	8
Charles Schuddaub jun.		28	3
*Ashbow	(Minister)	40	6
*John Quinnemēezsun		55	10
*Sampson Quiumps		45	
*Jeffery Caudjaugk		30	3
*John Caudjaugk		35	6
Samuel Weezsul		50	6
*Johnson Quiumps		60	8
Peter Meezsun		43	4
Jeffery Meezsun		22	
Daniel Quauqcheetes		60	6
Jeffery Quauqcheetes		38	6
Néezohkunump		65	
*Sampson		33	8
Abner		45	6
Charles		34	6
Tuweese		65	4

Widows.	Children.	
Kate	3	} These families and nine of the preceding lived in wigwams; the seven families marked thus * lived in framed houses.
Dido	2	
Judith	1	
Meezun	1	
Päuckeese	1	
Kate	1	

Collective

Collective estimate :

15 Families	30 Adults,
Children	92
Widows and their children	14
Single men	3
Single women	1
	<hr/>
	140

“N. B. By colony census, January 1762, found in Groton 176 Indian souls.”

For an account of the *Moheagan* Indians, who live in the vicinity of the Pequots, see Vol. ix.



THE NUMBER OF THE NYHANTIC TRIBE OF INDIANS.\*  
 “THIS ACCOUNT,” SAYS DR. STILES, “I TOOK ON THE SPOT AMONG THE WIGWAMS, OCT. 7, 1761.”

Families.	.Etat.	Unmarried	
		Sons.	Daughters.
John Moheeges - - -	75	0	4
John Lethercotes - - -	55	1	5
George Waukeete - - -	50	2	4
Philip Kewish - - -	45	4	3
Jacob Kewish - - -	40	0	0
John Tatsen - - -	40	4	1
Dan Waukeete - - -	25	1	1
Samuel Waukeete - - -	22	0	0
Thomas Sobuck - - -	40	2	1
Ben - - -	26	2	1
		<hr/>	<hr/>
		16	20

Widow	Widows.	.Etat.	Sons.		Daughters.	
			Sons.	Daughters.		
Sobuck - - -	- - -	-	6	-	1	
Nonsuch - - -	- - -	-	3	-	1	
Tupsha - - -	- - -	-	0	-	6	
Sue - - -	- - -	-	0	-	0	
Piunko - - -	- - -	-	4	-	1	
Tatson - - -	- - -	-	3	-	0	
Waukeete - - -	- - -	-	1	-	0	
Kewish, mother of Philip,	Æt. 70	0	0	-	0	
Ann Chesno - - -	- - -	-	0	-	0	
			<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	
			17		3	
			16		20	
			<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	
			33		23	

\* This tribe was seated at Lyme, in Connecticut.

10 Families, consisting of two persons at the head of each,	20
9 Widows	9
56 Children	56

Total souls of the tribe - - - - - 85

The number of their wigwams is 7; of their houses, 11; total 18.

Since 1755 there had gone into the war from this tribe 18 persons, 7 of whom were dead.

Yummanum, a Pequot Indian, last sachem of the tribe at Nihantic, died about 1740.

Ben Uncas, sachem of Mohegan, married George Wawkeete's oldest daughter in 1751.

In 1783, Dr. Stiles says in his *Itinerary*, there were at Nihantic sixteen Indian families, and only one wigwam; the rest live in houses.



KING NINEGRET'S TRIBE, A. D. 1761,

contained Men married	-	-	42	
Wives	-	-	about 40	
Widows	-	-	12	
Children	{	Boys	-	70
		Girls	-	82
K. Ninegret and wife	-	-	2	

248

This account is from Dr. Stiles's *Itinerary*; where the names of the adults are inserted. It having been originally written with his pencil, it was doubtless taken on the spot.

By an entry made in connection with this account, it appears that, beside this enumerated tribe, the Mobeagans and Nihanticks were under the government of Ninegret.



INDIANS ON CONNECTICUT RIVER.

*Tunxis*, Sepos or Sépous (Farmington), was the largest tribe. Now [1761] 4 or 5 families.\* *Mattabeeset*

\* Dr. Stiles observes, that in the memory of his mother there were 20 wigwams at Farmington, and that in 1761 a Farmington squaw told him, there were but 3 men and 6 married women Indians in that town. He asked the squaw, who was their Sachem? She replied, "Mr. Pitkin is our Saunchum." [Mr. Pitkin was the minister of Farmington.]

*Mattabeeset* or Middletown tribe, at Wounguck on the east side of Connecticut river, against the upper houses, was once a great tribe.

*Podunk* tribe, at the dividing line between Windsor and Hartford east side [of Connecticut river], in king Philip's war contained between two and three hundred men, who went off in that war, and never returned.

*Sukiaugk*, (West Hartford) a distinct tribe, remained till 1730, when they left Hartford, and went to Farmington. Now [1761] 2 or 3 families. In 1761 there was but one Indian family remaining in Hartford, and one only in Windsor.

*Hoccanum* tribe, south of Podunk, in East Hartford, near Glastenbury, remained till about 1745, and not a wigwam A. D. 1760.

*Pocumptuck*, (Springfield, or Deerfield) a large tribe [formerly]. "The Indians all above Hartford, Westfield, and Deerfield, went off in Philip's war, when Springfield was burnt."

After 1676, all the Indians malcontents retreated from New-England to Skotacook, on Hudson river (about 12 miles north of Albany), where they continued till since the present war [1761], when they committed hostilities on the English at Stockbridge. About A. D. 1754 they fled and incorporated with the St. Francis Indians, about 12 families.

Kockopotanauh, sachem of Derby, Milford, and Stratford Indians, [Connecticut] lived at Derby, where he died A. D. 1731. Within the memory of Mrs. Hemingway [in 1761 *Ætat.* 57] he had under him 60 men.

At Hassimanisco, in 1764, Dr. Stiles says, "I saw the burying place and graves of 60 or more Indians. Now not a male Indian in the town; perhaps five squaws, who marry negroes." *Itinerary.*

A LETTER FROM REV. JOHN DEVOTION OF SAYBROOK, TO  
REV. DR. STILES, INCLOSING MR. OCCUM'S ACCOUNT OF  
THE MONTAUK INDIANS.

*Sir,*

**T**HIS account inclosed is the draught, composition, handwriting, and style of the Rev. Mr. SAMPSON OCCUM, who

lives among the Montucks, whose character as a minister of the gospel, but more especially his good judgment and Christian sobriety entitle it to your notice. And he is not a little acquainted with the Indians far and near. Colonel Gardiner, in his letter to me, says thus: "Our Montucks have never had but one proper sachem since the English settled here; his name was Wyendance, and he presided over all the Indians in Suffolk county, was a subtil, crafty man, and his children never went into his measures in government, neither were they able to govern the people." I have not found that there are any more Indians in this town, than what I sent you an account of. The government has ordered a census to be returned at May sessions, and if the towns are so curious, as to return the Indians by themselves, I will endeavour to obtain that account and send you hereafter.



AN ACCOUNT OF THE MONTAUK INDIANS, ON LONG-ISLAND.  
BY REV. SAMPSON OCCUM,\* A. D. 1761.

*Sir,*

**I** SHALL give you the best account of some of the ancient customs and ways of the Montauk Indians, as memory will inform us at present.

1. I shall begin with their MARRIAGES. They had four ways of marrying. The first is, as soon as the children are born, or presently after they are born, parents made matches for their children. The father of a male child goes to the parents of a girl, and takes with him a skin or two, such as they wore before the English came, and since they have had blankets, takes a blanket and some other presents, and delivers them to the parents of the girl, and then he will relate his business to them, and when he has done, the other party will manifest their thankfulness, if they agree in the matter; but if not, they will say nothing, but return the things, and the man must carry them elsewhere. But where there is agreement, they will proceed to accomplish the marriage.  
They

---

\* Mr. Occum was an Indian of the Mohegan tribe. See an account of him in Coll. Hist. Soc. ix. 89.



They prefix a time, and both parties will make preparations. The parents of the boy prepare cloathing, ornaments, and other presents; and the other prepare a great feast; and the relations of both parties generally join in making these preparations, and when the appointed time comes, the parents of the girl and their relations bundle up their preparations, and will call as many guests as they please. The other party also gets in readiness with their company, and all things being ready on both sides, the parents of the girl take up their child, and march with their company to the man's house, and they go in boldly without any compliments, and deliver their child to the man and his wife, and they receive their daughter in law with all imaginable joy, and the mother will suckle the young couple, the one at one breast, and the other to the other breast, and both mothers will take their turns in suckling the couple; and if the children are weaned, they must eat out of one dish; and in the mean time the whole company is devouring the feast, and after the feast they will distribute the presents one to another, and this being ended they have completed the marriage; and every one returns to their wigwams, and the couple that are just married are kept at their parents' houses till they are grown up, and if they see fit to live together they will; if not, the parents can't make them to live together, but they will choose other companions for themselves.

2. Parents stay till their children are grown up, and then will proceed in the same manner in marrying their children, as the former; but if the father be dead, the mother will undertake for her son; if both father and mother are dead, some near relation will undertake. There is no material difference between this and the other just mentioned. Many times the couple that are to be married never see one another till the very minute they are join'd in wedlock; in this the young man is seated in a high bench in a wigwam, and the young woman is led by the hand, by her father or by some near relation, to the young man, and set her down by him, and immediately a dish of victuals is brought and set before them, and they eat together, &c.

3. Young people and others are allowed to choose companions for themselves. When a young couple conclude to have each other, they acquaint their parents of it, or near relations;

tions ; and they assist them in it, they generally make a feast &c. Sometimes the couple themselves make a small feast, and so call few neighbours to eat and drink with them.

4. The couple that are to live together make no noise about it ; but the woman makes few cakes baked in ashes, and puts them in a basket and carries them to the man, and sets them down before him, and if they have been free together he is obliged to receive what is set before him, and to live together ; but small provocations use to part them, and [they] marry others.

II. The way of NAMING THEIR CHILDREN. They use to make great dances or frolicks. They made great preparations for these dances, of wampum, beads, jewels, dishes, and cloathing, and liquors, &c. Sometimes two or three families join in naming their children, so make great preparation to make a great dance. When they have got all things ready, they will call their neighbours together, very often send to other towns of Indians, and when they have all got together, they will begin their dance, and to distribute their gifts, and every person that receives the gifts or liquors, gets up and pronounces the name that a child is to be called by, with a loud voice three times. But sometimes a young man or woman will be ashamed to pronounce the name, and they will get some other person to do it. Very often one family will make small preparations, and call few old people to name a child ; and it was very common with them to name their children two or three times over by different names, and at different times, and old people very often gave new names to themselves.

III. Concerning their gods. They imagined a great number of gods. There were the gods of the four corners of the earth ; the god of the east, the god of the west, the god of the north, the god of the south ; and there was a god over their corn, another over their beans, another over their pumpkins, and squashes, &c. There was one god over their wigwams, another of the fire, another over the sea, another of the wind, one of the day, and another of the night ; and there were four gods over the four parts of the year, &c. &c.

But they had a notion of one great and good God, that was over all the rest of the gods, which they called CAUHLUN-TOOWUT,

TOOWUT, which signifies one that is possessed with supreme power. They also had a notion of a great evil god, which they called Mutcheshesunnetooh, which signifies evil power, who they say is mischievous, &c.

And to these gods they call for help under every difficulty, and to them they offered their sacrifices of various kinds, &c.

As for their images, they kept them as oracles. The powaws consult these images to know the minds of their gods; for they pretend these images tell what the people should do to the gods, either to make a dance or a feast, or give something to the old people, or sacrifice to the gods.

IV. As for the POWAWS, they say they get their art from dreams; and one has told me they get their art from the devil, but then partly by dreams or night visions, and partly by the devil's immediate appearance to them by various shapes; sometimes in the shape of one creature, sometimes in another, sometimes by a voice, &c. and their poisoning one another, and taking out poison, they say is no imaginary thing, but real. I have heard some say, that have been poisoned, it puts them into great pain, and when a powaw takes out the poison they have found immediate relief; at other times they feel no manner of pain, but feel strangely by degrees, till they are senseless, and then they will run mad. Sometimes they would run into the water; sometimes into the fire; and at other times run up to the top of high trees and tumble down headlong to the ground, yet receive no hurt by all these. And I don't see for my part, why it is not as true, as the English or other nation's witchcraft, but is a great mystery of darkness, &c.

V. CONCERNING THEIR DEAD, BURIAL, AND MOURNING. They use to wash their dead clean, and adorn them with all manner of ornaments, and paint the face of them with divers colours, and make a great lamentation over their dead. When they carry the corpse to the grave, the whole company, especially of the women, make a doleful and a very mournful and loud lamentation, all the way as they go to the grave, and at the grave; and they use to bury great many things with their dead, especially the things that belonged to the dead, and what they did not bury they would give away, and they would never live in a wigwam, in which any person died, but will immediately pull it down, and they generally mourned for their dead

dead about a year, and the time they are in mourning the women kept their faces blackt with coal mixt with grease, neither would they wear fine cloathes, nor sing, nor dance, neither will the mourners mention the name by which their dead was called, nor suffer any one in the whole place to mention it till some of the relations is called by the same name; and when they put off their mourning habit, they generally made a great nightly dance. They begin it in the evening and hold it till morning.

VI. Concerning their NOTIONS OF FUTURE STATE. They believed the existence of their souls after their bodies are dead. Their souls go to the westward a great way off, where the righteous, or those that behaved themselves well in this world, will exercise themselves in pleasurable singing and dancing forever, in the presence of their Sawwonnuntoh or their western god, from whom they have received their beaus and corn, their pumpkins, squashes, and all such things. They suppose the wicked go to the same place or country with the righteous; but they are to be exercised in some hard servile labour, or some perplexing exercise, such as fetchng water in a riddle, or making a canoe with a round stone, &c.

These were common notions with all Long Island Indians.

In the year 1741 there was a general reformation among these Indians, and [they] renounced all their heathenish idolatry and superstition, and many of them became true Christians, in a judgment of charity. Many of them can read, write, and cypher well; and they have had gospel ministers to teach them from that time to this; but they are not so zealous in religion now, as they were some years ago.

Names.	No. in family.	Names.	No. in family.
Cyrus Charles	-	4 James Fowler	-
John Peter	-	3 Hugh	-
John Peter, jun.	-	6 Nezer	-
Hanabal	-	6 Nimrod	-
Joseph Pharaoh	-	5 Peggee Peter	-
Stephen Pharaoh	-	4 Widow Rafe	-
George Pharaoh	-	4 Gid Gaunuck	-
Richard Pharaoh	-	3 David Ruckets	-
Old Ned	-	4 Widow Moll	-
Old Pharaoh	-	4 Widow Jane	-
Molatto Ned	-	4 Jane Pharaoh	-

Names.	No. in Family.	Names.	No. in Family.
<i>Brought over</i> . . .	111	Stephen Cezer . . .	4
Widow Betty Peter . . .	1	Andonia Fowler . . .	4
Widow James . . .	7	Widow Pegge . . .	9
David Tutt . . .	2	Samuel Neases . . .	2
Widow Tutt . . .	5	Roben Famely . . .	6
Widow Shime . . .	7		
Widow Cyrus . . .	4		
		Total souls	162

*Rev. Mr. Devotion.*



MEMOIR OF BLOCK-ISLAND, OR MANISSES, A. D. 1762. BY DR. STILES.

THE Island (which had previously received the name of NEW-SHOREHAM) contained, A. D. 1756, about 45 dwelling houses, and 55 or 60 families,\* English; and few Indians, but no wigwams. All but two or three within 2½ miles of the meeting-house. "There is a ministry lot on Block-Island, which rents for 400l. old tenor per. ann. Mr. Maxfield received part of it A. D. 1756."



AN ACCOUNT OF THE INDIANS IN AND ABOUT STRATFORD (CONNECTICUT), IN A LETTER FROM REV. NATHAN BIRDSEY, TO REV. E. STILES, DATED STRATFORD, SEPT. 3, 1761.

*Rev. Sir,*

YOUR'S of June 24 &c. I received; and in compliance with your request have made inquiry and got the best information I can concerning the number of Indians and their wigwams and families in and about Stratford 40, 50, or 60 years ago; and also the present few broken remains of them. At Oronoake there have been no wigwams, unless one or two a few months in winter, for above 40 years. There were about 80 or 90 years ago, two Indian villages at Oronoake, but when the English settled here the Indians removed. At Paugasset, i. e. by Derby ferry and against Derby neck, there were 50 years ago about 8 or 10 wigwams, probably containing 10 or 12 families: but now no remains of them.

At

\* "As given me," says Dr. Stiles, "by the Rev. Mr. Maxfield."

At Turkey hill at the lower corner of Derby by the river, there was an Indian village of, I suppose, 8 or 10 families, who had a tract of land secured to them by the government. They have continued the longest of any; but they are now reduced to but one or two broken families, I believe not above 2 or 3 men belonging to them.

There were at Pauquaunuch, i. e. Stratfield, the place called Golden hill, about 20 or 25 wigwams 50 years ago. And in several other parts of the town there were small clans of two or three wigwams; but now not one at Golden hill or in any part of the town that I can learn, only here and there a scattering squaw, and scarcely a popoose.

At Poodatook by the river against Newtown, I have been lately informed by some Newtown people, when Newtown was first settled, a little above 50 years ago, there were reckoned of that tribe 50 fighting men; but now only one man among the broken remains of 2 or 3 families. I suppose in the whole bounds of Stratford 50 years ago, the best calculation that can be made of their numbers is about 60 or 70, perhaps 80, fighting men; now not above 3 or 4 Indian men, reckoning every straggler in all the town.

## NOTE BY DR. STILES.

The tribe that 50 years ago lived about Derby, Newtown, &c. are now retired back to the upper end of Kent on the west side of Oustonoc river over against Raumaug, and consist of 127 souls according to the publick census in 1762.



## AN ACCOUNT OF THE POTENUMMECUT INDIANS.\* TAKEN BY DR. STILES, ON THE SPOT, JUNE 4, 1762.

	Sons.	Daughters.
John Ralph, minister, - - - - -	1	2
Isaac James - - - - -	0	0
Richard Attoman - - - - -	0	0
Joshua Pompmoh - - - - -	0	2
John Ralph, jun. - - - - -	1	1

John

\* This tribe was seated near Harwich, in Old Plymouth colony. See Coll. Hist. Soc. i. 197.

			Sons.		Daughters.
Samuel Crook	-	-	0	-	0
Amos Lawrence, perhaps	}	say	0	-	3
2 or 3 children,					
David Quonsit	-	-	2	-	0
David Ned	-	-	1	-	0
John Davis	-	-	0	-	0
Joseph Toby	-	-	1	-	0
Micah Ralph, perhaps	-	-	2	-	0
Samuel Cuzzen, perhaps	-	-	2	-	0
			<hr/>		<hr/>
			10		8

Widows.					
Sarah Cuzzen, Ætat. 80.	-	-	0	-	0
Sarah George	-	-	0	-	0
Dorcas Quonsit	-	-	0	-	0
Mercy Attomon	-	-	0	-	0
Mercy Tom	-	-	0	-	0
Suse Francis	-	-	0	-	0
Hester Attomon	-	-	0	-	0
Margery Pompmoh	-	-	1	-	0
Hope Oliver	-	-	0	-	1
Hannah Tom	-	-	0	-	0
Lydia Pierce	-	-	0	-	0
Beck Francis	-	-	0	-	3
Ruth Ralph	-	-	0	-	0
Hester Jethro	-	-	0	-	1
			<hr/>		<hr/>
			11		13

Married men	-	-	-	13
Suppose as many wives	-	-	-	13
Widows	-	-	-	14
Unmarried children	}	Males	-	11
		Girls	-	13

Total souls in the tribe - - - 64

“Forty years ago, at a wedding were counted seven score Indians at Potenummecut.” “A great plague among the Indians at Potenummecut first before the English came.”



MASHPEE INDIANS, A. D. 1762.

Mr. Hawley [Missionary] has about 75 Indian families at Mashpee; not 4 to a family at a medium. [We have generally

erally followed the several MSS. in the orthography. Rev. Mr. Hawley, in his last letter to the Society for propagating the Gospel, observes, "Massapee is the true spelling." *Edit.*]



#### MONYMOYK INDIANS,\* A. D. 1762.

The sachem was Samuel Quasson, aged 60 years. The tribe called Quasson "now not 30 men, women, and children."



#### SACONET INDIANS.

Awaushunks, squaw sachem of Saugkonnet, had two sons; the youngest was William Mommynewit, or Maumminuey. Plymouth court ordered the grantees to buy off the oldest. Maumminuey was put to grammar school, and learned latin; designed for college, but was seized with the palsy. He sold some land.

The bounds of the Saconet tribe were a line from Pachet Brook to the head of Coaxet. About 60 years ago, or A. D. 1700, there were 100 Indian men of the tribe, and the general assembly appointed Numpaus their captain, who lived to be an old man, and died about a dozen years ago, since the taking of Cape Breton, 1745. Mr. Ebenezer Davenport says, he has heard his father say, that he knew 100 Indian men there.



#### EASTERN INDIANS.

A. D. 1710, there were computed about 300 warriors westward of Penobscot. The Indian war with the eastern Indians began about A. D. 1702, and ended July 1713; opened again 1722, and closed 1725. Dr. Mather, speaking of their numbers about A. D. 1710, says, "their numbers at first (among the several tribes) were computed 450 fighting men from Penobscot, westward; they were now reduced to about 300." *Hist. Wars N. Eng.* p. 60. *I suppose* (subjoins Dr. Stiles) *this includes all the tribes from Boston to Penobscot.* *Itinerary*, Vol. I.

Gov-

---

\* Seated at Chatham, on Cape Cod. Spelt by Gookin *Munamoyik*. See *Coll. Hist. Soc.* i. 197.



Gouverneur DUMMER, in a speech to the assembly of Massachusetts, May 26, 1726, observed: "The Penobscot tribe and those of Kennebec are generally removed to St. Francois, and other parts of the river St. Lawrence."



INDIANS IN ACADIE, A. D. 1760.

Extract of a letter from Col. FRYE to his excellency the governour of Nova Scotia, dated, Fort Cumberland, Chignecto, March 7, 1760.

*Sir,*

"I informed your excellency in my last of 10th December, of the submission of the French peasants residing at Merimichi, Rishebucta, Bouetox, Percondiack, and Memevamacook, made by their deputies sent here for that purpose. On the 30th of January last Mr. *Manach*, a French priest, who has had the charge of the people at Merimichi, Rishebucta and Bouetox, with a number of principal men of those places, arrived here, when they renewed their submission in a formal manner by subscribing articles, &c.

"With the French priest came two Indian chiefs, viz. Paul Laurence, and Augustine Michael. Laurence tells me he was a prisoner in Boston, and lived with Mr. Henshaw, a blacksmith. He is chief of a tribe, which before the war lived at La Have: Augustine is chief of a tribe at Rishebucta. I have received their submissions, for themselves and tribes, to his Britannick Majesty, and sent them to Halifax for the terms by governour Laurence. I have likewise received the submissions of two other chiefs, whom I dealt with as those before mentioned; and was in hopes (which I mentioned to Mr. *Manach*) I had no more treaties to make with savages. But he told me I was mistaken, for there would be a great many more here upon the same business, as soon as their spring hunting was over: and upon my enquiring how many, he gave a list of 14 chiefs, including those already mentioned, most of which he said would come. Mr. *Manach* farther told me, they were all of one nation, and known by the name of *Micmacks*; that they were very numerous, amounting to near *three thousand souls*; that he had learned their language, since he had been among them, and found so much excellence in it, that he was well persuaded, if the beauties of it were known  
in

in Europe, there would be seminaries erected for the propagation of it, &c. If there be so many of these Indians, as he says there are, I know this Province, as it abounds very plentifully with furs, may reap a vast advantage by them, provided Canada returns not into the hands of the French.”



NAMES OF THE INDIAN CHIEFS, INHABITING THE COAST OF  
ACADIE.

Louis Francis	-	-	-	Chief of Merimichi
Dennis Winemowet	-	-	-	Chief of Tabogimkik
Etienne Abehabo	-	-	-	Chief of Pohomoosh
Claud Atanaze	-	-	-	Chief of Gediack
Michael Algoumatimpk	-	-	-	Chief of Kashpugowitk
Joseph Algiman	-	-	-	Chief of Chignecto
John Newit	-	-	-	Chief of Pictou
Baptist La Morue	-	-	-	Chief of Isle of St. John's
Reni	-	-	-	Chief of Nalkitgoniash
Jeannot Piguidawalwet	-	-	-	Chief of Cape Breton
Claud	-	-	-	Chief of Chigabennakadik
Michael Algoumatimpk	-	-	-	Chief of Keshpugowitk
Batelemy Aunqualett	-	-	-	Chief of Minas
Augustine Michael	-	-	-	Chief of Rishébouctou.



NOTE BY DR. STILES.

“ This is an exact copy of the list of Indian chiefs, as I found it in the Pennsylvania Gazette. But I do not find Paul Laurence here : and it is strange that there should be two chiefs of the same place and the same name.”

Annexed to the preceding account in Dr. Stiles's MSS. is the following paragraph :

“ Halifax, July 2, 1761. On Wednesday the 25th ult. his honour the commander in chief, (lieut. governour Belcher) assisted by his majesty's council, publickly received the submission of the chiefs of the Mirimichy, Jediuk and Poginouch, Mickmack tribes of Indians inhabiting these districts, and entered into a treaty of peace and friendship with them.”

THE NUMBER OF INDIANS IN CONNECTICUT. FROM "AN ACCOUNT OF THE NUMBER OF INHABITANTS" IN THAT COLONY, TAKEN JANUARY 1, 1774, AND PUBLISHED BY ORDER OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY.

COUNTY OF HARTFORD.	Indian Males under twenty.	Indian Females under twenty.	Indian Males above twenty.	Indian Females above twenty.	Total Indians.
<i>Towns.</i>					
Chatham	1	1			2
Colchester	8	7	2	11	28
East-Haddam	1	1	3	2	7
East-Windsor	2	1	1	2	6
Farmington	8	9	14	12	43
Glastenbury	3	9	1	3	16
HARTFORD	3	2			5
Suffield	1		2	1	4
Tolland	3		1	1	5
Windsor	2	2		2	6
	32	32	24	34	122
COUNTY OF NEW-HAVEN.					
<i>Towns.</i>					
Branford	2		1	1	4
Derby	5	5	5	5	20
Durham	1				1
Guilford	8	10	2	3	23
Milford			1	3	4
NEW-HAVEN	7	2		2	11
Wallingford	2	1		1	4
Waterbury	2	1		1	4
	27	19	9	16	71
COUNTY OF FAIRFIELD.					
<i>Towns.</i>					
Danbury			2	1	3
FAIRFIELD			2	2	4
Greenwich		3	2	3	8
Newtown	1	1			2
Norwalk		2	4	3	9
Stratford	7	12	9	7	35
	8	18	19	16	61

## Number of Indians in Connecticut.

COUNTY OF WINDHAM.					
<i>Towns.</i>	Indian Males under twenty.	Indian Females under twenty.	Indian Males above twenty.	Indian Females above twenty.	Total Indians.
Canterbury	1	1	7	2	11
Coventry			2		2
Pomfret	2	4	3	2	12
Killingly	2	4	1	5	12
Lebanon	9	5	4	3	21
Mansfield	3	6	1	2	12
Plainfield	9	8	3	5	25
Voluntown	2	3		1	6
WINDHAM	2	7	3	7	19
Woodstock	13	9	7	9	38
	43	47	31	37	158
COUNTY OF LITCHFIELD.					
<i>Towns.</i>					
Cornwall	1	4	2		7
Kent	18	20	11	13	62
LITCHFIELD	1	1	1	5	8
New Hartford	4	3	1	5	13
Salisbury	5	2	1	1	9
Sharon			1		1
Woodbury	3	2	2	2	9
Total in LITCHFIELD County	32	32	19	25	109
In N. LONDON County*	249	207	142	244	842
In HARTFORD County	32	32	24	34	122
In NEW-HAVEN County	27	14	9	16	71
In FAIRFIELD County	8	18	19	16	61
In WINDHAM County	43	47	31	37	158
Total in CONNECTICUT	391	355	244	373	1363

\* The number in each town in this county is not inserted here, because it has already been inserted, in a "Memoir of the Moheagans," in Vol. ix. p. 79, of the Collections of the Historical Society.

THE NUMBER OF INDIANS IN RHODE-ISLAND. FROM AN  
 "ACCOUNT OF THE NUMBER OF INHABITANTS IN THAT COL-  
 ONY," TAKEN BETWEEN THE 4TH OF MAY AND THE 14TH OF  
 JUNE, 1774, AND ORDERED TO BE PRINTED BY THE GEN-  
 ERAL ASSEMBLY.

TOWNS.	MALES.		FEMALES.		TOTAL.
	Above 16	Under 16	Above 16	Under 16	
Newport	4	8	31	3	16
Providence	10	16	23	19	68
Portsmouth	2	8	6	5	21
Warwick	15	33	26	15	88
Westerly	8	12	10	7	37
New Shoreham	5	12	20	14	51
North Kingston	10	23	27	19	79
South Kingston	40	48	69	53	210
East Greenwich	5	7	11	8	31
Jamestown	6	4	14	8	32
Smithfield	8	7	4	4	23
Scituate	1	3	3	1	8
Charlestown	124	140	161	103	528
Coventry	4	1	4	3	12
Exeter	3	5	6	3	17
Middletown	5	1	5	2	33
Bristol	4	7	3	2	16
Tiverton	6	26	25	15	72
Little Compton	1	5	13	6	25
Warren	1	0	3	3	7
Cumberland	0	0	2	1	3
Richmond	1	10	3	6	20
Cranston	8	4	3	5	20
Hopkinton	7	8	2	4	21
Johnston	3	2	3	1	9
North Providence	1	3	1	2	7
Barrington	2	3	5	8	18
Total Indians in R. ISLAND.	284	396	482	320	1482

AN ACCOUNT OF SEVERAL NATIONS OF SOUTHERN INDIANS.  
 IN A LETTER FROM REV. ELAM POTTER, TO REV. DR.  
 STILES, A. D. 1768.

Rev. Sir,

IN answer to your request I have collected from my jour-  
 nals the following account of the various nations of In-  
 dians, bordering on the back parts of Virginia, the Carolinas,  
 Georgia and the Floridas.

1. Of

## I. Of the CHEROKEES.

This nation live principally upon the river Tenisa, which empties into the Mississippi. The body of this nation is situate about 220 miles northwest of Charleston, in South-Carolina, but their land and some of their settlements extend far northward, and border eastward on Virginia, North and South Carolina. June before last, his excellency William Tryon run a line betwixt them and the province of North-Carolina, to their general satisfaction. The Appalachian mountains run through this nation. The Rev. Mr. Richardson of South-Carolina informs me, that when he was amongst them as a missionary, ten years ago, they had about 1500 fighting men; but since then they have been greatly diminished by the wars with other nations, with the English, and by the small-pox, which is a most fatal disease among them. Since the war Mr. Hamrah from England has settled among them, and teaches some to read and write English, &c.

## II. Of the CATAUPAS.\*

These are a nation who lie upon the river Cataupa, near the line that divides North and South-Carolina, and they are situate about 180 miles from the sea. They live upon a tract of land which the king ordered the government to lay out for them, and was to consist of 30 miles square. In the year 1760, they were so reduced by the small-pox, that they have accepted of but 15 miles square. They may consist of 20 or 30 families, and their number is about 100 souls.

Their *Religion*. They acknowledge one supreme being; and think that when they die they shall go to the southwest. When they die, all their substance is buried with them. They very devoutly attend worship, when among the English upon such an occasion; and are desirous to have their children trained up in English schools. Their fatal remedy for the small-pox is the cold bath.

## III. Of the CHERAWS.

These were formerly a considerable nation, but of late have been so depopulated by wars and sickness, that they have fled to the Cataupas for protection, and now live amongst them. They consist of about 50 or 60 souls.

## IV. Of the CREEKS.

This nation lies southwest of Georgia, and some of their settlements not far from the river St. Mary's. This is a very  
powerful

\* Commonly written *Catawas*. EDIT.

powerful nation, and they have formerly been very valiant in war, and have not scrupled to call themselves the lords of the earth. They may be able (from the best accounts I could have of them) to raise about 1600 fighting men.

V. Of the CHOCTAWS.

These lie westward of the Creeks, and border on the Mississippi river, and are about the latitude 28. It is of late they have been furnished with fire arms, with which they defeated the Creeks in an engagement last winter. They may possibly be able to raise 8 or 900 fighting men, I believe not more; but I could get no certain account of their number, it being very lately that any traders have gone amongst them.

VI. Of the CHICKASAWS.

This nation live south of the Creeks, and border upon the Floridas. This is a very considerable nation, but not equal to some of their neighbours. As to their number, I could obtain no certain account, but presume they may be able to raise 3 or 400 fighting men.

These accounts, Sir, I had from the most knowing and intelligent gentlemen that I conversed with; and if there are any other nations or tribes of natives that I have not mentioned, they must be very small and inconsiderable: but I have mentioned every nation that I could gain intelligence of.

I am, Rev. Sir,

Your most obliged,  
and very humble servant,

ELAM POTTER.

New-Haven, Sept. 12, 1768.

*For Dr. Stiles."*



A LIST OF THE DIFFERENT NATIONS OF INDIANS, THAT MET SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON, AT NIAGARA, JULY 1764, TO MAKE PEACE IN BEHALF OF THEIR TRIBES. INCLOSED IN A LETTER FROM COLONEL JOSEPH GOLDTHWAIT, OF BOSTON, TO DR. STILES, A. D. 1766.

Coughnawagas	124	Ouquagos*	117
Mohawks	110	Onnondagas	115
Schoaries	14	Cojoges*	166
Connejerories	57	Senecas*	180
Oneidas	120	Genneces*	292
Tuskoraries*	64	Mennominies*	99

Brought over	1458	Hurons	25
Ottawagas	169	Stockbridge	120
Chipawawas*	71	Indian Officers, under }	42
Messessaques*	14	Sir William	
Fox*	20		<hr/>
Saxest†	20		1942
Pewinst	13		

“ The Indians marked thus\* made peace with Sir William, the other being all at peace with us before.”

† The two nations with this mark “ never were at war with us, but came by invitation of Sir William to the Congress.”

“ Col. Bradstreet after this went to Detroit with the army, and on his way made peace with the southern Indians, and those living round lake Erie.”

“ Enclosed,” writes Col. Goldthwait, “ is a pair of Indian Moccasins, made by a squaw of the Fox tribe, also a pair of garters. I also send you a French bowl of a pipe which was presented to the Huron tribe by a French priest ; the decorations are lost, but it may serve to hang up in your study, as it is made of some ore spewed out of a rock near lake St. Clair. Also the cover is a deer skin I saw drest by an Indian girl of the Oneida tribe, of eleven years old.”



#### INDIAN WAR A. D. 1764.

July 3, 1764, Sir William Johnson and Col. Bradstreet with the forces under their command, set out from fort Ontario at Oswego, for Niagara. The forces consisted of the following men, viz.

Of the 17th Regiment	-	-	-	-	243
55th	-	-	-	-	98
New-York	-	-	-	-	344
New-Jersey	-	-	-	-	209
Connecticut	-	-	-	-	219
Batteauxmen	-	-	-	-	74
Carpenters	-	-	-	-	9—1196
	Regulars			341	
	Provincials			855	
				<hr/>	
				1196	
	Indians			728*	
				<hr/>	
				1924	

\* This is stated as the number of Indians which accompanied Sir William Johnson, &c., but the number that actually attended the treaty is stated at 1942. See supra.



AN ESTIMATE OF THE INDIAN NATIONS, EMPLOYED BY THE BRITISH IN THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR, WITH THE NUMBER OF WARRIORS ANNEXED TO EACH NATION. BY CAPTAIN DALTON, superintendent of Indian affairs for the United States, who, after being several years a "prisoner with the enemy," arrived at Philadelphia, where he published the following account, 5 August, 1783.

Chactaws	600	Tuscaroras	200
Chickasaws	400	Onondagas	300
Cherokees	500	Cayugas	230
Creeks	700	Jeneckawst [Senecas]	400
Plankishaws	400	Sues and Sothuze	1300
Oniactmaws	300	Putawawtmaws	400
Kackapoes	500	Fulawin	150
Munseys	150	Muskulthe or nation of fire	250
Delawares	500	Reiners or Foxers	300
Shawanaws	300	Puyon	350
Mohickons	60	Sokkie	450
Uchipweys	3000	Abinohkie or the St. } Lawrence }	200
Ottawaws	300		
Mohawks	300		
Oneidas*	150	Warriors	<u>12690</u>

ESTIMATE OF THE NUMBER OF DELAWARE AND OTHER INDIANS, A. D. 1794.

At the grand Indian battle at Miami, 26 August, 1794, was captured by general Wayne, Antoine Lassell. He resided 22 years in Upper Canada, 21 of which at Detroit, and on Miami river. He resided at Miami villages 19 years before Harmar's expedition, when he kept store at that place. He was perfectly acquainted with the tribes and numbers of the Indians. His estimate was :

Delawares	-	-	-	-	500 warriors
Miamis	-	-	-	-	200
Shawanese	-	-	-	-	300
Tawas, or River	-	-	-	-	250
Wyandots	-	-	-	-	300
					<u>1550</u>

\* The Rev. Mr. KIRTLAND (Missionary) informed Dr. Stiles, that there were "410 souls before the war;" and that "120 joined the enemy."

† In 1783, Mr. Kirtland estimated the *whole* number of fighting men in the Seneca tribe, at 600.

Excepting a few hunters, they were generally in the action of 26 August 1794. *President Stiles' MSS.*

[According to another account, there were in that action,

Shawanese	-	-	-	-	200
Delawares	-	-	-	-	300
Miamis	-	-	-	-	100
Of others	-	-	-	-	100
					700

Tawas 240, Wyandots 300, *expected* but not then assembled.]

—♦—

AN ACCOUNT OF INDIAN CHURCHES IN NEW-ENGLAND, IN A LETTER WRITTEN A. D. 1673, BY REV. JOHN ELIOT, OF ROXBURY. COPIED UNDER PRESIDENT STILES'S INSPECTION FROM THE ORIGINAL MS. LETTER IN MR. ELIOT'S OWN HAND WRITING, IN THE LIBRARY OF THE MATHERS AT BOSTON.

*Rev. and beloved Brother,*

YOU told me that a friend of yours desired to be informed in the present state of the gospel work among the Indians, and desired me to furnish you with matter of information. I find you propose an hard work, especially considering how much variety of employments lyeth on me, but if you would propose any questions to me, I would endeavour to give you a short answer thereunto, which you accepted and do propose.

Q. How many churches are gathered, and where ?

A. There be (through the grace of Christ) six churches gathered, according to the order of gathering churches among the English, one at Natick, one at Hassanemeset, 28 miles to the west, one at Mashpege 20 miles east of Plymouth, two at Martyn's Vinyard, and one at Nantucket.

Q. What is the maner usually of their inchurching ?

A. The same (so near as we can) that is practised in gathering churches among the English. The history of gathering the church at Hassanemeset I wrote unto the honorable corporation in London, to be published, I refer the answer to this question unto that example.

Q. What number of members in each church are in full comunion ?

A. I have not numberd them, nor can I, though all baptized, both adult and infants, are registred in the church at Natick ;

Natick ; as also burials of such as are baptized, yet I know not if any of the other churches do so.

Q. Whether brotherly watch is observ'd among them according to Mat. 18, &c.

A. Yes it is so, and one is under admonition at this day, yea they are so severe that I am put to bridle them to moderation and forbearance.

Q. Whether are all furnished with church officers ; if not, which or how many are destitute ?

A. All are furnished with officers, saving the church at Natick, and in modesty they stand off, because so long as I live, they say, there is no need ; but we propose (God willing) not always to rest in this answer.

Q. Whether are they able and willing to provide for the outward subsistence of their Elders, that they may live of the gospel ?

A. They are willing according to what they have, and not according to what they have not ; they willingly pay their tyths and the commissioners allow them a man pr. ann. which renders their subsistence above their brethren, though low at the best.

Q. Whether their pastors do administer the sacrament among them ?

A. They doe so.

Q. Whether praying to God, reading of the scriptures, and catechising, &c. be attended in their familys duly ?

A. According to their ability it is so, but sundry cannot read ; all christians learn and rehearse catechise.

Q. What is their discipline in their churches, and whether they have consented to any model of church ordinances ?

A. They both consent unto and practise the same discipline and ordinances as we practise in the English congregational churches, they studiously endeavour to write after the English copy in all church order.

Q. Whether the Indian churches are settled in a way of communion of churches one with another by Synods, or how ?

A. Our churches have communion in the sacraments and send messengers to gatherings of churches, but have yet had no occasion of Synods.

Q. Whether they are conscientious of the sabbath day ?

A. Through the grace of Christ they are so.

Q. Whether Pauwauing be practised among them ?

A. It

A. It is abandon'd, exploded, and abolish'd, as also games by lottery and for wager, &c.

Q. Whether they observe any days of fasting and thanksgiving?

A. All days of publick fasting and thanksgiving which are exercised among us, they do religiously observe, even as they doe the sabbaths, and sometimes we have fasting days among ourselvs.

Q. Whether there are daily added to the church new converts, and that upon the Lords blessing upon the word preached by the pastors?

A. This is too strickt, daily added is a private word in a numerous church of religious and inlightened people; we are a blind thin and scattered wild people; 20 or 30 years time have made a visible appearance of a divine work, and I observe a great blessing to follow the labours of their own countrinen who labour among them.

Q. What is the manner of their admission of any new converts into the churches?

A. They are diligently instructed and examined both publickly and privately in the catechism; their blaimless and pious conversation, is publickly testified, their names are publickly exposed as desireing to make confession and join unto the church. The teachers and chief brethren do first hear their preparatory confessions, and when they judge them meet they are called publickly to confess, confederate and be baptized, both themselves and their children, if not up grown; the up grown are called upon to make their own confession, and so to be baptized as their parents were.

Q. Whether they are acknowledged by any of the churches of English, and accepted to communion occasionally in the churches?

A. Once when I was at the Vinyard, I administred the sacraments in the English church, and they accepted the Indian church to join with them, I told them that Christ did please first to beautify this his litle spouse with this jewel of love to embrace into their communion the Indian converts in church ordinances; another time I administred the sacraments in the Indian church, and such of the English church as saw meet joined with us. Brother, if you know not, you may know how I have moved and argued among the Elders, that it will be an act of honour to Christ, to the churches, and to  
yourselves,

yourselves, and but a fit yea necessary encouragement unto the work to accept them into your communion which the Lord hath so manifestly, undenyably accepted. I am quiet in the plea of the diversity of language.

Q. What is their church care for their children, and whether nothing of anabaptism hath leavened them ?

A. They see with the eyes of their own children, who have been trained up religiously and at schools, are now become teachers in the assembly of praying Indians, and in the exercise of their gifts at Natick, doe approve themselves good proficient in religion which maketh both them and me desirous a few schools to be erected at Natick. Two praying Indians of the Vinyard were seduced by the English anabaptists of Nantucket, but all the rest are stedfast, I praise God for it, and whether they are recovered I cannot say.

Q. Whether any spirit or way of heterodoxy hath sprung up among them ?

A. Not any; they have a deep sense of their own darkness and ignorance, and a reverent esteem of the light and goodness of the English, and an evident observation that such English as warp into errors doe also decline from goodness, by which means satan hath yet found no door of entrance into them. They have often discourses and sometimes variety of apprehensions which is speedily brought to me, and all rest in such scripture determinations as I express.

Q. Whether they have any schools, and the order thereof, and the proficiency that hath done therein ?

A. We have schools; many can read, some write, sundry able to exercise in publick, are sent by the church to teach in new praying places and who live remote from the churches and some or other of them doe every lecture day, at Natick, exercise their gifts two or three on a day, and I moderate. I desire to carry on school work strongly, but alas we want means, it would be a means to further the work greatly to found a free school amongst them.

Q. How doe those Indians that are not in church order carry it towards their neighbours that are in church state ?

A. With reverence and good esteem. Such as are approved and received by the church, are advanc'd to a good degree in the eyes of all the people, and the rather it is so, because they know it is free for them to have the same privelige, and they

they are exhorted to it, pains taken with them, to bring them to it, and they are sensible that only their ignorance and other sins keep them from it.

Q. What encouragement is there (as to outward matters) for any of the nations of England or Scotland to undertake the work of the ministry among them, by devoting himself wholly or mainly thereunto?

A. Nothing but poverty and hardships, unsupportable in a constant way by our clothed and housed nations. He that doth undertake the work must be a giver and not a receiver, in outward matters, and the fuller his hand is, to be a giver, the more room he will find in the acceptance of the worst of men; who knoweth not this to be the frame of all mankind? Their national customs are connatural to them. Their own nation trained up and schooled unto ability for the work, are the most likely instruments to carry on this work, and therefore a few schools among themselves, with true hearted governors and teachers, is the most probable way of advancing this work.

Q. How doe the converted Indians stand affected towards the English, by means of whom they have receiv'd the gospel?

A. They have a great reverence and esteem of them, and ordinarily in their prayers they thank God for them, and pray for them as the instrument of God for their good; but the business about land giveth them no small matter of stumbling, but then for the ruling part of the English to be right carried.

Q. Whether as to their civile government, they are wholly conformd to the English, or have any peculiar ordering of their own whereby they are ruled?

A. Conformd is a great word; we are expressly conformd to the scriptures, and to that form of government which we find Israel was under at the first, and never quite lost, to have rulers of ten, of fifty, of an hundred, we have yet gone no higher. Capt. Gookings and I did lately visit the now praying towns, some of them in Nipmuck, and he appointed a ruler (who is their ancient Sachem, a godly man) over 5 or 6 or 7 towns, and a general constable. All the praying Indians have submitted themselves to the English government. The general court hath (after the decease of others, as Mr. Nowel, Mr. Atherton,) authorised Capt. Gookings with the power of a county court to rule, make officers, laws with the consent  
of

of the people, and keep courts together with such as he hath invested with civile authority among them, and he hath ordained rulers of 10, of 50, &c. but captain, who hath acted more effectually (as having more matured opportunity) than any of his predecessors, can give you more ample satisfaction about their civile government than I can. Thus have I briefly gone through all your questions, the Lord add his blessing, so prayeth

Your loving brother  
in the Lord Jesus,

JOHN ELIOT.

*Rozbury, this 22 of the 6th, '73.*



ACCOUNT OF AN INDIAN VISITATION, A. D. 1698. COPIED FOR DR. STILES, BY REV. MR. HAWLEY, MISSIONARY AT MARSHPEE, FROM THE PRINTED ACCOUNT PUBLISHED IN 1698.

“THE Rev. Mr. GRINDAL RAWSON, pastor of the church in Mendon, and the Rev. Mr. SAMUEL DANFORTH, pastor of the church in Taunton, spent from May 30th, to June 24, 1698, in visiting the several plantations of Indians within this province” of Massachusetts, of which they gave the following account.

In pursuance of the orders and instructions given us by the Hon. Commissioners for the propagation of the gospel among the Indians in the American plantations, in New-England and parts adjacent: We have given the said Indians in their several plantations, in the province of Massachusetts Bay, a visit, and find as followeth:

At Little Compton we find two plantations of Indians, who keep two distinct assemblies for the worship of God, (according to the best information we could have) are constant therein. The first assembly dwells at Saconet; Samuel Church, alias Sohchawahham, has for more than one year past endeavoured their instruction, and is best capable of any in that place to perform that service. He has ordinarily forty auditors, many times more: of these above twenty are men. Divers here are well instructed in their catechisms, and above ten can read the bible. Here are likewise two Indian rulers, John Tohkukquonno and Jonathan George; the first of which is a man well spoken of.

At Cokesit in Little Compton, Daniel Hinkley hath taught here four years; twice every sabbath. Eleven families are his auditors; most of the men here can read; and many young ones (of whom we had an instance) can say their catechisms. Of this company three persons are in full communion with the church settled at Nukkehkummees. A person called Aham is schoolmaster here, and we are informed performs his work well. Here are also two persons improved as rulers. Preaching here, the two forementioned teachers, at our direction, prayed very soberly and understandingly. They gave very decent attendance, and were very handsomely clothed in English apparel.

At Darkmouth we found two assemblies of Indians: at Nukkehkummees William Simons (ordained by Japhet of Martha's Vineyard 3 years since) is the pastor. In the church here are forty communicants; part dwelling in Nukkehkummees, part in Assameekg, Cokesit, Acushnet, and Assawanupsit. Here are many that can read well. The word is preached here twice every sabbath. Twenty families, in which one hundred and twenty persons, at least, are for the most part constant hearers; almost all their children can read. Jonathan hath been their schoolmaster, but ceases now for want of encouragement. We propose his continuance, as a person well fitted for the employment. William Simons informs that here are four persons chosen annually as rulers. They are well clothed, and give good attendance whilst we dispensed the word to them. Their pastor praying with good affection and understanding; and is likewise well reported of by the English.

At Acushnet, John Bryant their teacher for five or six years past. Here are fourteen families, unto whom William Simons once in a month ordinarily comes and preaches. Some of those who belong to the church at Nukkehkummees being here settled, viz. five men and ten women. We find that scandals among them are reflected upon; if any exceed the bounds of sobriety, they are suspended until repentance is manifested. By the best intelligence we could arrive to from sober English dwellers on the place, we understand that they are diligent observers of the sabbath. They are generally well clothed, diligent labourers, but for want of schooling their children are not so well instructed as at other places; though they earnestly desire a remedy. At



At Major Winthrop's Island, Mr. John Weeks, an Englishman, teaches them on the sabbath. An Indian named Asa, chief ruler among them, and a person well reported of, teaches them when Mr. Weeks cannot attend it. Here are about nine families, most of which can read well, are diligent in their callings and generally belong to the church whereof Japhet is pastor, at Martha's Vineyard. An Indian, called Sampson, attends their school every winter, and hath the reputation for the most able among them for that service, taking pains in catechizing their children every week. Men, women and children, are thirty persons in all. Half the Indian inhabitants of this island have died in a few years past. Three families living at Saconeset point do attend to the meeting at Mr. Winthrop's island. At an island, called Slocum's island, we hear of seven families, most of which can read, being lately moved thither from the Vineyard and other places.

We hear of some Indians at the furthest island, formerly called Sandford's island, where there is an Indian teacher.

At Martha's Vineyard, viz. at Chilmark alias Nashanekammuck : Here is an Indian church of which Japhet is pastor ; a person of the greatest repute for sobriety and religion, and diligent in attending his ministerial employment : Unto whom is adjoined Abel, a ruling elder, who likewise preaches to a part of the church, living at too great a distance ordinarily to attend Japhet's ministry ; although they come together to attend church administrations. In this place we find two hundred and thirty one persons ; three score and four in full communion. Their children are well instructed, as we find by our examination of them in their catechisms.

At Ohkonkemme, within the bounds of Tisbury, are three score and twelve persons, unto whom Stephen and Daniel, who are brothers, are preachers ; well reported of for their gifts and qualifications. Here we spent part of a sabbath, and were joyful spectators of their christian and decent carriage ; the aforesaid Daniel praying and preaching not only affectionately but understandingly : unto whom also we imparted a word of exhortation in their own language, to their contentment and declared satisfaction.

At Seconchut in aforesaid Chilmark also, which belongs to the inspection of the aforesaid Stephen and Daniel, are thirty

thirty five persons, to whom, for their greater ease, either the one or the other dispenses the word.

At Gayhead, Abel and Elisha are preachers, to at least two hundred and sixty souls; who have here at their charge a meeting house already framed. We find that the Indians here, as also may be affirmed of most of the Indians belonging to Martha's Vineyard (Chaubaqueduck excepted) are well instructed in reading, well clothed, and mostly in decent English apparel.

At Edgar town, viz. at Sahnchecontuckquet, are twenty five families amounting to one hundred and thirty six persons; Job Russel is their minister.

At Nunnepoag about eighty four persons; Joshua Tackquannash their minister, Josiah Thomas their school master.

At Chaubaqueduck about one hundred and thirty eight persons; Maumachegin preaches to them every sabbath. Josiah by birth is their ruler or sachem.

At Nantuckquet, we find five congregations. •The preachers unto which are Job Muckemuck, who succeeds John Gibs deceased; John Asherman, a person well reputed of; Quequenah, Netowah a man greatly esteemed by the English for his sobriety, Peter Hayt, a well carriaged and serious man. Also Wunnohson and Daniel Spotso, Codpoganut and Noah (a person never known to be overtaken with drink, but a zealous preacher against it). These are their constant teachers. Amongst these are two churches, who have ordained officers, in each of which are twenty communicants at least; in which a commendable discipline is maintained, as persons of good reputation on the place have informed us. The whole number of adult persons here amount to about 500. Three schools were upheld among them, though at present none, for want of primers. A good meeting house is building here; the frame whereof, at their desire and charge, is already procured by the worshipful captain Gardner. Here we preached to them in their own language, twice in one assembly, unto which they were generally convened on the Lord's day. Three of their principal preachers were improved by us in prayer, that we might discover something of their abilities; in which we found them good proficient; the whole attending with diligence and great seeming affection.

At Sandwich, here we find two assemblies of Indians; to one

one whereof captain Thomas Tupper an Englishman preaches every sabbath day. Here are likewise Indian preachers, whose abilities in prayer we tried, viz. Ralph Jones (a person well reputed of for sobriety) and Jacob Hedge. There are in number 348 persons; men, women and children generally well clothed. Preaching among these, in a small meeting house, built for them after the English fashion, we experienced their good attention, and had their thankful acknowledgments. Their Indian rulers here are William Nummuck, Ralph Jones, Jacob Hedge, and John Quoy.

At Mashpah, belonging to Sandwich, we found another assembly of Indians, among whom the Rev. Rowland Cotton frequently dispenses the word, unto whose good progress in the Indian language we cannot but subjoin our attestation, having heard him dispense the word to them; among whom also we left a word of exhortation. They are in general well clothed, being in number 57 families, in which are from ten years old and upwards 263 persons, divers of whom have the character of very sober men. The Indian preacher here is Simon Papmonit, a person suitably qualified as most among them for that work. Their rulers are Caleb Papmonit, Caleb Pohgneit, Sancohsin, James Ketah. Here they want a schoolmaster.

At Eastham and Harwich, Eastharbor, Billingsgate, and Monimoy are (as Mr. Treat informs us) 500 persons. At Ponanummakut, Thomas Coshaumag preacher and schoolmaster. Their rulers William Stockman and Lawrence Jeffries. Families 22. Moses teaches school here.

At Eastharbor and Billingsgate, Daniel Munshee, preacher; Daniel Samuel, ruler. About 20 houses, in some of which two families.

At Monimoy, in which 14 houses, John Cosens preacher and schoolmaster. Rulers John Quossen and Menekish. At Sahquatucket, alias Harwich, 14 families, to whom Manesseh preaches. Joshua Shantam ruler. Many among these, almost every head of families, are persons capable of reading scripture, as we are informed.

At Plymouth, viz. at Kitteaumut or Moniment ponds, William Nummuck has preached some time, but has removed, and his return earnestly desired. Here are ten families. Joseph Wauno and John his brother, improved by major  
Bradford

Bradford to decide small differences among them. Esther, John's wife, has sometime been improved here as a school-dame; and is willing still to be useful in that way. Near Duxbury sawmills we hear of 3 or 4 families. A like number at Mattakesit. At Kehtehticut are 40 adults, to whom Charles Aham preaches, and teaches their children to read.

At Assawampsit and Quittaub are twenty houses containing 80 persons. John Hiacoomes preacher and constant school master. Also Jocelyn preaches at Assawampsit. At this plantation are persons belonging to the church at Nukkehkummees.

At Natick we find a small church of 7 men and three women; their pastor Daniel Takawombpait (ordained by the Rev. and holy man of God JOHN ELIOT deceased) who is a person of great knowledge. Here are 59 men, and 51 women, and 70 children under 16.

At Hassinamisco\* are 5 families, unto whom James Prinler stands related as teacher. \* *Grafton.*



“ A LIST OF THE NAMES OF THE INDIANS OLD AND YOUNG, VIZ. PARENTS WITH THE NUMBER OF THEIR CHILDREN BOTH MALE AND FEMALE, WHICH LIVE IN OR BELONG TO NATICK; TAKEN JUNE 16, 1749,” FOUND AMONG THE PAPERS OF THE LATE THADDEUS MASON, ESQ. OF CAMBRIDGE, AND PRESENTED BY HIS ELDEST DAUGHTER TO THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Deacon Ephraim, wife and her 3 children	-	-	-	5
Isaac Ephraim	-	-	-	6
Jacob Chalcom, wife and 3 children	-	-	-	11
Jeremy Comacho, wife and one child	-	-	-	14
Joseph Comacho, wife and one child	-	-	-	17
Daniel Thomas, wife and one child	-	-	-	20
Elizabeth, Ann and Unice Brooks	-	-	-	23
Abram Speen, wife and one child	-	-	-	26
Widow Comocho	-	-	-	27
Judith Ephraim and 2 children	-	-	-	30
Prince Nyar and wife	-	-	-	32
5 children of Samuel Abram	-	-	-	37
Widow of said Samuel Abram and one child	-	-	-	39
Widow of Hezekiah Comacho and 2 children	-	-	-	42

These 42 above named belong to the south side of Charles river by Dedham.

*A List of Indians at Natick, A. D. 1749.* 135

Peter Brand, wife and 2 children	4
Peter Ephraim, wife and 4 children	10
John Ephraim, wife and 3 children	15
Thomas Awonsamug, jun. wife and one child	18
Widow Rumnemarsh and Zipporah Peegun	20
3 children of Solomon Thomas	23
2 Widow Sooducks, Widow Tray and Thomas Scoggin	27
Benjamin, Jonas, Hannah and Mary Tray	31
Joseph Sinee, wife and 3 children	36
William Thomas and 2 children	39
Mary George	40
Nat Hill, wife and 7 children	49
Widow Womsquon, and 4 children	54
Solomon Womsquon, wife and 3 children	59
Jonas Obscow	60
Widow Pitimee, Ruth and Ruth's 2 children	64

These 64 south of Sawpit Hill on Peegun Plain and nearer now to meeting than said hill is, unless there be a mistake in Sol. Womsquon.

Thomas Peegun, wife and 3 children	5
Josiah Sooduck and wife	7
Widow Tom and one child and Sarah Francis	10
5 Pogenits	15

All before mentioned are within two miles and an half of our meeting house.

Nathaniel Coochuck, wife and child	3
Josiah Speen, wife, child and grand child	7
Moses Speen and child	9
Widow Speen	10
Betty Babesuck and her niece Rhoda	12
Patience Pequassis	13
Zachary son of Hannah Speen	14
Daniel Speen	15
Samuel Speen	16

These 16 live west, or own land most of them west of Sawpit Hill, and it is to be noted that Deacon Ephraim's wife's 4 children, which by mistake are said to be 3, own land west of said hill, so doth Samuel Lawrance and it may be Mary Peegun.

Ester Thomas and child	2
Thomas Awonsamug, wife and 3 children	7
Sarah Rumnemarsh	8
Samuel Lawrance, Thomas and Hannah Waban	11

136 *A List of Indians in Natick, A. D. 1749.*

Widow Mary Peegun and 5 children	-	-	-	-	17
Oliver Sooduck, Job Speen's child	-	-	-	-	19
Bethia Cole	-	-	-	-	20
Mary, daughter of Sarah Womsquon	-	-	-	-	21
Joseph and Joshua Brook	-	-	-	-	23
Hannah Peetimee's child	-	-	-	-	24
Esther Sooduck	-	-	-	-	25
Elizabeth Wages	-	-	-	-	26

The most of the last 26 usually resided on the south east of Peegun plain, and so are accommodated as the meeting house now stands.

	42
	64
	15
	16
	26
	1
	2
	<hr/>
Total	166

Having carefully considered the within list, and being well acquainted with Natick, we hereby signify that we are well assured it may be depended on as a true one, except that perhaps we have not thought of every one, and we hope some may be alive who have been soldiers or at sea, not here named.

JOSEPH <sup>his</sup> ~~✕~~ EPHRAIM.  
 JACOB <sup>mark.</sup> CHALCOM.  
 JOHN EPHRAIM.  
 DANIEL THOMAS.

NOTE.

- In 1651, an Indian town was formed at Natick.
- In 1660, an Indian church was embodied there.
- In 1670, there were two teachers, John and Anthony, and between 40 and 50 communicants. *Hutchinson.*
- In 1753, in Natick 25 families, beside several individuals.
- In 1763, 37 Indians only; but in this return, probably the wandering Indians were not included.
- In 1797, the Rev. Mr. Badger, of Natick, estimated the number of "clear blooded" Indians, then in this place, and belonging to it, to be "near twenty." The number of church members was then "reduced to twenty three."

See Coll. Hist. Soc. iv. 180, 181, 195, and v. 43.



MOHAWK NUMBERS, BY REV. MR. HAWLEY OF MASHPEE.  
FROM PRESIDENT STILES' MSS.

Ouskut	1	Hawsanewausau	30
Tegene	2	Kyarynewausau	40
Ausau	3	Wisknewausau	50
Kyary	4	Yauyorknewausau	60
Wysk	5	Chautocknewausau	70
Yauyock	6	Tegeluhnnewausau	80
Chautock	7	Tutohnewausau	90
Tegeluk	8	Ouskut Towwaunowwau	100
Tutoh or Wautelo	9	Ouskut Towwaunow-	} 1000
Wyary	10	wauselausau	
Towausau	20		



NUMBERS, IN THE NORRIDGWOG LANGUAGE, FROM RALLE'S  
MS. DICTIONARY OF THE NORRIDGWOG LANGUAGE, IN  
THE LIBRARY OF HARVARD COLLEGE.

" LES NOMBRES.

<i>Nri abstracti.</i>	<i>Nri concreti nobiles.</i>	<i>Nri cereti ignobiles.</i>	<i>Tò quoties une fois.</i>
1 pézekò	pézekò	pezekòn	pézekòda
2 nise	niòak	nisenòr	nisseda
3 nass	nròak	nlianòr	nseda
4 iéò	ieòak	ieònòr	ieòda
5 bareneskò	naïnuòak	naünnenòr	naïnuda
6 negòdaüis	negòdaüiskessòak	negòdaüis kèssenòr	negòdaus kesseta
7 taüibaòäüis	taubaòaus kessòak	<i>et sic de ceteris.</i>	<i>et sic de ceteris.</i>
8 ntsaüsek	<i>et sic de ceteris.</i>		
9 nòriòì			
10 mtára			
11 negòdaüinkáo			
12 nisaüinkáo			
13 tsauinkáo			combien y at il de cela v. g.
14 iéòäüinkáo			de syllabes.
15 naüinnaüinkáo			kèssenòio ?
16 negòdaüintsauinkáo			R. 4. iéòndio 3. uhaòio. &c.
17 taüibaòäüintsauinkáo			
18 ntsaüsek-kessauinkáo			

19 nōriōi-kessatinkáo	Il's sont deux cent guerriers v. g.
20 nisineské	nisattegöessö.
21 nisineské taiba pézekö	
22 nisineské taiba niss	
30 tsineské	
31 tsineské taiba pézekö	
& sic cæt.	
40 iéöineské	
50 naunineské	
60 negöðaiis kessineské &c.	
100 negöðategöe	
200 nesa'tegöe	[N. B. The character ö is in
1000 negöðamgöiki	the MS. the Greek ω.]
2000 nisamgöiki	
3000 tsamgöiki	
10000 negöðategöëköamgöiki &c."	



ACCOUNT OF THE SURPRISE AND DEFEAT OF A BODY OF  
INDIANS, NEAR WRENTHAM. IN A LETTER FROM DR.  
MANN.

FOR THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

Gentlemen,

I SHALL make no apology, for this communication relative to a fact, which has escaped the notice of the historian; but which is, nevertheless, as well authenticated, as most transactions are, which are recorded upon the pages of history. The adroit military action alluded to, was considered by the first settlers of Wrentham as of the utmost consequence to them, and, by reason of its importance, deserves to be preserved in perpetuity. The exploit I have repeatedly heard related, by different persons, after the following manner.

A man, by the name of *Rocket*, being in search after a strayed horse in the woods, about three miles north east from that part of the town where the meeting-house of the first parish stands, discovered a train of Indians, forty-two in number, towards the close of day, directing their course westward. From their warlike appearance *Rocket* was suspicious, that they had it in contemplation to make an attack upon the inhabitants the following morning, at a time, when the men were scattered, at their labour upon their lands; this mode of assault, by surprise,



prise, being usual with the aborigines. Rocket undiscovered followed the trail, until about the setting of the sun ; when they halted, evidently with a design to lodge for the night. The spot chosen was well situated to secure them from a discovery. Rocket watched their movements, until they had laid themselves down to rest ; when, with speed, he returned to the settlement, and notified the inhabitants with his discovery. They being collected, a consultation was held ; whereupon, (the women, the infirm, and children, being secured in the fortified houses) it was agreed to attack the Indians, early the next morning, before they should leave their encampment. The strength of the little army collected, consisted of thirteen. At their head was a capt. *Ware*. Rocket was their guide. This intrepid band arrived upon the ground, before day light ; and were posted within a short musket shot from the encamped Indians with orders to reserve their fire, until the Indians should arise from their lodgings.

Between the appearance of day and sun rise the Indians rose nearly at the same time ; when, upon the signal given, a full discharge was made ; which, with the sudden and unexpected attack, together with the slaughter made, put the Indians into the greatest consternation ; so that, in their confusion, attempting to effect their escape, in a direction opposite to that, from which the attack was made, several were so maimed, by leaping down a precipice, from ten to twenty feet, among rocks, that they became an easy sacrifice. Some of the fugitives were overtaken, and slain. And, it is related, that two of them, being closely pursued, in order to elude their followers, buried their bodies, all except their heads, in the waters of mill-brook\* (about one mile from the first scene of action), where they were killed. It is probable, that these were likewise injured by their precipitation from the rock. It is added, that one Woodcock discharged his long musquet, called, in those days, a buccaneer, at a single fugitive Indian, at the distance of eighty rods, and broke his thigh bone, and afterwards dispatched him.†

After

---

\* The most southerly branch of Charles river.

† The custom of putting to death wounded Indians, during the Indian wars, is not agreeable to our modern ideas of humanity ; but when it is recollected, that the inhabitants had not the means to convey them off, the apparent barbarity is more reconciled to our feelings.

After the action, there were numbered of the Indians killed, upon the field of battle, and by the fall from the rock, twenty, some say twenty-four; of the inhabitants not one.

From the best information, this transaction took place about the commencement of Philip's war, whether the year before, the same year, or the year after, I have not been able to ascertain. It is certain that the inhabitants removed from their settlements twice during the Indian wars, down to Dedham, as a place of security; and once after the town was incorporated, when most of the houses were burnt by the Indians. Mr. Bean, in his century sermon, preached in the year 1774, says they were all burnt except two.

The circumstances of the above action, although transmitted down traditionally, are correctly related, even at this distant period, by several now living. This is not strange when it is known, that the principal part of the present inhabitants are directly descended from those very men, who were engaged. All who pretend to be acquainted with the facts, agree in those things material respecting them. The names of the two persons mentioned as principals, viz. Ware and Rocket, are found upon the ancient records of this town, annexed to a written instrument, engaging themselves and fourteen others to return to Wrentham, after being absent four years, in consequence of the Indian wars. The name of Woodcock is not found among the first settlers of Wrentham; but it is historically known, that a settlement had been made by one Woodcock, about five miles south from Wrentham, previous to that at Wrentham. This settlement was known by the name of Woodcock's garrison;\* and was during the wars,

---

\* \* Now in possession of Israel Hatch, near the Baptist meeting house in Attleborough.

[This garrison was pulled down in 1806, and a relick of it is deposited in the Museum of the Historical Society. On the spot where it stood, Mr. Hatch has erected a large and elegant house for an Inn. It stands on the great road between Boston and Providence, and cannot fail to attract the attention of the traveller. The *Sign* of the Inn is KING PHILIP. On the one side, that famous aboriginal prince appears alone, armed with his bow and arrows; on the other, he appears armed with a gun, and on the back ground are wigwams and appropriate Indian imagery. We were told by the landlord, that the sign was painted by an English artist, and cost him one hundred dollars. Regretting its exposure to the winds and tempests, we recommended that it be placed within the portico of the Inn. EDITOR.]

wars, a place of rendezvous, for the detachments from Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies. It is not improbable, that upon apprehension of danger, Woodcock might repair to this settlement, as a place of more security. There is an intelligible man, eighty-seven years of age, Deacon Thomas Mann, now living, who when a youth was acquainted with Rocket\* and perfectly well remembers, that, on account of the above adventurous deed, he received, during his life, an annual pension from the general court. A grand daughter of capt. Ware, by the name of Clap, who is also living, aged ninety four years, well recollects to have heard the story related, when quite young, as a transaction, in which her aged grandfather bore a conspicuous part; whether she ever heard the circumstances of the action direct from her grand parent, she, at this distant period, does not remember; the truth however she doubts not. Mrs. Clap still possesses a strength of understanding to an astonishing degree. The energies of her mind and the powers of recollection seem not to be impaired; ancient impressions, as well as those of more recent date, are fresh in her memory. Within a few years, she has recovered her sight, which had been almost lost; so as to be able, at this time, to thread the smallest needle.

There are now men living, who well recollect to have seen the bones, in abundance, of the unburied Indians, left upon the spot, where the action happened. Some few have been found since my remembrance. The large flat rock, where the Indians were encamped, when attacked, has, to this day, been known by the name of *Indian Rock*. This rock is situated within the bounds of Franklin, three miles north west from the centre of Wrentham. The highest part of the precipice, near the middle, is about twenty feet perpendicular; it gradually slopes from thence to the extremity of the two wings, where it is ten feet in height; it faces southerly with an arched front, forming a curved line fourteen rods in length, whose chord is twelve rods. We may rise the rock, from the north, northeast, and northwest gradually, where the assailants were posted.

It has been a matter of question with some, that a transaction of such consequence to the original adventurers of Wrentham, should not have been noted by the primitive historians of

\* Rocket lived to a great age.

of New-England, when events of smaller importance have by them been minutely detailed. Their silence concerning the above enterprise has led to a suspicion, that the whole is a forged tale, destitute of any foundation. But when it is considered, that the early war-achievements, which have been recorded, were most, if not all, executed under the direction of government; and were actions, in part, committed to writing by the very officers who were sharers in them; we shall no longer be surprised, that a deed transacted, in the first instance, without the knowledge of authority, an expedition, executed upon the spur of the moment by a few frontier settlers, for their own security, should be overlooked among a multiplicity of events, which succeeded each other in quick succession; and many of which, on account of a display of courage and enterprize, excited both gratitude and astonishment.

Should the gentlemen members of the Historical Society bestow as much credit upon the story, as I have, they may not pass it over without some notice; but, if they should suppose that this fragment is not accompanied with authenticity sufficient to claim their attention, they will consign it to oblivion.

From their very humble servant,

JAMES MANN.

Wrentham, Aug. 22d. 1806.



A LETTER FROM REV. JONATHAN EDWARDS, TO HON. THOMAS HUBBARD, ESQ. OF BOSTON, RELATING TO THE INDIAN SCHOOL AT STOCKBRIDGE.

STOCKBRIDGE, AUG. 31, 1751.

*Honoured Sir,*

I WOULD now give you particular information of what has lately passed relating to the Indian affair in this town, and of the present situation, circumstances and exigencies of this affair; it being absolutely necessary that some persons of influence in the General Assembly be informed of these things.

When the commissioners of the General Assembly were going to Albany, they came by the way of Stockbridge, as they were directed, that they might treat with the Mohawks here, concerning their settlement in this place, &c. But they found

found that Hendrick, and most of the heads of families, were gone to their own country. And therefore, when they met them at Albany, they proposed to them to return with them hither, that they might have opportunity to treat with them here on this affair. I being at Albany, at that time, with the commissioners, (having been invited thither by them) I there talked with Hendrick and Nicoles alone, using arguments with them to persuade them to endeavour to get as many of their chiefs as they could to come to Stockbridge, and give opportunity to the commissioners to discourse fully with them about this great affair. And this matter was further urged afterwards by the commissioners themselves. Hendrick made answer, that it was necessary, according to their manner, first to have some time of consideration, and to hold a council among themselves; therefore they would return to their own country; and after consultation, would send to Stockbridge, and give notice of their determination, in 20 days. Accordingly, about the end of this term, Nicoles, and several others came down, and brought word that the chiefs of their nation would be here in about a week. And by Nicoles's account, they seemed to expect, at least to desire, not only then to meet the committee formerly chosen to provide for them, but also the same commissioners they conferred with at Albany; and mentioned col. Dwight of Brookfield in particular. Upon this, I desired the principal English inhabitants of this town to meet forthwith to consider what was to be done on this occasion. And perceiving this to be a very critical juncture, and that the tribe of the Mohawks now expected to come to a definitive conclusion, whether to go on with the design of seeking instruction at Stockbridge or no, we all were of one mind, that it was necessary forthwith to give notice to the committee formerly appointed, and also to the commissioners that had been at Albany, and represent this to them, and to signify what appeared to us of the importance of their coming to meet the Indians (with capt. Kellogg of Suffield as an interpreter) on this occasion. And accordingly sent messengers to this end. On Saturday August 10, arrived brig. Dwight, col. Pynchon, capt. Dwight, and capt. Kellogg; and the next Monday, capt. Ashley. On Tuesday arrived most of the chiefs of the nation of the Cauneeyenkees, or proper Mohawks; 13 in all; seven from Caunaujohhaury, and six from Tewauntaurogo.

Tewauntaurogo. They came with a great train ; so that, together with what were here before, there were 92 in all. After the agents for the province had made their first speech to them, and generally proposed the affair they came to treat with them about, and the Indians had taken time to consider of what they had said, they, in their reply, signified that the committee had heretofore proposed to them the affair of settling in New-England, and sending their children to school here : But there were then but few of them present, and so could do nothing in behalf of their tribe : but now the council of the nation were present, and had full power to act. But in the first place, they put these honourable gentlemen in mind, how the English had failed of those things, that they had encouraged them with the hopes of heretofore ; and desired that now nothing might be said but what should stand, and be made good : and that therefore, they should thoroughly consider what they should determine, and let every thing be so settled that it might be depended upon. And after these and some other things said by way of introduction, they thanked the commissioners for their offer, and signified their compliance with the proposal which had been made, of sending their children here to be instructed, and coming, a number of them, to live here, and gave a belt of wampum in consideration of it. And added, that what they did in this matter, they would have looked upon, as not only done in behalf of their own nation, but all nations of Indians ; that now they opened the door for all nations that they might come and bring their children hither to be instructed ; and that they gave this belt as a confirmation that they would not only send their own children, but would do what in them lay to persuade other nations to do the same.

After this the gentlemen of the commission had much free discourse with the Indians from day to day, till they went away. They and the Stockbridge Indians had also many friendly meetings. And good humour, and well pleasedness appeared on all sides. The Mohawk chiefs departed on Thursday Aug. 22, well satisfied, so far as appeared. The day before they went away, a present was made them in the name of the province. I was sorry it could be no greater. Probably there never was an occasion more requiring a present to the Indians, and whereon a very liberal present might have been  
been

been made to better purpose. About 50, old and young staid behind, and others that went away manifested a design, some of returning themselves, and others of sending their children in the fall and winter. Since this some considerable uneasiness has arisen among those that staid behind, concerning the distribution of the present ; which was left entirely to the Indians themselves. Their chiefs distributed the present chiefly among those that were returning home, and told those who staid behind that the English would take care of, and provide for them. But since that they understand that there is no promise of clothing, excepting for those which belong to the school. Several of them are gone away in disgust : and I don't know what the consequences may be. But in general divine Providence appears with a very favourable aspect on the design here on foot ; some of the chiefs of the Mohawks that were here appeared much engaged in the affair ; especially Abraham Caunauhstansey, Hendrick's elder brother, who is a remarkable man ; a man of great solidity, prudence, devotion, and strict conversation ; and acts very much as a person endowed with the simplicity, humanity, self-denial and zeal of a true christian. The church of England seem to be very jealous of the Mohawks ; being very opposite to their coming hither. And (so far as I can learn) effectually to engage Abraham's mind against it, and induce him to do what in him lies to detain the Indians in their own country, they have advanced him to an office, and made him a reader in the church of England, to carry on divine service in the absence of the minister, and give him a salary of 5*l.* sterling a year. But instead of the intended effect upon Abraham, he improves the advantage he has in his hands by his office to a contrary purpose, and while he officiates among his people, he from sabbath to sabbath exhorts them to come down hither for instruction, and labours abundantly in the matter. He tells them that there they live in darkness, but here is light ; that he knows but very little, and can teach them but little, but here are those that can give them vastly greater degrees of knowledge. And on this account, he suffers a sort of persecution from some opposers among his people, who ridicule his zeal, and oppose the Indians coming hither, and tell him and others that the English will fail, and disappoint them.

Besides the tribe of the Cauneeyenkees, there are some ap-

appearances among some of the tribe of the Oneiyutas of a disposition to seek instruction. A number of these that live at Onohquauga, about 200 miles from Albany, where Mr. Spencer was, manifested a religious disposition to our commissioners at Albany; and told them, that of late they had made religion their main concern, rather than war, or any worldly affairs. One of the chief men at Onohquauga, has lately been to visit this place; who appeared to be a very solid serious man; and returned with messages from us to his brethren at home, and I am sorry we had not wherewith to make him an handsome present. Abraham told me of others, considerable men, of the nation of the Oneiyutas, in other places, and also some of the Tuscororoës, that are religiously disposed.

God in his providence seems now to be opening the door for the introducing the light of the gospel among these nations, wider than ever before. And if we, the English, don't fail of doing our part, there is a prospect of great things being done. And it looks as if this present season were our *now or never*. 'Tis evident the French are now exerting themselves in an extraordinary manner to draw all those nations over to them, and engage them in their interest. The king of France has lately made extraordinary provision for them, that very large and liberal presents may be made them in Canada. And they are indefatigable in the endeavours they use, in the labours of their emissaries, and in all ways they can devise. They are building forts in all the parts of America west of us, in the carrying places between the lakes and rivers, and in all the most important places, where they may have greatest advantage to bring the Indians into dependence, and to draw their trade. Col. Johnson and maj. Lydius (who probably are the best acquainted with the state of these Indians, of all the subjects of the British crown) said, in the time of the treaty at Albany, it was a gone case, and that it was a thing beyond all doubt or dispute, that unless something very extraordinary were speedily done, and what was never like to be done, these nations were lost to the British interest. By accounts abundantly confirmed, about one half of the Onoontaugaes have actually left there old habitations, and are gone to live in Canada. The French having provided land for them. And many others of the far nations are resorting to settle there. Abraham told me that the Quiuquhs, the Onoontaugas and the Chonuntoowau-  
nees



nees or Senecas are generally in the French interest. He says, they indeed come to Albany and treat with the English as friends, but then go directly to the governour of Canada, and tell him all that has passed: They speak (says he) smooth words, pleasant words to the English, but their hearts are with the French. He said concerning the Senecas, who are vastly the biggest of the six nations, that the governour of Canada was always there; meaning, by his emissaries. Four Indians have lately been here from among the Caughnawaugas in Canada, who were related, either by blood or marriage, to some of the English. Two of these especially appeared to be uncommonly intelligent. They told me that the Indians that used formerly to be on our side are continually in great multitudes flocking to Canada to dwell there. They said that all the nations about the lakes, that used to be our friends, had lately left us, and had entered into alliance with the French. We have had credible information from the Mohawks, that the French are now gone from Canada, with an army of 600 men, 400 French, and 200 Indians, (intending to augment their army to a 1000 as they go along) into the south western parts of North-America, in order to strengthen their own interest, and ruin ours in those parts; particularly, to destroy the nation of the Tooweehtoowees, that are very friendly to the English, and to kill a certain Virginia trader, who by his honest dealings with the Indians, has lately gained the affections of many, and greatly drawn their trade that way; and that col. Johnson, having had intelligence of this by a Frenchman who deserted from the army, and in various other ways, had sent a belt of wampam to all the six nations, to give them notice of it, and to excite them to oppose the design of this army. Thus abundant and indefatigable are that nation, who understand their own interest so well, in their endeavours to gain all the Indian nations in North-America, and to establish them in their interest, and to alienate them from the English. I was credibly informed while at Albany, that the Indians gave that as one reason why they left the English, and joined themselves to the French, that they could not live with the English they gave them so much rum, which they found by experience wasted them exceedingly.

Now 'tis remarkable that in this situation of things, the only remaining means that divine Providence hath left in our power

power to regain and secure the Indians in the British interest, is this very thing ; viz. to our utmost, to prosecute the design of thoroughly instructing them in the true protestant religion, and educating their children in useful knowledge. Col. Johnson (though I suppose a man of not much religion) owns this : and says he knows it will be for the British interest for them to prosecute what they have begun here at Stockbridge, and that therefore he will promote it to his utmost. And now the Most High seems to be opening this door in an unusual manner. This opportunity may easily be lost by our negligence : For the Dutch, and the church of England, and some of the Mohawks themselves, are watching for an opportunity to possess the minds of those Indians that are inclined to religion, with an opinion of the treachery of the English, and to insult those that seem now disposed to trust us, on our disappointing them. Abraham himself, in his prudence and zeal, is afraid of this consequence of any disappointment from the English, and seems deeply concerned about it.

There are many things, which, in the present situation of this affair, greatly need to be done without delay. The boarding school needs much to be done to it. The house, furniture, and school itself should be in better order. The Indians themselves took notice of the deficiencies and irregularities. The house is in a miserable state ; and much needs to be done to it to finish it. And not only so, but there is a necessity of the house being enlarged. 'Tis far from being sufficient for the accommodating an English family and necessary teachers, and boarding and lodging of the school-boys ; and the house should be furnished with writing tables, seats, beds, and bed-clothes, for the children. Mean lodging will do for them ; yet it should be such as that they may be kept clean and warm : and the boys should have tools for their work : and a different house should be built, to be the place where the school should be kept, at some distance from the place where they lodge and are boarded. This is necessary that the school, in school hours may not be diverted and hindered by the family, and by the Indian families who have their wigwams round about the boarding house ; and also that the master's family may have more liberty in school hours. There is also a necessity of another master besides the school-master, to be with the boys, and preside over them in their working hours.

Care

Care had need to be taken, and some orders given about these things forthwith. There seems to be a necessity that they should be done before winter. If there be such an increase of the school as is expected, and things are left as they are now, all will be in confusion, and attended with the utmost difficulty. And if things remain in such a state till next summer, 'tis to be fear'd it will much discourage the Indians.

I would also humbly propose that a young gentleman, a scholar, a man of good genius, and fervent piety, attended with prudence, be sought for, and sent hither, as soon as possible, to be learning the Mohawk language, to fit him to be a missionary; in time to come, if need be, to go among the six nations in their own country: In the mean time, to be assisting in instructing the Indians and their children here, in all necessary knowledge; and teaching two or three of the forwardest and most promising of the boys, in order to their being brought up to learning, and fitted for the ministry; (the charge of which Mr. Hollis has offered to bear in a late letter to capt. Kellog) and that a salary be offered this young gentleman sufficient to encourage him: and also, that a couple of likely English boys be sent hither, to be under the care and instruction of this young gentleman, to be learning the Mohawk language, and also trained up in other useful learning, to fit them to be interpreters, for the country, and also to be hereafter employed as school-masters or missionaries. This would be of excellent service, as it would help much to bring in the English tongue among the Mohawk children, and might be with very little additional charge, and none, excepting the charge of their board. Brig. Dwight of Brookfield has a young son, which he declared he would be willing to send hither to be so instructed. Col. Pynchon speaks of this boy as extraordinary likely.

And there is another thing which is most apparently of absolute necessity in order to the prosperity of the Indian affair here, and indeed in order to the keeping it alive: viz. that there should be some persons of wisdom and the most strict integrity here on the spot, or very near, who shall be appointed by the general assembly, and the commissioners for Indian affairs, a sort of Curatours, to have the immediate inspection and direction of affairs here, relating both to the  
Mohawks

Mohawks and Stockbridge Indians : who shall be in a considerable degree intrusted with moneys ; and should themselves be paid for extraordinary labours, going journeys and the like. The Indian affair here does as much need the immediate continual care of a number of persons empowered to inspect it, and order its concerns on emergent occasions, as a college, or great hospital ; and in some respects much more. Things have heretofore gone into great confusion for want of it. And now the necessity of it is greatly increased ; as the objects, and new successive occasions of care are multiplied. No person that has any tolerable view of the affair, can imagine it to be sufficient to answer its necessities, that it is under the care of a corporation and an assembly, that meet at 150 miles distance. What renders it more necessary that things here should be under the immediate care of trustees present or at hand, is the misunderstanding and jealousies that here subsist between some of the chief of the present English inhabitants ; which is one of our greatest calamities. Our state, on this account, does much more need constant inspection. And therefore the gentlemen intrusted ought to be such as are perfectly impartial ; no way interested in, related to, or engaged with these contending parties. 'Tis not unlikely that gentlemen might be found well qualified for the business, who would be willing, on some intimation from the general assembly and the commissioners, to come and live here : who might have their power and time of intrustment limited according to discretion, and be required to keep an exact account of their doings and expences to be laid before their constituents, as often as they should require it.

One of the greatest defects in the method of instruction in the schools here, is the want of more effectual measures for the bringing the children to the English tongue. The instructions which have been given at school for 15 years past, have been in a great measure in vain for want of this. The children learn, after a sort, to read ; to make such sounds, on the sight of such marks ; but know nothing what they say ; and having neither profit, nor entertainment by what they read, they neglect it when they leave school, and quickly lose it. There are but two ways to remedy this mischief, either the bringing in a number of English children into the school, with the Indians, or the putting the Indian children, while young, into

into good English families, where they shall hear nothing but English; and after they have been there a year or two, then returning them into the school here. This would be far the most effectual method. And there is no doubt but the greater part of the Indian parents might be persuaded to consent to it. Some of the Mohawks have moved it of their own accord. But this method cannot be gone into without the care of trustees to manage it, to find proper places, to visit the children that are put out, some times, and to see how they are looked after, &c. I have strongly recommended it to Mr. Hollis, that the boarding school, so far as he is concerned it, should be under the care of a number of trustees. For want of these, it happens from time to time, that the Mohawks, and their instructors are run out of provisions, and have nothing to eat. Something needs also to be done towards providing clothing for others of the Mohawks that live here, that are not members of the school, till they can get into a way of providing for themselves. And when the Indians have their lands laid out, there will be a necessity of a great deal of care to be taken of them at their first settlement; by helping them, at first, in bringing to their lands, &c. And innumerable new things are constantly occurring, that require the care of some persons that have some power.

In the time of the treaty here, Hendrick privately manifested an inclination to go to Boston; which was approved by the gentlemen that were here: And it was proposed that his brother Abraham should go with him, and be there in the time of the sitting of the general court. It was thought it would be a satisfaction to the assembly and the commissioners to see them, and converse with them about those affairs; and might tend greatly to promote the important design on foot. They insisted that Nicoles should go with them, because he was the first that came to live here, and would be very much displeased if he was not one that went. They insisting on it, it was consented to; though Nicoles is no very desirable person. I suppose they will come to Boston at the beginning of October, with capt. Joseph Kellog for an interpreter.

One thing I had like to have forgotten, which I promised the Mohawks I would inform some of the members of the general assembly of. At the conclusion of the late treaty with the chiefs of the Mohawks here, they manifested a desire that  
in

in future interviews, and conferences with them about these religious affairs, brig. Dwight and col. Pynchon might be improved. And when it was objected, that we had not the ordering of that matter; it must be as the general court should appoint; they still greatly insisted upon it. They urged that they had now got some acquaintance with these gentlemen, and did not like from time to time, at each new interview, to be concerned with perfect strangers: and finally said, that if it should be ordered otherwise, they should not be easy. And as to col. Pynchon, in particular, they urged their acquaintance with his ancestors, and their experience of their integrity. I wish it might be proposed to these gentlemen whether or no they would not be willing to remove and live at Stockbridge, to take some care of Indian affairs here; as being intrusted as aforesaid. They are gentlemen excellently qualified for the business; and are of that spirit, that if they could have a prospect of being publickly serviceable in this great affair, and of being instrumental of advancing and enlarging the kingdom of Christ, I believe their removing and settling here is not to be despaired of. There are also some other gentlemen well qualified and like spirited in the county of Hampshire; who I believe, on some intimation from the assembly and commissioners, would be willing to come and settle here: as col. Dwight of Northampton; who, though he sometimes is a little rough in his way of talking, yet is benevolent, publick spirited and generous in his actions; is a strictly serious conscientious man, and greatly abhors little arts and designs for promoting a private interest, to the injury of the publick and the interest of religion. And there is Dr. Israel Ashley of Westfield, who is another gentleman like minded, one that I have particular acquaintance with, a very serious pious man, and very active and discerning in the management of affairs; and I am satisfied would have no aversion to removing and settling here. And I should think that, considering the nature of the business to be taken care of here, it would not be improper that one or two clergymen should be of the number of trustees. Mr. Hopkins of Sheffield is just at hand, and is a gentleman of noted piety and prudence, and too honest to have a hand in any dishonest management, or to endure any.

I hope, sir, you will excuse my troubling you with so long a letter, and my expressing my thoughts in it with such freedom.

dom. I thought it of great importance that some members of the general assembly should be fully informed of the present state of our affairs, which so nearly concern the temporal prosperity of this province, as well as the advancement of the kingdom of Christ, and the good of immortal souls.

I am, Sir, your most obliged

Humble servant,

JONATHAN EDWARDS.

*The Hon. Thomas Hubbard, Esq.*

[From the original MS.]

NOTE.

The pious efforts of our ancestors for christianizing the natives, whether successful or not, deserve to be recorded. This proposal of Mr. EDWARDS (afterward president of New-Jersey college) for the education of Mohawk children was not carried into full effect. It probably influenced the appointment of Mr. Hawley to the service on which he entered at Stockbridge 5 Feb. 1752, under the patronage of Mr. Edwards. Here he taught a few families of Mohawks, Oneidas, and Tuscaroras; but his instruction of them was of no long continuance.\* The Indian school however has been of eminent service to the STOCKBRIDGE Indians. It was uniformly maintained at Stockbridge until the removal of these Indians to New-Stockbridge (about 160 miles distant from the old town), at which place it has since been continued. Here a missionary constantly resides. The present missionary is the Rev. Mr. Sergeant. The mission is supported by the Society in Scotland for promoting Christian Knowledge, and the Corporation of Harvard University. The number of Indians at New-Stockbridge, in 1796, was 300; and the Indian church consisted of 5 men and 25 women. Many of these Indians could read English, and some few could write. Beside the annuity which these Indians receive from the United States, by virtue of a treaty between the United States and the Six nations in 1794, they have received some assistance, with regard to instruments of husbandry, from the Society for Propagating the Gospel among Indians and others in North-America.

The whole of the MOHAWK nation of Indians, who resided on Mohawk river, left their ancient villages about the year 1780, and have never returned. They reside within the  
British

\* See the causes which frustrated the design in Coll. Hist. Soc. iv. 55.

British Canadian lines, and, ten years ago, were estimated at 300.\* By accounts from England the last year, it appears that 2000 copies of the gospel of John, in the Mohawk language, had been printed in London, at the expense of the British and Foreign Bible Society; that 500 copies had already been distributed, with great acceptance, among the Mohawks settled on the Grand river; and that, in consequence of an application to the society, 500 more were about to be sent, for the use of the Roman Catholic and other Mohawks, lower down the St. Lawrence. This translation was made by an Indian chief of the Six Nations, known in England by the name of John Norton, but in his native country, by the name of Tryouinhokaraven. This chief went to England to obtain from the British government a confirmation of a certain grant of land to his countrymen. His father appears to have been an Indian, and his mother a native of Scotland. He was educated at a British school, from the age of thirteen to that of fifteen. "His observations are acute, and the language in which they are conveyed is strong and elegant. In history, both ancient and modern, he is well versed; in geography he displays peculiar information. On every subject, connected with his country, his knowledge is minute. His person is tall and muscular, his eye large and expressive. His thirst after every species of knowledge is extreme; but his particular attention is directed to obtain every information that may improve the condition of his country." He intends to proceed with the translation of the Evangelists Matthew and Luke, the Six-Nations being already in possession of a Mohawk translation of St. Mark, and the Liturgy of the English church, by the well known chief, Col. Brandt. EDIT.

A SKETCH OF EMINENT MEN IN NEW-ENGLAND. IN A  
LETTER FROM THE REV. DR. CHAUNCY TO DR. STILES.

BOSTON, MAY 6, 1768.

*Rev. and dear Sir,*

I NOW set myself to recollect, and name to you, the gentlemen in this country of whom I have entertained the highest opinion. Mr.

\* See report of a Committee, who visited the Oneida and Mohokunuh Indians in 1796, in Coll. Hist. Soc. v. 12-32. *Perhaps 300 warriors.*



MR. JEREMIAH DUMMER, a native of Boston, but an inhabitant in London the greater part of his life; Mr. JOHN BULKLEY, minister at Colchester in Connecticut; and Mr. THOMAS WALTER of Roxbury. I reckon the three first for extent and strength of genius and powers New-England has ever yet produced. Mr. DUMMER I never saw that I remember, but entertain this thought of him from the character I have had of him from all quarters. Few exceeded him even in England, perhaps, for sprightliness of thought, ease, delicacy and fluency in speaking and writing. His acquaintance with Harley, and some other prime managers in the latter end of Queen Ann's reign, and his appearing an advocate for the measures at that time, were greatly disadvantageous to him ever after. Had it not been for this circumstance in his life, he probably would have risen to a high degree of eminency in the state. Some have said he would have stood a good chance of being a prime minister.

Mr. JOHN BULKLEY I have seen and conversed with, though so long ago that I form no judgment of him from my own knowledge. Mr. Whittlesey of Wallingford, Mr. Chauncy of Durham, and others I could mention, ever spoke of him as a first rate genius; and I have often heard that Mr. Dummer and he, who were class-mates at college, were accounted the greatest geniuses of that day. The preference was given to Dummer in regard of quickness, brilliancy, and wit; to Bulkley in regard of solidity of judgment and strength of argument. Mr. Gershom Bulkley of —— in Connecticut, father of John, I have heard mentioned as a truly great man, and eminent for his skill in chemistry: and the father of Gershom, Mr. Bulkley of Concord, was esteemed in his day one of the greatest men in this part of the world. But, by all I have been able to collect, the Colchester Bulkley surpassed his predecessors in the strength of his intellectual powers. His mother was daughter of president Chauncy.

Mr. WALTER of Roxbury, son of the old gentleman Nehemiah, who for more than sixty years was pastor of the church there, I was acquainted with, and often had occasion to admire for the superlative excellence of his natural and acquired accomplishments. His genius was universal and yet surprisingly strong. He seemed to have almost an intuitive knowledge

of

of every thing. There was no subject but he was perfectly acquainted with it; and such was the power he had over his thoughts and words, that he could readily and without any pains, write or speak just what he would. He loved company and diversion, which prevented his being the greatest student; and he had no need to study much; for his powers were so quick and retentive that he heard nothing but it became his own, so as that he could afterwards use it as occasion offered. He made himself master of almost all Doct. Cotton Mather's learning, by taking frequent opportunities of conversing with him. I suppose he gained more learning this way than most others could have done by a whole life's hard study. You may read his character as given by his uncle in his sermon on his death. He died in the prime of life, otherwise he would have been more known in the world as one of the first in New-England among our truly great men.

In regard of literature, or acquaintance with books of all kinds, I give the palm to Doct. COTTON MATHER. No native of this country, as I imagine, had read so much, or retained more of what he had read. He was the greatest redeemer of time I ever knew; and lost as little of it as any one could do in his situation. There were scarcely any books written but he had some how or other got the sight of them. His own library was the largest by far of any private one on the continent. He was always reading and writing, and had the happiest talent of going rapidly through a book. Had his powers of judging and reasoning been equal to his other faculties, I should have ranked him among the first three. He knew more of the history of this country, from the beginning to this day, than any man in it; and could he have conveyed his knowledge with proportionable judgment, and the omission of a vain show of much learning, he would have given the best history of it. He had his oddities, foibles, and credulities, all which imperfections are too visible in his writings, and have been greatly detrimental to his character as well as intentions, to answer the end of doing good. His father, Doct. INCREASE MATHER, was more solid and judicious, though less learned. He was indeed a man of very considerable learning for that day, but still he fell much below his son in this accomplishment. He did not excel in his capacity of seeing to the bottom of a subject. He was a grave, serious,  
solid,

solid, judicious, useful preacher ; but not the most rational one. He possessed the reasoning power in a moderate degree only. Mr. STODDARD of Northampton exceeded him in this respect, though much his inferiour in point of learning. I suppose this Mr. Stoddard to have been a gentleman of very considerable powers, though not so great as some have imagined. Mr. EDWARDS, his grandson was much the greatest man. I have read all Mr. Stoddard's writings, but was never able to see in them that strength of genius some have attributed to him. Mr. WILLIAMS of Hatfield, his son in law, I believe to have been the greater man, and I am ready to think greater than any of his own sons, though they were all men of more than common understanding. Rector WILLIAMS and his brother SOLOMON, I give the preference to the other sons.

You will naturally be led to mention such men as the famous COTTON, the first I mean of this name in New-England, who had more learning and understanding than all that have descended from him ; Mr. NORTON, Mr. HOOKER, DAVENPORT, and others of our first fathers of renown in their generation.

To come to later times. Few, perhaps, have had a more extensive acquaintance than I have been favoured with. I was considerably intimate with Doctor Colman, Dr. Sewal, Mr. William Cooper, and Mr. Gee of this town. Dr. COLMAN'S memoirs by his son Turell will furnish you with a large account of him. His character would have been greater, could it have been said of him that he excelled as much in strength of reason and firmness of mind, as in many other good qualities. Mr. COOPER was a good preacher, eminently gifted in prayer, and a man of good understanding ; though not endowed with a great deal of learning ; or an uncommon strength in any of his powers. Mr. GEE was much his superiour both in powers and learning. He had a clear head, and a stronger one than common. Few saw farther, or could reason better. His foible was a strange indolence of temper. He preferred talking with his friends to every thing else.

Mr. JOHN BARNARD of Marblehead has been a long and near friend and acquaintance of mine. He is now in his 85th year, and I hear is seized this winter with blindness. I esteem him to have been one of our greatest men. Had he turned his studies that way, he would perhaps have been as great

great a mathematician as any in this country, I had almost said in England itself. He is equalled by few in regard either of readiness of invention, liveliness of imagination, or strength and clearness in reasoning.

President HOLYOKE I have for a long course of years been intimately acquainted with. He is in many respects a very valuable man, and in some respects admirably well qualified for a presidency over the college. I have, also, been intimate with Mr. APPLETON, who is an upright, faithful, excellent preacher, though much wanting in correctness, and a man of very considerable powers; and has been of great service to the college by his wise endeavours to promote its good. He deserves to be remembered with honour.

I might mention others of my acquaintance, but shall only name a few more, with whom I have been peculiarly free and intimate. Mr. JOHN TAYLOR of Milton and I were playmates when little boys, went to school together, were class-mates at college, and all along till his death in close friendship and acquaintance with each other. He was an agreeable, pleasant companion, and a friend that might be depended on. His diffidence of himself and modesty of temper restrained him from preaching much from home, and produced in him a settled determination that nothing of his should appear in the world. Upon his dying bed he left his papers with me, with this positive charge that I would take the first opportunity after he was dead to commit them to the flames; which I accordingly did. He was rather an agreeable than great man; rather pretty and delicate in his sentiments and expressions, than strong and nervous. His head was clear, though not the strongest. Few were more universally beloved while they lived, and lamented when dead among those of their acquaintance.

Judge SEWAL was my next nearest friend and dearest acquaintance. We were class-mates at college, and from that time to the day of his death lived in close union and all the freedoms of the most intimate friendship. Quickness of apprehension and a capacity to look thoroughly into a subject were united to him in the highest degree I ever saw in any of my acquaintance. One could scarce begin to mention a train of thought, but he would at once perceive the whole of what was going to be said; and, if it was a disputable point, had in  
readiness

readiness whatever was proper to be said in answer. Dr. Mayhew's character of him, in his sermon on his death, is strictly just. I refer you to that without saying any thing farther than only this, that he was too benevolent in his make for his circumstances. He was so kind and good to his relations and others in want, that he outdid his proper capacity for doing.

Doctor MAYHEW was another of my most intimate companions. I have hinted this in my sermon on his death, which gives him his just character. I could mention to you several anecdotes relative to him worthy of notice, but I may not venture them in writing.

Mr. WINTHROP, Hollisian professor, I have been very free and intimate with. He is by far the greatest man at the college in Cambridge. Had he been of a pushing genius, and a disposition to make a figure in the world, he might have done it to his own honour, as well as the honour of the college. I suppose none will dispute his being the greatest mathematician and philosopher in this country; and, was the world acquainted with his other accomplishments, he would be ranked among the chief for his learning with reference to the other sciences. He is, in short, a very critical thinker and writer; knows a vast deal in every part of literature, and is as well able to manage his knowledge in a way of strong reasoning as any man I know. He went along with me in a particular study for nearly two years. I had many written communications from him, and he from me, not so much by way of dispute, as by joining our forces in order to the investigation of some certain truths. But this is an anecdote which I must not be more particular in opening to you.

Mr. EBENEZER GAY of Hingham, and Mr. WILLIAM RAND of Kingston in Plymouth county, I have been long in near friendship and intimacy with, but I suppose you know neither of them, and shall only say that they are both as valuable and great men as almost any among us. I could mention more names, and of my acquaintance too, but those I have mentioned are the most worthy of notice. I know of none whom I have a higher opinion of.

I had like to have forgotten Mr. SAMUEL WHITTLESEY of Wallingford. My acquaintance with him began in the year 1721 the year I took my first degree at college. I went that

that year to see my friends in the country, and was for six weeks at this Mr. Whittlesey's house. Great numbers of letters since that day have passed between us; though, as he was a very cautious man, not a great deal of a very private nature. Perhaps he was more free and open with me than any man now living in the world. Mr. Whittlesey was, I believe, one of the greatest men in Connecticut. He had not only a clear and strong head, but the clearest way of expressing his thoughts upon any difficult subject, of any one I have been acquainted with. I have heard him say, when he had in his mind clear ideas of a subject, he could communicate them with the same clearness they lay in his mind, and do it with ease.

I wonder I should not till now think of Doct. WIGGLESWORTH, Hollisian Professor of Divinity at our Cambridge college, as he was one of my best friends and longest acquaintance, and had courage to speak honourably of me in the new-light time, when it was dangerous to do so. He was some years usher in the grammar school in Boston. He left this employment with a design to settle in the ministry; and took a chamber at college about the time I was graduated there. He lived at college some years before there was an opportunity for his being chosen into the Professorship; all which time I had the pleasure of being many times in a week in company with him, and since that time I familiarly corresponded with him by speech or writing till he died. He is highly deserving of being remembered with honour, not only on account of his character as a man of learning, piety, usefulness in his day, strength of mind, largeness of understanding, and an extraordinary talent at reasoning with clearness and the most nervous cogency, but on account also of his catholick spirit and conduct, notwithstanding great temptations to the contrary. He was one of the most candid men you ever saw; far removed from bigotry, no ways rigid in his attachment to any scheme, yet steady to his own principles, but at the same time charitable to others, though they widely differed from him. He was, in one word, a truly great and excellent man. His son, who succeeds him in the professorship, will furnish you, if you desire it, with such memoirs as you may judge needful.

I have been, perhaps, too particular and large in my enumeration of gentlemen of whom I have entertained a high opinion.

ion. I could have said ten times as much concerning each of them had it been needful, and it would not have carried me to too great a length. My old friends and acquaintance are almost all gone to the other world, and it is now too late to contract new friendships with former intimacy. I am well acquainted with many of our younger clergymen, as well as many of other orders, but age and youth do not so well match together. I expect no such friendships as former ones, till I go into another state. I wish I may acquit myself with fidelity and honour in this; if so, I doubt not I shall be far more happy in the enjoyment of friendships begun here with many that are departed hence, than ever I was while they were in this present state.

If, at your leisure, you could send me a list of those worthies whose memory you intend to embalm in honour to the country, as well as to you, I may, at my leisure, collect for you something or other relative to at least some of them that may be worthy of notice. I have preserved in my breast a good many anecdotes. Possibly they may relate to some or other of those you would write of.

I believe I have greatly tired your patience already; but I must beg you would bear with me a little longer. I have by me materials for a complete view of all that is said by the Fathers of the two first centuries relative to the Episcopal controversy, and have been advised to put them together for publication. The whole might be comprehended in one 8vo volume, with the just character and full general account of each Father, with what he had written within this period. The work might easily be done so as that the common people might have as clear and full an idea of what has been said by the Fathers, about which so much noise has been made, as what is contained upon this head in the sacred scriptures. Let me have your thoughts upon this matter with all freedom. If I am qualified for anything, 'tis for a work of this nature: for I spent four years of harder study than ever I went through in any part of my life in reading the Fathers, and all the books I could find upon the Episcopal controversy, on both sides, in all the libraries in town, and that at Cambridge. You may wonder how I came to spend so much time and labour in this kind of study. The occasion was this: Mr. Davenport, who married my first wife's sister, declared for the church and

went over for orders upon this pretence, that it was a certain fact, that Episcopacy, in the appropriated sense, was the form of government in the church from the time of the Apostles and down along through all successive ages. I imagined that my connection with him would naturally lead me into frequent conversations upon this point ; and, that I might be thoroughly qualified for a debate with him or others he might be connected with, on this head, I entered upon this study and went on in it at the expense of much more time and pains than I imagined it would cost me at first. I have by me extracts from all kinds of writers upon this subject ; and could write folios upon it, was it needful.

As I am now writing to a friend with more freedom than would be proper, if I could not safely rely on his indulgence, I will go on, and say a few things more. It was just about the time of my finishing the studies before mentioned that Mr. Whitfield made his appearance among us. This kept me still to close and constant labour in my study. I wrote and printed in that day more than two volumes in octavo. A vast number of pieces were published also as written by others ; but there was scarce a piece against the times but was sent to me, and I had the labour sometimes of preparing it for the press, and always of correcting the press. I had also hundreds of letters to write, in answer to letters received from all parts of the country. This labour, continued without interruption for so many years, in addition to my ministerial work, which I did not neglect any part of this time, broke my constitution. But by a resolute severity as to regimen, and a great number of journeys of seven, eight, nine, and ten hundred miles, in the course of three or four years, I so far recovered my health as to be able to pursue my studies again ; though never since with that constancy and long attention I could do before. My next study was the *Bible*, more particularly the Epistles, more particularly still those of the Apostle Paul. I spent seven years in this study, in which time I read every thing that I could hear of in any of the libraries here or at Cambridge, that had an aspect upon illustrating the scriptures, and sent to England for a considerable number of writers recommended by Doct. Doddridge, which I suppose are no where in the country but in my study, unless they have been sent for by the Cambridge



bridge college since the fire, as I desired some of them to take care that they might be. I have mentioned these things in order to introduce an opportunity for your judgment and advice. The result of my studying the scriptures with the above mentioned helps is a large parcel of materials fitted to answer several designs. The materials for one design I have put together, and they have lain by in a finished quarto volume for some years. This is written with too much freedom to admit of a publication in this country. Some of my friends who have seen it, have desired I would send it home for publication, and to have it printed without a name. I question whether it will ever see the light till after my death, and I am not yet determined whether to permit its being then printed, or to order its being committed to the flames. It is a work that cost me much thought and a great deal of hard labour. It is upon a most interesting subject.

I have the materials for an octavo volume upon another subject, and they are mostly put together; but the work is as yet unfinished. It will contain the three following dissertations; "On the one man Adam in his innocent state." "On the one man Adam in his lapsed state." "On the posterity of the one man Adam as deriving existence from him, not in his innocent but lapsed state." The whole is written from the scripture account of these matters, and not from any human scheme. It will not, I believe, comport with what is called orthodoxy, but I am verily persuaded it contains the real truth. I do not know but I shall venture it into the world with my name to it, leaving the event in regard of its affecting my character with the allwise Governor of all things.

I have moreover materials for another work, and a very useful and important one, but they lie as yet in a disjoined heap. It is what may be called a key to the New Testament, more especially the Apostles' writings. The design of this is to prepare the mind for reading and understanding the New Testament writings; and, as I imagine, it would happily tend to guard one against mistakes, and lead into a true understanding of the inspired writings. I have still another piece, which, when I have leisure, I will publish with all freedom. It wants little more than transcribing to finish it. It is upon *the benevolence of God*, its nature, illustration, and consistency with

with evil both natural and moral. This was written many years ago. It will make a moderate octavo volume.

I have been, you see, very free with you ; and I desire you would use the same freedom with me. Let me have your sedate thoughts and most mature advice relative to these things. If Doct. Chandler don't set me to work again, I propose as soon as I conveniently can to finish the above mentioned *Dissertations* and the *Divine Benevolence*. They may then lie by till it be determined how to dispose of them.

I did not mention Mr. WILLARD and Mr. PEMBERTON of this town, and Mr. WILLIAM BRATTLE minister of Cambridge church, because such venerable and reputable men that I supposed you needed not to be put in mind of them. You will find Mr. Willard's just character in Mr. Pemberton's sermon on his death ; and the character of the other two gentlemen in Doct. Colman's sermon occasioned by their death. They all died before my capacity of judging. You may wonder I have not mentioned Mr. FOXCROFT, as he is my colleague. It may be justly said of him, that his powers are much beyond the common size. Few have been greater students in Divinity. His knowledge is pretty much confined within this circle. His reasoning faculty, before his last sickness, was in a degree of eminence ; and few had a greater command of words ; nor was he wanting in liveliness of imagination. He has written and printed several very valuable things, beside sermons, that will reflect honour on him in the opinion of all capable judges.

I am sorry I did not think to name Mr. THOMAS PRINCE till now ; for he is more worthy of notice than some I have mentioned. I do not know of any one that had more learning among us, excepting Doct. Cotton Mather ; and it was extensive, as was also his genius. He possessed all the intellectual powers in a degree far beyond what is common. He may be justly characterized as one of our great men ; though he would have been much greater, had he not been apt to give too much credit, especially to surprising stories. He could easily be imposed on this way. Another imperfection that was really hurtful to him was, a strange disposition to regard more, in multitudes of instances, the circumstances of things, and sometimes minute and trifling ones, than the things themselves. I could from my own acquaintance with him give many instances of this. But these weaknesses  
notwithstanding,

notwithstanding, he deserves to be remembered with honour. His brother NATHAN PRINCE, who for a long course of years was a tutor at our college, I esteem to have been the greater man of the two. His learning was not, I believe, so extensive, but still very great. He was a greater mathematician and philosopher, and a much better classical scholar and logician. I am ready to think his powers were stronger, especially his reasoning faculty. I was intimately acquainted with him for 30 years. It is a pity he gave occasion for his dismissal from college. This was his ruin. It turned him out of bread, and finally proved a temptation strong enough to reconcile him to the taking of orders. He had read all the Fathers, and made vast collections from them on almost every subject. I never yet knew the man that had a more deeply rooted aversion to the church, than he had before his dismissal from the college. I have heard him a hundred times make himself and company merry with their talk about prelacy and the Fathers in support of it. There is no knowing what a man may be brought to by the force of temptation. Notwithstanding all this, he deserves a place among the great men in this country.

Mr. FLYNT, likewise, is worthy of an honorable mention. I was forty years frequently conversant with him, and knew him to have been a solid, judicious man, and one of the best of preachers. He was not contemptible for his learning; he might have excelled in it, considering his advantages, had he not been of an indolent temper to a great degree.

I send you by this opportunity a small pamphlet, I accidentally found a few weeks since at Mr. Mather's among some old rubbish. It may be worth your reading, as its object is one of the sons of president Chauncy. If you write any thing of the father, it would be natural to mention this son; and I convey this pamphlet to you that you may extract from it what you think proper. Send it back as soon as you conveniently can, because I have some thoughts of reprinting it with a prefatory introduction suitable to the times. It will give our people a lively idea of the sufferings of their forefathers, and what may be expected from Bishops here.

Had I leisure and usual health, I would have sent a corrected copy of this first and rude draft. I know your candour will overlook the many inaccuracies you will meet with.

I am, your very good friend and humble servant,  
CHARLES CHAUNCY.

## LETTER FROM DR. STILES TO REV. MR. BARNARD.

NEWPORT, OCT. 3, 1767.

*Rev. and respected Sir,*

ON the first of last month I received a packet from you inclosing 5 volumes of your works, 2 pamphlets, the MS. of your own Life, and your kind letter of 12 August. I have written in the books a memoir of their author and donor, and deposited them in our Ecclesiastical Library. Be pleased to accept our grateful acknowledgments for this generous benefaction, by which you have ornamented our collection, and will survive your own death in publick and lasting usefulness. I am glad to have collected all the works of so venerable a father in the congregational churches, especially as by your letter it should seem that some of them after your decease would have probably been irrecoverably lost.

With great pleasure I have read your life again and again. It has proved a feast to me. So long a life of a gentleman of your figure and extensive connexions must contain much ecclesiastical history, abound in political anecdotes, and involve very interesting participations in the publick occurrences and transactions, concerning many of which you have the honour to say, *quorum pars magna fui*. . . . . Posterity will honour the learning, piety, and firmness in the Redeemer's cause, and the noble evangelical spirit, which shine through your writings and life. May we, the younger disciples and sons in the ministry, imitate the amiable examples and right *Puritan spirit* of our ancestors and fathers.

You have, sir, been acquainted with most of the characters of eminence for sanctity, usefulness, and erudition among the ministers of New-England. Pray oblige me so much as to enumerate to me the names of those ministers already past off the stage, of whom you have conceived the highest opinion as divines, whose memories are worthy of double honour through all American ages.\*

I am, Rev. Sir,

Your dutiful son in the Gospel,  
EZRA STILES.*Rev. John Barnard, Marblehead.*

[\* A similar application was made to Dr. Chauncy. It was our intention to have Mr. Barnard's Sketch inserted *before his*, and this Letter would have shown the origin of both: but (incuriâ typograph.) the proper order is inverted. EDIT.]

Mr. BARNARD wrote a letter in reply, dated Marblehead 16 October, 1767; in which was the following paragraph: "I have also sent you, enclosed in this, according to your desire, a short sketch of the excellent men whom I knew, who are gone to reap the rewards of their labours." This venerable man died 24 January 1770, in the LXXXIXth year of his age, and LIVth of his ministry. He had been a preacher of the Gospel above 68 years.



SKETCH OF EMINENT MINISTERS IN NEW-ENGLAND. BY  
REV. JOHN BARNARD.

"The first I shall take notice of is the Rev. Mr. CHARLES MORTON, who was (if I was not misinformed) sent for from England to take our college under his care, but before he arrived another was appointed at the head of it, and he settled in the ministry at Charlestown; was an excellent Christian; of great erudition in the philosophy of that day. I remember in my time we recited at College a piece of his, called Morton's Physicks, in manuscript. He died, as I suppose, about the year 1692.\*

The Rev. Mr. SAMUEL TORRY, who was educated at our college [Harvard]; but for some reasons deferring the commencement, stayed not to take his degree—was settled at Weymouth, proved a man of good learning, a very holy man, and most excellently gifted in prayer; and very useful in his day: died in 1707.

The Rev. Mr. JOSHUA MOODY, graduated at our college 1653, was first settled at Portsmouth, in Piscataqua, but upon some occasion removed from thence to Boston, where he lived, and died, unfixed in any church, but assisting the several churches†: a very pious, devout, good man, and worthy preacher; whose life has been given to the publick by Dr. C. Mather.

The very Rev. Dr. INCREASE MATHER was graduated at our college in 1656. A man of superiour learning in the tongues, a great reader, of solid judgment, and a very judicious preacher. His life is made publick by his son, Cotton Mather. The

---

\* A. D. 1696. See a farther account of Mr. Morton in this volume.

† See p. 45 of this volume for a more correct account.

The Rev. Mr. SAMUEL WILLARD, graduated in 1669, first settled at Groton, but when that town was broke up by the Indians, he removed to Boston, was fixed in the church now under Dr. *Sewall's* care; some time vice-president of the college: He was an hard student, of great learning, for that day, of a clear head, solid judgment, excellent both in preaching and in prayer, an exemplary Christian, pleasant in conversation, whose name is had in remembrance among us, and his works praise him.

The Rev. Mr. SAMUEL CHEEVER, graduated in 1659; my predecessor, of great classick learning, a good preacher, a thorough Christian, and a prudent man.

The Rev. Mr. SAMUEL BELCHER, graduated in 1659, settled at Newbury Newtown, then so called, a good scholar, a judicious divine, a holy and humble man.

The Rev. Mr. PETER BULKLEY graduated in 1660, he was esteemed a great and judicious man, and his book of the Covenant proves him to be so. I never knew him.

The Rev. Mr. SOLOMON STODDARD graduated in 1662, settled at Northampton, a very great man, as a Christian, and divine, whom though I knew, yet you have had the opportunity of being more thoroughly acquainted with his character than I have.

The Rev. Mr. NEHEMIAH HOBART, graduated in 1667, settled at Newtown, an excellent scholar, in the *Latin, Greek,* and *Hebrew*, some time a vice-president of the college, a most pious, humble, prudent, and benevolent man.

The Rev. Mr. NICHOLAS NOYES, graduated also in 1667, settled at Salem, of good learning, a judicious preacher, deep studyed in the Revelations, of an holy life, pleasant conversation, died a bachelor:

Dr. COTTON MATHER, graduated in 1678, settled with his father in Boston in the second church, whose name is in all the churches, a man well skilled in the tongues, and some parts of philosophy, a most greedy devourer of books, and knowing in all parts of literature, of a rampant bright imagination, quick invention, a flaming preacher, close walker with God, pious, but facetious and instructive in conversation, a most active man in the interests of the churches, whose Life is given us by his son, *Samuel Mather*.

The Rev. WILLIAM BRATTLE, graduated in 1680, settled in

in Cambridge, an excellent scholar, good preacher, a very pious, humble, and meek man, though naturally of quick and strong passions; full of benevolence, a father to the college, and cherisher of the candidates for the ministry; exceeding prudent, to whom all addressed themselves for advice.

The Rev. Mr. NEHEMIAH WALTER, graduated in 1684, settled at Roxbury, of very good learning, a most excellent divine, admirable preacher, holiness of life, purity of manners, humble, prudent, and courteous: his works praise him.

The Rev. BENJAMIN WADSWORTH, graduated in 1690, settled in Boston, of good learning, most pious, humble, and prudent, an excellent, plain, pathetic preacher, removed to Cambridge as president of the college, and there died.

The Rev. Mr. EBENEZER PEMBERTON, graduated in 1691, settled in Boston, of a strong genius, extensive learning, a preacher of raised thoughts, and a masculine stile, of flaming zeal in the cause of God and religion, violent in his passions, and as soft as you would wish for out of them, a good Christian, and a faithful pastor. The character of whom, with Mr. Brattle's, Dr. Colman hath given us in a lecture sermon published among us.

The very Rev. Dr. BENJAMIN COLMAN, graduated in 1692; after having spent some time in England, returned and settled in *Boston*; a most gentlemanly man, of polite aspect and conversation, very extensive erudition, great devotion of spirit and behaviour, a charming and admired preacher, extensively serviceable to the college and country, whose works breathe his exalted, oratorical, devout, and benign spirit; an excellent man in spirit, in faith, in holiness, and charity.

The very Rev. Dr. JONATHAN MAYHEW, graduated 1744, settled in Boston, of a noble genius, acquainted with the best learning, a most laborious student, a polite writer, a strong defender of the rights and liberties of the state and church, and, notwithstanding his different sentiments from me, I esteem him a truly pious, benevolent, and useful man; died in middle age.

Beside these, whom I esteem the first class, there have been several other very worthy men, whom I will just name, as

The Rev. Mr. *Peter Thacher*, grad. 1671, settled at *Milton*.

*Jona. Russell*, grad. 1675, settled at *Barnstable*.

The

170 *Sketch of Eminent Ministers in New-England.*

- The Rev. Mr. *John Danforth*, grad. 1677, settled at *Dorchester*.  
*Thomas Barnard*, grad. 1679, settled at *Andover*.  
(*ver.*)  
*John Rogers*, grad. 1684, settled at *Ipswich*.  
*Henry Gibbs*, grad. 1685, settled at *Watertown*.  
*John Hancock*, grad. 1689, settled at *Lexington*.  
(*ton.*)  
*Joseph Belcher*, grad. 1690, settled at *Dedham*.  
*Nathaniel Clap*, grad. 1690, settled at *R. Island*.  
*Nathaniel Stone*, grad. 1690, settled at *Harwich*.  
*Simon Bradstreet*, grad. 1693, settled at *Charlestown*.  
(*town.*)  
*Eliphalet Adams*, grad. 1694, settled at *N. London*.  
(*don*, a great Hebrician.)  
*Jabez Fitch*, grad. 1694, settled at *Ipswich and Portsmouth*.  
(*Portsmouth.*)  
*Thomas Blowers*, grad. 1695, settled at *Beverly*.  
*Joseph Green*, grad. 1695, settled at *Salem Village*.  
(*lage.*)  
*Peter Thacher*, grad. 1696, settled at *Weymouth and Boston*.  
(*and Boston.*)  
*Samuel Moody*, grad. 1697, settled at our *York*.  
*John White*, grad. 1698, settled at *Glocester*.  
*Samuel Niles*, grad. 1699, settled at *Braintree*.  
*Robert Breck*, grad. 1700, settled at *Marlboro'*.  
(a great Hebrician.)  
*Jeremiah Wise*, grad. 1700, settled at *Berwick*.  
*George Curwin*, grad. 1701, settled at *Salem*.  
(died young.)  
*Joseph Stevens*, grad. 1703, settled at *Charlestown*.  
(*town*, died young.)  
*Thomas Prince*, grad. 1707, settled at *Boston*.  
*William Welstead*, grad. 1716, settled at *Boston*.  
*Joshua Gee*, grad. 1717, settled at *Boston*.  
*John Hancock*, grad. 1719, settled at *Braintree*.  
(died young.)  
*John Sparhawk*, grad. 1723, settled at *Salem*.  
(died young.)

These were all men of learning, pious, humble, prudent, faithful and useful men in their day."



---

LIFE OF THE REV. PRESIDENT CHAUNCY, WRITTEN AT THE REQUEST OF DR. STILES, BY THE REV. DR. CHAUNCY OF BOSTON, MAY 23, 1768.

CHARLES CHAUNCY, the first of the name in this country, and from whom all others of the same name here are descended, was born in Hertfordshire, in the year 1589. The particular town that gave him birth I could never learn. He had his grammar education at Westminster school, which adjoined to the Parliament-house, and was at school at the very time when the gun powder plot was to have taken effect; and must have perished, if the Parliament-house, as was intended, had been blown up. I particularly mention this fact because it is an emphatically important one as relative to myself, and strongly points out the special obligation I am under to set an asterism on the 5th of November, which, to this day is commemorated in the colonies, as well as mother country, as I hope it always will be, with expressions of joy and gratitude. My existence, with all its connections in this world and another, which were then only possible futureties, were absolutely dependent on this deliverance by an extraordinary interposition in God's all governing providence. It is far beyond us to conceive of the number, or important greatness of the possibilities, extending even to eternity, that stand in close connection, as to their coming or not coming into effect, with the obstruction or permission of this or the other single event. This shows the propriety, I may rather say, the necessity of ascribing infinite understanding to that glorious Being whose dominion ruleth over all.

Mr. Chauncy, when he had gone through his school learning, was thought worthy of being admitted a student of Trinity college in Cambridge, and in proper time to be honoured with the degree of a Bachelor in Divinity. He was afterwards chosen into the Hebrew Professorship, but the Vice-Chancellor, Doct. Williams, over ruled that choice in favour of one that was his kinsman; upon which he was placed in another office equally honourable and important, that of a Professor of Greek. According to all accounts I have had of him, he was a thorough, accurate Hebrician, Grecian, and Latinist,

ist, and indeed well skilled in all the learned sciences ; though more especially in divinity, which was his favourite study. He went from the University an eminent gospel minister ; was first settled in the ministry at Marstow ; and afterwards removed to Ware, where his success in the conversion and edification of souls was remarkably great.

It was in the days of that high church oppressor, archbishop Laud, that he so greatly suffered for his nonconformity to the inventions of man in the worship of God. Says Rushworth in his collections for the year 1629, “ Mr. Charles Chauncy, minister of Ware, using some expressions in his sermon that *idolatry was admitted into the church ; that the preaching of the gospel would be suppressed ; that there is much atheism, popery, arminianism, and heresy crept into the church.* And these being looked upon as designed to raise a fear among the people that some alteration in religion would ensue, he was questioned in the high commission, and by order of that court the cause was referred to the Bishop of London, being his ordinary, who ordered him to make a submission in Latin:” *which he accordingly did,* say Dr. Mather and Mr. Neal ; but they are both mistaken ; not to the thing itself, his openly making his submission ; but the prosecution in consequence of which he made it. He never recanted but once ; and this was to avoid the effects of another judgment, grounded on other allegations. Rushworth, for the year 1635, gives an account of his being again questioned by the high commission court, of his being suspended, fined, and imprisoned till he should openly acknowledge his offence, and of his *now* actually doing it. His words are these, “ Mr. Chauncy, minister of Ware in Hertfordshire, for *opposing the making a rail round the communion table in that parish church, as an innovation and snare to men’s consciences,* was brought into the high commission, and there pronounced guilty of contempt of Ecclesiastical government, and of raising a schism ; and was suspended from his ministry till he should make in open court a recantation in open form ; acknowledging his great offence, and protesting that he was persuaded in his conscience that kneeling at the sacrament was a lawful and commendable gesture ; that the rail set up in the chancel with a bench thereto annexed for kneeling at the holy communion, was a decent and convenient ornament ; and promising never by  
word

word or deed to oppose either that or any other laudable rites or ceremony prescribed in the church of England. He is condemned in great costs of suit, and was imprisoned till he paid the same, or performed the order of the court. *Afterward, he made his recantation*, and was dismissed with an admonition from the Arch Bishop." His making an open recantation in court, and in the form that had been prescribed, and in order to a release from an adjudged penalty, was greatly dishonourable, though the effect of great temptation. He never forgave himself this weakness and folly. The resentment of a rebuking conscience for such unworthy conduct made him often uneasy to his dying day. I have by me a copy of the preface to his last Will, wherein he particularly mentions and laments, as "still fresh before him, his many sinful compliances with and conformity unto vile human inventions, will-worship, superstition, and patcheries stitched into the service of the Lord, which the English mass-book, I mean the book of common prayer, and the ordination of Priests, &c. are fully fraught withal." Nor did he think this enough, but goes on giving it "in charge to his posterity, throughout all generations," with the greatest warmth of zeal and solemnity of language, as they would answer for their conduct at the tribunal of Jesus Christ, "not to conform (as he had done) to rites and ceremonies in religious worship of man's devising, and not of God's appointing." He was yet again made to feel the oppression of these infamous courts. Dr. Calamy's account, in his continuation of the history of ejected ministers, page 877, is this, "He was suspended and silenced by Bishop Laud for refusing to read the book of sports." Neal observes the same thing, perhaps from this same writer. He adds, in concurrence with both Dr. Calamy and Dr. Mather, that "there were but few that suffered more for non-conformity than he, by fines, by gaols, by necessity to abscond, and at last by being an exile from his native country."

He left England the latter end of the year 1637, and arrived safely at Plymouth a few days before the *great Earthquake*, extending throughout New-England, which happened June 1, 1638. Mr. Hutchinson in his history, page 99, v. i. observes in relation to this earthquake, that "the shake, by printed accounts of it, and from manuscript letters, appears to have been equal to that in 1727; the pewter in many places being thrown off

off the shelves, and the tops of chimneys in some places shook down ; but the noise, though great, not so surprising as that of the last mentioned. The course of it was from east to west. This was a remarkable æra. "So long after the Earthquake," was as common with the people of New-England for many years, as it seems to have been heretofore with the children of Israel." He continued at Plymouth some time ministering to the church there with their pastor, the Rev. Mr. Reyner ; but upon a call from the church at Scituate to the pastoral charge over them, he went to that town, was separated to the work of the gospel there, and faithfully discharged it for about twelve years ; when upon an invitation from the people at Ware, in England, from whom he had been driven, he purposed a removal to them with his family. I have heard the Rev. Mr. Nehemiah Walter, of Roxbury, more than once say, he had seen a letter of his wherein his complaint to his friends was, that his necessities at Scituate were so great that he might with truth declare, "deest quidem panis." I suppose this was the reason of his leaving Scituate with a view to return back to England. But, when he came to Boston in order to take passage, the Overseers of Harvard college, not willing the country should suffer the loss of so valuable a man, on Nov. 2, 1654, deputed Messrs. Mather and Norton, in their names to offer him the Presidentship of that society ; which he was prevailed upon to accept. His so doing was greatly to his worldly disadvantage. His support was shamefully scanty ; owing, not to inability in the province, but to the niggardly disposition of its representatives in general court. And this same temper has been too much since greatly hurtful to the interest of learning at the college. If the governors of this society had not entertained a high opinion of Mr. Chauncy's distinguishing qualifications for the Presidency over it, they would not have selected him to succeed Mr. Dunster, who resigned the office to avoid the danger of a removal from it on account of the antipædobaptistical principles to which he had professed himself a friend. Not that Mr. Chauncy had any objections to make against the lawfulness or propriety of baptizing infants ; but he agreed with Mr. Dunster as to the *mode* of baptism, which he thought ought to be rather by *immersion* than *sprinkling*. And he had, besides, a peculiarity as to the *time* of celebrating the Lord's Supper, which

which he supposed should be in the *evening*. These are unquestionable facts, as will appear by the following extracts from the records of Harvard college.

“At a meeting of the Honourable and Reverend Overseers of the college, 2. 9. 1654. Mr. Mather and Mr. Norton were desired, by the overseers of the college, to tender unto the Rev. Mr. Charles Chauncy the place of President, with the stipend of one hundred pounds per annum, to be paid out of the country treasury; and withal to signify to him, that it is expected and desired that he forbear to disseminate or publish any tenets concerning *immersion in baptism, and celebration of the Lord's supper at evening*, or to expose the received doctrine therein.”

He made no difficulty in complying with this desire, and was ever punctual in the regard he paid to it. His inauguration to the office of president was solemnized Nov. 27, 1654. Says Dr. Mather, “he concluded his excellent oration, made unto a venerable assembly then filling the college hall, with such a passage as this to the students there; “*Doctiorem certè Præsidem, et huic oneri et stationi, multis modis aptiorem, vobis facile licet invenire; sed amantiorem, et vestri boni studiosiorem non invenietis.*” He continued in the Presidentship from this time to the day of his death, with honour to himself, and no small advantage to the college. A considerable number of the best characters in the country were educated under his oversight, and graduated by him; such as Mr. Gershom Bulkley, Dr. Increase Mather, Mr. Samuel Willard, Mr. Solomon Stoddard, Gov. Dudley, Judge Sewall, father of the present Doct. Sewall, and others of note both in church and state.

In the year 1671, finding himself almost worn out, he made his farewell oration to the college on the day of the commencement, wherein he solemnly took leave of his friends, and towards the close of this year,\* Feb. 19th he exchanged this life for a better, in the 82d year of his age, and 17th of his Presidentship over Harvard college.

The epitaph, which I have often seen, and may now be read† on his tombstone in Cambridge burial place, is in these words:

Conditum

---

\* The year at that time commenced in March. EDIT.

† “*Damnosa quid non imminuit dies?*” The monumental stone of President CHAUNCY is broken in pieces, and the entire inscription is no

Conditum  
 hic est corpus  
 CAROLI CHAUNCÆI  
 S. S. Theologiæ Baccalaurei  
 et  
 Collegii Harvardini Nov-Anglia  
 per XVII annorum spatium  
 Præsidis vigilantissimi,  
 viri plane integerrimi,  
 Concionatoris eximii,  
 Pietate  
 pariter ac liberali eruditione  
 ornatissimi.  
 Qui obiit in Domino Feb. XIX  
 anno Domini MDCLXXI.  
 et Ætatis suæ LXXXII.

Doct. Increase Mather, in one of his orations at the Commencement, while President of the college, gives him summarily this character: "Clarissimus ille Chauncæus, quem CAROLUM magnum, jure optimo nominare possumus; fuit ille senex venerandus, linguarum et artium præsiidiis instructissimus, Gymnasiarcha præclare doctus; qui in filiis prophetarum erudiendis fidelem navavit operam, omnemque diligentiam adhibuit. Abitus et obitus tanti viri, collegium quasi truncatum, et tantum non execatam reliquerunt." You may see him largely characterized by Dr. Cotton Mather in his *Magnalia Americana*.\* I have omitted mentioning many things you will find recorded by him, and some it is more proper you should read as written by him, than by one in the relation I bear towards him.

He left behind him six sons and one daughter. His sons were all graduated at Harvard college,† and I believe had their

---

longer legible. See Coll. Hist. Soc. vii. 46. By preserving the Epitaph we would not encourage a neglect of the Monument, the *place* of which the next generation may be unable to ascertain. Let not Christians forget the example of *pious ÆNEAS*:

"Ergo *instauramus* Polydoro funus, et ingens  
 Aggeritur tumulo tellus."

EDIT.

\* Book III. chap. xxiii. EDIT.

† Isaac and Ichabod, 1651; Barnabas, 1657; Nathan, Elnathan, and Israel, 1661.

their education there likewise, and most of them while their father was at the head of this academy.

His two eldest sons, Isaac and Ichabod, soon left this country and went to England, in the capacity of physicians and ministers. Isaac from whom I descended (his son Charles coming over to New-England when a young man, and settling here) was first a minister at Woodborough. Doct. Calamy reckons him among the ejected ministers, in consequence of the barbarous acts of Parliament in the reign of Charles II.; and says, "he was well known afterwards in London," and speaks of him as "a zealous writer against Neonomianism." He was pastor of the church in London of which Dr. Owen had before him been pastor, and Dr. Isaac Watts afterwards. Dr. Watts, while Mr., was for a considerable time his assistant. As he grew into years he quitted his pastorate, and confined himself to the practice of physick to which he had all along in life been accustomed. He was too rigidly orthodox, and too zealous in the defence of his principles upon this head.\*

Ichabod was a practitioner in physick at Bristol; though he first preached in England, and could have settled in the ministry, had it not been for the difficulties in that day in point of conscience. Dr. Calamy says of him, in his account of the sufferers after the restoration, "He was chaplain to Sir Edward Harley's regiment at Dunkirk when the Uniformity act took place. He afterwards became a physician in Bristol, and was of good note. He was prosecuted on the 35th Elizabeth, and upon that act suffered banishment. In 1684 he was compelled to abjure the realm, and removed himself and his family into Holland; but upon king James's liberty he returned to Bristol in 1686, and there he died July 25, 1691." He wrote himself an account of his sufferings in a small pamphlet, entitled

---

\* He had the degree of Doctor in Medicine. After being ejected from the living of Woodborough, Wilts, by the act of Uniformity, 1662, he was for some time pastor to a Congregational church at Andover. Quitting this place he went to London to act as a physician. On the death of Mr. Clarkson, Dr. Owen's successor, he was chosen pastor of the society which those great men had served; and continued among them 14 years, when, finding that the congregation declined, resisting all entreaties to the contrary, he quitted the ministry. He died February 28, 1712.

ted "Innocence vindicated, by an impartial narrative of the proceedings of the court of sessions in Bristol against Ichabod Chauncy, &c."

The president's third son, Barnabas, died in middle age an immature death.

His fourth son, Nathaniel, was for some time pastor of the church in Windsor, Connecticut; but afterwards removed to Hatfield in this province upon their choosing him for their minister, and here he spent the rest of his days. Mr. Chauncy of Durham was his son, and Mrs. Whittlesey of Wallingford his daughter.

Elnathan, his fifth son, (these two last were twins) lived here in Boston, a noted doctor for some time, and then went to Barbadoes where he soon died. He left no children, but his widow was alive since my settlement in the ministry. I have seen and conversed with her.

Israel, his youngest son, you have doubtless often heard of. He was long the pastor of the church at Stratford, Connecticut. He spent his days among that people in great reputation, as I have heard, as a physician as well as divine. Mrs. Whittlesey, who lived at his house when she was a young woman, once told me he was one of the most benevolent, hospitable gentlemen she ever knew.

As to the works of president Chauncy, I know of none that were printed, save only a sermon on the advantage of schools for learning, and 26 sermons on Justification in a 4to volume, both printed in Cambridge.\* The 26 sermons I once saw in some house upon the road as I was journeying, but had no opportunity to read them. I have since made great inquiry for this volume in the family and elsewhere, but to no purpose. I could never after get so much as the sight of it. I have by me his sermon preached in the College Hall the day after the commencement in 1655, from Amos ii. 11. Its design is to represent the advantages of learning, and to answer some objections that had been made against schools and colleges for the promotion of it. He takes occasion in this sermon to bring in students and ministers, pleading for *long hair* from the obligation the Nazarites were under not to suffer a razor to come upon

---

\* "This volume of 26 sermons, printed in London, 1659 (says Dr. Stiles), I am possessed of, having obtained it out of the library of the late Rev. Eliphalet Adams of New-London." Edrr. d



upon their heads ; and rejects their plea with the utmost detestation, representing *the wearing of long hair* as abominable in the sight of God, an heathenish practice, and one of the crying sins of the land. 'Tis strange, men of learning, real good sense, and solid judgement, should be able to expend so much zeal against a trifle, not to say a thing absolutely indifferent in its own nature. But the greatest as well as best men in this country, in that day, magistrates as well as ministers, esteemed *the wearing of long hair* an enormous vice, and most solemnly testified against it as such.

As I am the eldest son of Charles, the eldest son of Isaac, who was the eldest son of president Chauncy, I thought his papers properly belonged to me. Accordingly, after I was settled in the ministry, I was at considerable pains to recover them. I could not, for many years, find out which of his sons took possession of them upon his death. At length Mr. Chauncy of Durham informed me they were put into the hands of his father, the old gentleman's eldest son then living in this country, who kept them as a valuable treasure during his life ; but, upon his death, his children being all under age, they were unhappily suffered to continue in the possession of his widow and their mother. She married sometime after a North-Hampton Deacon, who principally got his living by making and selling pies. Behold now the fate of all the good president's writings of every kind ! They were put to the bottom of pies, and in this way brought to utter destruction. I was greatly moved to hear this account of them ; and it has rivetted in my mind a determination to order all my papers, upon my decease, to be burnt, excepting such as I might mention by name for deliverance from the catastrophe ; though I have not as yet excepted any, nor do I know that I shall.

I intended to have been particular in speaking of his learning, his improvement of time, his hard study, and above all his eminent piety. But it would have been needless, as you will find all that I could have said upon these heads in Dr. Mather's account of him.

I shall only say farther ; In the preface to his last will, I mentioned before, he gave it as his dying charge to his children, and their posterity after them, to keep constantly by them for their serious reading and help in godly living, " The direction for a holy life," left by Robert Eyre, Esq., his wife's  
father,

father, as a legacy to his children. This was left in manuscript only, but was afterwards printed. Dr. Cotton Mather says of these directions, "as they express the true spirit of *Puritanism*, so they comprise the wisest, the fullest, the exactest, and the holiest rules of living that I ever saw together in any short human composure; and the reprinting of them would not only give a description of the heavenly conversation endeavoured by our great CHARLES CHAUNCY, whom we have hitherto been considering, but also procure the admiration, if not imitation, of them that read it." I was scarce ever so desirous of seeing any little book, as this, that comes so recommended to perusal; and my pains to procure the sight of it have been proportionable: but to no purpose. I could never hear of the book. 'Tis strange it should be so soon quite lost out of the world, as seems to be the case. Not one of the family, in any branch of it, that has been in being for 40 years back, ever so much as heard there was such a book in the country. I intend, by Mr. Mather's leave, to be at the trouble of turning over his pamphlet rubbish, if perhaps I may yet recover it. His father had certainly read it, and most probably was the owner of it.

CHARLES CHAUNCY.

MEMOIRS OF EDWARD TYNG, ESQUIRE. BY REV. TIMOTHY ALDEN, JUN.

WILLIAM and Edward Tyng, two brothers, came to New-England about the year 1630. The former, who spent his life at Braintree, in Massachusetts, left no posterity.

Edward married his first wife, Miss Sears, in England, a lady of remarkable piety. She died at Boston, probably, soon after her arrival. He removed to Dunstable, where, in December, 1681, he ended his days, having reached his ninety-first year. His second wife, Mary, of what family originally is unknown, by whom he had all his children, survived him till about the beginning of the last century. His son, Jonathan, who was born in 1642, was an ancestor of the late honourable John Tyng,\* esquire. His second son, Edward, married a daughter

\* Colonel John Tyng, first justice of the court of common pleas in the county of Middlesex, died 18 April, 1797, about 94 years of age,

daughter of ensign Thaddeus Clarke,\* of Falmouth, now Portland. One of his daughters, Eunice, was the wife of Rev. Samuel Willard, vice-president of Harvard college. The honourable Joseph Dudley, esquire, governor of Massachusetts, married a second, Habijah Savage a third, and — Searle a fourth.

The second Edward Tyng had four children. 1. Edward, the principal subject of these memoirs. 2. Jonathan, who died at an early age. 3. Mary, whom Rev. John Fox,† of Woburn, married. 4. Elizabeth, who was the wife of a brother to the late doctor Franklin.

He was appointed governour of Annapolis, and was taken, on his passage to that place, and carried into France, where he died.

The last mentioned Edward, grandson of the first, after the decease of his father, resided in the family of his aunt Dudley, till of age sufficient for entering on a seafaring life. His first consort, who died in London, was a daughter of captain Cyprian Southack. In 1731, at the age of almost fifty, he married Ann Waldo,‡ a daughter of Jonathan Waldo, a merchant in Boston. By her he had seven children. Three only of these lived to maturity of years. 1. Ann, who died in November, 1756, a month after her marriage with a British officer. 2. Edward, an officer in the British army, who deceased a bachelor, in England, 1776. 3. The present colonel William Tyng of Gorham. He is the only descendant from the first Edward, who, by birth, is entitled to the name of Tyng.

The subject of these memoirs received a commission from governour Belcher, dated 16 April, 1740, appointing him captain of his majesty's SOUTH AND NORTH BATTERIES AND FORTIFICATIONS IN BOSTON.

When captain Cyprian Southack resigned the command of the

---

and lies in a tomb, erected in the spacious walk of his garden, at Tyngsborough.

\* Clarke was from Ireland, and was one of the original proprietors of Falmouth. Clarke's Point, so called, was a part of his possessions in Portland.

† Rev. John Fox, son of his predecessor at Woburn, the Rev. Jabez Fox, a descendant, according to family tradition, from John Fox, the martyrologist, died 12 December, 1756, æt. 79. His wife survived him eight or ten years.

‡ Sister of the late brigadier Samuel Waldo. She died in 1754.

the PROVINCE SNOW, OR QUEEN'S GALLEY, PRINCE OF ORANGE, captain Tyng, who had left the sea and was settled in merchandise, was prevailed on to succeed him.

In 1744, he acquired no small honour by attacking and capturing a French privateer, commanded by Monsieur De La Bra, of force superiour to that of the PRINCE OF ORANGE. A number of the merchants of Boston, in testimony of this meritorious exploit, presented him with a SILVER CUP, now in possession of his son, weighing about one hundred ounces, with this inscription :

TO  
EDWARD TYNG, ESQUIRE,  
COMMANDER OF THE SNOW,  
PRINCE OF ORANGE,  
AS AN ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF  
HIS GOOD SERVICE, DONE THE  
TRADE, IN TAKING THE FIRST  
FRENCH PRIVATEER,  
ON THIS COAST, THE XXIV OF JUNE,  
MDCCLXIV, THIS PLATE IS PRESENTED  
BY SEVERAL OF THE MERCHANTS  
IN BOSTON,  
NEW-ENGLAND.

As soon as the general court of Massachusetts had determined on the bold project of attempting the reduction of Louisbourg, governour Shirley sent for captain Tyng, and directed him to procure the largest ship in his power. He, accordingly, purchased one on the stocks, which was nearly ready for launching, and made such improvements upon her that she was able to carry twenty-four, or twenty-six guns. She was named the MASSACHUSETTS FRIGATE. Tyng took the command of her and was appointed commodore of the fleet. Captain Rouse, in a bylander or small brigantine, was the second in command.

When sir Peter Warren formed a junction with the provincial naval forces, he became commander in chief of course; but, in general orders, he directed that Tyng should be obeyed, as commodore.

On the night of the 18 of May, 1745, the *Vigilant*, a French man of war, of sixty-four guns, having been decoyed  
by

by the Mermaid and hectorred by several small vessels, fell in with the Massachusetts. The Vigilant struck to the latter, having mistaken her for a much larger ship, greatly to the advantage and encouragement of all employed in this hazardous expedition.

Warren offered Tyng the command of this valuable prize, with the rank of POST CAPTAIN. He was considerably advanced in life, and being determined to remain on shore, unfortunately for his family, refused the honour and recommended Rouse to sir Peter, who, accordingly, gave him the command.

This statement has been made, partly, with a view to do *that justice*, which our historians have usually withholden, bestowing their commendations upon Rouse, to the injury of a brave and deserving naval officer. From some source or other, it not unfrequently happens that merit is passed by in neglect. SIC—ALTER TULIT HONORES.

The subject of these memoirs was born in 1683, and, having laboured under the effects of a paralytick shock for seven years, died, at Boston, on the 8 of September, 1755.

P. S. In connection with the foregoing, it may not be improper to add the subsequent extract of an inscription, which was, not long since, copied from a monumental stone in the family burial yard at Tyngsborough.

“In memory of Sarah Winslow, the last surviving child of the late Eleazer Tyng, and the truly benevolent benefactress of the CHURCH OF CHRIST AND A GRAMMAR SCHOOL, in this place, in honour of whose name and family this town is called Tyngsborough.”

Portsmouth, 13 February, 1806.

*Rev. John Eliot, D. D. Cor. Sec. Mass. Hist. Soc.*

---

---

MEMOIRS OF HON. WILLIAM TYNG, ESQ. BY REV. TIMOTHY ALDEN, JUN.

THE subject of these memoirs, whose name was mentioned in the foregoing article, was born in Boston, 17 August, 1737, and was a regular descendant from Edward Tyng, Esq. who died at Dunstable, in 1681.

His grandfather was Hon. Edward Tyng, Esq. who was appointed governour of Annapolis and died in France.

His

His father was the late gallant commodore Tyng, of whom a particular account has already been given.

The late Hon. William Tyng, Esq. spent the most of his youthful days in his native town. Having been educated in a true system of moral and social principles, he soon discovered those qualities of mind, which endeared him to all. Dignity of deportment, undeviating integrity, and an ardent desire to ameliorate the condition of the unfortunate, were the characteristicks of his juvenile age.

In 1767, he was appointed high sheriff of the county of Cumberland, and, the same year, became a resident in Fal-mouth, now Portland. In discharging the duties of this responsible station, he was distinguished for his fidelity, correctness, and humanity. For several years, he represented the town in general court.

In 1769, he married Miss Elizabeth Ross, a native of Scotland, and daughter of Alexander Ross, Esq.

In 1774, he received a colonel's commission from governor Gage. He sustained these publick honours until that memorable event, which terminated in the independence of the United States.

Being strongly attached to those principles of government, in which he had been educated, having taken the oath of allegiance, and invested with the confidence of his sovereign, he believed it a sacred duty not to engage in the struggle, which then arose. The extreme jealousies, which were excited in those perilous times, towards all, who were not actively engaged in the arduous contest, rendered it necessary for him to quit his domestick retreat. Accordingly, he left the county of Cumberland soon after the battle of Lexington, and, when the English took possession of New-York, repaired thither.

However justly we may complain of the part, which many refugees acted; yet, we see a particular providence in placing colonel Tyng in this situation, where he became the minister of relief to those of his countrymen, who fell into the hands of the enemy. Here he had opportunity to be eminently useful. He gave full scope to the feelings of his benevolent heart. Like the affectionate Joseph of old, he sought his afflicted brethren; extricated them, when in difficulty; nourished them from his own resources; and, as often as possible, procured their release.

*Among*

Among the numerous captives, whose lives were preserved, through his instrumentality, was the late brave commodore Preble, who, having passed through a very dangerous fever, in which he experienced every tender attention, which could conduce to his recovery, received his discharge, and was restored to his friends. To colonel Tyng, under Providence, this country is indebted for the life of one, whose heroick achievements will never be forgotten.

At the close of the American revolution, he left New-York and settled in Nova-Scotia, river St. John, which soon after became a distinct province, under the name of New-Brunswick.

He was one of the agents for the settlement of the loyalists in that province. He was also chief justice of a court of judicature, in which capacity he was respected as a dignified and humane judge.

In 1793, he returned to this country and settled in Gorham, where he had formerly resided, and where he devoted the remainder of his life, principally, to the pursuits of agricultural knowledge and the enjoyment of social intercourse with his friends.

To the amiable companion of his life he was peculiarly attached. Although he had no posterity, he regarded, with the most affectionate tenderness, the children of his adoption.

He early united himself to the church of Christ, and adorned his profession, by a deportment of sincere humility, in attending to its duties, constantly devoting a part of every day to secret communion with his God.

Possessing an enlightened understanding, agreeable in his manners, and engaging in his conversation, he was highly respected, beloved, and esteemed. The friend, who visited his happy mansion, was sure to receive a cordial welcome. The unfortunate were never sent away empty. He was another "MAN OF ROSS."

Sometime previous to his death, he felt symptoms of a nervous affection, which admonished him that his exit would be sudden. Like a wise man, he improved the warning, by duly preparing for his departure. On the evening of the eighth of December, 1807, he was seized with an apoplexy, and, on the tenth, surrounded by his afflicted family, yielded up his life, apparently without a struggle or a pang.

His remains were carried into Saint Paul's church, Portland, an edifice erected under his immediate patronage, where the service was performed, to which he had ever expressed the most affectionate attachment. The brethren of Ancient Land Mark Lodge, over whom he had recently presided, attended, clad in full mourning, and, in an impressive manner, performed their funeral rites.\*

Boston, 3 March, 1808.

*Rev. John Eliot, D. D. Cor. Sec. Mass. Hist. Society.*

---

ANECDOTE OF REV. JOHN ELIOT, OF ROXBURY.

BOSTON, 11th FEB. 1808.

Rev. JOHN ELIOT, D. D.

Cor. Sec. of the M. H. Society.

*Sir,*

IT was with much pleasure I read the account of the Rev. John Eliot, formerly minister of Roxbury, as published by your Society; and in return for that gratification, I send you an anecdote of that eminent man, which I received years ago from my parents, natives of Roxbury, and which I believe is authentick.

So great was Mr. Eliot's charity, that his salary was often distributed for the relief of his needy neighbours, so soon after the period at which he received it, that before another period arrived his own family were straitened for the comforts of life. One day the parish treasurer on paying the money for salary due, which he put into a handkerchief, in order to prevent Mr. Eliot from giving away his money before he got home, tied the ends of the handkerchief in as many hard knots as he could. The good man received his handkerchief, and took leave of the treasurer. He immediately went to the house of a sick and necessitous family. On entering, he gave them his blessing, and told them God had sent them some relief. The sufferers with tears of gratitude welcomed their pious benefactor, who with moistened eyes began to untie the knots in his handkerchief. After many efforts to get at his money,  
and

---

\* The memoirs of col. William Tyng have been drawn from a respectable source, through the aid of a friend, whose language has been freely used.



and impatient at the perplexity and delay, he gave the handkerchief and all the money to the mother of the family, saying with a trembling accent: "Here, my dear, take it; I believe the Lord designus it all for you."

I am, Sir, your obedient servant, J. M.

---

GRANT MADE TO REV. WILLIAM HUBBARD FOR WRITING  
HIS HISTORY.

See page 35 of this volume.

1682, Oct. 11th. **W**HEREAS it hath been thought necessary and a duty incumbent upon us, to take due notice of all occurrences and passages of God's providence towards the people of this jurisdiction, since their first arrival in these parts, which may remain to posterity, and that the Rev. Mr. William Hubbard hath taken pains to compile a history of this nature, which the court doth with thankfulness acknowledge, and as a manifestation thereof, do hereby order the Treasurer to pay unto him the sum of fifty pounds in money, he transcribing it fairly into a book, that it may be the more easily perused, in order to the satisfaction of this Court. [Copied from Massachusetts colony records for the year 1682, folio 378.]

---

AUTHOR OF AN ESSAY ON FEUDAL AND CANON LAW.  
EXTRACT OF A LETTER FROM REV. DR. CHAUNCY, OF  
BOSTON, TO REV. DR. STILES, DATED "BOSTON, DEC.  
12, 1768."

**I** WAS surprised that Mr. Hollis (who promoted the printing "the true sentiments of America") should with so much freedom make Mr. Gridley the author of the "Feudal and Canon Law." I suppose he had his information from some friend here, who positively affirmed what he guessed to be the truth. Any one who knew Mr. Gridley, must at once know he was not the writer of that piece. Neither sentiments, stile, or manner, in any measure, agree to him. Upon seeing this work so particularly ascribed to Mr. Gridley, I was led to be more inquisitive about the true author than I otherwise should have been. And I can inform you, that Mr. ADAMS, the Lawyer, a native of Braintree, and now a practitioner in Boston, was the real author. He is but a young

young man ; not above thirty-three or four ; but of incomparable sense ; a true son of Liberty, and as well able to write or talk upon it as any one I am acquainted with. I esteem that piece one of the best that has been written. It has done honour to its author ; and it is a pity, but he should be known."

BILLS OF MORTALITY FOR MIDDLEBOROUGH. COMMUNICATED BY MR. ISAAC THOMSON.

A. D. 1805.	Persons.	Years of age	A. D. 1806.	Persons.	Years of age.
Died	4	between 80 and 90	Died	6	upwards of 70
	1	about 70		3	between 50 and 70
	3	between 60 and 70		5	between 40 and 50
	4	between 50 and 60		9	between 20 and 40
	2	between 40 and 50		6	under 20
	6	children		—	—
	—	—		29	—
	20	—		—	—

See vol. viii. 79, and ix. 235.

MEMOIR OF REV. ANDREW ELIOT, A CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

ANDREW ELIOT, A. M. minister of Fairfield, in Connecticut, was educated at Harvard College, and received the honours of that seminary, A. D. 1762.

He was soon after appointed to the office of Butler, and with that office was connected the care of the Library and Museum. In the winter of 1764 the old College was burnt ; and scarcely any part of the library, or curiosities was saved. Mr. Eliot lost all his property in the building.

When the new edifice was planned by governour Barnard, distinct rooms were designed for the library room, the museum, apparatus, &c. and the government of the college made a new arrangement. The Butler was no longer to have the care of the library, but a new officer was appointed, who should be Librarian with every privilege of a Tutor. Mr. Eliot is the first in the College catalogue, to whom *Bibliothecarius* is affixed.

At the commencement of 1768 he was appointed a Tutor, and Fellow, A. D. 1773, upon the resignation of Mr. Willard. He continued in the tutorship and corporation, until he was ordained pastor of the church in Fairfield, A. D. 1774. There he remained a useful, worthy minister until his death.

During

During the revolutionary contest, this town was exposed to constant danger from the British ships of war, which passed the Sound; they frequently landed from their boats, doing some injury to the places that were defenceless. In the summer of 1779, Gen. Tryon landed with an army and burned the town of Fairfield. He ordered several houses to be marked for preservation, and among them Mr. Eliot's; but this by some accident was consumed, and the owner lost a large, and well chosen library with all his furniture, at a time when the people of his charge could only sympathise with him; some of them having lost their all, and others, who owned their estates, had only the land without their houses. The inhabitants of Boston, always alive to generous purposes, and active in their proceedings, as well as warm in their benevolence, showed their kindness to Mr. Eliot upon this occasion. A publick contribution was made in the new north church, of which he had been a member, and his father for many years pastor. The pulpit was then vacant, and the late Dr. Simeon Howard of the west church preached a sermon, very appropriate and excellent, from these words: "It is more blessed to give than receive."

Mr. Eliot was a member of the Connecticut Society of Arts and Sciences, and was chosen a corresponding member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, A. D. 1798. He died October 26, 1805, in the sixty-second year of his age, and thirty-second of his ministry. The following character\* appeared in the newspapers of New-Haven.

"In Mr. Eliot the bereaved flock have lost a judicious, affectionate, and faithful pastor, to whom God had given *the spirit of fortitude, love, and a sound mind*; who attended continually on his ministry unentangled with the things of this life. The steady affection and esteem, the deserved estimation in which he was ever held by his brethren in the ministry, and his acceptance in the churches, are honourable testimonies to his worth. Candour and unaffected piety, with the wisdom which dwells with prudence, were distinguishing parts of his character. His acquaintance with general science, urbanity, friendly and social affections, conciliated the esteem of all ranks. His widow bewails an affectionate husband; and six children, one son, (a candidate for the ministry) and five daughters, lament an excellent parent." e

\* By Rev. Dr. Dana, of New-Haven.

---

MEMOIR OF MR. THOMAS PEMBERTON, A MEMBER OF THE  
HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

**M**R. PEMBERTON was a native of Boston. He descended from those of his name, mentioned in Prince's Chronology, A. D. 1632, among the freemen and first settlers of Massachusetts, and members of the first church in the town. Two of the family were famous among the divines of New-England. The first was pastor of the Old South Church, and died A. D. 1717; the other was minister of the first Presbyterian Church in New-York, afterwards pastor of the New Brick Church in Boston, and died A. D. 1777.

Mr. Thomas Pemberton was born A. D. 1728. His education was liberal, though not collegiate. For many years he pursued the mercantile employment; and was an excellent accountant, equally remarkable for his penmanship, diligence, accuracy, punctuality, and close attention to the most minute concerns of business. From early life he was fond of books, and was so critical in his researches into the history of former times, as to gain the character of an *Antiquary*, a name more honourable than honoured; and a character which may be rendered useful to all social institutions, however lightly esteemed by modern wits, or certain "marmosets of literature," in the language of Bishop Taylor, who make the most vivid appearance in polished times.

He possessed an extensive knowledge of historical facts; and was never better entertained than when investigating and recording the interesting particulars of the first settlement and early history of Massachusetts. His MS. *Memo-randa, Historical, and Biographical*, make about fifteen volumes; and are evidences of his diligence, and attachment to literary pursuits. His friends solicited him to publish a volume of American Annals; but his diffidence prevented him from complying. He furnished many articles for the periodical works published in his native town, and contributed almost a ninth part to the Collections of the Historical Society, of which he was a very useful member. To this society he bequeathed all his Manuscripts. Many of its members followed him to the grave; and all of them will remember with gratitude his donations and his labours.

He had prepared a "Massachusetts Chronology of the  
XVIIIth

XVIIIth Century ;” containing the remarkable events of every year ; biographical notices of eminent men, topographical delineations, accounts of the settlements of towns, and the ordination of ministers, particulars of the weather, prevalent diseases, &c. comprised in five MS. volumes. The latter part of his life was diligently employed in finishing this last favourite work.

He was a firm and steady patriot, seeking the true interests of freedom and humanity ; and a friend to social order, law, and government. His attachment to his country was manifested during the nation’s prosperity, and through calamitous times.

He was a man of artless manners. He lived a bachelor in literary solitude, devoting regularly each day certain hours to his studies, and to visiting his friends. As a companion, he was facetious, inquisitive, entertaining and instructive.

In his youth he was distinguished among his acquaintance for poetick talents, and had a peculiar turn for epigram. He frequently repeated some that were elegant and pungent, which he declined printing or circulating. One of his most pleasant topicks of conversation was the account of men whom he formerly knew, or anecdotes of his contemporaries. The poems of T. Kilby and J. Green, and other Boston wits, he would recite with much humour to the last week of his life. His hours, though solitary, were never melancholy. His early habits were seen in his declining years. Unless a friend came in, his mind was certainly employed in recollection of past scenes, or in arrangements for succeeding days.

He died, after a short illness, July 5, 1807. The *income* of his estate, which was increasing in later years by the demise of a near relation, he devoted to useful purposes ; and by his Will he left the *principal* in legacies, which do honour to his benevolence.

*h c*

RESIDENT MEMBERS OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY,  
ELECTED SINCE THE PUBLICATION OF THE 5TH VOLUME.

Rev. Jonathan Homer, of Newton.

Rev. John Allyn, of Duxbury.

Eliphalet Pearson, LL. D. late Professor of the Oriental Languages,  
in Harvard University.

\*Marston Watson, Esq. of Boston.

William

William Sullivan, Esq. of Boston.  
 John Adams, LL. D. late President of the United States.  
 Hon. Caleb Strong, Esq. late Governour of the Commonwealth.  
 Thomas Lindall Winthrop, Esq. of Boston.  
 John Langdon Sullivan, Esq. of Boston.  
 Rev. Zephaniah Willis, of Kingston.  
 Rev. William Emerson, of Boston.  
 Rev. John Snelling Popkin, of Newbury.  
 Charles Bulfinch, Esq. of Boston.  
 Hon. John Quincy Adams, Esq. Senator of the United States.  
 Mr. Stephen Higginson, jun. of Boston.  
 Rev. Peter Whitney, of Northborough.  
 Mr. Obadiah Rich, of Boston.  
 William Smith Shaw, Esq. of Boston.



CORRESPONDING MEMBERS OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY, ELECTED SINCE THE PUBLICATION OF THE 5TH VOLUME.

Dr. Benjamin De Witt, of Albany.  
 Caspar Wistar, M. D. of Philadelphia.  
 Rev. Samuel Miller, D. D. of New York.  
 Mr. Thomas Pieronnet.  
 \*Rev. Arthur Homer, D. D. of the University of Cambridge, Great Britain.  
 Hon. Theodore Foster, Esq. of Providence.  
 Rev. Thomas Hall, Chaplain of the British Factory at Leghorn.  
 Rev. Timothy Alden, of Portsmouth.  
 John Newman, M. D. of Salisbury, North-Carolina.  
 Rev. Ezra Samson, of Hudson.  
 John Vaughan, Esq. of Philadelphia.  
 William Barton, Esq. of Lancaster, Pennsylvania.  
 \*Mr. Ebenezer Grant Marsh, Tutor of Yale College.  
 Richard Watson, D. D. Lord Bishop of Llandaff.  
 Anthony Fothergill, M. D. of Bath, England.  
 William Johnson, Esq. of New-York.  
 Charles Mary Wentworth, Esq. of Halifax, Nova-Scotia.  
 Robert Anderson, M. D. of Edinburgh.  
 Samuel Eddy, Esq. of Providence.  
 General Vallancey, Vice-President of the Dublin Society.  
 Hon. William Plummer, Esq. of Epping, New-Hampshire.  
 Hon. John Wheelock, LL. D. President of Dartmouth College.  
 Jonathan Williams, Lieut. Colonel of Engineers.

GENERAL TABLE OF CONTENTS OF THE TEN VOLUMES,  
METHODICALLY ARRANGED.

I. PAPERS RELATING PARTICULARLY TO THE SOCIETY.

1. **I**NTRODUCTORY Address, explaining the objects of the Society, and giving an account of several histories of Massachusetts, both printed and in manuscript. i. 2.
2. First Constitution of the Society. i. 1.
3. First Circular Letter, specifying articles on which the Society request information. ii. 1.
4. The Act of Incorporation of the Massachusetts Historical Society. iv. 1.
5. Laws of the Society. iv. 2.
6. Second Circular Letter. iv. 5.
7. Articles on which the Society request information. iv. 6.
8. List of the members. v. 291. x. 191.

II. HISTORICAL PAPERS, IN CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER.

9. A Poem in Latin of Stephen Parmenius of Buda, in celebration of the voyage of Sir Humphrey Gilbert, undertaken for the purpose of conducting a colony to the new world; with an English translation, 1683. ix. 53.
10. Mourt's Relation or Journal of a plantation settled at Plymouth in New England, and proceedings thereof, from Nov. 1620, to June, 1621. viii. 203.
11. Edward Winslow's Relation of things remarkable in Plymouth, from Jan. 1622, to Sep. 1623. viii. 239.
12. Gov. Bradford's Letter Book, from 1624 to 1630. iii. 27.
13. Gov. Dudley's Letter to the Countess of Lincoln, containing the History of Massachusetts from 1627, to March, 1631. viii. 36.
14. Abstract of the Laws of New England, 1641. v. 171.
15. New England's First Fruits, in respect of the progress of learning in the college at Cambridge, with divers other special matters concerning the country, 1643. i. 242.

16. Account of the death of Charles I. 1649, by John Downes. ii. 36.

17. Extracts from the Records of the province of Maine, from 1640 to 1649. i. 101.

18. Gov. Bradford's Descriptive and Historical Account of New England, in verse. iii. 77.

19. Letter from Edward Roberts to Provost Dunster, 1655. iv. 218.

20. Account in verse of the Agency of Hon. John Winthrop, in the court of king Charles II. 1662, when he obtained a charter for Connecticut. iv. 262.

21. Paukatuck river determined to be the boundary between Connecticut and Rhode-Island, 1663. v. 248.

22. Letter from P. Stuyvesant, Gov. of New-Netherland, to the Gov. and Council of Massachusetts, complaining of injuries received from the English colonists, 1663. vi. 209.

23. Letter from his Majesty's Commissioners to Gov. Prince, written at Rhode-Island, in 1664. v. 192.

24. Letter from King Philip to Gov. Prince. ii. 40.

25. Deposition of Hugh Cole, at Plymouth Court, 1670-1, relative to Indian preparations for hostility. vi. 211.

26. Prince and Bosworth's Petition to the Government of Plymouth, relative to the mackerel fishery, 1671. vi. 127.

27. Articles of Agreement between the Court of New-Plymouth and Awasuncks, the squaw sachem of Saconet, 1671. v. 193.

28. Instructions from the church at Natick to William and Anthony, relative to the quarrel between the colony of Plymouth and the Missogkonnoog Indians, 1671. vi. 201.

29. Letter from the squaw sachem Awasuncks to Gov. Prince, 1671. v. 195.

30. Letter from Thomas Mayhew to Gov. Prince respecting the Indians of Martha's Vineyard, 1671. vi. 196.

31. Letter from Gov. Prince to Goodman Cooks, 1671. v. 196.

32. James Walker's Letter to Gov. Prince relative to the sachem Philip, 1671. vi. 197.
33. Engagement of the Dartmouth Indians, 1671. v. 194.
34. Letter from Gov. Prince to the squaw sachem Awasuncks, 1671. v. 197.
35. Letter from the Gov. and Council of Massachusetts to the Governour and Council of New-Plymouth, soliciting aid for the College at Cambridge, 1672. vi. 95.
36. Act of the Assembly of Rhode-Island in favour of Humphrey Ather-ton and his associates, 1672. v. 250.
37. Curious Paper concerning the in-habitants of Massachusetts, 1673. iv. 216.
38. Letter from the Gov. and Coun-cil of Massachusetts to the Gov. and Council of New-Plymouth, relative to the acts of the Dutch in Long-Island sound, 1674. vi. 87.
39. Answer of sachem Philip to the Plymouth Governour's Letter. vi. 94.
40. Letter from John Easton to Gov. Winslow, in the name of Nin-egrett, sachem of the Nyanticks, 1675. vi. 86.
41. Letter from John Freeman to Gov. Winslow, 1675. vi. 91.
42. Letter from Nathaniel Thomas, on the expedition against Philip, to Gov. Winslow, 1675. v. 86.
43. James Cudworth's Letter to Gov. Winslow, from the garrison on Mount-Hope neck, 1675. vi. 84.
44. Account of the surprise and de-feat of a body of Indians near Wren-tham. x. 138.
45. Letter from Edward Palmer to Gov. Winslow, general of the United Colonies, 1675-6. vi. 89.
46. Information of James Quana-paug, sent out as a spy to make discov-ery of the enemy, 1675-6. vi. 205.
47. Letter from Gov. Leverett to Gov. Winslow, respecting the destruc-tion of Capt. Pierce's company by the Indians, 1676. vi. 89.
48. Return of loss in Scituate in Philip's war, 1676. vi. 92.
49. Charles the Second's Letter to the Gov. and magistrates of Rhode-Island, 1679. v. 221.
50. Address of the Gov. and Gen-eral Assembly of Rhode-Island to Charles II. 1679. v. 223.
51. Letter of the Commissioners of the United Colonies of New Eng-land respecting Mount Hope, 1679. v. 226.
52. Edward Randolph's Letter to Gov. Winslow, relative to his proceed-ings at Piscataqua, 1679-80. vi. 92.
53. Answers of the General Court of Connecticut to certain Queries of the Lords of the Committee of the Col-onies, 1680. iv. 220.
54. Account of the right, which certain persons named have to the Nar-raganset country, 1680. v. 229.
55. Charles the Second's Commis-sion to Edward Cranfield and others, to exaraine into the claims and titles to the Narraganset country, 1683. v. 232.
56. Summons of the King's Com-missioners to all persons claiming rights in the Narraganset country, to appear, 1683. v. 233.
57. Report to the King of the Com-missioners, appointed to examine into the claims to the Narraganset country, 1683. v. 235.
58. James the Second's commission, constituting a President and Council for Massachusetts-bay, Narraganset coun-try, &c. 1685. v. 244.
59. Order of the President and Council respecting the records of the Narraganset country, 1686. v. 246.
60. Proceedings of a Court held by his Majesty's Commissioners and Jus-tices, in the Narraganset country, 1686. v. 246.
61. Account of the Settlements and Governments in and about the lands of the Narraganset-bay, from 1634 to 1689. v. 216.
62. Extract from Cotton Mather's Memoirs of Remarkables in the Life of his father, containing Conversations between Increase Mather, when Mas-sachusetts agent, and King William, 1691. ix. 245.
63. List of the Governours of Ply-mouth from 1620 to 1692. iii. 194.
64. A full and candid account of the delusion called Witchcraft, which pre-vailed in New-England; and of the judicial trials and executions at Salem for that pretended crime, in 1692. v. 61.
65. Grand Jury's bill against Mary Osgood for Witchcraft, 1692. vii. 241.
66. Account of the present state and government of Virginia, 1697. v. 124.
67. Schooners invented at Cape Anne, 1714. ix. 234.
68. Letter from Cotton Mather, giving a character of the inhabitants of New England, and of their Gov. Col. Shute, 1718. i. 105.
69. Letter from Gov. Shute to Rallé, the Jesuit, 1718-19. v. 112.
70. Several Reasons proving that inoculating or transplanting the Small



Pox is a lawful practice, and that it has been blessed by God for the saving of many a life, 1721. ix. 275.

71. Account of the hearing before the Lords of the Privy Council, on the complaint of Gov. Shute against the House of Representatives of the province of Massachusetts-bay, 1724. ii. 32.

72. Memoirs of the troubles of the New English colonies from the Indians and French, 1726 and 1727. vi. 108.

73. The importance of Cape-Breton to the British nation, represented in the proposals of Judge Auchmuty to the ministry, 1744. v. 202.

74. Journal of the Treaty held with the Six Nations by the Commissioners of Maryland and other provinces, at Lancaster in Pennsylvania, June, 1744. vii. 171.

75. Letters relating to the expedition against Cape Breton, 1745. i. 5.

76. Letter to the Earl of Sandwich upon the expedition to Louisbourg, 1745. i. 108.

77. Letter from Paul Mascarenc, relative to transactions in Nova-Scotia, from 1710 to 1745. vi. 120.

78. Memorial of William Bollan, agent for Massachusetts, relative to French encroachments, 1748. vi. 130.

79. Letter from William Clarke of Boston to an American gentleman, then in London, 1748. iv. 76.

80. Gov. Shirley's Letter respecting Fort Dummer, 1748. iii. 106.

81. Letter from Agent Bollan, stating the difficulties attending his solicitation for a reimbursement of the expense of the expedition to Cape-Breton, 1752. i. 53.

82. Letters from Col. Joseph Dwight and Col. Oliver Partridge to Gov. Shirley, proposing to build forts in the country of the Six Nations, 1754. v. 119.

83. Summons of the French commander to the English commander, at the mouth of the river Monongahela, 1754. vi. 141.

84. Speech of the Half King to the Governours of Virginia and Pennsylvania, 1754. vi. 143.

85. Major Washington's Letter to Gov. Hamilton, relative to the success of the French, 1754. vi. 139.

86. Gov. Hamilton's Letter to Gov. Shirley, relative to George Washington, 1754. vi. 138.

87. Letter from William Clarke of Boston to Dr. Franklin, 1754. iv. 74.

88. Plan of a proposed union of the several colonies of Massachusetts-bay, New-Hampshire, Connecticut, Rhode-Island, New-York, and New-Jersey, recommended by commissioners met

in congress, June 14th, 1754. vii. 203.

89. Report of a committee, chosen by the general assembly of Connecticut, respecting the foregoing plan of union, 1754. vii. 207.

90. The Reasons considered and offered by the general assembly of Connecticut, concerning the foregoing plan of union, 1754. vii. 210.

91. Letter from William Clarke of Boston to Dr. Franklin, respecting the plan of union, 1755. iv. 85.

92. Letter from William Bollan, agent for Massachusetts, respecting an intention of governing the colonies like Ireland, 1755. vi. 129.

93. Number of British subjects in the several colonies of North-America, 1755. vii. 220.

94. Letter to William Bollan, agent for Massachusetts-bay, relative to the failure of the Crown-point expedition, and the reimbursement from Great-Britain, 1756. vi. 40.

95. Instructions from the General Court of Massachusetts to William Bollan, their agent, 1756. vi. 97.

96. Review of the military operations in North-America, from 1753 to 1756. vii. 67.

97. Letter from Gen. John Winslow, relative to his conduct, and that of the troops under his command, on the Ticonderoga expedition, 1756. vi. 34.

98. Agent Bollan's Memorandum of divers particulars, showing the exhausted state of Massachusetts province, and the necessity of a considerable parliamentary grant, 1759. vi. 47.

99. Letter from William Bollan, agent for Massachusetts-bay, to the Speaker of the house of assembly, 1759. vi. 41.

100. Petition of the Earl of Stirling, &c. praying to be put in possession of lands, called the county of Canada, granted, in 1635, to William, Earl of Stirling, 1760. vi. 186.

101. Calculation of the state of the Cod and Whale fisheries, belonging to Massachusetts in 1763. viii. 202.

102. Letter from Jasper Mauduit to the Speaker of the house of representatives of Massachusetts, relative to a reimbursement from Parliament of the expense of supporting the French neutrals from Nova-Scotia, 1763. vi. 189.

103. Letter from Jasper Mauduit, relative to the duty on foreign molasses, 1763. vi. 193.

104. Comptroller Weare's Letter, containing observations on the British colonies in America. i. 66.

105. Letter from Jasper Mauduit, relative to the duty on foreign molasses, the keeping up of ten thousand troops in America, &c. 1764. vi. 194.

106. Account of a Conference between Mr. Grenville and the several colony agents, in the year 1764, previous to passing the Stamp Act. ix. 268.

107. Two Letters from Dr. Franklin to the Speaker of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, respecting the petition of the province, and the proceedings of Parliament against it, 1774. iii. 109.

108. Answers of the Gov. and company of Connecticut to queries relative to the present state of the colony, 1774. vii. 231.

109. Extracts from a letter written by a London merchant to his friend in Virginia, 1775. ix. 230.

110. Amount of the whole of warlike stores in Massachusetts, April 14th, 1776. i. 232.

111. Events at the beginning of the revolutionary war, contained in a letter from Paul Revere, 1775. v. 106.

112. Account of the Examination of Dr. Benjamin Church before the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, 1775. i. 84.

113. A true account of Gen. Montgomery's Burial, 1776. i. 111.

114. Original Orders of Gen. Burgoyne to Col. Baum; with a brief description of the battle of Bennington, 1777. ii. 25.

115. Account of the burning of Fairfield, 1779. iii. 103.

116. Letter from Gov. Trumbull, containing a history of the American War to Oct. 1779. vi. 154.

117. Journal of the Siege of York in Virginia, 1781. ix. 102.

118. Historical Journal of the American War, from 1765 to 1783. ii. 41.

119. Proceedings of two Conventions held at Portland, to consider the expediency of a separate Government in the district of Maine, 1785, 1787. iv. 25.

120. List of the Governours of Massachusetts from 1630 to 1794. iii. 194.

121. Advertisement of an intended History of the colony of Plymouth. By Peres Fobes. 1794. iii. 176.

122. Letter to Dr. Kippis, relative to an error in his life of Capt. Cook, with several testimonies in evidence, 1795. iv. 79, 156.

123. Answer of Dr. Kippis to the above Letter, 1795. v. 5.

124. Answer to Queries respecting the slavery and emancipation of Negroes in Massachusetts, 1795. iv. 191.

125. Letter concerning the Abbé de Mably, 1795. iv. 157.

126. Law Cases in Massachusetts. 1795-1797. v. 45.

127. Law Case in the Circuit Court of the United States, Morse against Reid, 1798. v. 123.

128. Apology for Coinage in Massachusetts under the first charter, written 1799. vii. 228.

129. Narrative of the Newspapers published in New-England, from 1704 to 1799. v. 208. vi. 64.

130. Letter on the propriety and expediency of an appropriate national name, designating the citizens of the United States, 1799. vi. 149.

131. List of the Presidents and Governours of Rhode-Island, from 1647 to 1800. vi. 144.

### III. PAPERS IN ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

132. Ecclesiastical History of Massachusetts, from the beginning of the colony of Plymouth to 1659. vii. 262. ix. 1. x. 1.

133. Petitions, &c. from members of the Church of England in Boston, respecting Bishops, 1713. vii. 215.

134. Letters from Granville Sharp, on the subject of American Bishops, 1785. iii. 162.

### IV. BIOGRAPHICAL AND CHARACTERISTICAL PAPERS, IN CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER.

135. Memoir of Stephen Parmenius of Buda, 1583. ix. 49.

136. Biographical Sketch of Thomas Hooker, first minister of Cambridge, 1647. vii. 38.

137. Biographical Sketch of Thomas Shepard, minister of Cambridge, 1649. vii. 42.

138. Biography of John Cotton, minister of Boston, 1652. ix. 41.

139. Biographical Notice of James Noyes, first minister of Newbury, 1656. vii. 242.

140. Letter from Leonard Hoar to Josiah Flint, respecting a course of studies, 1661. vi. 100.

141. Biographical Sketch of Samuel Stone, minister of Cambridge, 1663. vii. 41.

142. Biographical Sketch of Jonathan Mitchel, minister of Cambridge, 1668. vii. 47.

143. Biographical Sketch of Samuel Mather of Dublin, 1671. x. 27.

144. Life of President Chaunoy, 1672. x. 171.

145. James Cudworth's Letter to Gov. Winlow, declining his appointment to a military command, 1674. vi. 80.
146. Biographical Sketch of Urian Oakes, minister of Cambridge, 1681. vii. 51.
147. Memoirs of Roger Williams, 1682. x. 16.
148. Letter from Roger Williams to Major Mason. i. 275.
149. Letter from Gov. Prince to Roger Williams. vi. 203.
150. Remarks on the Character of Roger Williams, as given in Bentley's History of Salem. vii. (3.)
151. Remarks upon Remarks, vindicating the character of Roger Williams. viii. 1.
152. Biographical Sketch of Benjamin Woodbridge, first graduate of Harvard College, 1684. x. 32.
153. Account of Daniel Gookin, author of the Historical Collections of the Indians in New England, 1687. i. 228.
154. Letter to Gov. Prince from Daniel Gookin, vindicating his character. vi. 198.
155. Gov. Prince's Answer to Daniel Gookin's Letter. vi. 200.
156. Letter from Nathaniel Tracy, respecting the posterity of Daniel Gookin. ii. 25.
157. Anecdote of Capt. Benjamin Church. i. 104.
158. Historical Account of John Eliot, first minister of Roxbury, 1690. viii. 5.
159. Anecdote of John Eliot, of Roxbury. x. 186.
160. Biographical Sketch of Nathaniel Gookin, minister of Cambridge, 1692. vii. 54.
161. Memoirs of William Hubbard, minister of Ipswich, 1704. x. 32.
162. Grant made to William Hubbard for writing his history. x. 187.
163. Letters of Reproof from Increase and Cotton Mather to Gov. Dudley, with Gov. Dudley's Answer, 1708. iii. 126.
164. Extract from Cotton Mather's private diary, relating to Gov. Dudley. iii. 137.
165. Letter from Jeremiah Dummer to Mr. Flint, 1711. vi. 78.
166. Letter from Jeremiah Dummer to Dr. Colman, 1714. v. 197.
167. Letter from Jeremiah Dummer to Mr. Flint, 1716. vi. 78.
168. Biographical Sketch of William Brattle, minister of Cambridge, 1717. vii. 56.
169. Letter from Daniel Neal, the historian, to Dr. Colman, 1718. v. 199.
170. Extract of a letter from Dr. Watts, concerning Neal's History of New-England, 1720. v. 200.
171. Letter from Henry Newman to Henry Flynt, 1723. vi. 118.
172. Of William Whittingham, founder of the first Congregational church at Geneva, and his descendants to 1729. v. 206.
173. Anecdote of Samuel Cane, a justice of the peace. i. 104.
174. Anecdote of Samuel Moody, minister of York, 1745. i. 49.
175. Letters from Dr. Chauncy to Gen. Pepperell, 1745. i. 49.
176. Letter from Henry Flynt to Gen. Pepperell, 1746. i. 51.
177. Memoirs of Capt. Edward Tyng, 1756. x. 180.
178. Dr. Stiles's Letter to John Barnard, minister of Marblehead, and Barnard's Sketch of eminent ministers in New-England, 1767. x. 166.
179. Chauncy's Sketch of eminent men in New-England, 1768. x. 154.
180. John Adams author of the Essay on Feudal and Canon Law, 1768. x. 187.
181. Biographical Sketch of Nathaniel Appleton, minister of Cambridge, 1794. vii. 59.
182. Biographical Sketch of Timothy Hilliard, minister of Cambridge, 1790. vii. 63.
183. Genealogical Sketch of the family of Leonard to 1793. iii. 173.
184. Sketch of the Life and Character of John Clarke, minister in Boston, 1798. vi. (3.)
185. Sketch of the Life and Character of Jeremy Belknap, the historian, 1798. vi. (10.)
186. Biographical Notices of Marston Watson, 1800. viii. 80.
187. Sketch of the Life and Character of Thomas Brattle, 1801. viii. 82.
188. Historical Sketch of the Life and Character of Col. Ephraim Williams, who died in 1755, and of Williams College to 1802. viii. 47.
189. Character of George Richards Minot, 1802. viii. 86.
190. Notice of Ezekiel Price, 1802. viii. 86.
191. Memoirs of Dr. Peter Thacher, 1802. viii. 277.
192. Memoir of Ebenezer Grant Marsh, 1803. ix. 108.
193. Biographical Memoir of William Fiak, 1803. ix. 206.
194. Memoir of Andrew Eliot, minister of Fairfield, 1805. x. 188.
195. Memoir of Thomas Pemberton, 1807. x. 190.

196. Memoirs of William Tyng, 1807. x. 183.

V. PAPERS WHICH RELATE TO THE INDIANS, FROM NORTH TO SOUTH.

BRITISH PROVINCES.

197. Specimen of the Mountaineer, or Sheshatapooshshoish, of the Skoffie, and of the Micmac Languages, 1797. vi. 16.

198. Account of the Indians in Acadie, 1760. x. 115.

MAINE.

199. Number of Indians from Massachusetts to Canso, 1690 and 1726. ix. 234.

200. Number of the Eastern Indians, 1710. x. 114.

201. History of the Penobscott Indians, to 1804. ix. 207.

202. Specimen of the Norridgewog Language. x. 137.

MASSACHUSETTS.

203. Gookin's Historical Collections of the Indians of New-England; containing an account of their several nations, numbers, customs, religion, and government, before the English planted there; also an account of the present state and numbers of the Praying Indians, to 1674. i. 141.

204. Letter from John Eliot to Major Atherton, relative to the Punkipog Indians, 1657. ii. 9.

205. Dedications to Eliot's Indian Bible, 1663. vii. 222.

206. Eliot's Account of Indian Churches in New-England, 1673. x. 124.

207. Letters from John Eliot to Robert Boyle, relative to the Indians, from 1670 to 1688. iii. 177.

208. Rawson and Danforth's Account of the Indian Plantations and Churches in Massachusetts, 1698. x. 129.

209. Died at Natick, John Thomas, an Indian, aged 110 years, 1727. v. 206.

210. Number of the Natick Indians, 1749. x. 134.

211. Historical and Characteristick traits of the American Indians in general, and those of Natick in particular, 1797. v. 32.

212. Account of an ordination at Marshpee, 1729. v. 206.

213. Number of the Marshpee Indians, 1762. x. 113.

214. Number of the Monamoyick Indians, 1762. x. 114.

215. Number of the Potanumaquut Indians, 1762. x. 112.

216. Indian names of places in Truro. i. 257.

217. Letter relating to the Indians in the county of Barnstable and its vicinity, 1792. i. 230.

218. Fabulous traditions and customs of the Indians of Martha's Vineyard. i. 139.

219. Inscription copied from a grave stone at Gay Head, 1787. i. 140.

220. Letter from Jonathan Edwards, relating to the Indian School at Stockbridge, 1751. x. 142.

221. Number of the Indians in New-England, 1792. i. 195. 201. 205. 207. 209.

RHODE-ISLAND.

222. Roger Williams's Key into the Language of the Indians of New-England; containing a vocabulary of the language, framed chiefly after the Narraganset dialect, observations on the manners, customs, religion, and government of the Indians, and on the natural history of the country, 1643. iii. 203. v. 80.

223. Account of the Saconet Indians. x. 114.

224. Number of Indians in Rhode-Island, 1774. x. 119.

225. Number of King Ninegret's tribe, 1761. x. 104.

CONNECTICUT.

226. Inquiry into the right of the aboriginal natives to the lands in America, 1724. iv. 159.

227. Memoir of the Pequots, 1755. x. 101.

228. Additional Memoir of the Pequots, 1762. x. 102.

229. Number of the Moheagan Indians, 1803. ix. 75.

230. Memoir of the Moheagans, and of Uncas, their ancient sachem. ix. 77.

231. Number of the Nyhantic tribe of Indians, 1761. x. 103.

232. Account of the Indians on Connecticut river, 1761. x. 104.

233. Account of the Indians, in and about Stratford, 1761. x. 111.

234. Number of the Indians in Connecticut, 1774. x. 117.

NEW-YORK.

235. Extract from an Indian History, relative to the Muhheakunnuk Indians. ix. 99.

236. Letter from Gideon Hawley, containing an account of his services among the Indians of Massachusetts and New-York, a narrative of his journey to Onohoghwege in the year 1753, and the number of Marshpee Indians in 1794. iv. 50.

237. Answer to Queries respecting the Oneida, Stockbridge, and Brothertown Indians, 1795. iv. 67.

238. Report of a Committee of the Board of Correspondents of the Scots Society for propagating christian knowledge, who visited the Oneida and Mohekunuh Indians in 1796. v. 12.

239. Letter from Gov. Jay, relative to the Indians in the state of New-York, 1799. vi. 148.

240. Specimen of the Mohawk Language. x. 137.

241. Account of the Montauk Indians, on Long-Island, 1761. x. 105.

MIDDLE AND SOUTHERN STATES.

242. List of the different nations of Indians, that met Sir William Johnson at Niagara, July, 1764. x. 121.

243. Estimate of the number of Delaware and other Indians, 1794. x. 123.

244. Observations and Conjectures on the Antiquities of America, by Jacob Bailey, 1795. iv. 100.

245. Remarks on Mr. Bailey's Observations, by John T. Kirkland, 1795. iv. 105.

246. Estimate of the Indian nations, employed by the British in the revolutionary war. x. 123.

247. Dr. Ramsay's Observations on the Indians in the southern parts of the United States, 1795. iv. 99.

248. Gen. Lincoln's Remarks on Dr. Ramsay's Observations, 1795. v. 6.

249. Account of the Cherokees, Catawbaw, Cheraws, Creeks, Choctaws, and Chickasaws, 1768. x. 119.

VI. PAPERS IN GEOGRAPHY, TOPOGRAPHY, AND LOCAL HISTORY, FROM NORTH TO SOUTH.

EASTERN SIDE OF AMERICA.

BRITISH PROVINCES.

250. Account of the Coast of Labrador, 1761. i. 233.

251. Account of the whole Trade and Shipping of Newfoundland for the year 1799. vii. 219.

252. State of the province of Quebec, as to its constitution, number of inhabitants, laws, commerce, &c. 1787. vi. 48.

253. Governours of Canada under France, from 1725 to 1759. vi. 53.

254. Governours of Canada under Great-Britain, from 1759 to 1786. vi. 54.

255. Amount of British property in Canada in 1787. vi. 55.

256. Exports and Imports of the province of Quebec in 1786. vi. 56.

257. Comparative View of the Imports to, and Exports from, Canada, in four years, beginning 1783. vi. 60.

258. Number of Inhabitants, Houses, &c. in the province of Quebec, 1784. vi. 63.

259. Account of Halifax and Nova-Scotia, 1760. x. 79.

260. Description of Nova-Scotia, New-Brunswick, and Cape Breton, 1793. iii. 94.

261. New Road from Halifax to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, 1792. iii. 101.

262. Governours of Nova-Scotia, from 1720 to 1792. iii. 101.

MAINE.

263. Gen. Lincoln's Observations on the climate, soil, and value of the eastern counties of the district of Maine, 1789. iv. 142.

264. Gen. Lincoln's Letter on the religious state of the eastern counties of the district of Maine, 1790. iv. 153.

265. Description of Machias. iii. 144.

266. Description of Thomaston. iv. 20.

267. Description of Wiscasset and the river Sheepscoot. vii. 163.

268. Description of Topsham. iii. 141.

269. Description of Georgetown. i. 251.

270. Description of the Plantations near Sebago pond. iii. 239.

271. Description and History of Waterford. ix. 137.

272. Description of Wells. iii. 138.

273. Description of York. iii. 6.

274. Description of Agamenticus mountain. iii. 11.

NEW-HAMPSHIRE.

275. Description and Historical Account of the Isles of Shoals. vii. 242.

276. Account of the several Religious Societies in Portsmouth, and of the ministers of each, to 1805. x. 37.

277. Bill of mortality for Portsmouth, 1801, 1802, 1803. ix. 236.  
278. Description of Exeter. iv. 87.

## MASSACHUSETTS.

279. Higgeson's Description of New-England, 1629. i. 117.  
280. Graves's Letter concerning New-England, 1629. i. 124.  
281. Description and History of Salem. vi. 212.  
282. Account of the first Century Lecture held at Salem, 1729. iv. 219.  
283. Topographical and Historical Account of Marblehead. viii. 54.  
284. General Description of the County of Middlesex. i. 107.  
285. Description and History of Cambridge. vii. 1.  
286. Description and History of Newton. v. 253.  
287. Description of Concord. i. 237.  
288. Account of Stow, 1767. x. 83.  
289. Memoir of Sudbury, 1767. x. 86.  
290. Description of Marlborough. iv. 46.  
291. Note on Marlborough, 1767. x. 89.  
292. Memoir of Marlborough Association, 1762. x. 89.  
293. Description of Hopkinton. iv. 15.  
294. Description of Holliston. iii. 18.  
295. Topographical and Historical Description of Boston. iii. 241. iv. 211.  
296. Samuel Mather's Account of the Settlement of Boston, 1630. (Incomplete.) i. 256.  
297. Account of the great Fire in Boston, 1711. v. 52.  
298. Account of the Small-Pox in Boston, 1721 and 1752. v. 207.  
299. Account of Burials and Baptisms in Boston from 1701 to 1775. iv. 213, 298.  
300. Letter concerning Fire-Engines, Fires, and Buildings in Boston. iv. 188.  
301. Chronological and Topographical Account of Dorchester. ix. 147.  
302. Letter from Noah Clap, containing events in Dorchester, from 1630 to 1774. i. 98.  
303. Epitaphs in Dorchester from 1669 to 1701. ii. 9.  
304. Bill of Mortality for Dorchester, from 1749 to 1792. i. 116.
305. Account of Harvard, 1767. x. 88.  
306. Account of Westborough, 1767. x. 84.  
307. Note on Southborough, 1767. x. 82.  
308. Description of Worcester. i. 112.  
309. Historical Account of the Settlement of Brookfield. i. 257.  
310. Description of Brookfield. i. 271.  
311. Account of Northfield. ii. 30.  
312. Description of Brimfield. ix. 127.
- OLD COLONY OF PLYMOUTH.
313. Morell's Poem on New-England, 1623. i. 125.  
314. Description of Duxborough. ii. 3.  
315. Account of the Church in Plymouth, from 1620 to 1760. iv. 107.  
316. Description of Middleborough. iii. 1.  
317. History of the Churches in Middleborough. iii. 148.  
318. Bills of Mortality for Middleborough from 1779 to 1806. viii. 79. ix. 235. x. 188.  
319. Description of Raynham. iii. 166.  
320. Description of New-Bedford. iv. 232.  
321. Description of the Eastern Coast of the County of Barnstable, from Cape Cod to Cape Malebarre. viii. 110.  
322. Description of Provincetown. viii. 196.  
323. Description of Truro. iii. 195.  
324. Description of Wellfleet. iii. 117.  
325. Account of the Creeks and Islands in Wellfleet, and Observations on the importance of Cape Cod Harbour. iv. 41.  
326. Note on Wellfleet. viii. 196.  
327. Description and History of Eastham. viii. 154.  
328. Description of Orleans. viii. 186.  
329. Description of Chatham. viii. 142.  
330. Description of Brewster. x. 72.  
331. Note on Harwich. viii. 141.  
332. Description of Dennis. viii. 129.  
333. Memorabilia of Yarmouth. v. 54.  
334. Description of Barnstable. iii. 12.  
335. Note on the South parts of Yarmouth and Barnstable. viii. 141.  
336. Description of Sandwich. viii. 119.

337. Biographical and Topographical Anecdotes respecting Sandwich and Marshpee. iii. 188.

338. Note on Falmouth. viii. 127.

ISLAND OF MASSACHUSETTS.

339. Description of Nantucket. iii. 153.

340. Account of the Settlement of Nantucket by the English. iii. 155.

341. Bill of Mortality for Nantucket. iii. 160.

342. Progress of the Whale Fishery at Nantucket, from 1690 to 1786. iii. 161.

RHODE-ISLAND.

343. Notes on Compton. ix. 199.

344. Memoir of Block-Island. x. 111.

CONNECTICUT.

345. History of Windsor. v. 166.

346. Bill of mortality for Hartford, with Remarks geographical and historical, by Noah Webster. iii. 4.

347. Mellen's Remarks on Webster's Calculations on lives, contained in the preceding paper. iii. 92.

348. Webster's Reply to Mellen's Remarks. iii. 94.

349. History of Guilford. iv. 182. x. 90.

NEW-YORK.

350. Description of Catskill. ix. 111.

351. Description of Newtown. ix. 120.

352. Letter from a Gentleman upon his return from Niagara. i. 284.

PENNSYLVANIA.

353. Extract from a Journal of a Gentleman belonging to the army under the command of Gen. St. Clair. iii. 21.

MARYLAND.

354. List of the several publick Offices, ecclesiastical Preferments, and other places of profit in Maryland. vii. 202.

VIRGINIA.

355. Description of the County of Prince George. iii. 85.

SOUTH-AMERICA.

356. Remarks made during a residence at Stabroek, Rio Demerary. vi. 1.

357. Description of Surinam. i. 61.

WESTERN SIDE OF AMERICA.

358. Extracts from a Journal kept on board ship *Atahualpa*, bound on a voyage from Boston to the N. W. Coast and Sandwich Islands. ix. 242.

359. Account of the Discovery of a group of Islands in the North Pacifick Ocean, by James Magee. iv. 261. 298.

360. Account of the Discovery of seven Islands in the South Pacifick Ocean, by Joseph Ingraham. ii. 20.

361. Discovery and Description of the Islands called the Marquesas, in the South Pacifick Ocean. With a farther Account of the seven adjacent Islands, discovered first by Joseph Ingraham, and since by Josiah Roberts. iv. 238.

362. Observations on the Islands of Juan Fernandez, Massafuero, and St. Ambrose, in the South Pacifick Ocean, and the Coast of Chili in South America. iv. 247.

VII. PAPERS IN NATURAL HISTORY, &c.

363. Prince's Account of the Aurora-Borealis, when first seen in England, 1716. ii. 14.

364. Account of the first appearance of the Aurora-Borealis in New-England, 1719. ii. 17.

365. Letter on the Dark Day, May 19th, 1780. i. 95.

366. Letter from John Winthrop relating to remarkable Storms of Snow, 1717. ii. 12.

367. Letter from Cotton Mather, describing an uncommon Storm, 1724. ii. 11.

368. Account of the severe Drought in 1749. vii. 239.

369. Account of an uncommon Frost, May 17th, 1794. iv. 44.

370. Account of the Earthquake at Port-Royal in Jamaica, 1692. iv. 223.

371. Account of some effects of the Earthquake in Massachusetts, 1755. iv. 231.

372. Account of Earthquakes in New-Hampshire, 1800—1802. ix. 232.

373. Observations upon the natural productions of Iron Ores, with a Description of Smelting Furnaces, and an Account of the Iron Manufacture in the county of Plymouth. ix. 253.

374. Letter on the Discovery of Iron Ore in Assowamset pond. iii. 175.

375. Method of collecting Mineral and Fossil substances. iv. 14.

376. Method of preserving Corals and other Marine productions, iv. 13.

377. Method of collecting and preserving Vegetables. iv. 12.  
 378. Method of taking impressions of Vegetable leaves by means of smoke. iv. 13.

379. Directions for preserving Animals. iv. 8.  
 380. Description of the Atherine. iii. 102.  
 381. Natural History of the Slug-Worm. v. 280.

A CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF THE MOST REMARKBLE  
 EVENTS RECORDED IN THE TEN VOLUMES.

*Note. The year begins in January.*

1497. North-America discovered. ix. 54.  
 1554. Sir Hugh Willoughby, attempting a N. W. passage, perishes with all his crew. ix. 54.  
 1571. Sir Anthony Jenkinson makes his last voyage to Russia. ix. 54.  
 1576. Sir Martin Frobisher makes a voyage to the North for the discovery of a N. W. passage; a 2d in 1577; and a 3d in 1578. ix. 54.  
 1578. Sir Francis Drake discovers New-Albion. i. 144. ix. 54.  
 1578. Sir Humphrey Gilbert having obtained a patent of Queen Elizabeth, sails to Newfoundland. ix. 51.  
 1580. The Brownists begin. ix. 11.  
 1583. Sir Humphrey Gilbert sails to Newfoundland; returning to England, he is lost in a storm. ix. 50.  
 1595. The Marquesas, in the South Pacifick Ocean, discovered. iv. 238.  
 1602. Gosnold discovers Cape-Cod, the Elizabeth-Islands, and the coast opposite to them. iv. 234. viii. 160.  
 1604. De Monts, in the service of France, lands at Passamaquoddy. ix. 217, 232.  
 1605. Nov. 5. Gun-powder plot. x. 171.  
 1607. George Popham and others attempt to settle a colony on Parker's Island, at the mouth of Kennebeck river. i. 251.  
 1607, and 1608. Robinson's church, the founders of Plymouth colony, fly from England to Holland. iv. 135. vi. 155. vii. 266.  
 1612, and 1613. Pestilence among the Indians of New-England. i. 148. This seems to be the same event which is recorded in the year 1617, which is probably the correct date.  
 1614. Capt. John Smith discovers the Isles of Shoals, named by him Smith's Isles, vii. 243. Touches at several places on the coast of New-England, embarks for London, and leaves his ship under the command

of Thomas Hunt, who after his departure entices 27 Indians into the ship, carries them to Malaga, and sells a number of them for slaves, which greatly exasperates the savages. viii. 160. 227. 238.  
 1617. Pestilence among the Indians of New-England. iv. 108. viii. 160. 226. 234.  
 1620. Sep. 6. First planters of Plymouth Colony embark from Plymouth in England. viii. 203.  
 Nov. 3. James I. constitutes the Council of Plymouth for the planting and governing of New-England. vi. 186.  
 Nov. 11. Planters of Plymouth Colony arrive in Cape-Cod harbour. iv. 108. vii. 268. viii. 161. 204.  
 Before they land, they combine into a body politick by a solemn contract. viii. 205.  
 Nov. 11. Sixteen men under Capt. Standish travel from Cape-Cod harbour, round East-harbour creek, to the mouth of Pamet river. viii. 207.  
 Nov. 27. Four and thirty men sail in a shallop to the mouth of Pamet river, which is named Cold harbour. viii. 213.  
 Nov. Peregrine White, the first child born in N. England. viii. 217.  
 Dec. 6. The shallop is sent out a second time, to discover a place for settlement, with ten of the principal men, and eight or ten seamen: they pass by Billingsgate point, and land near Great-Pond in Nauset. viii. 161. 217.  
 Dec. 8. They are attacked by a party of Nauset Indians, whom they repulse: they quit the coast, and the same night reach the harbour of Patuxet. viii. 161. 219.  
 Dec. 11. The planters land at Patuxet, and soon after begin the town of Plymouth. iv. 108. vi. 155. viii. 37. 220—222.



1621. Jan. 14. The rendezvous house at Plymouth is burnt. viii. 224.

Feb. 17. A meeting is first called for establishing military orders, and Miles Standish is chosen Captain. viii. 225.

March 16. Samoset is the first Indian who visits the town of Plymouth. viii. 161. 225.

March 18. Samoset returns to Plymouth, with five other Indians. viii. 227.

March 22. Massasoit, Sagamore of the Wamponoags, comes to Plymouth: a treaty is made with him, which is kept with fidelity till 1675. viii. 229.

July 3. Edward Winslow and Stephen Hopkins are sent to Pokanoket to visit Massasoit: they begin their journey this day, and lodge at Namsasket. iii. 148. viii. 232.

July 4. They proceed to Pokanoket. viii. 235.

July 6. They take leave of Massasoit, and the next night arrive at Plymouth. viii. 236.

July end, and Aug. beg. A boy having lost himself in the woods, ten men are sent to seek him: they proceed to Cummaquid, and thence to Nauset, where they recover the boy, and conclude a peace with Aspinet, the sachem. viii. 161. 237.

Aug. Intelligence is brought, that the Narragansets are committing hostilities on the subjects of Massasoit. viii. 238.

Aug. Combatant, a petty sachem under Massasoit, is at first unfriendly to the English, but is afterwards reconciled. viii. 258.

Aug. Canonicus, chief sachem of the Narragansets, sends a messenger to Plymouth to treat of peace. viii. 239.

Sep. 13. Massasoit and several other sachems subscribe instruments of submission to King James. viii. 161. 253.

Nov. The ship Fortune arrives at Plymouth with thirty-five passengers. viii. 166. 239.

1622. Jan. Canonicus, chief sachem of the Narragansets, sends a defiance to Plymouth: the Gov. returns the defiance. viii. 240.

Feb. Plymouth is fortified, and the inhabitants divided into four squadrons. viii. 240. 241.

Ap. A shallop is sent from Plymouth to Massachusetts-bay on a trading voyage. viii. 241.

Ap. Massasoit is accused of hostile designs against the Plantation.

viii. 242. He comes to Plymouth to vindicate himself. viii. 244.

May. Massasoit sends to Plymouth, to demand the death of Tisquantum, his accuser. viii. 244.

May, end. The provision at Plymouth being spent, a famine begins. viii. 162. 245. 246.

May, end. The ship Sparrow arrives at Plymouth with seven passengers on account of Mr. Weston. viii. 245.

June. Mr. Winslow is sent to Munhiggen to procure provisions: he obtains a small supply. viii. 246.

June. The Indians beginning to insult the inhabitants of Plymouth, a fort is begun to be erected on the hill above the town. viii. 247.

June, end, or July, beg. Two ships arrive at Plymouth with fifty or sixty men, sent by Mr. Weston to begin a plantation at Wessagusset. viii. 37. 247. ix. 5.

Aug. The Indians complain of the planters of Wessagusset for stealing their corn and for other abuses. viii. 248.

Aug. end. Two ships arrive at Plymouth, of one of which the inhabitants obtain goods to trade with the Indians. viii. 248.

Nov. Gov. Bradford goes to Monamoyick in the ship Swan to trade with the Indians. viii. 249.

Dec. From Monamoyick Gov. Bradford sails to the bay of Massachusetts, where the Indians renew their complaints against the planters of Wessagusset: thence he proceeds to Nauset, where he is treated kindly by the Indians. viii. 162. 250.

1623. Jan. Capt. Standish sails in a shallop to Nauset, where a theft is committed on him, which he resenting, the goods are restored. viii. 252.

Jan. Gov. Bradford goes to Namsasket, and afterwards to Manomet, to purchase corn. viii. 252.

Feb. Capt. Standish sails to Mattachiest, to purchase corn; an attempt is made to kill him, but it is timely prevented. viii. 254.

Mar. beg. Capt. Standish goes to Manomet: Wituwamat and another Indian come thither from Massachusetts, to engage Canacum, the sachem, in a conspiracy against the English: an Indian of Pamet undertakes to kill the Capt., but the cold keeping him awake, the design is frustrated. viii. 255.

Mar. News coming to Plymouth

- that Massasoit is dangerously sick, Edward Winslow is sent to visit him. viii. 257.
- He is recovered, and communicates intelligence of a conspiracy among the Indians to extirpate the English. viii. 162. 262. 264.
- Mar. 23. The Governour makes known the conspiracy to the whole company. viii. 265.
- In consequence of which Capt. Standish is dispatched to the bay of Massachusetts with eight men. viii. 266.
- He kills Wituwamat and the principal conspirators. viii. 162. 269.
- Weston's company forsake Wessagusset, and the Plantation is broken up. viii. 271. ix. 5.
- The death of Wituwamat and the others so terrifies the rest of the conspirators, that they conceal themselves in swamps, where they contract diseases, by which many of them perish. viii. 162. 273.
- Ap. David Thomson begins a Plantation at Pascatouauck. viii. 276. x. 38.
- From 3d week in May to middle of July. A severe drought in New-England. viii. 274.
- July end, and Aug. beg. The ships Anne and James arrive at Plymouth with about sixty persons. viii. 168. 276.
- Sep. Robert Gorges comes to New-England with several families, intending to make a settlement at Wessagusset, but it fails. i. 125. ix. 5.
1624. David Thomson takes possession of the island, which bears his name, in Massachusetts-bay. iii. 299.
- A number of persons, in London, withdraw from the company of adventurers to Plymouth. iii. 29.
- A bull and three heifers are brought to Plymouth. iii. 35.
1625. June 28. Gov. and company of Plymouth petition the council of New-England to free them from the company of adventurers. iii. 37.
- The plague in London prevents any attention from being paid to the petition. iii. 38.
- Charles I. begins to prosecute the war against Spain. iii. 50.
1626. Isaac Allerton is sent from Plymouth to England to procure money: he obtains two hundred pounds at 30 per cent. iii. 46.
- Nov. 15. The adventurers to Plymouth in London sell to the planters in Plymouth all their shares in land and merchandize for eighteen hundred pounds. iii. 47. 49.
- Dec. A ship cast away at Monamoyick, the ruins of which were to be seen till 1782. viii. 144.
- Gov. Bradford, going to the assistance of the crew of this ship, is kindly assisted by the Nauset Indians. viii. 162.
1627. Charles I. proclaims war against France. iii. 50.
- Mar. Dutch at New-Netherland enter into a correspondence with the planters at Plymouth. iii. 51.
- Oct. Planters of Plymouth first procure from the Dutch of New-Netherland wampampeak, which is the beginning of a profitable trade with the Indians. iii. 54.
- The fishermen in New-England sell muskets, powder, and shot to the Indians. iii. 57.
- The planting of Massachusetts projected by several persons in Lincolnshire, who communicate their intentions to several persons in London and the west of England. viii. 37.
- Isaac Allerton sent from Plymouth to England, to solicit an enlargement of the patent. iii. 59.
1628. Aug. John Endicott and company arrive at Naumkeak, and begin the town of Salem. iii. 66. vi. 231. viii. 38.
- Sep. 30. The whole trade of Plymouth assigned to William Bradford and associates for six years from this day, in consideration of their paying the debts of the colony. iii. 60.
- Thomas Morton and company in Massachusetts-bay sell guns and ammunition to the Indians. iii. 61.
- He is seized by the government of Plymouth, and sent prisoner to England. iii. 62. 64.
1629. Mar. 4. Charles I. grants a charter to the Massachusetts company. viii. 38.
- May 17. The Isles of Shoals granted by four Indian Sagamores to John Wheelwright and others. vii. 243.
- June 29. Two hundred planters arrive at Salem. i. 123. iii. 67. viii. 38.
- There are now about 300 planters, including those who arrived last year. ix. 2.
- Aug. 6. First ordination of ministers in Massachusetts, held at Salem. iii. 67. iv. 135. 219. vi. 242. ix. 3.
- Opposition, headed by the family

- of Brown, made to the new church in Salem. vi. 242. ix. 3.
- John Massey, the first child born in old Massachusetts: the cradle in which he was nursed is in the Museum of the Historical Society. vi. 237. 282.
- Aug. Thirty-five planters arrive at Plymouth from Leyden. iii. 66. iv. 109. vii. 276.
- Several persons who had been members of Mr. Lothrop's church in England, and others, come to Plymouth. iv. 109. vii. 276.
1630. Jan. 13. A patent granted to the Colony of Plymouth. iii. 70. v. 239.
- Ap. 7. Gov. Winthrop and others of the Massachusetts company, on board the *Arabella*, before they sail for New-England, address their brethren of the Church of England. ix. 10.
- May, end. Another company of planters arrive at Plymouth from Leyden. iii. 69.
- May 30. The ship *Mary* and John arrives at Nantasket with the planters, who first settle Dorchester, and afterwards Windsor. iv. 266. v. 166. ix. 18. 148.
- June 12. Gov. Winthrop and company land at Salem. i. 256. iii. 74. 241. iv. 194. vi. 155. viii. 38.
- Seventeen ships, containing passengers, arrive this year in Massachusetts. viii. 38.
- The planters of Massachusetts, being unable to feed their servants, are compelled to give them their freedom. vi. 236. viii. 39.
- July. Salem not appearing proper for the capital of Massachusetts, Gov. Winthrop and company remove to Charlestown, and thence to Boston. i. 256. iii. 241. viii. 39. ix. 19.
- Watertown, Roxbury, Medford, and Lynn settled. viii. 39. ix. 19.
- Aug. About a hundred persons returned to England from Massachusetts: others went to Pascataqua. viii. 40.
- Aug. 27. John Wilson ordained at Charlestown: this is the first ordination after the charter was removed to Massachusetts. ix. 12.
- July to Dec. Mortality prevails among the planters of Massachusetts. iii. 75. 241. viii. 40.
- Settlement of Agamenticus, or York, begins. iii. 8.
- Surrinam first possessed by the French. i. 65.
1631. Feb. 6. The ship *Lion* arrives in Massachusetts with provisions. viii. 44.
- Newtown, or Cambridge, intended at first for a fortified town and the metropolis of Massachusetts, is begun. vii. 6. viii. 41.
- May 18. An order passed in Massachusetts, that none but members of churches should be admitted freemen. vi. 236. ix. 47.
- The first Congregational Church in Boston gathered. vii. 16.
- Connecticut River discovered. iv. 267.
1632. May 24. A fort on Fort-hill in Boston, begun. iii. 243.
- Governour's Island in Boston harbour granted to Gov. Winthrop. iii. 299.
1633. Isaac Allerton of Plymouth sets up a trading house at Machias, of which he is dispossessed by Gov. La Tour, the same year. iii. 145.
- A mill, the first in Massachusetts, erected on Neponset River. ix. 164.
1634. Archbishop Laud and eleven other great officers of the Court empowered by commission from Charles I. to revoke all the charters and letters patent granted to the colonies: the commission is superseded. iv. 119.
- Market opened in Boston. iii. 254.
- Castle-Island in Boston harbour fortified. iii. 298.
- Indians on Connecticut River murder Captains Stone and Norton. iv. 273.
- For the ecclesiastical history of Plymouth from 1620 to this period, see iv. 107. vii. 262.
- John Endicott cut the cross out of the king's colours as a relic of anti-Christian superstition. vi. 246.
- Roger Williams, propagating opinions which are considered heretical and seditious, is censured by the court of Massachusetts. vi. 246. vii. (1.) viii. 1. ix. 24. x. 17.
- Laws made in Massachusetts against tobacco, immodest fashions, and costly apparel. viii. 35.
1635. The council of Plymouth grants to William Alexander, Earl of Stirling, the country between the rivers St. Croix and Kennebeck. vi. 186.
- Settlement of Connecticut by the English begins. iii. 5. 153. iv. 269. 274. v. 167. vi. 156. ix. 152.
1636. Roger Williams, banished from Massachusetts, leaves the colony. i. 278. vi. 249. ix. 26. x. 18.
- He begins the town of Providence. i. 276. iii. 152. v. 246. vi. 250.

- Hartford is begun by Thomas Hooker and his church. iii. 5. vii. 15.
- Indians murder John Oldham, near Block-Island; this and the murders of Stone and Norton, occasion the Pequot war. iv. 273.
- Capt. Endicott is sent from Massachusetts to Block-Island and Connecticut, to avenge the murders of Stone, Norton, and Oldham: he returns without subduing the enemy. iv. 273. vi. 253.
- The Pequots surprise the garrison of Saybrook. iv. 276.
- A vessel of 120 tons built at Marble-Harbour in Salem. vi. 231.
- The General Court of Massachusetts grants four hundred pounds for the erection of a publick school at Newtown: this lays the foundation of Harvard College. vii. 16.
- Anne Hutchinson commences religious teacher in Massachusetts, and gains many adherents. vi. 252. vii. 16. viii. 6.
1637. A number of the Puritan ministers censure the discipline of the New-England churches. ix. 16.
- Massachusetts concludes a treaty of peace with the Narragansets. x. 18.
- Ap. Wethersfield attacked by the Pequot Indians. iv. 276.
- May 1. Court of Connecticut assembles at Hartford, determines on a war against the Pequots, and votes that 90 men should be raised. iv. 277.
- May 10. The 90 Connecticut troops, under John Mason, and aided by 70 Moheagan Indians, embark from Hartford. iv. 278.
- May 15. The Moheagans land near Saybrook fort, fall in with a party of the Pequots, and defeat them. iv. 278.
- May 19. Mason sails with his troops for Narraganset-bay, and arrives the next day, obtains leave of the Narragansets to march through their country, and is joined by a number of that tribe. iv. 279.
- May 25. Mason and his troops arrive in the neighborhood of the Pequots' fort at Mistick. iv. 280.
- May 26. Mason attacks the Pequots' fort at Mistick. iv. 287. Burns the wigwams in it. iv. 291. And slaughters a great number of Indians. iv. 292. ix. 84.
- May 26. Mason is attacked by 300 Pequots, sent by Sassacus from another fort: they are compelled to retire. iv. 294.
- The Pequots leave their country. x. 100. Sassacus flies to the Mo-hawks, by whom he is put to death. iv. 295.
- Aug. 30. A synod held at Newtown, Massachusetts, occasioned by the Antinomian controversy, introduced by Anne Hutchinson. vi. 252. vii. 16. ix. 14. 23. 32.
- Nov. John Wheelwright banished from Massachusetts for preaching a seditious sermon. ix. 31.
- Nov. Anne Hutchinson tried for heresy and reviling the ministers, and banished from Massachusetts. viii. 7. ix. 30.
- William Coddington purchases of the Narraganset sachems Aquet-neck, Rhode Island. v. 216. ix. 27. x. 20.
1638. The Pequots completely conquered and destroyed. i. 147. 246. 279. iv. 295. ix. 82.
- Rhode-Island planted. iii. 153. v. 216.
- Exeter in New-Hampshire settled by John Wheelwright and others. iv. 87.
- Ap. Artillery company in Boston incorporated. iii. 268.
- June 1. Earthquake in New-England. x. 173.
- John Harvard gives about eight hundred pounds, and the College, which begins this year at Cambridge, receives his name. i. 242. vii. 18.
1639. Jan. 14. The original constitution of Connecticut formed. vi. 156.
- A printing press, the first in New-England, erected at Cambridge: the first thing printed is the freeman's oath; the next, an almanack, made by Capt. Pierce. vi. 232. vii. 19.
1640. March. Form of an oath, appointed to be taken in the province of Maine, to Sir Ferdinando Gorges. i. 101.
- The Governour and Council of Massachusetts decline putting themselves under the protection of Parliament. vi. 155.
- Laws of New-England, collected by John Cotton out of the Scriptures, and recommended to the General Court of Massachusetts. v. 173. 188.
- At this time there are eight towns settled in the colony of Plymouth. viii. 162.
- The New-England version of the Psalms printed at Cambridge. vii. 20.

The first President of Harvard College chosen. i. 243. vii. 27.

1641. Ap. Towns in New-Hampshire put themselves under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. x. 38.

Aug. 3. Hugh Peters, Thomas Welde, and William Hibbins sent agents to England from Massachusetts on the subject of excise and trade. vi. 253. viii. 7. x. 30.

Oct. 13. Nantucket granted to Thomas Mayhew by William, Earl of Stirling. iii. 155.

Richard Smith purchases of the Indians a large tract of land in the Narraganset country. v. 216. 230.

1642. Three ministers of New-England invited to the assembly of divines at Westminster. ix. 39.

Martha's Vineyard first settled by Thomas Mayhew. i. 202.

Exeter in New-Hampshire made a part of Massachusetts government. iv. 87.

Settlement of Warwick, Rhode-Island, begins. v. 217. ix. 35.

Degrees first conferred in British America at Harvard College. i. 245. vi. 240. vii. 20.

New-England at this period contains fifty towns and villages, thirty or forty churches, a college, castle, &c., and a flourishing commerce is commencing. i. 242. 247.

1643. July 1. Assembly of divines opened at Westminster. ix. 45.

Samuel Gorton imprisoned in Massachusetts for heresy: he was afterwards banished. ix. 35.

Three ministers sent from Massachusetts to preach the gospel in Virginia. ix. 46.

The General Court of Massachusetts by act appoint the magistrates of the colony, and the ministers of the six neighbouring towns, Overseers of Harvard College. vii. 21.

Battle between Uncas and Miantonimoh. ix. 77.

Uncas fights with Sequassen. ix. 88.

Uncas puts Miantonimoh to death. ix. 84.

1644. March 14. Roger Williams obtains a charter of incorporation for Providence and Rhode-Island plantations. i. 278. x. 20.

Inhabitants of Massachusetts procure an order from the Earl of Warwick for the government of the Narraganset country: but the same tract is included in the charter granted to Roger Williams. i. 278. v. 217.

Ap. 19. Passicus and Canonicus

subject themselves, their people, and lands, to the government of the King of England. v. 237.

A law made against the Baptists in Massachusetts. vi. 255.

Fort on Castle-Island in Boston harbour rebuilt. iii. 298.

Emigrations from England to New-England cease about this time. vi. 255.

1645. A law passed in Massachusetts, prohibiting the buying and selling of slaves. iv. 195.

Oct. 21. Proceedings of the General Court of the province of Maine. i. 102.

1646. Several non-freemen in Massachusetts petition for civil privileges: the petitioners are treated with severity. ix. 47.

A law passed in Massachusetts against heresy. vi. 255.

A body of laws composed in Massachusetts. ix. 49.

A Synod convened at Cambridge, Massachusetts, for the purpose of composing a platform of church discipline. iv. 135. vii. 25. ix. 49.

Oct. 28. John Eliot, minister of Roxbury, first preaches the gospel to the Indians of New-England. i. 168. v. 256. vii. 23. viii. 12. x. 11.

1647. The French of Canada solicit aid of the government of Massachusetts against the Mohawks. i. 161.

A law passed in Massachusetts against the Jesuits. vi. 257.

May 26. A law passed in Massachusetts for establishing magistrates and courts among the praying Indians. i. 177. viii. 15. x. 13.

1648. The Synod which was convened in 1648, composes and adopts the Cambridge Platform of Church Discipline. iv. 135. vi. 257. vii. 25. ix. 14. 16. 172. x. 3.

1649. July. The inhabitants of Maine combine into a body polittick for the regulation of the province. i. 103.

The gospel first preached to the Indians of Martha's Vineyard. i. 202.

July 27. The Society for Propagating the Gospel in New-England constituted by act of parliament. i. 212. v. 261.

1650. State of New-England at this period. iii. 77.

A great mortality prevails in the neighbourhood of Boston. vi. 268.

The General Court of Massachusetts grants Harvard College its first charter, appointing a corporation. vii. 27.

- Surrinam taken by the English. i. 66.
1651. Sumptuary laws passed in Massachusetts. vi. 268.  
The General Court of Massachusetts made an order, that no minister should be called to office, without the approbation and allowance of some of the magistrates, as well as some of the neighbouring churches. x. 26.  
Natick, a town of Christian Indians, built on Charles River. i. 180. v. 263. viii. 19. x. 136.  
Autumn. William Coddington went to England, and procured from the Council of State a commission, constituting him Governor of Rhode-Island, with which he returns this year. v. 217. vi. 144. x. 20.
1652. Quakers first appear in England. vi. 266.  
Massachusetts claims the jurisdiction of part of the province of Maine. iii. 8.  
Money first coined in Massachusetts. vii. 229.  
First iron forge in America built at Raynham by James and Henry Leonard. iii. 170.
1653. The inhabitants on the main refusing to submit to Coddington's government of Rhode-Island, they appoint Roger Williams and John Clarke their agents at the court of London to procure Coddington's commission to be vacated, which they effect this year. v. 217. vi. 144. x. 20.
1655. Anne Hibbins of Boston tried and condemned for witchcraft. vi. 268.
1656. The government of Massachusetts appoints a superintendent over the Indians. i. 177. v. 262.  
Quakers first appear in Massachusetts. x. 35.
1657. June 4. Disputes concerning baptism and church members in New-England occasion a council to be holden at Boston. x. 35—37.  
William Coddington and Benedict Arnold purchase Quononoquot of the Narraganset sachems. v. 217.  
John Hull and others purchase a large tract of ground in the Narraganset country, called the Pottaquamscut purchase. v. 217.
1658. Massachusetts claims a share in the Pequot country. x. 102.  
Oct. A law, with penalty of death, made against the Quakers in Massachusetts. v. 266.
1659. Several Quakers put to death at Boston. vi. 269.  
June and July. John Winthrop, Humphrey Atherton, and others, purchase two tracts of land in the Narraganset country. v. 217. 240.  
Indian church first gathered at Martha's Vineyard. i. 203. 206.  
Settlement of Nantucket by the English begins: at this time the Island contains near three thousand Indians. iii. 156.
1660. First Indian church in Massachusetts embodied at Natick. i. 181. viii. 20. x. 136.  
Oct. 13. The Narraganset sachems mortgage to Humphrey Atherton and associates the remaining part of their country. v. 218. 240.
1661. Several Quakers put to death at Boston, and eighteen publicly punished at Salem. vi. 260.  
Sep. Charles II. forbids any further persecution of the Quakers. vi. 260.  
Sep. 5. Eliot's translation of the New-Testament into the Indian language first published. i. 176.  
Baron Castine at Penobscot teaches the Indians the use of fire arms. ix. 218.
1662. Charles II. grants a charter to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in New-England. i. 214. vii. 226.  
Ap. 23. Charles II. grants a charter to Connecticut. iv. 262. 297. v. 218. 237. vi. 156.  
Connecticut extends its jurisdiction to Long-Island and some parts of the main claimed by the Dutch. vi. 209.  
Aug. 14. Act for ejecting dissenting teachers passed in England. x. 28. 177.  
Sep. A Synod held in Massachusetts on the subjects of Baptism and Consociation. vi. 260. vii. 49.  
The General Court of Massachusetts appoints two licensers of the press. i. 228. vii. 23.  
A charter granted to the English at Surrinam by Charles II. about which time the colony is augmented by the settlement of a number of Jews. i. 66.
1663. Days of humiliation appointed in Massachusetts to deprecate Episcopal usurpation. vi. 261.  
Eliot's translation of the Old Testament into the Indian language first published. vii. 222.  
Ap. 17. The agents of Connecticut and Rhode-Island agree that

- Paukatuck River shall be the boundary between the two colonies. i. 279. v. 238. 248.
- July 8. Charles II. grants the last charter to Rhode-Island. v. 218. 238. vi. 144.
- Aug. 12. Nova-Scotia granted to Sir William Alexander. iii. 95.
- Law passed in Virginia, that no debt should be recoverable in the country, unless the goods for which it became due be imported thither. v. 149.
- Nov. Stuyvesant, Governour of New-Netherland, complains to the government of Massachusetts of the encroachments of Connecticut. vi. 209.
- Earl of Stirling sells Long-Island to the Duke of York. vi. 187. But not, as his heirs pretend, the country between St. Croix and Kennebeck. vi. 188.
1664. French of Canada subdue the Mohawks. i. 161. See Holmes' Ann. i. 397.
- Mar. 12. Charles II. grants to the Duke of York New-York, Long-Island, Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, and a territory between the rivers St. Croix and Kennebeck. iii. 95. vi. 131. 187.
- Four commissioners are sent by Charles II. to New-England to settle all differences between colony and colony. i. 279. v. 218. vi. 261.
- Proposition made by Charles II'd's commissioners to the government of Plymouth. v. 192.
- Charles II'd's commissioners declare Mount Hope Neck to be within the limits of the government of Plymouth. v. 224.
- The law in Massachusetts, declaring none but church members to be freemen, became null. vi. 261.
- The line between Massachusetts and Plymouth settled. i. 100.
1665. Mar. and Ap. Three of Charles II'd's commissioners declare the purchases made by Humphrey Atherton and others in the Narraganset country to be void; but Richard Nichols, the first of the commissioners, without whose consent their acts were not valid, reverses their orders. v. 218. 221. 228. 230. 238. 242.
- The government of Rhode-Island passes an order for outlawing the Quakers; but the people would not suffer the order to be executed. v. 219.
- The Baptists first form a church in Boston. vi. 262.
- An Indian College erected at Cambridge. vii. 24.
1667. Surinam taken by the Dutch. i. 65.
1669. Indians of Massachusetts march into the country of the Mohawks, where they are defeated by them. i. 166.
- Ap. 16. An Ecclesiastical Council holden in Boston. ix. 172.
1670. Remarkable mortality among the pond fish at Watertown. iii. 177.
1671. The colony of Plymouth in danger of being disturbed by the Indians within its limits. v. 193—197. vi. 196—203. 211.
- Thomas Mayhew receives a commission to govern the Indians on Martha's Vineyard and the Elizabeth Islands: they promise subjection to the King of England. vi. 196.
- July 24. Awasuncks, the squaw sachem of Saconet, promises fidelity to the government of Plymouth. v. 193. 195.
- Sep. 4. Dartmouth Indians promise fidelity to the government of Plymouth. v. 194.
- Peace concluded between the Mohawks and the Indians of Massachusetts. i. 167.
1672. Mar. The Governour and Council of Massachusetts solicit aid for the College in Cambridge. vi. 95.
- Oct. 30. The General Assembly of Rhode-Island confirms the purchases of Humphrey Atherton and his associates. v. 219. 250.
- A mission attempted from Massachusetts to the Massawomeks. i. 167.
1673. The fort on Castle-Island in Boston harbour burnt, and a new one of stone erected. iii. 298. vi. 83.
- July 30. The Dutch obtain possession of New-York. vi. 83.
- State of Massachusetts, as to number of inhabitants, trade, manufactures, &c. at this period. iv. 216.
- There are now six Indian churches in New-England. x. 124.
1674. Mar. The General Court of Massachusetts orders two vessels to be equipped as men of war, to act against the Dutch in Long-Island Sound. vi. 88.
- The gospel has made so great a progress among the Indians of New-England, that at this period there are 1100 praying Indians in Massachusetts. i. 195.—497 in Plymouth. i. 196.—300 families on Martha's Vineyard. i. 205.—300 praying Indians on Nantucket. i. 205. 207.—

- And above 30 adults in Connecticut. i. 209.
1675. June. Philip's war begins. i. 228. iii. 148. 171. v. 219. 224. 269. viii. 230. ix. 218.
- July 18. Battle in a swamp at Pocasset Neck between Philip and the Colonists. v. 270.
- Aug. 2. Brookfield burnt by the Indians. i. 260.
- Dec. 19. Battle of the swamp in the Narraganset country; a decisive victory obtained over the Indians. vi. 90. 207.
- The inhabitants of Massachusetts are exasperated against the praying Indians: Mr. Eliot and Gen. Gookin defend their cause. i. 228. viii. 30.
- A body of Indians defeated near Wrentham. x. 139.
1676. Jan. State of the hostile Indians in Massachusetts at this time. vi. 205.
- Feb. 10. Lancaster assaulted by the Indians. vi. 207.
- Mar. 20. Marlborough assaulted by the Indians. iv. 46.
- Mar. 26. Capt. Pierce and his company cut off by the Indians, near Patucket River. vi. 89.
- Ap. 18. Part of Sudbury burnt by the Indians. v. 271. x. 87.
- Aug. 12. Philip is killed, and the war terminates. i. 228. iii. 149. v. 224. 271.
- Many parts of New-England much distressed by Philip's war. iv. 140. vi. 92. 234.
- A severe drought in New-England. ix. 87.
- Bacon's rebellion in Virginia. v. 137.
- Nov. 27. A great fire in Boston. iii. 269.
1677. Northfield, Hatfield, Deerfield, and Hadley assaulted by the Indians. ii. 30. iii. 179.
- After Philip's war the hostile Indians retreated from New-England. x. 105.
- Thirteen Salem ketches taken by the Eastern Indians. vi. 263. See Holmes' Ann. i. 443.
1679. Feb. 12. Charles II. writes to the colonies of New-England, and commands them forthwith to make their right and title, both of soil and government, to the Narraganset country, to appear before him at Whitehall. v. 219. 221.
- Aug. 8. A great fire in Boston. iii. 269. iv. 189.
- Sep. 10. A Synod holden at Boston. vi. 263. vii. 26.
- The first Baptist meeting-house in Boston built. iii. 259.
1680. New-Hampshire separated from Massachusetts, and made a royal province. iv. 87. vi. 92.
- July. State of Connecticut at this period, as to government, number of towns, military forces, trade, produce, religion, Indians, &c. iv. 220. ix. 78.
- New-England contains eighty churches. iv. 123.
- The Mohawks kill and captivate a number of the New-England Indians. iii. 180.
- Appeals, which, in Virginia, had heretofore been made from the General Court to the General Assembly, ordered to be made to the King in council. v. 139. 151.
1681. Feb. Randolph exhibits to the Lords of the Council articles of high misdemeanor against a part of the General Court of Massachusetts. i. 229.
1682. Oct. 11. The General Court of Massachusetts grants William Hubbard fifty pounds for writing his history. x. 187.
1683. Ap. 17. Charles II. appoints commissioners to examine into the right, which the several persons claiming it have to the Narraganset country. v. 219. 232.
- Aug. 22. The commissioners first assemble in the Narraganset country; but their proceedings are interdicted by the Legislature of Rhode-Island. v. 236.
- Oct. 20. The commissioners report, that the government of the Narraganset country belongs to Connecticut, and the soil to Humphrey Atherton and associates. v. 220. 235.
- Oct. A great fire in Boston. iii. 269.
1684. At this period the Indians had of stated places of publick worship, four in Massachusetts, ten in Plymouth, ten in Martha's Vineyard, and five in Nantucket. iii. 185.
- The house of Assembly in Virginia formerly chose their own clerk; but he is now appointed by the Governour. v. 141. 147.
1685. At this period there are 1439 adult Christian Indians in the colony of Plymouth. i. 201.
- Oct. 8. James II. by commission constitutes a President and Council for Massachusetts, New-Hampshire, Maine, and the Narraganset country. v. 220. 244.
1686. Many Protestant families, ban-



- ished from France by the revocation of the edict of Nantz, come to America. i. 264. vi. 265.
- June 1. Last election holden at Plymouth. iii. 16.
- June. Plymouth at this time contains twenty towns. viii. 152.
- Second edition of Eliot's Indian Bible completed. iii. 187.
- The first Episcopal church in Boston formed. iii. 259.
1687. There are in New-England six churches of baptized Indians, and eighteen assemblies of catechumens. i. 195. v. 264.
1689. War with the eastern Indians. iv. 141. 143.
- June 27. Dover assaulted by the Indians. x. 54.
- The small pox in Boston. iv. 213.
- Sir Edmund Andros, Governour of Massachusetts, is seized and imprisoned by the people: he makes his escape and goes to Rhode-Island, where he is again imprisoned, and delivered up to the people of Massachusetts. iii. 194. 243. v. 220. viii. 67. ix. 272.
- A Convention is called in Massachusetts, to manage the affairs of government. ix. 272.
- Agents are sent from Massachusetts to England, to solicit the confirmation of the ancient charter. ix. 272.
1690. Sir William Phips takes possession of the country between Penobscot and Port-Royal. ix. 231.
- July 6. Action at Wheeler's Pond in New-Hampshire, between a party of English colonists and a body of French and Indians. v. 272.
- There are 4310 Indians from Massachusetts to Canso, at this time. ix. 234.
- Whale fishery begins at Nantucket in boats from the shore: before this period it had existed at Cape Cod. iii. 167. 161.
1691. Ap. 28. from Mar. 14, 1689. Conferences of Dr. Increase Mather, agent of Massachusetts, with the King and Queen of England. ix. 245.
- The King grants the second charter to Massachusetts. ix. 273.
- William and Mary College in Virginia founded. v. 159. 164.
1692. Jan. 25. York destroyed by the Indians. i. 104. iii. 8.
- May 14. Massachusetts' second charter arrives. iii. 194. vi. 272.
- Plymouth annexed to Massachusetts. iii. 194.
- June 7. Port-Royal in Jamaica destroyed by an earthquake. iv. 223. A malignant fever follows, and spreads over the Island. iv. 230.
- June 10. Wells attacked by the French and Indians. iii. 139.
- Several persons executed in Massachusetts for witchcraft. v. 61. vi. 234. 265. vii. 241.
- Number of the Indians on Martha's Vineyard at this period. i. 205.
1693. Aug. 11. Treaty concluded at Pemaquid between the Indians and the Massachusetts government. ix. 231.
- Number of Indians in the old colony of Plymouth at this time. i. 201. viii. 171.
- James Blair, President of William and Mary College, put into the Council of Virginia by the King, as representative of the clergy of the province: he is suspended by Sir Edmund Andros, the Governour, in 1694. v. 145.
1694. Nantucket at this time contains about 500 adult Indians. i. 207.
1695. Oct. 22. A church gathered in Dorchester, Massachusetts, which settles Dorchester in South Carolina. ix. 166.
1697. State of Virginia at this period. v. 124.
- Sep. 11. Peace of Ryswick. vi. 271.
1698. June. Between three and four thousand Indians remain in Massachusetts, exclusive of Maine. x. 129—134. See Holmes' Ann. ii. 45, where the estimate is too large.
- Stoughton Hall in Cambridge built. vii. 5.
- A great fire in Salem. vi. 234.
1699. The church in Brattle-street, Boston, erected, with a constitution differing from that of the other Congregational churches in New-England. iii. 260. ix. 17. x. 35.
1702. The small pox spread through Boston. iv. 213.
- Aug. Great mortality at New-York. ix. 195.
- First furnace for smelting iron ore in the county of Plymouth erected at Pembroke. ix. 258.
1703. Northfield destroyed by the Indians. ii. 31.
- War begins with the eastern Indians. x. 114. See Holmes' Ann. ii. 61.
- Duty imposed by the Legislature of Massachusetts on negroes imported. iv. 196.
1704. Feb. 29. Deerfield destroyed by the Indians. iv. 57.
- Ap. 24. Number i. of the Bos-

- ton News-Letter, the first newspaper published in America, printed. v. 208. vi. 66.
- Aug. 8. Westborough assaulted by the Indians. x. 86.
- A law passed in Maryland for the support of the clergy. vii. 174.
1707. Expedition against Port-Royal. viii. 67.
1709. The General Assembly of Rhode-Island dispossesses the heirs of Humphrey Atherton and his associates of their rights and properties in the Narraganset country. v. 252.
- Thomas Short first erects a printing press in Connecticut. v. 216.
1710. Quakers build a meeting house in Boston. iii. 260.
- Oct. 2. Port-Royal in Nova-Scotia is surrendered to the English. vi. 120.
1711. Oct. 2. A great fire in Boston. iii. 269. iv. 188. 211. v. 52.
1713. Mar. Peace of Utrecht: Cape Breton yielded to France. v. 202.
- Nova-Scotia ceded to Great-Britain. vi. 130.
- The Five Nations of Indians declared to be subject to Great-Britain. vi. 131.
- July. War with the eastern Indians ends. x. 114
- The measles in Boston. iv. 213.
- Dec. The Episcopalians in Boston petition the Queen to establish Bishops in America. vii. 215.
1714. Drought in New-England. ix. 196.
- Schooners invented at Cape Anne. ix. 234.
1716. Aurora Borealis first seen in England. ii. 14. See Holmes' Ann. ii. 99.
1717. Feb. 18—24. The great snow in New-England. ii. 12. v. 209. vii. 58. viii. 176. ix. 196.
- The pirate Bellamy's fleet shipwrecked on the shore of Eastham. iii. 120.
1719. Dec. 11. Aurora Borealis first seen in New-England. ii. 17.
1720. Massachusetts government erects a Fort at Georges. iv. 20.
- Massachusetts Hall erected at Cambridge. vii. 5.
- Martha's Vineyard at this time contains about 800 Indians. i. 206.
- The Weekly Mercury, the first newspaper published in Philadelphia. vi. 64.
- Dec. 18. The Boston Gazette, the second newspaper published in New-England, first printed. v. 209. vi. 68.
1721. July 17. The New-England Courant, the third newspaper published in New-England, first printed at Boston. v. 209. vi. 66.
- The small pox spread through Boston. iv. 213. v. 207.
- Inoculation for the small pox first practised in Boston. iii. 291. iv. 213. ix. 276. 278.
1722. Jan. 14. The General Court of Massachusetts pass an order against James Franklin, the printer of the New-England Courant. vi. 64.
- War begins with the eastern Indians. x. 114.
- French and Indians make an unsuccessful attempt to take the Fort at Georges. iv. 20.
1723. Fort Dummer built. iii. 106.
1724. Feb. 24. Storm and uncommon high tide in New-England. ii. 11.
- May, June. Governour Shute heard before the Lords of the Privy Council on his complaint against the House of Representatives of Massachusetts. ii. 32.
- Aug. 12. Successful expedition against Norridgewock, an Indian town on the Kennebeck. ix. 209.
1725. War with the eastern Indians ends. x. 114.
1726. Aug. 5. Lieut. Gov. Dummer makes peace with the Penobscot and other Indians. iii. 106. 140. vi. 108.
- Sep. The Governour of Canada endeavours to excite the eastern Indians to make war on the inhabitants of New-England. vi. 112.
- Nov. 2. John Baptiste, his son, and three Indians, who had taken a sloop of Samuel Daly at Malegash, Aug. 25, executed at Boston as pirates. vi. 110.
- There are 505 Indians from Massachusetts to Canso at this time. ix. 234.
1727. Jan. 5. The Weekly News-Letter, the fourth newspaper published in New-England, first printed in Boston. v. 209. vi. 66.
- Mar. 27. The New-England Journal, the fifth newspaper published in New-England, first printed at Boston. v. 209. vi. 66.
- July. Lieut. Gov. Dummer ratifies with the Norridgewock, Aresaguntacook, and Wawenech tribes, the peace which was made last year with the Penobscot Indians. vi. 117.
- Oct. 29. Earthquake in New-England. ix. 176. 197. x. 50.
1729. Capt. Henry Atkins makes discoveries on the coast of Labrador. i. 233.
- Measles in Boston. iv. 214.

1730. Rhode-Island at this time contains 985 Indians. i. 210.  
 A Presbyterian church formed in Boston. iii. 262.  
 The small pox spreads through Boston. iv. 214.  
 Fishery flourishes greatly at Cape Breton. v. 202.
1731. The French erect a fort at Crown-Point. vi. 135.
1732. Oct. 1st week. The Rhode-Island Gazette is the first newspaper printed in Rhode-Island. v. 215.
1733. July 30. The first Lodge of Free-Masons in America holden at Boston. iii. 273.
- 1735 and 1736. An eruptive military fever and throat distemper prevail in New-England. iv. 214. x. 50.
1737. A mob in Boston destroys the market house. iii. 255.
1740. Attleborough Gore and several towns taken from Massachusetts, and annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211.
1742. Faneuil Hall in Boston erected. iii. 253.  
 The Shawanese instigate the Nanticokes to fall on the English inhabitants of Maryland: their machinations are timely discovered and defeated. vii. 199.
1744. Ap. 9. Judge Auchmuty proposes to the British ministry an expedition against Cape-Breton. v. 202.  
 The Quaker members of the House of Assembly in Pennsylvania refuse to assent to a militia law for the defence of the province. vii. 174.  
 June 24. Capt. Tyng takes a French privateer. x. 182.  
 June and July. A treaty holden by the Commissioners of Maryland, Virginia, and Pennsylvania, with the Six Nations, at Lancaster in Pennsylvania. vii. 178—200.
1745. Mar. 24. General Pepperell sails from Boston with troops on an expedition against Cape-Breton. i. 13.  
 Ap. 4. Arrives at Canso. i. 14.  
 Ap. Commodore Warren arrives on the coast of Cape-Breton. i. 21.  
 Ap. 29. General Pepperell sails from Canso. Ap. 30. Arrives at Chapeaurouge bay. May 1. Lands his troops. May 2. Takes possession of the grand battery. i. 26.  
 May 7. Sends a summons to the commanding officer of Louisbourg. i. 27.  
 May. Erects light-house, and other batteries. i. 30.
- May 28. Before this date, makes five unsuccessful attempts on the island battery. i. 35. 109.
- May 19. The Vigilant, a French man of war, taken near Louisbourg. i. 31. 39. 43. x. 182.
- June 15. Duchambon, Governour of Louisbourg, desires a suspension of arms. i. 45.
- June 16. Louisbourg is surrendered. i. 47.  
 About this time slaves are more numerous in Massachusetts, than in any period before or since. iv. 199.
1746. Aug. 20. Fort Massachusetts taken by the French. vi. 135.  
 Epidemical fever prevails in Boston. iv. 214.
1747. Parliament votes to reimburse Massachusetts and other colonies their expenses in the expedition against Cape-Breton. i. 57.  
 Iron ore discovered in Assowamset pond: it has since been discovered in other ponds in the neighbourhood. iii. 175. ix. 254.  
 Dec. 9. The court-house in Boston burnt. i. 3. iii. 250. 269.
1748. Ap. 6. Sketch of the history of Nova-Scotia, from 1710, the state of the civil government, and the character of the Acadians. vi. 120.  
 Before and at this period, the French make encroachments on the British colonies in America. vi. 130. vii. 70.  
 Oct. 7. Treaty of Aix la Chapelle. vii. 70. ix. 219. 224.
1749. May and June. Severe drought in New-England. vii. 239.  
 The putrid sore throat prevails in Massachusetts. v. 275.  
 Oct. 16. Treaty concluded at Falmouth with the Penobscot and other Indians. ix. 218. 220.  
 489 vessels entered at the port of Boston, and 504 cleared out. iii. 288.  
 Halifax in Nova-Scotia settled. iii. 96.
1750. Paper money suppressed in Massachusetts, and gold and silver introduced. iii. 287.
1751. The French send an army into the western country of Virginia. x. 147.  
 June. M. de Villiers drives the English Ohio Company from the banks of the river. iii. 22.  
 Iron ore discovered in Jones-river pond in Kingston, Massachusetts. ix. 255.
1752. The small pox spreads through Boston. v. 208.
1753. The Governour of New-York is

instructed by the King to demand of the Assembly permanent salaries for the Governour, Judges, &c. vii. 80.—Oct. 31. De Lancey, the Lieut. Gov. makes the demand. vii. 82.

The French begin to make settlements on the banks of the Ohio. v. 120. vii. 70.

Oct. 31. Dinwiddie, Lieut. Gov. of Virginia, writes to the commandant of the French forces on the Ohio, complaining of encroachments and acts of hostility: Major George Washington is the bearer of the letter. vii. 71.

Dec. 15. The commandant on the Ohio asserts the right of the French to the lands in that country. vii. 71.

The Governour of Virginia complains to the British Court of the encroachments of the French, and solicits aid from the neighbouring governours. vii. 72.

1754. Jan. Great sickness in Holliston: one eighth of the inhabitants died. iii. 19.

Feb. The Assembly of Virginia passes an act to raise three hundred men for an expedition to the Ohio: the command is given to Col. George Washington. vii. 73.

Ap. 17. M. Contrecoeur obliges Capt. Trent to abandon a fort erected on the forks of the Monongahela. iii. 22. vi. 139.

May 1. Col. Washington begins his march to the Ohio. vii. 73.

May 28. Col. Washington has a skirmish with the French: kills ten, and makes twenty prisoners. vii. 73.

June 18. A Congress is holden at Albany for the purposes of treating with the Six Nations, and of concerting a scheme for a general union of the British colonies. iv. 67. vii. 75. It proposes a plan of union. vii. 203.

July 3. Col. Washington is defeated by the French and Indians. vii. 73.

Sep. Gov. Shirley erects forts on the Kennebeck. vii. 88.

Oct. The government of Connecticut disapproves the plan of union proposed by the Congress of Albany. vii. 207—214.

Oct. 24. Daniel Fowle, printer in Boston, is imprisoned for printing a satire on the General Court. vi. 69.

The Susquehanna and Delaware companies of Connecticut purchase

of the Six Nations lands between those rivers: the General Assembly of the colony asserts its claim to the lands, and a township is settled. vii. 232.

A College founded at New-York. vii. 89.

1755. Jan. 1. The first newspaper published in Connecticut is the Connecticut Gazette. vi. 76.

It is intended by persons of consequence in the British Court, that the colonies should be governed like Ireland. vi. 129.

Gov. Shirley communicates to the Assembly of Massachusetts a design of attacking Crown-Point. vii. 88.

Ap. 14. Gen. Braddock meets a Convention of the American Governours at Alexandria. vii. 89.

June 16. The New-England troops obtain possession of Beau-sejour and Bay Verte on the Isthmus of Nova-Scotia. vii. 91.

The Acadians are transported from Nova-Scotia. vi. 190.

July 9. Gen. Braddock's army defeated by the Indians at the head of Turtle-creek. iii. 23. vii. 92.

Aug. Fort Edward begun by Gen. Lyman. vii. 104.

Sep. 8. Baron Dieskau defeated by Gen. Johnson at Lake George. vii. 107. viii. 48.

Sept. 27. A designed expedition against Fort Niagara is given up, by the advice of a council of war. vii. 122.

Oct. The fortifications at Oswego are strengthened. vii. 123.

Nov. 18. Great earthquake in New-England. iv. 231.

Dec. 3. The Governour of New-York recommends to the Assembly to settle permanent salaries on the Governour, Judges, &c. vii. 129.

The Assembly refuses to comply with the recommendation. vii. 130.

Dec. 12. Grand council of war convenes at New-York, for settling the military operations for 1756. vii. 130.

British subjects in America estimated at one million, fifty-one thousand. vii. 220.

Pequot tribe consists of 72 persons above 14 years of age. x. 101.

1756. Massachusetts is greatly impoverished by the charges of the Crown-Point expedition. vi. 47.

Jan. Gov. Shirley with difficulty prevails on the General Court of Massachusetts to raise troops for the military operations of this year. vi. 40. vii. 139.

- Feb. 2. Parliament makes a grant to the colonies on account of the expenses incurred in the Crown-Point expedition. vi. 47.  
 Number of troops raised this year in Massachusetts. vi. 40.  
 Ap. 1. Two bills pass in New-York, one for paying the debts due from the province, and the other for levying forces. vii. 130. 146.  
 Massachusetts contains about 40,000 fighting men: the militia of Connecticut is about 27,000. vii. 139.  
 Canada probably does not contain 30,000 fighting men. vii. 161.  
 A designed attempt on Fort Du Quesne is given up. vii. 151.  
 The Shawanese, Susquehannas, and Delawares commit hostilities on Virginia and Pennsylvania. vii. 152. 153.  
 July 3. Action near Oswego between the batteaux men under Capt. Bradstreet, and the French. vii. 155.  
 Aug. 14. Fort Oswego taken by the French. vii. 158.  
 Sep. 11. General Court of Massachusetts instructs its agent to remonstrate against the impressing of its seamen. vi. 97.  
 Oct. 7. The New-Hampshire Gazette, the first newspaper in New-Hampshire, printed at Portsmouth. v. 215.  
 The New-England forces under Gen. Winslow are employed this year in garrisoning Fort Edward, Fort William-Henry, and other fortresses. vi. 34.  
 1758. July. Capt. Henry Atkins makes further discoveries on the coast of Labrador. i. 235.  
 Nov. 24. Fort Du Quesne abandoned by the French: it is taken possession of by Gen. Forbes the next day. iii. 22.  
 1759. Difficulties of obtaining from Parliament a grant to the colonies, for reimbursing their expenses during the war. vi. 44.  
 The measles in Boston. iv. 215.  
 Sep. 18. Quebec taken by the English. vi. 54.  
 1760. Mar. 20. The great fire in Boston. iii. 270. iv. 189.  
 Sep. Final surrender of Canada to Gen. Amherst. vi. 54.  
 1761. Parliament grants to Massachusetts a compensation for its expenses this year. vi. 191.  
 The Niantick tribe consists of 85 persons. x. 104.  
 Nineget's tribe of Indians consists of 248 persons. x. 104.  
 1762. Number of shipping and seamen in Connecticut at this time. vii. 235.  
 Number of inhabitants in Connecticut at this time. vii. 236.  
 1763. Feb. 10. Peace concluded at Paris between Great-Britain, France, &c. ix. 226.  
 The government of Massachusetts directs their agent to apply to Parliament for a reimbursement of the expense of supporting the French neutrals from Nova-Scotia. vi. 189.  
 There is an intention in the British Court of keeping up ten thousand troops in America. vi. 194.  
 Number of inhabitants in Massachusetts at this period. iv. 198.  
 State of the cod and whale fisheries in Massachusetts at this time. viii. 202.  
 905 Indians remain in the old colony of Plymouth. i. 201.  
 313 in Duke's county. i. 206.  
 Aug. 16. 358 Indians still remain on Nantucket; but at this time a fever begins among them, and lasts till the 16th of Feb. 1764. 222 die. i. 207. iii. 158. At the same time the blue fish disappears from the coast. iii. 159.  
 1764. Number of Indians in Massachusetts at this time. i. 195.  
 Duty laid by Parliament on foreign molasses imported into the British colonies. vi. 193. 194.  
 The agent of Massachusetts applies to Parliament to take off the discouragement on the whale fishery. vi. 195.  
 Mar. Mr. Grenville proposes in Parliament the laying of stamp duties on the American colonies. ix. 269.  
 June 14. The House of Representatives of Massachusetts instructs its agent to remonstrate against the proposed stamp duties. ix. 271.  
 Small pox spreads through Boston. iv. 215.  
 After the conquest of Canada, it was under military government till this period, when civil government takes place. vi. 54.  
 Winter. Harvard Hall in Cambridge burnt. i. 3. vii. 5. x. 188.  
 1765. Jan. 10. Stamp act passed. ii. 41. iii. 244.  
 Aug. 14. A mob first assembles in Boston to oppose the stamp act. ii. 43.  
 Aug. 26. Gov. Hutchinson's house destroyed by a mob. i. 3.  
 1766. March 18. Parliament repeals the stamp act, and passes the declaratory act. ii. 43.

1767. Parliament passes an act imposing a duty on tea, &c. ii. 43.  
 Nov. Commissioners of the customs arrive at Boston. ii. 43. iii. 244.  
 An attempt, which fails, is made by the Legislature of Massachusetts to discourage the slave trade. iv. 201.
1768. Feb. 11. The General Court of Massachusetts writes a Circular Letter to the American Colonies. ii. 43.  
 June 10. The commissioners of the customs seize a wine vessel belonging to John Hancock, Esq. ii. 43.  
 Aug. 4. Gov. Bernard dissolves the Massachusetts General Court on its refusing to rescind the Circular Letter. ii. 43.  
 Aug. The Boston merchants agree not to import any more British goods, till the revenue act is repealed. ii. 43.  
 Sept. 22. A Convention of Delegates from the towns of Massachusetts meets at Boston. ii. 44.  
 Sep. 28. British troops arrive at Boston. ii. 44.  
 Nov. 10. More British troops arrive at Boston. ii. 44.
1769. The town of Boston petitions the King. ii. 44.  
 John Wesley sends two Methodist preachers to America. iii. 265.
1770. The Boston merchants renew the non-importation agreement. ii. 44.  
 Mar. 5. Riots in Boston: several of the inhabitants killed by the British troops. ii. 44. iii. 244.  
 Ap. The use of tea laid aside in Boston. ii. 44.  
 May 30. Election of counsellors for Massachusetts holden at Cambridge. ii. 44. vii. 35.  
 Sep. 10. Gov. Hutchinson delivers Castle William to Col. Dalrymple, commander of the British troops. ii. 45.  
 A negro slave in Massachusetts sues his master for his freedom, and obtains it: other suits afterwards instituted, and terminated favourably. iv. 202.
1771. May 11. Thomas Hutchinson, appointed Governour of Massachusetts, receives his salary from the crown. ii. 45.  
 Many of the fishermen of Marblehead are lost at sea. viii. 57.  
 Twenty-five newspapers are now printed in America, says Dr. Franklin: there are probably more. v. 215.
1772. June 9. The King's armed schooner, Gaspee, burnt by a mob at Rhode-Island. ii. 45.  
 Expedition against the Caribs at St. Vincents. ii. 45.  
 Measles in Boston. iv. 215.  
 Nov. 22. A committee of correspondence first chosen in Boston. ii. 45. See Holmes' Ann. ii. 300.
1773. Tea Act passed. iii. 244.  
 June 23. The General Court of Massachusetts petitions the King to remove Gov. Hutchinson and Lieut. Gov. Oliver. ii. 45. iii. 109.  
 Dec. 16. Three cargoes of tea destroyed by a mob in Boston. ii. 45. iii. 244.  
 Dec. Commissioners appointed by the King to inquire into the burning of the schooner Gaspee. ii. 45.  
 587 vessels entered at the port of Boston, and 411 cleared. iii. 288.
1774. Jan. 1. Connecticut at this time contains 1363 Indians. i. 210. vii. 237. ix. 78. x. 117.  
 Jan. An act passes the two Houses in Massachusetts, prohibiting the importation of slaves; but it does not obtain the Governour's assent. iv. 202.  
 Jan. 29. The petition against Gov. Hutchinson and Lieut. Gov. Oliver is dismissed by King and Council. ii. 46. iii. 114.  
 150 vessels employed in the whale fishery at Nantucket. iii. 161.  
 The fishermen of Massachusetts first adventure to the Falkland Islands in pursuit of whales. iii. 199. iv. 233.  
 May 14. Gen. Gage, Governour of Massachusetts, arrives at Boston. ii. 46.  
 June 1. The port of Boston shut up by act of Parliament. ii. 46. iii. 116. 244. viii. 59.  
 June 6. The inhabitants of Marblehead offer their publick buildings and stores to the inhabitants of Boston, affected by the Port-Bill. viii. 59.  
 June. The General Court of Massachusetts is holden at Salem: at the close of the session five delegates are chosen to attend a Congress in Philadelphia. ii. 46.  
 The Constitution of Massachusetts altered by act of Parliament. ii. 46. iii. 117.  
 Quebec bill passed by Parliament. vi. 48.  
 June. Rhode-Island at this time contains 1482 Indians. i. 210. x. 119.

Sep. 5. First Continental Congress convenes at Philadelphia. ii. 46. iii. 244.

Oct. State of Connecticut at this period, as to government, trade, population, &c. vii. 231.

A voluntary committee formed in Boston for the purpose of watching the movements of the British troops. v. 106.

1776. Jan. 20. Lord Chatham moves an address to the King to remove the troops from Boston. ii. 47.

March. Lord North's conciliatory plan is received at Philadelphia. ii. 48.

Five newspapers published in Boston at this period. vi. 75.

Ap. 19. The Battle of Lexington commences the American war. i. 107. 241. ii. 48. iii. 244. v. 107—110. vi. 157.

The inhabitants of Boston deliver up their fire arms to Gen. Gage. ii. 48.

May 5. Massachusetts provincial Congress renounces Gen. Gage as Governour. ii. 49.

May 10. Col. Ethan Allen takes Ticonderoga: the same day Crown-Point is taken by Col. Seth Warner. ii. 49.

May 25. The Generals Howe, Burgoyne and Clinton arrive at Boston. ii. 49.

June. The American army, in the neighbourhood of Boston, consists at this time of 20,000 men. vi. 159.

June 12. Gen. Gage declares the province of Massachusetts to be in a state of rebellion. ii. 49.

June 17. Battle of Bunker-hill: Charlestown is burnt. ii. 49. iii. 243. 244. vi. 159.

July 2. Gen. Washington arrives at Cambridge, and takes the command of the American army. ii. 49. iii. 244. vi. 160.

July 6. Continental Congress declares the causes and necessity of taking up arms. ii. 50.

July 20. The first Continental Fast is kept throughout the United Colonies. ii. 55.

Aug. Paper money first issued by Congress. ii. 56.

The Dysentery prevails in Massachusetts. v. 275.

Sep. Northern army under Generals Schuyler and Montgomery ordered to advance into Canada. ii. 55. vi. 180.

Sep. Gen. Gage embarks for England, and Sir William Howe

becomes commander in chief of the British troops. ii. 56.

Sep. 18. Fort Chamblee is surrendered to Major Brown. ii. 56.

Oct. 7. Bristol in Rhode-Island is cannonaded by Capt. Wallace. ii. 56.

Oct. 16. Falmouth is burnt by Capt. Mowatt. ii. 58.

Oct. 27. Dr. Benjamin Church, suspected of a treasonable correspondence with the enemy, is examined before the House of Representatives of Massachusetts. i. 84.

Nov. 2. Gen. Montgomery takes St John's. ii. 58. vi. 161.

Nov. Col. Ethan Allen attempts to reduce Montreal, but is taken prisoner. ii. 58.

Nov. Montreal is taken by Gen. Montgomery. ii. 58. vi. 161.

Nov. 7. Second petition of Congress is laid before the House of Lords. ii. 58.

Nov. 11. Col. Arnold arrives at Point Levi, opposite Quebec. ii. 59.

Nov. 29. Capt. Manly takes an ordnance vessel. ii. 60.

Dec. 10. Battle of Gwynn's-Island in Virginia. ii. 60.

Dec. Parliament declares the colonies to be in a state of rebellion. ii. 63.

Dec. 31. An unsuccessful attempt is made against Quebec: Gen. Montgomery is killed, and Col. Arnold taken prisoner. ii. 59. vi. 161.

Gen. Montgomery is not buried with the honours of war. i. 112.

Old South Church in Boston converted into a military riding school. i. 3.

African lodge of black masons is begun in Boston. iv. 210.

The inhabitants of the United States are at this time, by the French, called Bostonians. vi. 150.

1776. Jan. 1. The enlistment of the American troops near Boston expires, and the army is reduced from 20,000 to less than 5,000 men. vi. 162.

Jan. 1. Norfolk in Virginia destroyed. ii. 61.

Feb. 6. Capt. Esack Hopkins sails on an expedition to New-Providence. ii. 62.

Feb. Gen. Clinton sails from Boston on an expedition to Carolina. ii. 62.

Mar. 5. Heights of Dorchester occupied by a body of American troops. vi. 162. ix. 162.

Mar. 17. British troops evacuate Boston. i. 3. ii. 63. iii. 244. vi. 162.

1776. Mar. 23. Congress grants permission to fit out privateers. ii. 63.

Mar. An action takes place in North-Carolina between the Whigs and Tories: the latter sustain great loss. ii. 63.

Mar. Number of inhabitants in Massachusetts at this period. iv. 198.

Ap. Gen. Clinton dispatches to Georgia a part of his troops, who are repulsed on their attempt to land. ii. 64.

Ap. Gen. Washington arrives at New-York. vi. 162.

Ap. Gen. Washington orders detachments into Canada, to support the American troops there. vi. 163.

May 6. Gen. Carleton sallies from Quebec, and the continental troops retreat to Trois-rivieres. ii. 64. vi. 162.

Fort at the cedars taken. ii. 64.

June 16. Action at Trois-rivieres, after which the American troops retreat to Crown-Point. ii. 65. vi. 163.

June 28. Gen. Clinton and Sir Peter Parker repulsed at Sullivan's Island. ii. 65. vi. 163.

June. Gen. Howe, with the British army, arrives at Sandy-Hook. ii. 67.

July 2. Gen. Howe lands his army on Staten-Island. ii. 67.

July 4. Congress declares the United States independent. ii. 68. iii. 244. vi. 164.

July. Soon after the Declaration of Independence Congress sends three Commissioners to France. ii. 89.

Lord Stormont, the British Ambassador, presents a memorial to the Court of France against the American Commissioners. ii. 89.

July 5. The King of Portugal prohibits all intercourse between his dominions and the United Colonies. ii. 69.

July 6. Congress recommends to the several States to settle their particular forms of government: Virginia is the first that complies with the recommendation. ii. 69.

July 10. Gen. Gates takes command in the northern department; orders the American troops to retreat to Ticonderoga. ii. 70. vi. 163.

July. Admiral and Gen. Howe, appointed commissioners to grant pardons, dispatch Col. Paterson with letters to Gen. Washington;

but not being properly directed, he refuses to receive them. ii. 70. His conduct is approved by Congress. ii. 71.

July 20. Col. Paterson has a second interview with Gen. Washington. ii. 71.

Aug. 12. Two divisions of German troops arrive in the harbour of New-York. ii. 72.

Aug. 13. Earl of Dunmore leaves the coast of Virginia, which he had been harrassing, and arrives at Staten-Island: Generals Clinton and Cornwallis, and Sir Peter Parker had arrived a few days before. ii. 72.

Aug. 16. An unsuccessful attempt is made to destroy several British men of war in Hudson's river with two fire-ships. ii. 72.

Aug. Lieut. Col. Zedwitz detected in carrying on a correspondence with Gov. Tryon. ii. 72.

Aug. 22. Gen. Howe lands his army on Long-Island. ii. 73. vi. 165.

Aug. 27. Battle of Long-Island. ii. 74. vi. 165.

Aug. 28. British troops attack the American lines on Long-Island. ii. 74.

Aug. 29. Gen. Washington retreats from Long-Island to New-York. ii. 74. vi. 165.

Sep. 11. A committee of Congress hold a conference with Lord Howe at Staten-Island. ii. 75. vi. 164.

Sep. 15. Gen. Washington abandons New-York, of which Gen. Howe takes possession. ii. 76. vi. 165.

Sep. 19. The British Commissioners publish a declaration to the inhabitants of the United States. ii. 76.

Sep. 20. Part of New-York is destroyed by fire. ii. 77.

Sep. 23. An unsuccessful attempt is made to surprize a British guard on Montresor's Island. ii. 77.

Sep. Several Cherokee towns are destroyed by the Carolinians, and many Indians captivated and killed. ii. 77.

Sep. Congress resolves to raise an army of 75,000 men, to serve for three years, or during the war. ii. 78.

Oct. Congress resolves to borrow money, and establishes loan offices in the several States. ii. 79.

Oct. 13. Battle between the British and American fleets on Lake



Champlain: the British become masters of the Lake. ii. 79. vi. 163.

Oct. 20. The British regain possession of Crown-Point. ii. 79. vi. 164.

Oct. A party of about a hundred under Major Rogers is entirely routed by a party of Continentals. ii. 80.

Oct. Congress passes sundry resolutions respecting a navy. ii. 80.

Oct. 12. Gen. Howe lands his army on Frog-neck. ii. 81. 82.

Oct. Skirmish near Rochelle. ii. 81. 82.

Oct. 28. Battle of White Plains. ii. 81. 82.

Nov. 16. Fort Washington taken. ii. 81. 83. vi. 165.

Nov. 18. Gen. Greene abandons Fort Lee, which falls into the hands of Lord Cornwallis. ii. 81. 83. vi. 165.

Nov. Gen. Carleton, with his whole force, abandons Crown-Point. ii. 80.

Nov. 24. Lord Cornwallis takes possession of Newark. ii. 81.

Nov. 28. Action in New-Jersey between a body of the British and a party of the Pennsylvania militia. ii. 83.

Nov. Congress resolves to raise money by a lottery. ii. 83.

Dec. 8. British troops take possession of Newport. ii. 84.

Dec. Gen. Washington, with the American army, now reduced to a small number, crosses the Delaware. ii. 84. vi. 165.

Dec. 13. Gen. Lee is taken prisoner. ii. 85.

Dec. 15. Action near Great-bridge, Williamsburgh, Virginia. ii. 85.

Dec. 19. King's Commissioners at New-York publish another proclamation. ii. 86.

Dec. Congress, apprehensive that the royal army will obtain possession of Philadelphia, publishes an address to the people. ii. 87.

Dec. Congress removes to Baltimore. ii. 87.

Dec. 26. Battle of Trenton. ii. 88. iii. 244. vi. 166. viii. 80.

Dec. Congress confers on Gen. Washington ample powers, for the term of six months, to reform and new model the military arrangements. ii. 89.

Marine salt first made by the sun in the county of Barnstable. viii. 136.

1777. Jan. 3. Battle of Princeton. ii. 90. vi. 166. viii. 80.

Jan. 23. Action in New-Jersey between Lieut. Col. Parker and a party of the royalists. ii. 91.

Jan. 26. Gen. Dickinson defeats a party of 500 royalists near Somerset Court-House. ii. 91.

Feb. 13. Action at Quibbletown. ii. 92.

Feb. 16. Skirmish near King's bridge. ii. 92.

Feb. 17. American piracy bill passed by Parliament. ii. 92.

Feb. 21. Sir Joseph Yorke, British ambassador, presents a memorial to the States General of Holland, complaining of the conduct of the Governour of St. Eustatius. ii. 92.

Feb. States General of Holland order the equipment of a number of ships of war. ii. 92.

Feb. 23. Action in New-Jersey between Gen. Maxwell and a foraging party of the royalists. ii. 93.

March. A small party of Continental recruits attacked by a party of Indians near Fort George. ii. 93.

March 23. Royalists under Col. Bird destroy Continental stores at Peck's-kill. ii. 94.

Mar. 24. Skirmish in New-Jersey between Major Ritney and a party of the royalists. ii. 94.

Ap. 5. American camp at Bound-brook attacked by the royalists: the Americans obliged to retreat. ii. 94.

Ap. 21. Gen. Howe issues a proclamation for levying provincial troops. ii. 95.

Ap. 26. Royalists under Gov. Tryon destroy stores at Danbury, and have an action with the Continental troops. ii. 95.

American Commissioners in France make a representation to Lord Stormont respecting the case of American prisoners in England. ii. 98.

Gen. Washington, in a letter to Gen. Howe, complains of the great inhumanity with which American prisoners, taken by the British, are treated. ii. 99.

May 8. Distribution of the foreign troops under Gen. Howe at this time. ii. 100.

May 11. Action between a party of Gen. Stephens's division of Continental troops and a party of the British near Bonham-town. ii. 102.

May 25. Successful expedition of Col. Meigs to Long-Island. ii. 102.

May. Earl of Chatham makes a

- motion in the House of Lords for an accommodation<sup>d</sup> with America. ii. 103.
1777. June 10. Gen. Howe moves from Brunswick, and extends his van to Somerset court-house. June 20. Returns to Brunswick. June 22. Evacuates Brunswick, and retires to Amboy, but not without loss. ii. 104. vi. 167.
- June 23. Gen. Burgoyne, having arrived at the river Boquet, issues a proclamation. ii. 105.
- June. Congress resolves to form a corps of invalids. ii. 105.
- June 26. Gen. Howe advances with his whole army from Amboy to Westfield, attacks Lord Stirling's division, and compels him to retreat. ii. 105.
- June 27. Gen. Howe moves towards Spank-town. ii. 106.
- July 6. Ticonderoga evacuated by the American troops. ii. 106. vi. 169.
- July 13. American troops, who had evacuated Ticonderoga, reach Fort Edward. vi. 170.
- July 7. Action at Hubbardstown between Gen. Fraser and a party of Continental troops. ii. 124.
- July. Gen. Burgoyne crosses Lake George, and encamps on the banks of the Hudson. ii. 107.
- July 9 and 10. Burgoyne's army assembles at Skeneesborough. ii. 124.
- July 18. Gen. Prescott taken prisoner at Rhode-Island. ii. 107.
- July 19. Gen. Washington publishes a manifesto, in answer to Burgoyne's proclamation. ii. 107.
- July 22. Gen. Howe embarks with an army for Chesapeak Bay. ii. 108.
- Sir John Collier repulsed in an attack on Machias. iii. 146.
- Aug. Fort Stanwix besieged by Sir John Johnson; Gen. Harkermer marches to its relief; and has an action with the enemy near Oneida-creek. ii. 108.
- Aug. 16. Battle of Bennington. ii. 29. 109. iii. 244. vi. 170.
- Aug. Fort Stanwix attacked by Col. St. Leger, who soon retreats from the fort. ii. 112.
- Aug. 22. Gen. Sullivan undertakes an expedition to Staten-Island. ii. 112.
- Aug. 25. Lord Howe arrives with his fleet from New-York at the mouth of Elk-river. ii. 113.
- Aug. 26. Part of the royal army advances to the head of the Elk. ii. 113. vi. 168.
- Aug. 30. Gen. Washington marches with the main body of his army through Philadelphia, and encamps at Wilmington. ii. 113.
- Sep. 1. The royal army at this time consists of 27,000 men. ii. 113.
- Sep. 3. Skirmish between a part of the royal army and some of the light advanced corps of the Americans. ii. 114.
- Sep. 9. Gen. Washington moves with his troops to Newport, three miles below Wilmington. ii. 114.
- Sep. 11. Battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. vi. 168.
- Sep. 13 and 14. Gen. Burgoyne passes the Hudson, and encamps at Saratoga. ii. 116.
- Sep. 17. The northern army advances in three columns, and takes post near Stillwater. ii. 116. vi. 170.
- Sep. 19. Battle of Behmus's heights. ii. 25. 116. 124. vi. 170.
- Sep. Col. Brown detached from the northern army to attack the enemy at the landing of Lake George. ii. 117.
- Sep. Congress removes to York-town. ii. 117.
- Sep. Skirmish between the outposts of the continental and royal army near the Warren Tavern. ii. 117.
- Sep. 27. Royal army takes possession of Philadelphia. ii. 117. vi. 168.
- Oct. 4. Battle of Germantown. ii. 118. vi. 168.
- Oct. 5. British troops storm and take Forts Montgomery and Clinton on Hudson's river. ii. 118. vi. 171.
- Oct. 7. Battle of Stillwater. ii. 121. 124. vi. 170.
- Oct. 11. Gen. Burgoyne begins to retire towards Lake George. vi. 170.
- Oct. 13. Gen. Burgoyne encamps at Saratoga. vi. 171.
- Oct. 15. Kingston, *Æopos*, burnt by the royalists. ii. 122.
- Oct. 16. Northern army consists of 13,216 men, fit for duty. ii. 125.
- Oct. 17. Convention of Saratoga: Burgoyne's whole army surrenders. ii. 123. iii. 245. vi. 171.
- Oct. 22. Hessians under Count Donop repulsed in an attack on Red-Bank. ii. 126. vi. 169.
- Oct. 26. Projected expedition against Rhode-Island given up by a council of war. ii. 127.
- Nov. Two British ships of war burnt in the Delaware. ii. 127. vi. 169.

- Nov. First public tax levied by Congress. ii. 127.
- Nov. 16. Fort Mifflin on Mud-Island evacuated by the Continental garrison. ii. 128.
- Nov. 18. Fort Mercer at Red-Bank evacuated by the Continental garrison, and the Continental ships burnt. ii. 129.
- Dec. American army goes into winter quarters at Valley-Forge. ii. 130. vi. 169.
- Dec. 6. Howe's army marches from Philadelphia as far as Cheesnut-hill, above Germantown: skirmishing takes place between the piquets of his and Washington's army. ii. 130.
- Dec. Lord Howe sails with his fleet from the Delaware to New-York. ii. 130.
- Dec. 12. American Commissioners in France, in a letter to Lord North, charge the British officers with inhumanity to American prisoners. ii. 132.
- Dec. Congress forms the plan of Confederation between the United States. ii. 132.
- Number of royal troops employed in America this year amounts to 50,000 men. ii. 133.
1778. Jan. 29. Gen. Washington recommends to Congress a half-pay establishment for the officers of the American army. ii. 132.
- Feb. John Adams, appointed by Congress to reside in France in a public character, embarks from America. ii. 133.
- Feb. 6. Treaty of alliance between France and the United States signed. ii. 134. iii. 245.
- Feb. 17. Lord North proposes the Conciliatory Acts to Parliament. ii. 134.
- March. Congress resolves that the prisoners of the enemy shall be treated in the same manner as the American prisoners are by the British. ii. 134.
- Ap. 19. Treaty of alliance between France and the United States arrives in America. ii. 134. vi. 171.
- May 9. Congress addresses its constituents on the subject of the Conciliatory Acts. ii. 136.
- May. British troops burn a number of houses at Bristol and Warren. ii. 138.
- May 15. Congress votes half-pay to the officers, and a bounty of eighty dollars to the soldiers, to take place at the end of the war. ii. 138.
- June 4. Congress, having recom-
- mended regulating laws, now recommends to the several States to suspend or repeal them. ii. 158.
- June 5. British Commissioners under the Conciliatory Acts arrive in America. ii. 139. vi. 172.
- June 9. Gen. Washington forwards a letter to Congress from the British Commissioners. ii. 140.
- June 17. Congress returns an answer to the letter of the British Commissioners. ii. 140.
- June 17. Admiral Keppel takes three French frigates. ii. 141.
- June 19. Philadelphia evacuated by the British troops. ii. 141. vi. 172.
- June 28. Battle of Monmouth. ii. 142. vi. 172.
- June 28. King of France issues orders for making reprisals on England. ii. 145.
- July 9. Confederation of the United States formed. iii. 245.
- July 10. Count D'Estaing arrives on the coast of America with the French fleet and 4,000 troops. ii. 145. vi. 172.
- July. Congress returns to Philadelphia. ii. 146.
- July. Inhabitants of Wyoming massacred. ii. 147.
- July 29. King of Great-Britain issues orders to seize French property. ii. 148.
- Aug. Part of New-York burnt. ii. 148.
- Aug. 9. American troops under Gen. Sullivan land on Rhode-Island. ii. 148. vi. 173.
- Aug. 10. Lord Howe with the British fleet appears off the mouth of Newport harbour: Count D'Estaing puts out of the harbour after him: a storm arises: he proceeds to Boston, and arrives there the 28th. ii. 149. vi. 173.
- Aug. 29. Battle of Rhode-Island. ii. 149. vi. 173.
- Aug. 30. Gen. Sullivan retreats from Rhode-Island. ii. 150. vi. 173.
- Sep. 6. New-Bedford burnt by Gen. Gray. ii. 151. iv. 236.
- Sep. Houses at the German flats burnt by the royalists. ii. 152.
- Sep. 28. Part of Col. Baylor's regiment of horse surprised and cut to pieces by a party of the royalists. ii. 152.
- Oct. Last manifesto of the British Commissioners published. ii. 153.
- Oct. 30. Congress publishes a reply to the manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 154.

1778. Oct. The Somerset man of war shipwrecked on Cape Cod. ii. 154.  
 Nov. 5. Count D'Estaing with the French fleet sails from Boston to the West-Indies. ii. 154. vi. 173.  
 Nov. 27. Col. Campbell sails from New-York on an expedition to Georgia. ii. 154. vi. 173.  
 Dec. 3. Col. Campbell arrives in Georgia. ii. 154. vi. 173.  
 Dec. 11. Cherry-Valley destroyed by the royalists. ii. 156.  
 Dec. 29. Col. Campbell defeats Gen. Howe, and obtains possession of Savannah. ii. 155. ix. 158.  
 Dec. British troops in Georgia take possession of Ebenezer. ii. 155.  
 Dec. Gen. Washington cantons his troops in New-Jersey, Peck's-kill, and Connecticut, during the winter. ii. 158. vi. 174.  
 1779. Jan. Congress resolves, that the United States will not conclude peace with Great-Britain without the formal consent of France first obtained. ii. 160.  
 Jan. The British commanders in Georgia issue a proclamation, inviting the loyalists to join their standard: many of them, attempting to comply with the proclamation, are intercepted by the Continental troops. ii. 163.  
 Action at Port-Royal Island between Col. Skirving's regiment and the British light infantry. ii. 163.  
 Action near Beaufort between Gen. Moultrie and a detachment of the royalists. ii. 163.  
 Feb. 14. Action in Georgia between Col. Pickens and a body of the loyalists. ii. 163.  
 Feb. 16. Gen. Williamson destroys the boats constructed by Col. Campbell to cross Savannah river, and forces him to retreat. ii. 163.  
 Feb. The British cruisers having taken several Dutch ships bound to France, the Ambassador in London demands their restitution. ii. 160.  
 Feb. 24. Col. Henry Hamilton surrenders Fort Sackville to Col. Clarke. ii. 161.  
 Skirmish at Horse-Neck between Gen. Putnam and a detachment of the royal troops. ii. 161.  
 A detachment of the royalists attempting to surprise Elizabethtown, has a skirmish with Gen. Maxwell's troops quartered there. ii. 162.  
 March. Dr. Franklin recommends to American cruisers to treat Capt. Cook as a friend, if they should meet him at sea: Dr. Kippis, in his

life of Capt. Cook, asserts that these orders were instantly reversed by Congress: proofs that this assertion is false. iv. 79—85. 156. Dr. Kippis acknowledges that he was misinformed. v. 5.

March. Creek Indians attempting to join the royalists in Georgia, a party is detached into the Indian country: in consequence of which the enemy abandons its fort. ii. 164.

March. An action in Georgia between the Carolina loyalists and a detachment of the Continental troops. ii. 164.

Ap. 7. Onondago settlements destroyed by Continental troops under Col. Van Skaick. ii. 164.

May 2. The French, under the Prince of Nassau, make a descent on the island of Jersey. ii. 172.

May. Royal troops take the fort at Portsmouth, Virginia, destroy several houses and a number of vessels. ii. 164.

May. Royal troops burn Suffolk in Virginia. ii. 165.

May. British troops, under Gen. Prevost, approach Charleston. May 10. Cross Ashley-river. May 13. Recross the river. June 20. Part of Prevost's army entrenched at Stono-ferry, under Lieut. Col. Maitland, attacked by Continental troops. Prevost's troops retire to Savannah. ii. 166—168. vi. 174.

May 28. Congress chooses a Committee, to consider the most eligible mode of negotiating a foreign loan. ii. 165.

June. Fort La Fayette, on the east side of Hudson's river, taken by the royalists. ii. 166.

June. British troops from Halifax, under Gen. MacLane and Commodore Barclay, take possession of Penobscot. ii. 171. iii. 147.

July 6. Count D'Estaing defeats Admiral Byron in the West-Indies. ii. 178. vi. 176.

July 5. British troops, under Sir George Collier and Gov. Tryon, plunder New-Haven. ii. 169.

July 7. Burn Fairfield. ii. 169. iii. 103—106. x. 189. July 12. Burn Norwalk. ii. 169. Another body of troops burns Bedford in the State of New-York. ii. 169. vi. 174.

July 16. Gen. Wayne storms the fort at Stony-Point. ii. 170. vi. 175.

July 19. Fort at Paulus-hook taken by Major Lee. ii. 171. vi. 175.

Aug. 1. Gen. Sullivan marches on an expedition against the In-

- dians on the Susquehannah. Aug. 29. Obtains a victory over them at Newton. Sep. Burns forty towns, and destroys a great quantity of corn and many fruit trees. ii. 175—178.
- Aug. 14. Expedition from Boston against Penobscot proves unsuccessful, and the American fleet is burnt. ii. 172. vi. 175.
- Aug. 25. Admiral Arbuthnot arrives at New-York with a reinforcement for the royal army. ii. 172. vi. 176.
- Sep. 5. Count D'Estaing arrives with his fleet off Savannah. ii. 179. vi. 184.
- Sep. 13. Congress addresses its constituents on the subject of the national debt. ii. 172.
- Sep. 28. Congress appoints John Jay Minister Plenipotentiary at the Court of Madrid. ii. 175.
- Oct. 9. Americans under Gen. Lincoln, and French under Count D'Estaing, repulsed in an attack on Savannah. ii. 179. vi. 184.
- Oct. 25. Newport evacuated by the British troops. ii. 180. vi. 184.
- Nov. The American army goes into winter quarters at Baskinridge. ii. 181.
- Dec. 26. Sir Henry Clinton embarks on an expedition against South-Carolina. ii. 182.
1780. Jan. Expedition against Staten-Island, under Lord Stirling, fails of success. ii. 182.
- Mar. 21. Sir Joseph Yorke presents a memorial to the States General on the subject of succours claimed by England. ii. 183.
- Mar. Capt. J. Paul Jones takes an English frigate and another ship, and carries them into Holland. ii. 183. This and various proceedings of the Dutch give umbrage to the English; in consequence of which the alliance between the two governments is dissolved, Ap. 17th. ii. 183.
- Mar. New emission money recommended by Congress. ii. 184.
- May 2. Congress passes a new form of a commission for private vessels of war. iv. 166.
- May 12. Charleston, South-Carolina, is surrendered to the British troops. ii. 184.
- May 19. Remarkable dark day in the northern part of the United States. i. 96.
- May 29. Col. Tarleton defeats Col. Buford. ii. 186.
- June. Sir Henry Clinton returns to New-York. ii. 187.
- June. Part of Elizabeth-town burnt by the British troops. ii. 187.
- June 23. Springfield in New-Jersey burnt by the British troops. ii. 188.
- July. Eleven French ships of war and six thousand troops arrive at Newport. ii. 188.
- Aug. 6. Col. Sumpter kills and takes near 300 of the enemy at Hanging-rock. ii. 189.
- Aug. 16. Battle of Camden. ii. 190.
- Aug. 18. Col. Sumpter defeated at Wateree. ii. 191.
- Aug. 24. Congress extends the benefit of half-pay to the widows of officers. ii. 189.
- Sep. 25. Gen. Arnold's plot, to deliver up West-Point, discovered. ii. 192.
- Oct. 2. Major Andre executed as a spy. ii. 196.
- Oct. 6. Henry Laurens, late President of Congress, committed to the Tower of London. ii. 196.
- Oct. Gen. Leslie proceeds with his troops on an expedition to the Chesapeak. ii. 197.
- Oct. Col. Clark takes Augusta in Georgia. ii. 198.
- Oct. 7. Col. William Campbell defeats Major Ferguson at King's Mountain. ii. 198.
- Oct. Congress makes a new arrangement of the American army. ii. 196.
- Oct. 19. Action between Gen. Van Renselaer and Sir John Johnson at Fox's Mills. ii. 197.
- Oct. Captains of American Privateers, taken by the enemy, sent prisoners to England. ii. 199.
- Oct. Gen. Greene appointed to succeed Gen. Gates in South-Carolina. ii. 199.
- Oct. 11. Gen. Washington recommends to Congress to allow half-pay to officers during life. ii. 199.
- Oct. Congress resolves, that officers who continue in the service to the end of the war shall be entitled to half-pay during life. ii. 200.
- Constitution of Massachusetts completed. iii. 245. iv. 203. viii. 281.
- Nov. Academy of Arts and Sciences in Massachusetts instituted. iii. 274.
- Nov. 20. Gen. Sumpter defeats the enemy at Black Forks. ii. 200.
- Nov. A party of the enemy surrenders to Col. Washington. ii. 201.
- Dec. 16. Col. Tarleton's legion repulsed at Ninety-six. ii. 201.

1780. Dec. King of Great-Britain orders general reprisals on Holland. ii. 201.  
 Dec. Col. Washington defeats a body of Georgia royalists. ii. 201.  
 Dec. Continental army under General Washington goes into winter quarters on Hudson's river. ii. 201.  
 The population of the Creeks, Chactaws, Chicasaws, Cherokees, and Catawbas, is 42,033. iv. 99.  
 The Mohawks forsake their ancient villages on the Mohawk river. v. 20.
1781. Jan. 5. Congress resolves that retaliation be exercised on British prisoners. ii. 202.  
 Jan. A number of troops embark at New-York for Virginia, under Gen. Arnold. ii. 203.  
 Jan. Mutiny in the Pennsylvania line of the Continental army. ii. 203.  
 Jan. 12. Holland declares war against England. ii. 203.  
 Jan. 17. Battle of Cowpens. ii. 203.  
 Jan. Party of Continental militia under Gen. Davidson defeated at M'Cowen's Ford. ii. 205.  
 Feb. 9. M. Tilly with three French ships takes the greatest part of the fleet, which had accompanied Gen. Arnold to the Chesapeake. ii. 205.  
 March 1. Maryland ratifies the plan of Confederation. ii. 132.  
 March 5. Engagement between the French fleet under Admiral D'Estouches, and the British under Admiral Arbuthnot. ii. 206.  
 March 15. Battle of Guilford Court-House. ii. 206.  
 Ap. British troops under Gen. Phillips arrive at Virginia from New-York. ii. 210.  
 Ap. 25. Action at Waxhaws between Gen. Greene and Lord Rawdon. ii. 209.  
 May 11. Orangeburg is surrendered to Gen. Sumpter. ii. 212.  
 May 12. Gen. Marion takes fort Motte. ii. 212.  
 May 14. Col. Lee takes fort Granby. ii. 212.  
 May 14. Col. Christopher Greene surprised by the enemy near Croten river. ii. 210.  
 May. Congress establishes a National Bank at Philadelphia. ii. 211.  
 May. Admiral DeBarras, appointed to command the French fleet at Newport, arrives at Boston. ii. 211.
- May. Fifteen hundred French recruits arrive at Boston. ii. 211.  
 June. Lord Cornwallis enters Virginia. ii. 213.  
 June 18. Gen. Greene repulsed in an attempt to storm Ninety-six. ii. 212.  
 June 26. Action near Williamsburg between an advanced corps of Marquis de LaFayette and the British. ii. 213.  
 July 3. Action at Spicken-devil between Col. Scammell and a party of the enemy. ii. 213.  
 July 6. Action at James-town church between Gen. Wayne and the British. ii. 213.  
 Aug. 3. Col. Hayne executed at Charleston. ii. 215.  
 Aug. Royal army at New-York reinforced with 3000 German troops. ii. 217.  
 Aug. Lord Cornwallis establishes his posts at York-town and Gloucester. ii. 220.  
 Aug. 26. Count De Grasse arrives off Chesapeake-bay with thirty-four sail of French men of war. ii. 217.  
 Sep. Count De Grasse's fleet joined by eight sail of men of war from Newport. ii. 221.  
 Sep. 6. Gen. Arnold burns part of New-London and Groton. ii. 217.  
 Sep. British fleet at New-York reinforced with thirteen ships of the line, four frigates, and two fire-ships. ii. 218.  
 Sep. 7. Battle between the French and British fleets off Cape Henry. ii. 221.  
 Sep. 8. Battle of Eutaw Springs. ii. 218. ix. 105.  
 Sep. 25. Admiral Digby arrives at New-York with four ships of war. ii. 220.  
 Oct. Col. Willet routs a party of the enemy in Tryon county. ii. 220.  
 Oct. 15. Baron Viomenil and Marquis de LaFayette storm two redoubts of the British at York-town. ii. 222. ix. 106.  
 Oct. 16. Col. Abercrombie attacks the line of the besiegers at York-town. ii. 222.  
 Oct. 19. Cornwallis and army at York-town surrender prisoners of war. ii. 222. iii. 246. ix. 107.  
 Dec. 23. Thanksgiving throughout the United States for the victory at York-town. ii. 226.  
 Dec. Paper money went out of circulation. ii. 226.  
 Exeter Academy founded. iv. 96.

1782. March. Military operations suspended at New-York. ii. 226.  
 March. Act passed in the British Parliament, to enable the King to conclude a peace and truce with the American Colonies. ii. 226.  
 March. British ministry changed. ii. 226.  
 Ap. 12. Rodney defeats Count de Grasse in the West Indies. ii. 225.  
 Ap. Capt. Huddy hanged by a party of refugees. ii. 226.  
 Ap. 19. Holland recognizes the independence of the United States, and admits John Adams as minister plenipotentiary. ii. 228.  
 May. New-Providence and the other Bahamas surrendered to Spain. ii. 229.  
 May 21. Gen. Wayne defeats a party of the British near Savannah. ii. 229.  
 May. Gen. Leslie, British commander in Carolina, proposes to Gen. Greene a cessation of arms. ii. 230.  
 June 12. Congress passes an act against trading with the enemy. ii. 231.  
 June 24. Gen. Wayne attacked by a body of Cherokee Indians at Sharon near Savannah. ii. 232.  
 June 26. Mutiny among the continental troops at Philadelphia; in consequence of which Congress removes to Princeton. ii. 231.  
 July 21. British evacuate Savannah. ii. 232.  
 Aug. 27. Col. Lawrens, the last officer of note slain in the American war, killed in a skirmish with the enemy. ii. 233.  
 Aug. 29. Gen. Marion repulses a party of horse at Biggin's Bridge. ii. 233.  
 Oct. 7. Treaty of commerce signed in Holland between the Dutch provinces and the United States. ii. 233.  
 Nov. 30. Provisional articles of peace between the United States and Great Britain signed at Paris. ii. 234. iii. 245.  
 Dec. 14. British evacuate South-Carolina. ii. 234.  
 1783. Jan. 20. Treaty of peace between France and Great Britain signed. ii. 234.  
 Jan. The officers of the American army present an address to Congress on the subject of arrears of pay. ii. 234.  
 Jan. 25. Congress passes resolves on the subject of the pay of the army. ii. 235.

- March 10. Anonymous papers, addressed to the officers, &c. appear in camp. ii. 236.  
 March 15. A convention of officers assembled by Gen. Washington on the subject of the anonymous papers. ii. 236.  
 March 22. Congress votes five years full pay as a commutation for half-pay to the officers of the American army. ii. 238.  
 Mar. State of the debt of the United States. ii. 240.  
 Ap. 11. Congress recommends an impost of 5 per cent. ii. 240.  
 May. Cincinnati Society instituted. iii. 274.  
 May 26. Congress resolves that the non-commissioned officers and soldiers be permitted to retire on furlough. ii. 241.  
 June 21. Gen. Greene takes leave of the army which he had commanded in Carolina. ii. 242.  
 Aug. 7. Congress resolves to erect an equestrian statue of Gen. Washington. ii. 242.  
 Aug. 26. Gen. Washington attends Congress, and receives the united thanks of the representatives. ii. 242.  
 Sep. Treaty of peace between Great Britain and Holland signed. ii. 234.  
 Sep. 3. Definitive treaty of peace between Great Britain and the United States signed. ii. 243. iii. 245.  
 Oct. 18. Congress issues a proclamation to disband the American army after the 3d of Nov. ii. 243.  
 Nov. 3. Gen. Washington takes leave of the American army. ii. 243.  
 Nov. 25. British army evacuates New-York. ii. 243.  
 Dec. 25. Gen. Washington resigns his commission to Congress. ii. 244.  
 A white man, in Massachusetts, tried and found guilty of beating a negro, who had been his slave: the complete abolition of slavery may be fixed at this period. iv. 203. 206.  
 Constitution of New-Hampshire established. iv. 204.  
 Shelburne and Digby in Nova-Scotia settled. iii. 96.  
 Imports and exports of Quebec. vi. 60—62.  
 1784. Feb. 7. Massachusetts Bank, the first in Boston, established. iii. 275.  
 372 vessels entered at the port of Boston, and 450 cleared out, for six months. iii. 288.

1784. Number of inhabitants in Massachusetts at this period. iv. 198.  
 Number of inhabitants in Canada at this period. vi. 49. 53.  
 Imports and exports of Quebec. vi. 50—52.  
 Nova-Scotia divided into four separate governments, viz. Nova-Scotia, New-Brunswick, St. John's, and Sydney. iii. 96.
1785. Oct. 5. Thirty persons assemble at Falmouth, on the subject of erecting Maine into a separate government: they request the several towns to send delegates to a convention to meet in Jan. 1786. iv. 27. 35.  
 Imports and exports of Quebec. vi. 50—52.
1786. Jan. 4. A convention assembles at Falmouth, on the subject of erecting Maine into a separate government. iv. 27. 35.  
 June 19. Charles river bridge completed. iii. 245.  
 Sep. 6. A second convention assembles at Portland, on the subject of erecting Maine into a separate government. iv. 30. 38.  
 Insurrection in Massachusetts. iii. 152. 169. iv. 299. viii. 91. 100. 106. 108. ix. 267.  
 An attempt is made in the council of Quebec to introduce the English laws. vi. 50.  
 A General Governour appointed over the British provinces in America. iii. 102. vi. 55.  
 Exports and imports of Quebec. vi. 56—59. 60—62.  
 Mr. M. departs from Montreal to the Lake of the Woods, passes through several nations of Indians, and proceeds as far as the Shining Mountains. iii. 24.
1787. Ap. 18. The value of British property, and the number of British subjects in Quebec. vi. 55.  
 Ap. 24. A great fire in Boston. iii. 272.  
 Sep. 17. Convention of delegates from the several States reports the new Constitution of Government for the United States. ii. 132. iii. 245. viii. 91.
1788. Slave trade prohibited by the legislatures of Rhode-Island and Connecticut. iv. 205.  
 Mar. 26. Slave trade prohibited by the legislature of Massachusetts. iv. 197. 205.  
 Sep. 24. Essex Bridge, between Salem and Beverly, completed. vi. 229.  
 A Roman Catholick church formed in Boston. iii. 264.
- Manufacture of Cards by newly invented machines begun in Boston. iii. 279. iv. 207.
1789. March. Government of the United States, under the new Constitution, first meets at New-York. ii. 132.  
 Ap. 30. Washington inaugurated President of the United States. iii. 245.
1790. Aug. 4. Publick Debt of the United States funded. iii. 245.  
 Number of inhabitants in Massachusetts at this period. iv. 199.  
 The Slug-worm first observed in the gardens of Massachusetts. v. 251.  
 The Counties of Hancock and Washington contain 21 incorporated towns, beside several plantations, but only three ordained ministers. iv. 153.  
 A General Convention of the Universalists holden at Philadelphia. x. 72.  
 Sunday Schools established in Philadelphia. iii. 267.
1791. Jan. 24. Massachusetts Historical Society instituted. viii. 102. 282.  
 Ap. 19. Capt. Joseph Ingraham discovers seven Islands in the South Pacifick Ocean. ii. 20.  
 Oct. A Free School opened at Williamstown: this lays the foundation of Williams College. viii. 50.  
 Nov. 4. Gen. St. Clair defeated by the Indians at the Miami. i. 287. iii. 26.
1792. The number of Indians in Massachusetts at this period. i. 195. 201. 206. 207. 211.  
 Fifty thousand barrels of beef and pork shipped from Boston. iii. 287.
1793. Mar. 6. Capt. James Magee discovers six Islands in the North Pacifick Ocean. iv. 261.  
 June. Williams College incorporated. viii. 50.  
 Church of Universalists established in Boston. iii. 264.  
 West-Boston Bridge completed. iii. 246. vii. 4.  
 376 vessels entered at the port of Boston, and 292 cleared out. iii. 288.
1794. Feb. 3. The first Theatre erected in Boston opened. iii. 255.  
 Feb. 19. Massachusetts Historical Society incorporated. iii. 274. iv. 1.  
 May 17. Uncommon Frost in the County of Worcester, Massachusetts. iv. 44.



in Boston.

the United  
ions. v. 23.

the militia of  
visionally de-  
prehension of  
Britain. viii.

Miami. x.

ay. First  
Williams

ormed at  
ush, in the  
entire. iv.

Act passed by the  
of New-York for the re-  
e Indians who are entitled  
in Brotherton. v. 27. vi.

only. State of the Oneida, Stock-  
ridge, and Brotherton Indians at  
his period. v. 12.

In the district comprehended be-  
tween the Oneida Reservation and  
the Mohawk river, above the Ger-  
man flats, there were in 1785 two  
families only; but now there are  
six parishes, three full regiments of  
militia, and one corps of light horse.  
v. 21.

Number of the Six Nations at  
this period. v. 23.

1797. Feb. State of the Natick Indi-  
ans at this period. v. 32.

Amos Whittemore of Cambridge  
invents a Card Machine. vii. 3.

1799. Fourteen Newspapers are pub-  
lished in Connecticut at this time.  
vi. 77.

Dec. 12. Columbians proposed  
as the national name of the citizens  
of the United States. vi. 149.

Dec. 14. Gen. Washington dies.  
viii. 93. 102.

Imports and exports of New-  
foundland. vii. 219.

1800. The Cow-pock was introduced  
into America by Professor Water-  
house. vii. 38.

Dec. 19. Shock of an Earthquake  
in the western parts of New-Hamp-  
shire. ix. 233.

1801. Mar. 1. Earthquake in the  
Northern parts of New-England.  
ix. 233.

1802. Feb. 21. Earthquake in the  
vicinity of Kennebeck river. ix.  
234.

Sep. 136 Salt-works in the coun-  
ty of Barnstable at this time, be-  
side others in different parts of  
Massachusetts. viii. 138.

Few Indians are now left in New-  
England. viii. 175.

1803. Sep. Number of the Moheagan  
Indians at this time. ix. 76.

Oct. Number of the Penobscot  
Indians at this time. ix. 210.

A GENERAL INDEX TO THE TEN VOLUMES.

A.

Abbot, Benjamin. iv. 96.

Abbot's Cove. vi. 216.

Abel, Indian preacher. x. 131. 132.

Abel, Nehemiah. iii. 150.

Abenague, Indians. ix. 210.

Abercrombie, Col. ii. 222.

Abercrombie, Gen. lands at New-York,  
vii. 150. At Albany. vi. 35.

Abingdon, Lord, opposed to the Amer-  
ican War. ii. 67. Supports Earl of  
Chatham's motion for an accommoda-  
tion with America. ii. 103. Proteats  
against the Manifesto of the British  
Commissioners. ii. 157.

Abinohkie Indians. x. 123.

Academy of Arts and Sciences institu-  
ted. iii. 274.

Acadians, French, number of, in Nova-  
Scotia in 1764. x. 82.

Acadie Indians. x. 116.

Acadie, Indian Chiefs in. x. 116.

Acamenticus: see Agamenticus.

Acchusnutt, New-Bedford. iv. 232.

Accomintas, Indians. i. 149.

Accord Pond. i. 100.

Ackland, Major. ii. 122.

Acorn Brook. vi. 214.

Acorns eaten by the Indians. i. 150.  
iii. 220. viii. 216, 233.

Acquiunk Falls. ix. 80.

Acton Incorporated. i. 237.

Acushnet, or Acchusnutt, Indian village.  
i. 200. x. 130.

Adair, James. ix. 94.

Adamhegan, Indian. ix. 234.

Adams, —, of Nova-Scotia. vi. 121.

Adams, Eliphalet. x. 170.

Adams, Hugo. x. 71.

Adams, James. ix. 158.

Adams, Jeremy. vii. 10.

Adams, John, poet. iii. 300.

- Adams, John, holds a Conference with Lord Howe. ii. 75. Appointed to collect evidence of the facts respecting the Evacuation of Ticonderoga. ii. 107. Sent to the Court of France. ii. 133. Minister Plenipotentiary to Holland. ii. 228. Concludes a Treaty with Holland. ii. 233. Negotiates Peace with Great-Britain. ii. 234. Author of the Dissertation on the Feudal and Canon Law. v. 212. x. 187. Writes in the Boston Gazette. vi. 70. Author of Novanglus. vi. 72. Vice-President of the United States. ii. 132. Addressed by the inhabitants of Marblehead. viii. 61. President of the United States. viii. 100. F. H. S. x. 192.
- Adams, John, Minister of Durham. v. 211.
- Adams, John Quincy. x. 192.
- Adams, Joseph. x. 69. 70.
- Adams, Matthew. iii. 300. v. 211.
- Adams, Samuel, Patriot of 1775. v. 106. Chosen on a Committee to answer the Letter of the British Commissioners. ii. 140. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 195.
- Adams's Island discovered. ii. 21.
- Adams, William. ix. 193.
- Adultery in women, Indian mode of punishing. ix. 83.
- Æsopus burnt. ii. 122.
- African Lodge of black Masons. iv. 210.
- African Slavery will probably be abolished in the United States. iii. 165.
- Agamenticus, Protest of the Inhabitants of. i. 101. Indian name of York. iii. 8. Mountain described. iii. 11.
- Agawam, Ipswich. vii. 13.
- Agawam River, in Wareham. i. 231.
- Agawome, or Agawam, Indians. i. 149.
- Ager, Sir Anthony. ix. 51.
- Agnew, Gen. in the Expedition to Danbury. ii. 95. Wounded. ii. 96. Killed. ii. 121.
- Agowaywam, or Agawam, Indians. viii. 262.
- Agriculture of the Indians. i. 149. iii. 208. 221. ix. 100.
- Aham, Charles, Indian Schoolmaster. x. 130. Preacher. x. 134.
- Ahanquid, Eastern Indian. vi. 112.
- Ahawton, Indian Preacher. i. 184.
- Ahyosupsuck Pond. ix. 80.
- Aigieomock River. iv. 183.
- Ainsworth, Author of Psalms. viii. 10. ix. 16.
- Air of New-England described. i. 108. 120. 121. 127. 249. ii. 6. iii. 13. 120. 153. See Climate.
- Aix-la-Chapelle, Peace of. vii. 70. ix. 219. 224.
- Albany, Indian name of. ix. 100. Called by the Dutch Fort Oranje. i. 156. 160. English language very little spoken in, in 1745. i. 76. Described. iv. 58. vii. 125.
- Albermarle Sound. iii. 85. 86.
- Alcock, Mrs. viii. 40.
- Alden, Col. of Duxborough. ii. 156.
- Alden, David. ii. 6.
- Alden, Isaiah. v. 59.
- Alden, John. ii. 6. viii. 120.
- Alden, Martin. v. 59. ix. 234.
- Alden, Samuel. ii. 5. 6.
- Alden, Timothy, of Yarmouth. v. 60.
- Alden, Timothy, of Portsmouth. v. 59. x. 57. F. H. S. x. 192.
- Alderman, an Indian, shoots King Philip. iii. 171.
- Alderton, Point, takes its name from Isaac Allerton. viii. 231. Its distance from Boston. iii. 298.
- Alewife. viii. 3.
- Alexander, —, Counsellor of New-York. vii. 143.
- Alexander, William, Geographer. vii. 136.
- Alexander, Sir William, receives a grant of Nova-Scotia. iii. 95. vi. 131. 186.
- Algonkins. ix. 92.
- Alister's Run. vi. 214.
- Allan, Col. iii. 147.
- Alleghany River. iii. 22.
- Alleghany Mountains. iii. 21.
- Allen, —, Minister of Dedham. v. 259. x. 26.
- Allen, Echan, surprises Ticonderoga. ii. 49. Taken prisoner. ii. 58.
- Allen, James, Minister. iii. 257. vi. (5.) ix. 193. 194. Author. iii. 300.
- Allen, John, Secretary of Connecticut. iv. 222. Commissioner of the United Colonies. v. 229. Magistrate of Connecticut. v. 235.
- Allen, Matthew. vii. 10.
- Allen, Moses. ix. 157.
- Allerton, Isaac, visits Massasoit. viii. 231. Assistant in Plymouth Colony. viii. 249. iii. 35. 42. Agent from Plymouth. iii. 46. 48. 58. 59. 68. 69. 70. Sets up a trading house at Machias. iii. 145.
- Alliance, Treaty of, between France and the United States. ii. 134. iii. 245. vi. 171.
- Allum Pond. ix. 130.
- Allyn, or Allen, Minister of Dedham. x. 14.
- Allyn, John, Minister. ii. 8. F. H. S. x. 191.
- Almanack, the first, published in America. vi. 232. vii. 19.
- Almy, Col. v. 195. Anecdote of. ix. 204.
- Amarascoggin River. iii. 141. 142.
- America, Bill for regulating Charter and Proprietary Governments in. vii. 220.
- American War commences. ii. 48.

- American War, History of. ii. 41. vi. 154.
- Americus Vesputius. vi. 152.
- Ames, Dr. Author of *Medulla Theologica*. vii. 40.
- Ames, Fisher, Counsel for David Avery. v. 51. Fellow student with George R. Minot. viii. 89.
- Amherst, —, Counsellor of Nova-Scotia. vi. 122.
- Amherst, Gen. vi. 54.
- Amshot Harbour. iii. 99.
- Anasaguntacooks, Indians on Brunswick River. ix. 210. Treaty with. ix. 220. Join the Canadians. ix. 226.
- Anderson, Robert. x. 192.
- André, Major, taken prisoner. ii. 193. Executed as a spy. ii. 195.
- Andrews, John. vii. 66.
- Andrews, Thomas, Lord Mayor. x. 27.
- Andrews, St. in New-Brunswick. iii. 100.
- Andros, Sir Edmund, Governour of New-York. iv. 221. Of Massachusetts. iii. 194. v. 272. Gov. General of New-England. v. 220. Threatens to shut up the doors of a meeting-house in Boston. iii. 259. Made prisoner by the people. iii. 243. Removed by the king. ix. 246. Gov. of Virginia. v. 124. 142. Suspends a Counsellor. v. 145.
- Androscoggins, Indians. ix. 210.
- Angier, Samuel. vii. 60.
- Animals, methods of preserving. iv. 8. 10.
- Annan, David. iii. 262.
- Annapolis County in Nova-Scotia. x. 81.
- Annapolis Royal, French plan an expedition against. i. 24.
- Annapolis River and Gut. iii. 97.
- Annapolis, Town. iii. 96. 98.
- Anonymous papers, addressed to the officers, &c., appear in the American Camp. ii. 236.
- Anse du Point Plat. i. 6.
- Ant in Demerary. vi. 1.
- Anthony, Indian Preacher. i. 184. x. 136. ix. 198.
- Anthony, Lieut. Indian. viii. 169.
- Antigonish River. iii. 97.
- Antinomian Controversy in Massachusetts. viii. 7. ix. 26. 49.
- Antiquities, Indian, in America, observations on. iv. 100. 106.
- Apaumut, Hendrick, Sachem. v. 14. 22.
- Appalachian Mountains. x. 120.
- Apple, wild, in New-York. ix. 122.
- Appledore, Town. vii. 246.
- Apple Island. iii. 295.
- Appleton, John, Counsellor. vii. 59. Colonel. x. 68.
- Appleton, Nathaniel, of Cambridge, ordained vii. 32. Charges Peter Thacher. viii. 280. Preaches at the Funeral of Henry Flint. ix. 183. Dies. vii. 37. Memoirs of. vii. 69. Character. x. 168.
- Appleton, Nathaniel, of Boston. vii. 62. writes against the slave trade. iv. 201.
- Appleton, Samuel. v. 207.
- Appomattox Creek. iii. 85.
- Apooon, food prepared from Indian corn. v. 55.
- Apthorp, East. vii. 34.
- Apthorp's Island. iii. 295.
- Aquetneck, Rhode-Island, purchased. v. 216.
- Arawcas, Indians. vi. 14.
- Arbuthnot, Lieut. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 102. Admiral, arrives at New-York. ii. 172. vi. 176. Sails with men of war and transports to Charleston. ii. 182. Charleston is surrendered to him and Gen. Clinton. ii. 184. Appears off Newport Harbour. ii. 188. Engages the French Fleet under M. D'Estouchee. ii. 206. Returns to England. ii. 215.
- Ardois Mountain. iii. 97.
- Aresaguntacook Indians, Peace made with. vi. 117.
- Argyle in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96.
- Armand, Col. ii. 190.
- Armstrong, Capt. ii. 207.
- Armstrong, Gen. ii. 119.
- Armstrong, John. vii. 197.
- Armstrong, Lawrence, Counsellor in Nova-Scotia. vi. 121. Lieut. Gov. vi. 124.
- Army, American, address Congress. ii. 234. Resolves of a Convention of Officers. ii. 237. Discontents in. ii. 236. 241. Disbanded. ii. 243.
- Arnold, —, Minister. iv. 123.
- Arnold, Benedict, purchases Quononquot. v. 217. Gov. of Rhode-Island. vi. 144.
- Arnold, Benedict, Col. sent into Canada. vi. 160. Arrives at Point Levi. ii. 59. Attacks Quebec. ii. 60. Gen. engages the British on Lake Champlain. ii. 79. Engages the enemy at Ridgefield. ii. 95. Appointed to the service of the Northern Department. vi. 170. Sends a body of men to relieve Fort Stanwix. ii. 112. Commands a column of the Northern army. ii. 116. Wounded in the Battle of Stillwater. ii. 122. Takes possession of Philadelphia. ii. 141. Plots to deliver up West-Point. ii. 192. Commands in an expedition against Virginia. ii. 203. 210. Returns to New-York. ii. 213. Burns New-London. ii. 217.
- Arouacs, Indians. vi. 14.
- Arowsick Island. i. 252.
- Arowsick, Treaty of. v. 113. 116. 117.

- Arrhamamet, Sachem in Connecticut. iv. 267. At war with Unca. ix. 84.  
 Arrows of the Indians. viii. 219.  
 Asa, Indian Magistrate. x. 131.  
 Asgill, Capt. ii. 227.  
 Ash Swamp. vi. 213. 214.  
 Asherman, John, Indian Preacher. x. 132.  
 Ashmuit, Indian Village. i. 197. 231.  
 Ashley, Capt. x. 143.  
 Ashley, Israel. x. 162.  
 Ahley, Rebecca. iv. 56.  
 Ashpo, Samuel, Indian. ix. 76.  
 Ashurst, Sir William. ix. 274.  
 Aspinet, Sachem of Nauset, makes peace with the English. viii. 161. 238. Trades with the Governour of Plymouth. viii. 260. His manner of saluting Capt. Standish. viii. 262. Dies. viii. 162. 273.  
 Aspinwall, Deacon. ix. 12.  
 Aspotagoen High Lands. iii. 96.  
 Asquoach Hill. i. 269.  
 Assabet River. x. 84.  
 Assameekg, Indian Village. x. 130.  
 Assawampit Indians. i. 198. x. 130. 134.  
 Assawampit Pond, Curious Rocks near. iii. 2. Contains Iron Ore. iii. 175. ix. 264.  
 Assembly of Divines opened at Westminster. ix. 45.  
 Assistants in New-Haven Colony, Powers of. iv. 186. x. 97.  
 Atchikou and Atchous Lakes. i. 233.  
 Atherine, a Fish. iii. 102.  
 Atherton, Hope. ix. 181.  
 Atherton, Humphrey, lays out an Indian Plantation at Punkspaog. i. 100. ix. 161. Appointed Superintendent of the Indians. i. 177. x. 128. Purchases lands of the Narraganset Sachems. v. 217. 240. i. 279. His Purchases declared to be void by the King's Commissioners. v. 221. But they are afterwards confirmed by the Assembly of Rhode-Island. v. 219. 260. And by Commissioners appointed by the King. v. 220. 243. Notwithstanding which, his heirs are dispossessed of their Property by the Assembly of Rhode-Island. v. 220. 262.  
 Atkins, Henry, makes Discoveries on the Coast of Labrador. i. 233—237.  
 Atkinson, George. x. 62.  
 Atkinson, Theodore, makes a Treaty with Penobscot Indians. ix. 222. One of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203. Makes a Donation to the Episcopal Church in Portsmouth. x. 69.  
 Attleborough Gore annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211.  
 Attleborough, Woodcock's Garrison in. x. 140.  
 Attooi Indians. ix. 243.  
 Atwater, David. ii. 96.  
 Atwood, John. iv. 130.  
 Auchmuty, Robert. ii. 46.  
 Auger, Gen. ii. 205.  
 Aurora Borealis, Account of the first of in England. ii. 14. In New-England. ii. 17.  
 Austin, Samuel. i. 116.  
 Austin, Jonathan-Williams. iii. 301.  
 Avery, Capt. ix. 88.  
 Avery, David. v. 49.  
 Avery, John, of Truro, ordained. ix. 196. Character. iii. 201.  
 Avery, John, of Boston. iii. 201.  
 Awasuncks, Squaw Sachem of Saconet ix. 204. Submits to the Government of Plymouth. v. 193. 195. 197. Her Sons. x. 114.  
 Axe, Indian. ix. 101.  
 Ayers, Perkins. x. 60. 61.  
 Ayree, Col. ii. 218.  
 Ayres, Obadiah. vi. 240.
- B.
- Babcock, —, Printer. vi. 77.  
 Bachellor, —, Surveyor. viii. 123.  
 Bachelor, —, Minister. x. 26.  
 Bachelor, Joseph. ix. 195.  
 Bactus, Isaac. iii. 2. 151.  
 Bacon's Rebellion in Virginia. v. 137.  
 Bacon, —, Minister. iv. 131.  
 Bacon, John, Minister. iii. 268. Trustee of Williams College. viii. 49.  
 Bacon, Nathaniel. viii. 152.  
 Badger, Stephen. v. 32. 263. viii. 22.  
 Bagley, Col. vi. 36.  
 Bahama Islands surrendered to the Spaniards. ii. 229.  
 Bailey, Gen. ii. 125.  
 Bailey, James. ix. 195.  
 Bailey, John. vi. 5.  
 Bailey's Creek. iii. 86.  
 Baker, Gardiner. v. 292.  
 Baker, James. ix. 189.  
 Baker's Island. vi. 219. 241.  
 Baker's Pond. x. 76.  
 Baker's Spring. iii. 8.  
 Balcarras, Earl of. ii. 125.  
 Bald Head in York. iii. 7.  
 Baldwin, Samuel. x. 87.  
 Baldwin, Thomas. iii. 284.  
 Baldwin, William. x. 87.  
 Balfour, Col. ii. 215.  
 Banana. ix. 245.  
 Bancroft, Aaron. i. 116.  
 Banford, or Buford, Col. ii. 186.  
 Bange, Edward. viii. 164. His posterity. viii. 168.  
 Bank, Massachusetts, the first in Boston. iii. 275.  
 Bank, National, established at Philadelphia. ii. 211.  
 Baptiam, disputes concerning, in New-England. x. 36.

- Baptiste, John. vi. 109.  
 Baptista, law made against in Massachusetts. vi. 255. First form a Church in Boston. vi. 262.  
 Baptist Indian Church at Gay-Head. i. 206.  
 Baptist Indian Church at Nantucket. i. 207.  
 Baptist Church in Swanzey, the first in Massachusetts. iii. 151.  
 Barclay, Commodore. ii. 171.  
 Barclay, Missionary. iv. 54.  
 Barefoot, Walter. x. 44.  
 Barker, Daniel. ix. 138.  
 Barker, Joseph. iii. 1. 150.  
 Barkers of Pembroke. ix. 258.  
 Barley Neck. viii. 187. 189.  
 Barlow, Joel. vi. 77.  
 Barnard, John, prays at Salem Century Lecture. iv. 219. Donation to Harvard College. viii. 62. Memoirs of. viii. 66. Character. x. 167. 166.  
 Barnard, Thomas, of Salem. vi. 273.  
 Barnard, Thomas, jun. of Salem. vi. 275.  
 Barnard, Thomas, of Andover. x. 170.  
 Barnes, David. iii. 173.  
 Barnes, Major. vii. 76. 203.  
 Barnstable County, Indians in, converted to Christianity. viii. 170. Number of Indians in. i. 201. 230. Indian places within and near. i. 230.  
 Barnstable County, length and breadth of. iii. 12. Made a Shire. iii. 12. Eastern Coast of described. viii. 110.  
 Barnstable Town, Cummaquid or Mat-tachiest Harbour in. viii. 237. 254. Indians in. i. 197. 230. Description of. iii. 12. Settled. iv. 111. Note on the South part of. viii. 141.  
 Barque Warwick Creek. ix. 163.  
 Barras, Admiral de. ii. 211.  
 Barres', dea, Charts commenced. iii. 97. viii. 144. 197.  
 Barrett, Samuel, ordained. x. 82. Character. iv. 16.  
 Barrington, Admiral. ii. 178.  
 Barrington, Lord. ii. 33. Character. i. 105.  
 Barrington, Lord, Secretary at War. ii. 133.  
 Barrington, part of annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211.  
 Barrington in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. x. 82.  
 Bartlett, George. x. 96.  
 Bartlett, Joseph. iv. 132.  
 Bartlett, Josiah. v. 291.  
 Barton, Benjamin-Smith. v. 292.  
 Barton, Col. takes Gen. Prescott prisoner. ii. 107. Attacks the enemy at Bristol Ferry. ii. 138.  
 Barton, William. x. 192.  
 Barton's Point. iii. 241. 242.  
 Bascom, Jonathan. viii. 195.  
 Bascom, Timothy. viii. 117.  
 Baskets of the Indians. i. 151. iii. 212. viii. 210. 216.  
 Bass, the Fish. iii. 224.  
 Bass, Edward, Bishop. viii. 78. Memoir of. ix. 188.  
 Bass, John. ix. 189.  
 Bass Hole in Dennis. viii. 130.  
 Bass Hole in Chatham Beach. viii. 116.  
 Bass, or Beverly River. vi. 216.  
 Bass River in Yarmouth. iiii. 17. viii. 131. 141.  
 Bass River Village. viii. 139.  
 Bat in Demerary. vi. 2.  
 Baternes, Penobscot Indian. ix. 225.  
 Batut, Lieut. ii. 85.  
 Baum, Col., Burgoyne's Instructions to. ii. 25. Defeated by General Stark. ii. 28. 110. vi. 170.  
 Baxter, —, Missionary. v. 113.  
 Baxter, Joseph. ix. 195.  
 Bayley, —, Preacher. vi. 265.  
 Baylies, William. v. 291.  
 Baylor, Col. ii. 152.  
 Beach, —, Printer. vi. 77.  
 Beach Grass forms hills. viii. 110. 156. Manner of Planting. viii. 197. Its uses. x. 75.  
 Beach Hill in York. iii. 9.  
 Beach Hill in Wellfleet. iv. 41.  
 Beach Point. viii. 220.  
 Beacon Hill. iii. 244.  
 Beale, Benjamin. ix. 191.  
 Beal's Cove. vi. 217.  
 Bean, Joseph. x. 140.  
 Beans cultivated by the Indians. i. 150. iii. 208. viii. 214. ix. 99. 100.  
 Bear, Great, Indian name for the constellation of. iii. 206. 218.  
 Bear Swamp. x. 14.  
 Beards, Indians do not wear. viii. 227.  
 Beasts in Canada. vi. 57. In Connecticut. iv. 271. In Demerary. vi. 3. In Labrador. i. 236. In Massachusetts and Maine. i. 119. iii. 189. 240. viii. 122. ix. 138. 228. In New-England. i. 129. 249. iii. 78. 222. In New-York. ix. 99. In Surinam. i. 63. In Virginia. iii. 86.  
 Beasts, Methods of Preserving. iv. 8.  
 Beau Basin. iii. 96.  
 Beaufort, Action near. ii. 163.  
 Beauharnois, Marquis of, Gov. of Canada. vi. 53. Incites the Indians to make war on the people of New-England. vi. 112.  
 Beaver. iii. 222.  
 Bedford incorporated. i. 237.  
 Bedford in New-York burnt. ii. 169.  
 Bee, Lieut. Gov. ii. 166.  
 Beech Hill. ix. 157.  
 Beech Ridge. iii. 9.  
 Beers, Capt. vi. 206.  
 Behmus's Heights, Battle of. ii. 25. 116. vi. 170.  
 Belcher, Andrew. vii. 28. 34.

- Belcher, Jonathan, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. Gov. of New-Jersey. vii. 101. 136.
- Belcher, Joseph. x. 170.
- Belcher, Lieut. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 102. Makes a Treaty of Peace with the Indians. x. 116.
- Belcher, Minister at the Isles of Shoals. vii. 254.
- Belcher, Samuel. x. 168.
- Bellamont, Earl of. iii. 194.
- Bellamy, the Pirate's Fleet Shipwrecked. iii. 120.
- Bellin's American Maps. vi. 133.
- Bellingham, Richard. iii. 194.
- Bellyhac Hill. vi. 214.
- Belknap, Jeremy, Minister. iii. 262. Founder of the Historical Society. viii. 102. Life and Character. vi. 10.
- Benezet, Anthony. iv. 201.
- Bennet of Virginia. ix. 46.
- Bennington, Battle of. ii. 28. 110. vi. 170.
- Bentley, William. F. H. S. v. 291. Minister. vi. 274.
- Benton, Edward. x. 96.
- Berbice. i. 65.
- Berdt, Dennis de. ii. 44.
- Berkley, Sir William. v. 142.
- Bermuda Hundred. iii. 86.
- Bernard, Francis, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 195. Causes a Survey to be made of Passamaquoddy Bay. iii. 94. Plans Hollis Hall. x. 188. Dissolves the General Court. ii. 43. Recalled. ii. 44.
- Bernard, Richard. ix. 16.
- Berries in New-England. i. 119. iii. 221.
- Berwick. i. 103.
- Betta, Thomas. x. 96.
- Betty's Neck. iii. 1.
- Beverley, Peter. v. 148.
- Beverley, Robert. v. 144.
- Beverley, William. vii. 181.
- Beverly incorporated. vi. 233. Upper Parish in. vi. 272.
- Bible translated into the Indian language by Eliot. i. 172. vii. 24. viii. 33. x. 9. Dedications to. i. 174. vii. 222. Printed at the expense of the Corporation for Propagating the Gospel. i. 212. iii. 182. 183. New-Testament printed. i. 176. iii. 180. Old-Testament printed. iii. 181. 186. Second edition completed. iii. 187.
- Billerica incorporated. vii. 28.
- Billings, Isaac. ix. 186.
- Billings, Richard, graduated. ix. 183. Minister. ix. 204. 205.
- Billingsgate granted. viii. 165. Purchased of the Indians. viii. 169. North precinct of Eastham. viii. 176. Now Wellfleet. iii. 118.
- Billingsgate Indians. i. 196. x. 133.
- Billingsgate Oysters, mortality among. iii. 119.
- Billingsgate Point discovered. viii. 217. Forms Wellfleet Harbour. iii. 117. Now an Island. iv. 41.
- Billington, John, jun. viii. 161. 237.
- Billington Sea. viii. 221.
- Bimilick Brook. i. 114.
- Birch Hill. iii. 9.
- Bird, Col. ii. 94.
- Bird, Jonathan. ix. 191.
- Bird, Samuel. ix. 189.
- Bird Island. iii. 296.
- Birds in Connecticut. iv. 270. 271. 272. In Demerary. vi. 3. In Labrador. i. 236. In Massachusetts. i. 121. viii. 212. 214. In New-England. i. 129. iii. 199. 219. In New-York. ix. 100. In Rhode-Island. ix. 202. In Surinam. i. 63. In Virginia. iii. 86.
- Birds, Method of Preserving. iv. 9. 11.
- Birdsey, Nathan. x. 111.
- Bishop, John. iv. 182. x. 96.
- Bishop, Stephen. x. 96.
- Bishop, Nathaniel. x. 90.
- Bishops, American, Letters concerning. iii. 162.
- Bishops in America, Episcopalians in Boston petition Queen Anne to establish. vii. 215.
- Bissel, Hezekiah. v. 169.
- Bite, a Cove in Dennis. viii. 130.
- Black, William. vii. 181.
- Black-Bird. iii. 219.
- Black-Fish. iii. 121.
- Black-Fish Creek. iv. 41. viii. 115.
- Black-Forks, Action at. ii. 200.
- Black-Lead Ore in Connecticut. ix. 162.
- Black-Rock. vi. 222.
- Black-Snake. v. 56.
- Blackstone River. i. 114. Its Indian name. i. 185.
- Black-Water Swamp. iii. 85.
- Blackwell, John. v. 247.
- Bladen, Thomas. vii. 171.
- Blair, James, President of William and Mary College. v. 145. Commissary of the Bishop of London. v. 163.
- Blair, Samuel. iii. 268.
- Blaithwait, William. v. 167. 169.
- Blake, Edward. ix. 194.
- Blake, James. ix. 189.
- Blake, Samuel. ix. 185.
- Blake, William. ix. 194.
- Blanchard, Joseph. x. 52.
- Blanche Point. i. 7.
- Blandford in Virginia. iii. 91.
- Blasphemy, a man tried for, in Boston. ix. 38.
- Blatchley, Samuel. x. 96.
- Blaxton, or Blackston, first Settler of Boston. iii. 63. 241. Styles the first Planter of Massachusetts Lords Brethren. ix. 2. Removes from Boston. ix. 4.

- Blinman, —, Minister. ix. 39. x. 26.  
 Bliss, John. v. 170.  
 Block-Island. x. 111.  
 Block-Island Indians. i. 147.  
 Blood, Caleb. v. 275.  
 Bloomfield, Col. ii. 124.  
 Blossom, Thomas, in Leyden. iii. 41. 44.  
   Deacon in Plymouth. iv. 111. vii. 272.  
 Blowers, Thomas. ix. 197. x. 170.  
 Blowedown, Cape. iii. 97.  
 Blueberry Swamp. vi. 213.  
 Blue-Fish. iii. 159. 199.  
 Blue-Hill. i. 184. ix. 159.  
 Boat-Meadow River. viii. 155.  
 Boggachoag Brook. i. 114. 192.  
 Boggachoag Hill. i. 113. 192.  
 Bollan, William, Agent of Massachusetts. i. 50. 53. vi. 41. 129. Agent of the Council. iii. 110. Author. iii. 301. Friend to New-England. ix. 268.  
 Bolton in Massachusetts. x. 82.  
 Bolton Mountain, Notch in. ix. 80.  
 Booge, Aaron-J. v. 169.  
 Boon Island. iii. 7.  
 Boreman, William. x. 96.  
 Boscawen, Admiral. vii. 91. 105.  
 Boston settled. i. 256. iii. 77. viii. 39. ix. 19. 149. Description of. iii. 241. Fires and Fire-Engines. iv. 188. 211. Burials and Baptisms. iv. 213. 298. Inhabitants oppose Gov. Winthrop. ix. 28. State in 1673. iv. 217. Churches make annual Collections for propagating the Gospel among the Indians. i. 213. Great Fire in 1711. v. 52. Small Pox in 1721 & 1752. v. 207. Inhabitants oppose the Stamp Act. ii. 43. Merchants agree not to import British Goods. ii. 43. 44. British Troops arrive. ii. 44. Proceedings in, censured by the House of Lords. ii. 44. Massacre. ii. 44. Port shut by Act of Parliament. ii. 46. iii. 116. 244. viii. 59. Inhabitants deliver up their fire arms to Gen. Gage. ii. 48. 53. Evacuated by the British Troops. ii. 63. See table of Contents at the end of Vol. iii.  
 Boston, First Church, seventeen ministers protest against, for settling Mr. Davenport. x. 34.  
 Botten, of the Sect of the Brownists. ix. 11.  
 Boucher, Robert. vi. 274.  
 Boudinot, Elias, President of Congress. ii. 231. Thanks Gen. Washington. ii. 242.  
 Bouetox in Nova-Scotia. x. 115.  
 Bound-Brook, Harwich. x. 72.  
 Bound-Brook, Wellfleet. viii. 169.  
 Bound-Brook Island. iii. 197. iv. 41.  
 Bourdillon, Benedict. vii. 172. 201.  
 Bourne, Ezra. iii. 190.  
 Bourne, Joseph, Minister of Marshpee. iii. 190. Ordained. v. 208.  
 Bourne, Richard, Minister in Sandwich. iii. 188. Preaches to the Indians. i. 172. 196. iii. 189. viii. 170. Pastor of Marshpee. i. 204. iii. 190. Salary from the Society for Propagating the Gospel. i. 218. Character. iii. 189. Descendants. iii. 190, 191.  
 Bourne, Shearjashub. iii. 190.  
 Boura, Peter, Minister. viii. 69. Character. viii. 77.  
 Bowdoin, James, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 195. viii. 95. 98. President of Convention. iii. 245. Author. iii. 301.  
 Bowen, Pennel. iii. 261.  
 Bowers, —, of Guilford. iv. 187.  
 Bowers, James. viii. 78.  
 Bowles, John. viii. 35.  
 Bowles, Samuel. x. 61.  
 Bowman, Jonathan, Minister. i. 99. ix. 167. 177.  
 Bowman, Jonathan, jun. ix. 189.  
 Bowman, Joseph. x. 86.  
 Bowman, William. ix. 189.  
 Bownd, Ephraim. iii. 264.  
 Boyd, Capt. killed. ii. 177.  
 Boyle, Robert, Gov. of the Society for Propagating the Gospel. i. 213. v. 262. Instances of his Charity. iii. 177. 178. 181. 187. v. 262.  
 Boylston, Zabdiel, introduces Inoculation. iii. 291. Author. iii. 301.  
 Bradbury, Capt. ix. 219.  
 Braddock, Gen. an active Officer. vii. 70. Meets a Convention of Governors. vii. 89. Marches to the Ohio. vii. 91. Defeated by the Indians. iii. 23. vii. 92.  
 Bradford, —, minister in Catskill. ix. 119.  
 Bradford, Alden. F. H. S. v. 291. Minister. vii. 163.  
 Bradford, Andrew. vi. 64.  
 Bradford, Gamaliel. v. 291.  
 Bradford, John. v. 291.  
 Bradford, Major. x. 133.  
 Bradford, William, his Journey from Cape Cod Harbour to Pamet River. viii. 207—212. In danger of being burned. viii. 224. Gov. of Plymouth. iii. 42. 194. Sends a Defiance to Canonnicus. viii. 240. Refuses to deliver Tisquantum into the hands of Massachusetts. viii. 244. Sails to Monaymoyick. viii. 249. Thence to Massachusetts, and Nauset. viii. 250. Travels to Namasaket and Manomet. viii. 252. Communicates the Conspiracy of the Indians to the Court of Plymouth. viii. 265. Gives the Right Hand of Fellowship to the Ministers of Salem Church. iv. 219. Prays and exhorts in the Church. iv. 136. x. 2. Trade of Plymouth assigned to him and others for six years. iii. 60. Com-

- plains of the Conduct of the Settlers of Windsor. ix. 153. Proposes the settlement of Nauset. viii. 163. Kindness to R. Williams. i. 276. Character. vii. 275. iii. 58. x. 1. Death. viii. 165.
- Bradshaw, —, of Connecticut. ix. 81.
- Bradstreet, Capt. arrives at Oswego with 200 men. vii. 96. Commands the Batteau-men on Lake Ontario. vii. 150. Engagement with the French. vii. 155.
- Bradstreet, Col. in the Expedition to Cape Breton. i. 20. Commended by Gen. Pepperell. i. 40. 52. Sent by him to take possession of Louisbourg. i. 46. Censured by Dr. Chauncy. i. 51. Marches with an army to Niagara and Detroit. x. 122.
- Bradstreet, Dudley. v. 245.
- Bradstreet, Simon, Secretary of Massachusetts. vii. 7. One of the first Settlers of Cambridge. vii. 10. A popular Magistrate. iv. 217. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. Head of the moderate party. i. 229. Appointed Counsellor on the Dissolution of the Charter. v. 245. Opposed to the Witchcraft Delusion. v. 75. Death. vi. 271. Epitaph. vi. 288.
- Bradstreet, Simon, Minister of Charlestown. viii. 75. x. 170.
- Bradstreet, Simon, Minister in Marblehead. viii. 75.
- Brainerd, David. x. 55.
- Brandon, Benjamin. iii. 300.
- Brandt, Onondaga Indian. vii. 99.
- Brandt, Joseph, Mohawk Chief. i. 286. Translates the Gospel of Mark. x. 154. Murders his Son. v. 18.
- Brandy-Pond. iii. 239.
- Brandywine, Battle of. ii. 114.
- Brannons, Col. ii. 204.
- Bras-d'or in Cape-Breton. iii. 99.
- Brattle, Thomas, of Boston. iii. 300.
- Brattle, Thomas, of Cambridge, Memoirs of. viii. 82. F. H. S. v. 291. His Gardens. vii. 5. Death. vii. 58.
- Brattle, William, Minister of Cambridge. Ordained. vii. 32. Memoirs of. vii. 55. A solid preacher. vi. 79. An eminent man. x. 164. Character. x. 168.
- Brattle, William, Brigadier-General. vii. 58. viii. 82.
- Brattle's Bay discovered. ii. 22.
- Brattle-Street Church erected. iii. 260. With a Constitution differing from that of the other Congregational Churches. ix. 17. x. 35.
- Brave-Boat Harbour. iii. 7.
- Bray, Thomas-Wells. x. 95.
- Breck, Robert, graduated. ix. 184. Minister. iv. 47. x. 89. An eminent Man. x. 170.
- Breed's, or Bunker-hill, Battle of. ii. 49. vi. 159.
- Brenton, William. vi. 144. 145.
- Brentwood incorporated. iv. 87.
- Brewster, William, removes from Holland. vii. 268. Ruling elder. iv. 108. Refuses to accept the office of pastor. vii. 271. Preaches in the church. x. 2. An eminent man. vii. 275. x. 1. 73. Death and character. iv. 113.
- Brewster, Description of. x. 72.
- Brewster Islands. iii. 295.
- Breyman, Lieut. Col. ii. 121.
- Breynton, —, Minister. x. 82.
- Briant, Solomon, Indian. iii. 191.
- Bricket, Gen. ii. 125.
- Bridge, Christopher. iii. 259.
- Bridge, John. vii. 10.
- Bridge, Josiah. x. 87.
- Bridge, Thomas. iii. 257. vi. (5.) Ordained. ix. 195.
- Bridgewater, Number of Indians in. i. 201.
- Bridgham, James. ix. 134.
- Bridgton described. iii. 240.
- Briggs, Ephraim, Chymist. viii. 138. Minister. viii. 154.
- Bright, —, Minister. viii. 40. A moderate man. ix. 2.
- Brimfield, description of. ix. 127.
- Brimsmead, William, educated at Cambridge. i. 99. ix. 179. Minister. iv. 47. 122. x. 89.
- Brintley, Francis. v. 247. 250. 252.
- Brintnall, William. x. 87.
- Bristol County, Number of Indians in. i. 201. Insurrection in crushed. iii. 169.
- Bristol Town annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211. Cannonaded. ii. 56. Partly burnt. ii. 138.
- Bristow, Richard. x. 96.
- British Colonies in North-America, Observations on. i. 71. Importance of to Great-Britain. i. 73. Plan for securing their dependence. i. 77. Amount of Exports to in 1754. i. 79.
- British Army in North America, numbers of, in 1776. ii. 73. In 1777. ii. 133.
- British Provinces in North America, a General Governour appointed over. iii. 102. vi. 55.
- British Troops arrive at Boston in 1768. ii. 44.
- Brock, John. vii. 254.
- Brocklebank, Capt. v. 271.
- Brockwell, Charles, Minister in Salem. vi. 274. 275. In Boston. iii. 260.
- Bromfield Edward. ix. 177.
- Brookfield, Indian Town in. i. 104. History of. i. 257. Description of. i. 271.
- Brooks, John. ii. 235. 237.
- Broom, Elder. x. 2.



- Brothertown Indians, numbers of. iv. 67. v. 13. 23. ix. 90. Account of. iv. 68. v. 26. 27. Mistake respecting them corrected. vi. 146.
- Brown, —, Minister of Portsmouth. x. 39.
- Brown, Family of, in Salem. vi. 287. Its donations. vi. 239. 272. Opposes the Salem Church. vi. 242. ix. 3. Two of the name attend the Synod of 1679. vi. 263.
- Brown, —, Minister of Sudbury. x. 26.
- Brown, Andrew. v. 292.
- Brown, Arthur, of Dublin. x. 59.
- Brown, Arthur, of Portsmouth. x. 57. His children. x. 70.
- Brown, Asaph. ix. 138.
- Brown, Chaplain in Halifax. x. 80.
- Brown, Clark. ix. 135.
- Brown, Col. killed. ii. 197.
- Brown, Col. British. ii. 230.
- Brown, Domine. ix. 206.
- Brown, Edmund. x. 86.
- Brown, Elder. ix. 21.
- Brown, Gov. ii. 62.
- Brown, Jabez. ix. 137.
- Brown, John. ix. 3.
- Brown, John, Elder. vi. 243.
- Brown, Joseph, of Charlestown. vi. 287.
- Brown, Joseph, of Exeter. iv. 88.
- Brown, Major, takes Chamblee. ii. 56. (Col.) Expedition to Ticonderoga. ii. 117.
- Brown, Marmaduke. x. 59. 71.
- Brown, Peter. viii. 223.
- Brown, Richard. x. 69.
- Brown, Robert. ix. 11.
- Brown, Samuel. ix. 3.
- Brown, Samuel, Col. vi. 241.
- Brown, Thaddeus. viii. 112.
- Brown, William. vi. 251. 266. Memoirs of. vi. 287.
- Brown, William-Hill. iii. 301.
- Brownists begin. ix. 11. The Settlers of Plymouth charged with being. iii. 29. But they disclaim the name. iv. 134. vii. 267.
- Brown's Hill. vi. 217.
- Brown's Island. viii. 220.
- Brunswick, New-Jersey, British Expedition against. ii. 162.
- Brush Valley. viii. 114.
- Bryant, John, Indian. x. 130.
- Buchanan, Capt. ii. 204.
- Buchanan, George. ix. 51.
- Buckley, Peter. ix. 32. See Bulkley.
- Buckminster, Joseph. x. 52.
- Bucks, Indians. vi. 13.
- Buldinch, Charles, architect. iii. 255. F. H. S. x. 192.
- Bulkley, Edward. vii. 47.
- Bulkley, Edward, of Marshfield. iv. 111.
- Bulkley, Gershom. x. 155.
- Bulkley, John. x. 155.
- Bulkley, Peter, minister. i. 241. x. 26. 155. Agent. v. 221. 245.
- Bull, Gov. of Carolina. ii. 217.
- Bull, Henry. vi. 145.
- Bumkin Island. iii. 296.
- Bunker-Hill, Battle of. ii. 49. vi. 159.
- Burch, William. ii. 43.
- Burgoyne, Gen. arrives at Boston. ii. 49. In Canada. ii. 65. Withdraws his troops from Lake Champlain. ii. 80. Instructed to force his way to Albany. ii. 97. Issues his proclamation. ii. 105. Obtains possession of Ticonderoga. ii. 106. vi. 169. Crosses Lake George. ii. 107. His instructions to Col. Baum. ii. 25. 109. Vindicating himself against the charge of barbarity. ii. 111. Battle of Behmua's Heights. ii. 116. vi. 170. Battle of Stillwater. ii. 121. His army is surrendered. ii. 123. And is placed in Cambridge. vii. 36. He embarks for England. ii. 134.
- Burke, —, agent. ix. 268.
- Burke, Edmund, defends the right of Parliament to tax the Colonies. ix. 282. Speaks against using the extremes of war. ii. 157.
- Burnet, Bishop. ix. 249.
- Burnet, William, Governour. iii. 194. Author. iii. 300. A fine scholar. viii. 75.
- Burr, Jonathan, minister of Dorchester. i. 99. Memoirs of. ix. 173.
- Burr, Jonathan, jun. ix. 181.
- Burr, Jonathan, minister of Sandwich. viii. 125.
- Burroughs, —, of Salem village. vi. 265. Executed. vi. 268.
- Burt, John. ii. 58.
- Burton, Lieut. Col. vii. 93.
- Burying, Indian manner of. iii. 238. v. 170. vi. 231. viii. 215. 218. x. 109.
- Bushnell, Francis. x. 96.
- Butcher, John. ix. 161.
- Bute, Earl of. ii. 41.
- Butler, Capt. vii. 155.
- Butler, Col. in the Battle of Monmouth. ii. 143. In the storming of Stony-Point. ii. 170. Charges the enemy near Williamsburg. ii. 213.
- Butler, Gen. ii. 207.
- Butler, Richard. vii. 10.
- Butler, Walter. ii. 177. Killed. ii. 220.
- Butt-Brook. vi. 215.
- Butterfield, Major. ii. 64.
- Button-Island. iii. 296.
- Buzzard's Bay, places on and near. i. 198. 199. 231. 232.
- Byfield, Col. enemy to Dudley. v. 197. Censured by Jeremy Dummer. vi. 78.
- Byfield, Nathaniel, enemy to Cotton Mather. iii. 138. Justice. v. 76.
- Byles, Mather, minister. iii. 262. Author. iii. 301. v. 211.

- Byles, Mather, jun. iii. 261.  
 Byram, Eliab. iii. 174.  
 Byrd, William. v. 144.  
 Byrne, John. vi. 77.  
 Byron, Admiral, arrives at New-York. ii. 151. Comes on the coast of New-England. ii. 151. Sails to the West-Indies. vi. 173. His engagement with Count D'Estaing. ii. 178. vi. 184.
- C.
- Cabisees, Indians. vi. 14.  
 Cabot, Francis. x. 68.  
 Cabot, John. ix. 54.  
 Cabot, Sebastian. ix. 54.  
 Cadaraqui, or Ontario Lake. vi. 132.  
 Cadaraqui River. vii. 131.  
 Caffinge, John. iv. 182.  
 Cagigal, Spanish General. ii. 229.  
 Caldwell, minister, killed. ii. 188.  
 Caldwell, Mrs. killed. ii. 187.  
 Calef, Robert. iii. 300.  
 Call, Major. ii. 213.  
 Callender, Elisha. iii. 259.  
 Callender, Ellis. iii. 259.  
 Callender, John, a judicious writer. ix. 34. His opinion of Roger Williams. x. 19. His character of Nathaniel Clap. ix. 182.  
 Calvert, Benedict. vii. 171.  
 Calvert, Charles. vii. 199.  
 Calvin's Opinion of the Sabbath. i. 281. Definition of Faith. ix. 9.  
 Cambridge, History of. vii. 1. Short Description of. i. 107. Town of, projected, to be called Newtown. viii. 41. vii. 7. Synod of, held. ii. 7. vii. 25. ix. 49. Printing Press erected at. i. 176. vii. 19. Election of Counsellors held at, 1770. ii. 44. vii. 35. Indian College built. i. 176. 212. vii. 24. Account of the College in 1643. i. 242. Old College burnt. i. 3. vii. 5. See Harvard.  
 Cambridge Platform composed. vii. 25. Account of. x. 2. 7.  
 Cambridge-Village. v. 253. vii. 28.  
 Camden, Lord, friend to the Colonies. ix. 282. Opposed to the American war. ii. 103. Speech against the Manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 156.  
 Camden, Battle of. ii. 189. Evacuated by Lord Rawdon. ii. 211.  
 Campbell, Archibald, taken prisoner. ii. 65. Takes Savannah. ii. 155. ix. 158. His progress in Georgia. ii. 163. Returns to England. ii. 166.  
 Campbell, Col. at the Siege of Quebec. ii. 60.  
 Campbell, Gen. of Maine. iii. 147.  
 Campbell, John. v. 209. vi. 67.  
 Campbell, Lieut. Col. ii. 219.  
 Campbell, William, Col. Defeats Major Ferguson. ii. 198. In the Battle of Guilford Court-house. ii. 207. And of Eutaw Springs, ii. 218.  
 Campbell, William, Lord, Governour of Nova-Scotia. iii. 102. Deserts his Government of South-Carolina. ii. 63. Wounded. ii. 66. At Newport. ii. 84.  
 Campo-Bello Island. iii. 95.  
 Canacum, Sachem of Manomet. viii. 253. Visited by Capt. Standish. viii. 255. Dies. viii. 273.  
 Canada, State of. vi. 48. Governours of. vi. 53. Boundary of. vi. 131. Affords few Exports. i. 78.  
 Canada, County of. vi. 186.  
 Canada Indians. i. 161.  
 Canada Lakes, Plan for discovering. i. 158.  
 Canadaqua. i. 285.  
 Canada-Saga Lake. i. 285.  
 Canjohary Falls. vii. 146.  
 Canal projected from Buzzard's to Barnstable Bay. viii. 122. 253.  
 Canaumut Neck. i. 231.  
 Cane, Samuel. i. 104.  
 Caner, Henry, minister. iii. 260. Author. iii. 301.  
 Cannasatiego, Onondago Chief. vii. 179. Speech made to him by the Commissioner for Maryland. vii. 185. He answers the speech. vii. 186. A famous orator. vii. 193. Makes a Treaty with the English. vii. 195. Makes another speech. vii. 197.  
 Cannete, Marquis of. iv. 239.  
 Canonicus, Sachem of Narraganset. iii. 229. Sends a defiance to the English of Plymouth. viii. 240. His speech to Roger Williams. iii. 215. Subjects himself and lands to Charles I. v. 237.  
 Canso, Gut of. iii. 98.  
 Canton-Kill. ix. 112.  
 Capawock Indians. viii. 262.  
 Cape-Breton, Auchmuty's proposals for the Conquest of. v. 202. Expedition against. i. 5. The Expedition approved by the King. i. 25. Grand battery abandoned by the French. i. 26. New-England forces make five unsuccessful attempts on the Island battery. i. 35. Expedition successful. i. 46. 48. Expense of it reimbursed by Parliament. i. 57.  
 Cape-Breton, Description of. iii. 99.  
 Cape-Elizabeth, Iron ore at. ix. 257.  
 Capen, Joseph. ix. 182.  
 Capisahnns, Indians. vi. 14.  
 Captain's Hill. ii. 6.  
 Cards, Wool, Machines invented for the manufacture of in Massachusetts. iii. 279. iv. 207. vii. 3.  
 Cargill, James. ix. 225.  
 Caribogres, mixed race in Demerary. vi. 14.

- Carleton, Sir Guy, Gov. of Canada. vi. 54. A humane officer. i. 111. Defends Quebec. ii. 59. Receives succours from England. ii. 64. Takes possession of Crown-Point. ii. 79. vi. 164. Quits it. ii. 80. Makes preparations for Gen. Burgoyne's Expedition. ii. 97. 124. Embarks for England. ii. 113. Succeeds Gen. Clinton. ii. 226. Refuses to deliver up the murderers of Huddy. ii. 228. Lord Dorchester, and Gov. General. vi. 55.
- Carlisle, Lord, British Commissioner, arrives in America. ii. 139. Returns to England. ii. 154.
- Carlisle incorporated. i. 237.
- Carmichael, —, of Maryland. ii. 175.
- Carpenter, Ezra. ix. 197.
- Carr, Caleb. vi. 145.
- Carr, Robert, Charles 2d's Commissioner to the Colonies. v. 193. 218. 230.
- Carter, —, minister of Woburn. x. 26. Ordained. ix. 39.
- Carteret, Capt. iv. 239.
- Cartwright, George, Charles 2d's Commissioner to the Colonies. v. 193. 218. 230.
- Carver, John. viii. 212. 224. Gov. of Plymouth. iii. 194. viii. 232. Deacon. iv. 111. vii. 272. Makes a Treaty with Massasoit. viii. 230. Dies. iv. 108.
- Carver, Federal furnace in. ix. 258.
- Cassinaman, Indian. x. 101.
- Casco, Tax of. 1645. i. 102.
- Casco-Bay. iii. 141.
- Casco Indians. ix. 210.
- Case, Isaac. iv. 23.
- Castine, Baron. ix. 218.
- Castine, Town. ix. 219.
- Castle-Hill. vi. 215. 217.
- Castle-Island. iii. 296. 298.
- Caswell, Gen. ii. 190.
- Catawbas, or Cataupas. vii. 190. Numbers of in 1768. x. 120. In 1780. iv. 100.
- Cataumut on Buzzard's Bay. i. 231.
- Cat-Cove. vi. 216.
- Caterpillars. v. 281.
- Cathance River. iii. 142.
- Cat-Island. vi. 221.
- Catskill, Description of. ix. 111. Mountains. ix. 111. River. ix. 112. Catskill-landing Village. ix. 116.
- Cattle first brought to New-England. iii. 35. Price of. iii. 78.
- Caughnawagas. x. 147.
- Caughtuntoowut, or Cautantowwit, the good god of the Indians. x. 108.
- Caulfield, Capt. ii. 84.
- Caunauhstansay, Abraham, Mohawk Chief. x. 145.
- Caunaujohhaury, or Kanajoharry. x. 143.
- Cauneeyskeea, or Mohawks. x. 143.
- Cautantowwit, the creator god of the Indians. iii. 205. 228. To whom their souls go after death. iii. 206. 227. 228. Who sent them corn and beans. iii. 206. 219. 227. Who is superior to all other gods. x. 108.
- Cawesitt Indians. i. 147.
- Cayugas, one of the Five Nations of Indians. v. 120. vii. 152. Numbers employed by the British. x. 123. Numbers in 1794. v. 23.
- Cayuga Lake. i. 285.
- Cayenne. i. 55.
- Cedar-Island. vii. 243.
- Cedars Fort taken. ii. 64. Battle of. ii. 64.
- Chabanakongkomun, Indian town. iii. 185. Pond. iii. 185.
- Chactaws, numbers of, employed by the British. x. 123. Numbers in 1780. iv. 99. Specimen of their Language. ix. 94. 96.
- Chaleur-Bay. iii. 95. 99.
- Chalk in Maine. ix. 143.
- Chalybeate Spring in Cambridge. vii. 2.
- Chamberlain, Ephraim. ix. 145.
- Chamberlain, John. ix. 140.
- Chamberlain, Nathaniel. ix. 140. 144.
- Chamberlayne, —, Benefactor to Harvard College. vi. 118.
- Chambers, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203. Counsellor of New-York. vii. 89. Judge of the Supreme Court. vii. 143.
- Chamblee Fort taken. ii. 56.
- Champernoons, Francis. v. 245.
- Champernoons' Island. iii. 7.
- Champlain Lake, Naval engagement on, 1776. ii. 79.
- Chandler, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Chandler, Dr. x. 164.
- Chandler, Samuel. iii. 10. x. 70.
- Chandler's Island. iii. 96.
- Chapel Rocks. ix. 164.
- Chaplin, Daniel. ix. 144.
- Chapquit Harbour. viii. 128.
- Chappaquiddick Island. i. 204. Number of Indians on. i. 205. 206.
- Chappeaurouge-Bay. i. 6. 28.
- Chappel, William. ix. 42.
- Charcoal improved by age. ix. 261.
- Charles I. iii. 194. Hopes entertained of him at the beginning of his reign. iii. 40. Sketch of Transactions in the first part of his reign. iii. 50. Account of his Trial. ii. 36.
- Charles II. iii. 194. Grants a new Charter to the Society for Propagating the Gospel. i. 213.
- Charles, Cape, on the Ekimeaux coast. i. 233.
- Charles-city County. iii. 85.
- Charles-river. i. 107. vii. 2.
- Charles-river Bridge. iii. 11. 245.
- Charleston, South-Carolina, taken by

- Gen. Clinton. ii. 184. 186. Evacuated by the British. ii. 234.
- Charlestown, Massachusetts begins. i. 124. Gov. Winthrop and Company arrive at. viii. 39. Sickness at, 1630. iii. 75. Boston settled from it. ix. 19. Its Church the second in Massachusetts. vii. 15. Burnt. ii. 49. 54.
- Charlevoix, Historian. iii. 98.
- Charnock, —. x. 27.
- Charter and Proprietary Governments, bill for regulating. vii. 220.
- Charters of the Colonies, Weare's opinion of. i. 76.
- Chase-garden River. viii. 129.
- Chatfield, George. x. 96.
- Chatham, Earl of, Friend to the Colonies. ix. 282. His Speech in their favour, 1775. ii. 47. A wise and successful minister. ii. 51. His motion for an accommodation with the United States. ii. 103.
- Chatham, Description of. viii. 142. Indian name of. i. 197. viii. 249. Beach. viii. 116. Which is continually gaining South. viii. 144. Harbour. viii. 116. 143. 249.
- Chaubaqueduck. x. 132. See Chappaquiddick.
- Chauncy, —, of Durham. x. 178.
- Chauncy, Charles, President, Life of. x. 171. Preaches in Plymouth. iv. 111. Minister of Scituate. iv. 112. Elected President. iv. 112. vii. 27. A learned, godly, and worthy man. iv. 111. vi. 101. x. 30. A poor man. ix. 156. Held that baptism ought to be by dipping. iv. 112. x. 30. His sons. x. 176.
- Chauncy, Charles, minister in Boston. iii. 257. vi. (5.) Studies and works. iii. 301. x. 161. 179.
- Chauncy, Elnathan. x. 178.
- Chauncy, Isaac. x. 177.
- Chauncy, Ichabod. x. 177.
- Chauncy, Israel. x. 178.
- Chauncy, Nathaniel. x. 178.
- Chauncy-pond. x. 84.
- Chebassa Strait. ix. 243.
- Checkley, John. viii. 77.
- Checkley, Samuel, minister. iii. 261. Author. iii. 301.
- Checkley, Samuel, jun. minister. iii. 258. Author. iii. 301.
- Cheekwakut, or Chequocket. iii. 15.
- Cheeschaumuck, Caleb. i. 173. vii. 25.
- Cheesman, Capt. ii. 60.
- Cheever, Edward. viii. 186.
- Cheever, Ezekiel, schoolmaster. iii. 266. viii. 66. Author. iii. 300. Dies. ix. 195.
- Cheever, Israel. iv. 235.
- Cheever, Samuel. viii. 65. x. 168.
- Chickatabut, Sachem, slain. i. 167. See Chickatabut.
- Cheney, Thomas. i. 265.
- Chequocket, in Barnstable. i. 230.
- Cheraws, numbers of. x. 120.
- Cherokees, a warlike People. vii. 153. Numbers in 1758. x. 120. In 1780. iv. 100. Numbers employed by the British. x. 123.
- Chesapeak-bay. i. 157.
- Cheanut. iii. 220.
- Chester, Nova-Scotia. x. 82.
- Chew, Benjamin. vii. 173.
- Chew, Chief Justice. ii. 113.
- Chickasaws, numbers of in 1768. x. 121. In 1780. iv. 100. Numbers employed by the British. x. 123. Language and situation. ix. 95.
- Chickatabut, Sagamore, oppresses Weston's Plantation. viii. 37. Visits Gov. Winthrop. vii. 8. Punishes two of his men for assaulting the English. ix. 151. Dies. vii. 9. See Obtakiest.
- Chickatabut, Josiah, sells lands to the English. ix. 160. Slain. i. 167.
- Chickopee River. i. 271. ix. 129.
- Chigabennakadik in Nova-Scotia. x. 116.
- Chignecto in Nova-Scotia. x. 116. Channel. iii. 97. 101.
- Child, Robert. ix. 47.
- Children, Indians indulgent to their. i. 149. 182. 219. iii. 211. vii. 189. ix. 232.
- Chilmark Indian praying towns in. i. 204. Number of Indians in. i. 206. x. 131.
- Chippeways. vi. 140. vii. 123. Numbers. x. 122. Language. ix. 92.
- Chittenden, William. iv. 182. x. 96.
- Choate, John. ix. 221.
- Choctaws, numbers of. x. 121.
- Chokchoomah. ix. 95.
- Chonuntoowanees, or Senecas. x. 147.
- Christianity, many Indians in New-England converted to. vii. 224.
- Christiantown, Number of Indians in. i. 206.
- Chudley, Cape. i. 233.
- Church, Capt. Benjamin, attacked by the Indians in Middleborough. iii. 148. Humanity to the Indians. i. 104. His expedition to Port-Royal. iii. 132. Manner of his death. v. 271.
- Church, Dr. Benjamin, his seat at Raynham. iii. 168. Patriot of 1775. v. 106. His Patriotism suspected. v. 110. vi. 73. Examined before the Legislature of Massachusetts. i. 84. Author. iii. 301.
- Church, Nathan. ix. 145.
- Church, Samuel. x. 129.
- Church, Thomas, Historian. ix. 199.
- Church, Thomas of Compton. ix. 201.
- Church, censures of, in New-England. x. 5. Qualifications of the members. x. 4. 5. Officers. x. 4.
- Churches, Indian, Number of in New-England, 1687. v. 264.

- Cincinnati Society instituted. iii. 274.  
 Citadel Hill. x. 80.  
 City-Point. iii. 85.  
 Civilization of Indians must precede their conversion. ix. 176. Attempts to introduce civilization among them have generally been unsuccessful. iv. 67-74. 99. v. 11. 24. 29. 37. ix. 228.  
 Clagett, Wiseman. x. 69.  
 Clam, Sea. viii. 192. 204.  
 Clam, Small. iii. 224. viii. 193.  
 Clam-pudding Pond. viii. 120.  
 Clap, Ebenezer. ix. 194.  
 Clap, Ebenezer, jun. ix. 197.  
 Clap, Elisha. ix. 191.  
 Clap, Mrs. of Wrentham. x. 141.  
 Clap, Nathaniel, eminent minister. x. 170. His character. ix. 182.  
 Clap, Noah. ix. 187.  
 Clap, Roger, one of the first settlers of Dorchester. ix. 18. 150. Lands granted to him. ix. 161. Thanksgiving kept for his restoration to health. ix. 194.  
 Clap, Supply. ix. 187.  
 Clap, Thomas, ordained. ix. 197. Colonel. iii. 174.  
 Clarence, Duke of. ii. 220.  
 Clarke, Col. takes Fort Sackville. ii. 161. Repulses Tarleton at Ninety-Six. ii. 201.  
 Clarke, —, Lieut. Gov. of New-York, projects a Naval Armament on Lake Ontario. vii. 87. His character. vii. 78.  
 Clarke, Sir Francis. ii. 124.  
 Clarke, James. v. 292.  
 Clarke, Jeremiah. vi. 144.  
 Clarke, John, Agent for Rhode-Island. v. 238. 248. x. 20. Complains of the encroachments of Connecticut. i. 279. Obtains the last charter of Rhode-Island. vi. 144.  
 Clarke, John, minister in Boston. iii. 267. viii. 282. F. H. S. v. 291. Life and character. vi. (3.)  
 Clarke, John, of Cambridge. vii. 10.  
 Clarke, John, of Exeter. iv. 88.  
 Clarke, Jonas, of Boston. viii. 96.  
 Clarke, Jonas, of Lexington. v. 107.  
 Clarke, Major, popular magistrate. iv. 217.  
 Clarke, Major, of Arrowsick Island. i. 253. 265.  
 Clarke, Robert. iii. 259.  
 Clarke, Thaddeus. x. 181.  
 Clarke, Thomas, of Plymouth. iv. 127. 131.  
 Clarke, Thomas, of Chelmsford. ix. 195.  
 Clarke, Walter, of Newport. v. 260. 262. Gov. of Rhode-Island. vi. 145.  
 Clarke, William, chosen Speaker. ii. 32. Author. iii. 300.  
 Clarke, William, of Northampton. ix. 192.  
 Clarke and Lake's Fort surprised by the Indians. i. 253.  
 Clarke's Island. ii. 5.  
 Clarke's Neck. iv. 233.  
 Clarke's Point. x. 181.  
 Clarkson, —, minister. x. 177.  
 Clay abounds in the District of Maine. vii. 167.  
 Clay-Brook. vi. 213. 214. 216.  
 Clay-Pounds, whence it derives its name. iii. 118. Described. iii. 197. iv. 42. Light-house on. viii. 113. 158. 209.  
 Clergy of New-England, influence of, in civil affairs, in early periods. x. 1.  
 Cleaveland, Col. ii. 198.  
 Clifton, Richard. iv. 114.  
 Clift-Pond. x. 76.  
 Climate of Connecticut. vii. 231. Of Maine. iv. 142. 147. 149. Of Massachusetts. i. 108. Of North-west Coast of America. ix. 242.  
 Clinton, Henry, General, arrives at Boston. ii. 49. Sails for Carolina. ii. 62. Dispatches troops to Georgia. ii. 64. Repulsed at Charleston. ii. 65. vi. 163. Arrives at Staten-Island. ii. 72. In the battle of White-Plains. ii. 81. Takes possession of Newport. ii. 84. Counterfeits continental paper money. ii. 103. Takes Fort Montgomery. vi. 171. Succeeds Gen. Howe. ii. 139. Evacuates Philadelphia. ii. 141. vi. 172. Sends reinforcements to Newport. ii. 149. Measures taken by him to defend New-York. ii. 181. Commands on an expedition against Carolina. ii. 182. Takes Charleston. ii. 184. Returns to New-York. ii. 187. Succeeded by Gen. Carleton. ii. 226.  
 Clinton, —, Gov. of New-York under the King, arrives. vii. 79. Controlled and opposed by Lieut. Gov. De Lancey. vii. 79. 80. Criminated by the Assembly. vii. 83. Superseded by Sir Danvers Osborn. vii. 80. Indignities offered him. vii. 128.  
 Clinton, George. ii. 243.  
 Clinton, James, Brigadier Gen. ii. 164. In Sullivan's expedition against the Indians. ii. 175.  
 Clinton, Fort, taken. ii. 118.  
 Clinton, Town of. i. 284.  
 Clothes of the Indians. ix. 101. See Dress.  
 Coal-mines in Cape-Breton. iii. 99. In Nova-Scotia. iii. 98. In Pennsylvania. iii. 22.  
 Coatuit, Indian town. i. 197.  
 Coatuit Brook. iii. 13. 15.  
 Coaxet, or Coxit. x. 114.  
 Cobb, David, crushes the insurrection in Bristol county. iii. 169. Member of Congress. iii. 174.

- Cobbet, or Cabot, minister in Ipswich. x. 34. 43.  
 Cobequid Bay. iii. 97.  
 Cobequid Town. iii. 98. x. 82.  
 Cockle-cove River. viii. 148.  
 Cockran, Major. ii. 164.  
 Cod, Cape, Labrador. i. 236.  
 Cod, Cape, New-England, discovered. viii. 160. Described. iii. 12. v. 54. Description of its Eastern coast. viii. 110.  
 Cod, Cape, Harbour. iv. 42. viii. 198. 204.  
 Cod, Cape, Light-house. viii. 113. 209.  
 Cod Fishery in Massachusetts, 1763. viii. 202.  
 Coddington, Mrs. viii. 140.  
 Coddington, William. iii. 75. viii. 45. ix. 16. 19. Friend to Mrs. Hutchinson. ix. 28. Removes to Rhode-Island. ix. 27. x. 20. Purchases Rhode-Island. v. 216. Gov. of Rhode-Island. v. 217. 237. vi. 144.  
 Codpoganut, Indian. x. 132.  
 Codtanmut, Indian town. i. 197. 231.  
 Coe, Curtis. x. 60.  
 Coffin, Peleg. v. 291.  
 Coffin, Peter. x. 44.  
 Coffinge, —, of Guilford. x. 96.  
 Coffing's Island. x. 96.  
 Cogan, —, of Dorchester. ix. 150.  
 Coggeshall, John. vi. 144.  
 Coggswell, James. ix. 187.  
 Cogmiquand, Sachem. v. 240.  
 Cohanat, Raynham. iii. 166.  
 Cohasset in Buzzard's Bay. i. 132.  
 Cohoon's Hollow. viii. 115.  
 Cojoges, Indians. x. 121.  
 Cokesit in Compton. x. 130.  
 Colborn, —. viii. 46.  
 Colchester purchased. ix. 85.  
 Colden, —, Counsellor. vii. 143.  
 Cold-Harbour. viii. 213.  
 Cold-Spring Brook. vi. 214.  
 Collee, Indian, at Cambridge. vii. 24.  
 Collier, Sir George, invades Virginia. ii. 164. Expedition to Connecticut. ii. 168. Burns Fairfield. iii. 103. Relieves Penobscot. ii. 172. vi. 175.  
 Collier, Sir John. iii. 146.  
 Collings, Gamaliel. iii. 199.  
 Collings and Cop, printers. vi. 77.  
 Collins, John. vi. 146.  
 Collins, Daniel. viii. 49.  
 Colman, Benjamin, minister. iii. 260. ix. 13. Author. iii. 300. Character. x. 157. 169.  
 Colour of the Indians. i. 144. iii. 214. viii. 227.  
 Columbians. vi. 153.  
 Columbus, Christopher. vi. 151.  
 Colvill, Thomas. vi. 175.  
 Comaseakumkanit, near Sandwich. i. 198. 230.  
 Commerce, the progress and benefits of. i. 68.  
 Commissioners, four, sent by Charles II. to New-England. i. 279. v. 218. vi. 261.  
 Commissioners of the Customs arrive at Boston. ii. 43. iii. 244.  
 Common Pleas, office of, at Boston, plundered by the British. i. 3.  
 Common Sense, Extracts from. ii. 68.  
 Commutation voted by Congress. ii. 238.  
 Compton, Description of. ix. 199.  
 Conant, Col. v. 107.  
 Conant, Shubael. vii. 238.  
 Conant, Sylvanus. iii. 149.  
 Conant's Island. iii. 299.  
 Combatant. viii. 242. See Corbitant.  
 Conciliatory Acts proposed by Lord North. ii. 134. vi. 172.  
 Conconut Hollow. vi. 214.  
 Concord, Description of. i. 237. Battle of. i. 241. ii. 48. 52. River. i. 107. 238. Indians near, receive the Christian faith. viii. 16.  
 Condy, Jeremy, minister. iii. 259. iii. 301.  
 Coney-Island. vi. 222.  
 Confederation between the United States, plan of, formed by Congress. ii. 132. iii. 245.  
 Congregational Church of New-England, principles of. ix. 14. Hubbard's description of. x. 4.  
 Congregationalists are not Independents. x. 24.  
 Congress held at Albany, 1754. iv. 57. vii. 75. Plan of Union proposed by. vii. 203.  
 Congress, Continental, first convenes at Philadelphia. ii. 46. 52. iii. 244. Declares the causes and necessity of taking up arms. ii. 50. Its second petition. ii. 58. Resolves to build thirteen frigates. ii. 61. Grants permission to fit out privateers. ii. 63. Declares the United States independent. ii. 68. iii. 244. vi. 164. Recommends to the several States to settle their form of government. ii. 69. Resolves to raise a standing army. ii. 78. Resolves to borrow five millions of dollars. ii. 79. Resolutions of, respecting a Navy, 1776. ii. 80. Votes a Lottery. ii. 83. Removes to Baltimore. ii. 87. Resolves to form a Corps of Invalids. ii. 105. Removes to York-Town. ii. 117. Levies the first publick tax. ii. 127. Recommends the confiscation of Tories' estates. ii. 128. Forms the Plan of Confederation. ii. 132. iii. 245. Orders retaliation on the British prisoners. ii. 134. 202. Address to the People upon Lord North's Conciliatory Acts. ii. 136. Votes half-pay to the Officers of the Army. ii. 138. 189. 200. Letter to the British Commissioners. ii.

140. Returns to Philadelphia, and receives a second Letter from the British Commissioners. ii. 146. Refuses to ratify the Convention of Saratoga. ii. 151. Publishes a reply to the Declaration of the British Commissioners. ii. 154. Recommends a regulation of prices. ii. 158. Addresses the People on the subject of Paper-Currency. ii. 172. Appoints a Minister Plenipotentiary at the Court of Madrid. ii. 175. Issues a new species of Paper Money. ii. 184. Extends the benefit of half-pay to the Widows of Officers. ii. 189. Makes a new arrangement of the Army. ii. 196. Establishes a National Bank. ii. 211. Passes Resolves against clandestine trade with the British garrisons. ii. 231. Removes to Princeton. ii. 231. Resolves of, in favour of paying the Army. ii. 235. 238. Recommends an Impost of 5 per cent. ii. 240. Instructs Gen. Washington to grant Furloughs to non-commissioned Officers and Soldiers. ii. 241. Votes an Equestrian Statue of Gen. Washington. ii. 242. Addresses Gen. Washington. ii. 242. Disbands the Army. ii. 243.
- Congress, Federal, first assembles at New-York. iii. 245.
- Connecticut settled. iii. 5. v. 166. vi. 156. vii. 14. ix. 153. History of, in Rhyme. iv. 270. State of, in 1680. iv. 220. Charter secured by Andrew Leete. x. 99. Number of its Militia in 1756. vii. 139. State of, in 1774. vii. 231. Number of its Inhabitants, 1793. iii. 6. Government very popular. i. 75.
- Connecticut Indians, Progress of the Gospel among. i. 207. Numbers of, in 1680. iv. 21. ix. 78. In 1774. vii. 237. ix. 78. x. 117. At various periods. i. 209. ix. 76. x. 101—112.
- Connecticut River. vii. 233. Indians numerous on, in 1635. v. 167. Their numbers in 1761. x. 104.
- Connejoories, Indians. x. 121.
- Consumption a common disease in New-England. i. 274. iii. 13. 125. 144. 160. 290. iv. 43. 92. vi. 276. vii. 170. viii. 140. 159. ix. 147. 237. And among the Indians. i. 140. 173. iii. 1. iv. 70. v. 7. 26. 40.
- Contrecoeur, Capt. summons Capt. Trent. vi. 141. Expels him from the Monongahela. iii. 22. vi. 139.
- Contributions in the Churches of New-England. x. 2.
- Conyers, Major. ii. 233.
- Cook, Capt. visits the Marquesas. iv. 239. Error in the Life of, by Kippis, corrected. iv. 79.
- Cook, —, Member of Parliament. ii. 156.
- Cook, —, Minister of East-Sudbury. x. 87.
- Cook, Elisha, Agent of Massachusetts. ii. 32. Author. iii. 300.
- Cook, Francis. viii. 168.
- Cook, Jacob. viii. 168.
- Cook, John. iv. 111. viii. 168.
- Cook, Joseph. ix. 157.
- Cook, Josias. viii. 164. 168.
- Cook, Nicholas. vi. 146.
- Cook, Samuel. vii. 33.
- Cook, Thomas. x. 96.
- Cook, William. x. 87.
- Cook's Brook. viii. 155.
- Cooper, John, Indian. ix. 75.
- Cooper, Samuel, Minister. iii. 260. Author. iii. 301. vi. 70.
- Cooper, William, Minister. iii. 260. ix. 196. Author. iii. 300. Character. x. 157.
- Copper known to the Indians of New-England. viii. 220. Found in Nova-Scotia. iii. 98.
- Copperas obtained in Brookfield. i. 273.
- Copp's Hill. iii. 243.
- Copscok River. iii. 95.
- Coquit, part of Dartmouth. i. 200.
- Corbet, Lieut. Gov. ii. 172.
- Corbin, Margaret. ii. 170.
- Corbitant, Sachem, supposed enemy to the English of Plymouth. viii. 242. 258. 265. His conversation with Edward Winslow. viii. 263.
- Corey, Giles. vi. 269.
- Corlet, Ammi-Ruhamah. ix. 193.
- Corlet, —, Schoolmaster. i. 243. Character. vii. 22.
- Corn, different sorts of, cultivated in New-England. iii. 77.
- Corn, Indian. iii. 221. viii. 210. ix. 99. Mode of cultivating. viii. 190.
- Corn-hill in Truro. viii. 210. 214.
- Cornwallis, Gen. Earl, arrives at Cape Fear. ii. 64. Joins Gen. Clinton at Charleston. ii. 65. Arrives at Staten-Island. ii. 72. Takes Fort Lee. ii. 81. 83. Advances toward Trenton. ii. 90. Takes possession of Philadelphia. ii. 118. Embarks for England, 1778. ii. 154. Embarks from New-York for Carolina. ii. 182. Commands in Carolina. ii. 187. Defeats Gen. Gates at Camden. ii. 190. Fights the battle of Guilford Court-house. ii. 208. Arrives in Virginia. ii. 213. His engagement with Wayne's division near James' River. ii. 214. Takes possession of York-Town. ii. 220. Surrenders his whole army. ii. 222. ix. 107. Returns to England. ii. 226.
- Cornwallis, Gen. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 101.
- Cornwallis in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. 98. x. 81.

- Correspondence, Committee of, first chosen in Boston. ii. 45.
- Cosby, —, Gov. of New-York. vii. 78. 101.
- Cosby, Major. vi. 122.
- Cosens, John, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.
- Coshaumag, Thomas, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.
- Cotton, —, Minister of Bristol. ix. 197.
- Cotton, —, Minister of Easthampton. ix. 195.
- Cotton, John, of Boston. i. 204. iii. 75. 76. 242. vi. 285. vii. 12. viii. 29. ix. 10. 13. 15. 21. 24. 31. 32. 34. 46. 48. 172. x. 1. 3. 26. Minister. iii. 257. vi. (5.) v. 53. Favours Mrs. Hutchinson. viii. 6. ix. 28. Friend to Vane. v. 172. ix. 29. A powerful preacher. vii. 14. His great influence. ix. 22. Collects laws out of the Scriptures. v. 187. Author. iii. 300. x. 21. Character. vi. 247. 252. x. 157. Memoirs of. ix. 40. Death. vi. 258.
- Cotton, John, of Hampton. x. 45. 67. vii. 55.
- Cotton, John, of Newton. v. 273.
- Cotton, John, of Plymouth, Minister. iv. 122. Preaches to the Indians. i. 172. 198. 199. 201. 204. 205. Publishes the Indian Bible. viii. 33. Removes to Charleston. iv. 128.
- Cotton, John, of Yarmouth. v. 60.
- Cotton, Joseph. x. 60. 61.
- Cotton, Roland, baptized. ix. 193. Minister. viii. 125. Preaches to the Indians. i. 201. x. 133.
- Cotton, Seaborn, baptized. ix. 22. Minister. vii. 55. x. 45.
- Cotton, Solomon. x. 57.
- Cotton, Theophilus. ix. 197.
- Cotton grows in Virginia. iii. 89.
- Cotton Swamp. vi. 213.
- Cotuhtikut, or Ticut. i. 198.
- Cou, Indian. ix. 242.
- Coudrey, Gen. de. ii. 115.
- Coughnawagas, or Caughnawagas. x. 121.
- Couldby, or Colby, Anthony. vii. 10.
- Covel's River. viii. 145.
- Coventry, Earl of. ii. 157.
- Cowesit in Wareham. i. 231.
- Cowhesett, or Cooawsett, country. v. 239. 240. i. 221. 282.
- Cowles, Whitfield. v. 169.
- Cowpens, Battle of. ii. 203.
- Cox, —, Builder of Bridges. iii. 11. 246.
- Coxsackie, town. ix. 111.
- Coxit, in Dartmouth. i. 200.
- Coy Pond. vi. 213. 215. 217.
- Cradle of the first child born in Massachusetts. vi. 237. 293.
- Craddock, —, Minister. vii. 171.
- Craddock, Matthew. iii. 72. vii. 33.
- Cramché, Hector-Theophilus, Lieut. Gov. of Quebec. vi. 54. Orders a coffin for Gen. Montgomery. i. 112.
- Cramp-fish. iii. 119. 199.
- Cranch, Richard. vii. 45.
- Craneberry. iii. 221.
- Cranfield, Edward, Lieut. Gov. of New-Hampshire, persecutes Mr. Moody. x. 43. Commissioner to examine into the claims to the Narraganset country. v. 219. 232.
- Cranston, John. v. 226. 250. vi. 145.
- Cranston, Samuel. v. 252. vi. 145.
- Creek Indians. ix. 93. Numbers in 1768. x. 120. In 1780. iv. 99. Numbers employed by the British. x. 123.
- Crocker, Joseph. viii. 184. 195.
- Crocker's Neck. viii. 133.
- Cromwell, Lord Henry. x. 27.
- Cromwell, Oliver. iii. 194. His conduct on the trial of Charles I. ii. 37. The Churches of New-England had peace during his government. x. 8. His character. ix. 7.
- Cromwell, Richard. iii. 194.
- Cross-Island. iii. 145.
- Croswell, Andrew, minister. iii. 264. Author. iii. 301.
- Crow. iii. 219.
- Crowell, Christopher. viii. 136.
- Crowell, Sylvanus. viii. 132.
- Crowell, William. viii. 136.
- Crowell-Bay. viii. 145.
- Crowne, William. v. 222. 228. vi. 93.
- Crown-Point, French erect a fort at. vi. 135. Taken by Col. Warner. ii. 49. vi. 160. American army retreats to. ii. 65. vi. 163.
- Crow's Pond. viii. 130.
- Cruger, Col. ii. 212.
- Cruttenden, Abraham. x. 96.
- Cudworth, James. vi. 80.
- Culpepper, Lord, Gov. of Virginia, procures an order to take away appeals from the General Assembly. v. 139. 147. His salary raised. v. 142. Obtains a grant of the Northern Neck. v. 157.
- Cumberland in Nova-Scotia. iii. 98. x. 81.
- Cuming, Alexander, minister. iii. 258. Author. iii. 301.
- Cummaquid. viii. 161. Harbour. viii. 237.
- Cummings, Stephen. ix. 143.
- Cunningham, Capt. ii. 214.
- Cunningham, Capt. Gustavus. ii. 113.
- Cunningham, Major. ii. 204.
- Curliffe, Henry. ix. 192.
- Curwin, George, Capt. vi. 287. Death. vi. 266.
- Curwin, George, minister. vi. 272. Character. vi. 286. An eminent man. x. 170.
- Curwin, Jonathan. v. 62. 69.
- Cushing, Jacob. vi. 64.



- Cushing, Job. x. 85. 89.  
 Cushing, Thomas. iii. 195.  
 Cushman, Isaac, ruling elder at Plym-  
 mouth. iv. 127. Minister of Plymp-  
 ton. iv. 128. 129.  
 Cushman, Robert, his character. iv.  
 117. vii. 273. Death. iii. 35.  
 Cushman, Thomas, ruling elder. iv.  
 117. vii. 273. Opposes the Quakers.  
 iv. 121. Character. iv. 126.  
 Custis, John. v. 169.  
 Customs, Commissioners of, in Boston.  
 ii. 43.  
 Cutler, Manasseh. v. 291.  
 Cutler, Timothy, minister. iii. 261.  
 Author. iii. 301.  
 Cutshemoquin, or Kitchmakin, sells  
 lands to the English. ix. 159. Pro-  
 tests against the praying Indians  
 building a town. viii. 18. x. 15.  
 Cutt, John. x. 39. 43.  
 Cutt, Richard. x. 39. 43.  
 Cuttshunka Island. i. 232.  
 Cutts, President. vi. 93.  
 Cutts' Island. iii. 7.
- D.
- Dagget, President. ii. 169.  
 Dalrymple, Col. ii. 45.  
 Daly, Samuel. vi. 109.  
 Damarin's Cove. viii. 245.  
 Damariscotta River. vii. 169.  
 Damon, Jude. iii. 201. viii. 112.  
 Dana, Francis. viii. 103.  
 Dana, Samuel. viii. 70.  
 Danbury burnt. ii. 95.  
 Dances, Indian. i. 153. iii. 235. viii.  
 227. vii. 181. 193.  
 Danforth, Elijah. ix. 185.  
 Danforth, John, minister. i. 99. ix. 156.  
 205. Character. ix. 176. An emi-  
 nent man. x. 169.  
 Danforth, Samuel, minister of Roxbury.  
 viii. 33. ix. 176. Dies. ix. 193.  
 Danforth, Samuel, minister of Taunton.  
 ix. 176. Visits the Indian plantations.  
 viii. 173. x. 129. Dies. ix. 197. An  
 eminent man. iii. 173.  
 Danforth, Samuel, Judge. ix. 185.  
 Danforth, Thomas, Deputy Gov. Com-  
 missioner of the United Colonies. v.  
 229. Head of a party in Massachu-  
 setts. i. 229. Opposed to the witch-  
 craft delusion. v. 75.  
 Danforth, Thomas, of Dorchester. ix.  
 196.  
 Dangerfield, now Truro. iii. 200.  
 Daniel, Indian of Natick. v. 264. viii.  
 21.  
 Daniel, Indian of Tisbury. x. 131.  
 Danielson, Timothy. ix. 132.  
 Daniell, —, of New-Hampshire. vi.  
 93.  
 Danvers incorporated. vi. 234. Lower  
 parish in. vi. 272.
- Dark Day in the northern parts of the  
 United States. i. 95.  
 Darling's Neck. vi. 217.  
 Dartmouth, Earl of. ii. 111.  
 Dartmouth in New-England. iv. 232.  
 Indian towns in. i. 200. Christian  
 Indians. x. 130. Number of Indians.  
 i. 201.  
 Dartmouth in Nova-Scotia. iii. 97.  
 Dartmouth Indians submit to the gov-  
 ernment of Plymouth. v. 194.  
 Daulton, —, minister. x. 26.  
 Davenport, —, preacher. ix. 89.  
 Davenport, Abraham. vii. 238.  
 Davenport, Addington, iii. 260. 263.  
 x. 161.  
 Davenport, Capt. vi. 90.  
 Davenport, John, minister of New-  
 Haven. x. 26. Invents the notion  
 of seven church pillars. x. 92. In-  
 vited to attend the Westminster As-  
 sembly of divines. ix. 40. Minister  
 of Boston. iii. 257. vi. (5.) ix. 193.  
 Occasions the forming of the Old  
 South Church. iii. 258. vi. 262.  
 Author. iii. 300.  
 Davidson, Gen. ii. 205.  
 Davie, George. vii. 169.  
 Davies, President. iii. 192.  
 Davies, Mrs. v. 255. 275. vii. 169.  
 Davis, Caleb. v. 111.  
 Davis, Daniel. iv. 30. v. 291.  
 Davis, John, Judge. v. 291.  
 Davis, John, minister. iii. 264.  
 Davison, Secretary. iv. 113.  
 Davis's Inlet. i. 233. 235.  
 Dawes, Thomas. viii. 104.  
 Day, Ira. ix. 114.  
 Day, James. x. 61.  
 Deacons, in early periods, ordained in  
 New-England. iv. 126. x. 42.  
 Dead Swamp. iii. 167.  
 Deane, Capt. ix. 165.  
 Deane, Hugh. vii. 173.  
 Deane, Silas, arrives in France as Com-  
 missioner from the United States. ii.  
 89. His representation to the British  
 Ambassador respecting American pris-  
 oners. ii. 98. Addresses a letter to  
 Lord North on the same subject. ii.  
 132. Returns to the United States. ii.  
 146. Strictures made on his conduct  
 by Thomas Paine. ii. 159.  
 Deane, Simeon. ii. 134.  
 Dearborn, Major. ii. 122.  
 De Barras, Admiral, arrives at Boston.  
 ii. 211. Joins Count de Grasse. ii.  
 221.  
 De Berdt, Dennis, his donation to Bos-  
 ton. iii. 271. Dies. ii. 44.  
 De Bouers, Gen. ii. 112.  
 De Bouganville, Admiral. ii. 221.  
 Debt of Great-Britain in 1783. ii. 240.  
 Debt of the United States in 1783. ii.  
 240. Funded. iii. 245.

- Declaratory act passed by Parliament. ii. 43. 52.  
 Deep-Hole in Wellfleet Harbour. iii. 117.  
 Deep-Pond. vi. 213. 215. 217.  
 Deer, Indian method of catching. ix. 101. Traps described. viii. 212.  
 Deerfield, Indian inhabitants of. i. 162. Attacked by the Indians. iii. 179.  
 Deer-Island, Boston Harbour. iii. 293.  
 Deer-Island, Passamaquoddy bay. iii. 95.  
 Defoe, Daniel. ix. 11.  
 De Grasse, Count, arrives off Chesapeak Bay. ii. 217. His engagement with the British fleet near Cape Henry. ii. 221. Defeated in the West Indies. ii. 225.  
 Degrees first conferred at Harvard College. i. 245. vi. 240. vii. 20.  
 De Grey, Lord Chief Justice. iii. 110.  
 De Lancey, James, Lieut. Gov. of New-York, makes a speech to the Indians of the Six Nations. vii. 76. Plan of union of the British colonies approved by every member of the Congress at Albany, except by him. vii. 77. His character and history. vii. 77. Endeavours to obstruct the concurrence of New-York in Shirley's designed expedition against Crown-Point, but in vain. vii. 89. Formerly an enemy to Johnson, but now reconciled to him. vii. 98. His management with respect to a reinforcement. vii. 101. His influence over the Assembly of New-York. vii. 102. His popularity declines. vii. 102. He secures the friendship of his successor. vii. 103. Resumes his seat on the bench as Chief Justice. vii. 140. Obliges the Governour to pass two acts of Assembly. vii. 145.  
 De Lancey, Oliver. vii. 91. Alderman of New-York. vii. 103. Friend to Evans. vii. 137. Appointed to provide supplies for the New-York regiment, on the expedition against Crown-Point. vii. 144.  
 Delawares commit hostilities on the colonists. vii. 74. 153. Number employed by the British. x. 123. Numbers in 1794. x. 123. Their language radically the same with the Moheagan. ix. 92.  
 Delisle, French geographer. vi. 135.  
 Demerary colony. i. 65. Description of. vi. 1. River. vi. 8. Indians. vi. 13.  
 De Morteuil, Admiral. ii. 221.  
 Denison, Capt. ix. 88.  
 Dennie, —, of Connecticut. ix. 81.  
 Dennis, Josiah. viii. 140.  
 Dennis, Town, description of. viii. 129.  
 Dennison, Daniel. vii. 10.  
 Dennison, Major. iv. 217.  
 Denny, —, of Georgetown. ix. 209.  
 Depeyster, Capt. ii. 198.  
 Depopulation of the Indians, causes of. iv. 70. 74. 100. v. 7. 34. ix. 212. x. 147.  
 Derby Indians. x. 105. 111.  
 Desaussure, Henry. v. 292.  
 Desborow, John. x. 98.  
 Desborow, Samuel, of Guilford. x. 96. One of the pillars of the church. x. 92. Magistrate. iv. 185. x. 98.  
 Despard, Lambert. ix. 258.  
 D'E-staing, Admiral, arrives with his fleet off the Capes of Delaware. ii. 145. vi. 172. Repairs to Boston. ii. 149. Sails from Boston. ii. 154. Takes Dominica, St. Vincents, and Grenada, and engages Byron in the West-Indies. ii. 178. vi. 176. Repulsed in an attack on Savannah. ii. 179. vi. 184. Takes the Experiment. ii. 180. Returns to the West-Indies. ii. 181.  
 D'Estouches, Admiral. ii. 201. His engagement with Arbuthnot. ii. 206.  
 Devens, Richard. v. 107.  
 De Villier, Capt. vii. 74.  
 Devil's Invention in York. iii. 9.  
 Devonshire, Duke of. ix. 252.  
 Devotion, John. x. 105.  
 De Witt, Benjamin. x. 192.  
 Dexter, Aaron. v. 291. viii. 102.  
 Dexter, Samuel, minister. ix. 196.  
 Dexter, Samuel, counsellor. vi. 70.  
 Dexter, Thomas. viii. 119.  
 Dibble, Thomas. ix. 154.  
 Dickinson, Gen. defeats a party of the British near Somerset Court-house. ii. 91. Commands the militia of New-Jersey. ii. 114. Interrupts the progress of the enemy at Bordentown. ii. 138. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 142. Opposes the enemy at Springfield. ii. 188.  
 Dickinson, John, member of Congress. ii. 165.  
 Dickinson, John, president of Pennsylvania. ii. 232.  
 Dickinson, Jonathan. iv. 56.  
 Dickinson, Timothy. iii. 19.  
 Dickwasset River. iii. 100.  
 Dier, William. ix. 168.  
 Dieskau, Baron. vii. 105.  
 Digby, Admiral. ii. 220.  
 Digby in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96.  
 Digdeguash River. iii. 100.  
 Diman, James. vi. 274.  
 Dinwiddie, —, Lieut. Gov. of Virginia. vi. 139. Complains of the hostilities of the French. vii. 71. Proposes an attempt on Fort Du Quesne. vii. 100. Opposes the progress of the Shawanese. vii. 153.  
 Dinwiddie County. iii. 91.  
 Diseases of Massachusetts and Maine. i. 140. 173. 274. iii. 13. 19. 118. 120.

144. 160. 177. 200. 290. iv. 43. 213. v. 207. 275. vi. 276. vii. 170. viii. 140. 159. 201. ix. 147. 168. Of New-England. i. 148. 173. Among the planters of New-England, at their first arrival. viii. 43. Of New-Hampshire. iv. 92. ix. 236. Of Rhode-Island. ix. 203. Of Surinam. i. 62. Of Virginia. ii. 90.
- Dismal Swamp. iii. 86.
- Dixwell, John, one of Charles 1st's Judges. ii. 38. Buried at New-Haven. ii. 35.
- Doane, John, deacon in Plymouth. iv. 110. One of the first settlers of East-ham. iv. 113. viii. 164. Assistant. viii. 168.
- Dock-Yard at Halifax. x. 80. iii. 96.
- Dog-fish Bar. viii. 132.
- Domestic animals not found in North-America. ix. 212.
- Dominica taken by Count D'Estaing. ii. 178.
- Donham, John. iv. 111.
- Donop, Count. ii. 126. vi. 169.
- Doolittle, Benjamin. ii. 31.
- D'or, Cape. iii. 98.
- Dorchester, Earl of. ix. 42.
- Dorchester, Lord. vi. 55.
- Dorchester, in Massachusetts, chronological and topographical account of. ix. 147. Settlement of, began. i. 98. iii. 74. viii. 39. ix. 18. Grants 6,000 acres of land to the Indians of Ponki-pog. i. 100. ii. 9. Births and deaths. i. 116. ix. 168. Indian places. i. 99. 169. Bay. ix. 163. Neck. ix. 162. 164. Epitaphs. ii. 9.
- Dorchester, in South Carolina. ix. 157.
- Doucett, —, Counsellor in Nova-Scotia. vi. 121. Lieut. Gov. vi. 124.
- Douglas, Col. ii. 230.
- Douglass, William, author. iii. 300. A careless writer. ix. 40.
- Douglass and Ely, printers. vi. 77.
- Dover assaulted by the Indians. x. 54.
- Dowd, Henry. x. 96.
- Downes, John. ii. 36.
- Downing, Emanuel. vi. 251. 257. 286.
- Downing, Sir George. vi. 240.
- Downing, John. ix. 222.
- Drake, Admiral. ii. 218. Commands the van of the British fleet in the engagement off Cape Henry. ii. 221. In Rodney's engagement with Count de Grasse. ii. 225.
- Drake, Sir Francis. ix. 54.
- Drake, Francis, schoolmaster. vi. 241.
- Draper, J. printer. v. 212. vi. 67.
- Draper, R. printer. vi. 67. 75.
- Drayton, William-H. member of Congress. ii. 140. Answers the declarations of the British Commissioners. ii. 152.
- Dresden incorporated. vii. 167.
- Dress of the Indians. i. 131. 152. iii. 225. vii. 180. viii. 227. ix. 101. 242.
- Drought in New-England, in 1623. viii. 274. In 1676. ix. 87. In 1714. ix. 196. In 1749. vii. 239.
- Drown, Samuel, deacon. x. 61.
- Drown, Samuel, minister. x. 60.
- Drummond, archbishop. ii. 104.
- Drunkenness, Indians addicted to. iv. 52. 63. 70. 71. v. 20. 21. 42. vii. 183. ix. 76. 212. 214. x. 21.
- Dublin in Nova-Scotia. x. 81.
- Du Bois, Col. ii. 197.
- Duchambon, Gov. of Louisbourg. i. 45.
- Duché, Jacob. ii. 131.
- Duck Creek. iv. 41.
- Duck Island. vii. 243.
- Dudley, Joseph. v. 198. 232. vi. 65. vii. 216. x. 175. Commissioner of the United Colonies. v. 229. President of New-England. v. 220. 245. Governour of Massachusetts. iii. 194. Charges alleged against him by the Mathers. iii. 126. 137. His defence of himself. iii. 135. His wife. x. 181.
- Dudley, Paul. iii. 126. 130. 132.
- Dudley, Samuel, of Cambridge. vii. 10.
- Dudley, Samuel, of Exeter. iv. 88. x. 39.
- Dudley, Thomas. iii. 76. 242. vi. 272. vii. 6. 10. viii. 6. ix. 10. 16. 19. 20. 27. 31. 47. x. 2. Arrives in Massachusetts. viii. 38. Governour. iii. 194. Character. vii. 11. x. 29. Death. vi. 258.
- Dudley, William. x. 96.
- Dudley, Indian town in. i. 189. iii. 185. Pond. i. 189.
- Duke's County, Number of Indians in. i. 206.
- Dummer, Jeremiah, Agent of Massachusetts. v. 197. vi. 78. vii. 58. Author. iii. 300. Character. x. 155.
- Dummer, Richard. ix. 175.
- Dummer, Shubael. iii. 8.
- Dummer, William, Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. Makes a treaty with the Eastern Indians. iii. 106. 140. vi. 108.
- Dummer Fort. iii. 106.
- Dunbar, Asa. vi. 274.
- Dunbar, Samuel. ix. 178. Ordained. ix. 197.
- Dunbar, Thomas, Colonel in Braddock's defeat. vii. 92. 94. Marches towards Philadelphia. vii. 100. Arrives with troops at Albany. vii. 124. Member of the grand council of war. vii. 131.
- Duncan, —, of Dorchester. ix. 150.
- Duncan, Capt. ii. 95.
- Dundas, Col. ii. 222.
- Dunham, Jonathan. iv. 127. ix. 184.
- Dunmore, Earl of, Gov. of New-York. ii. 45. Gov. of Virginia, defeated at the battle of Gwynn's Island. ii. 60.

- Driven from the coast of Virginia. ii. 72.
- Dunn, John. v. 292.
- Dunning, —, counsel for Massachusetts agent. iii. 112. 113.
- Dunster, Henry. v. 260. x. 14. President of Harvard-College. i. 243. vii. 27. Revises the New-England Psalms. vii. 20. viii. 10. Embraces the principle of the Baptists. vii. 48. x. 31. 174.
- Dunster, Isaiah. x. 79.
- Du Portail, Gen. ii. 225.
- Du Quesne, Marquis, Gov. of Canada. vi. 53. vii. 70.
- Durill, Philip. vi. 113.
- Dutch settle at New-Netherlands. iii. 51. Obtain possession of New-York. vi. 83.
- Dutch-point. iii. 6.
- Dutch-town in Halifax. x. 79.
- Duvivier, French officer. vi. 124.
- Duxborough, Description of. ii. 3. Church embodied at. iv. 111.
- Dwight, Capt. x. 143.
- Dwight, Col. of Brookfield. x. 143.
- Dwight, Col. of Northampton. x. 152.
- Dwight, Joseph, Brigadier-General. x. 143. 149. 152. Commended by Gen. Pepperell. i. 52. Head of a party in Stockbridge. iv. 55.
- Dwight, Timothy. v. 292.
- Dyer, —, author of the Life of Robinson. ix. 11.
- Dyer, Eliphalet. vii. 238.
- Dyer's Hollow. viii. 113.
- Dyer's Swamp. viii. 208.
- E.
- Eagle Island. vi. 222.
- Earthen pots used by the Indians. viii. 261.
- Earthquake in New-England, 1638. x. 173. In 1727. ix. 176. 197. x. 50. In 1755, effects of in Holden. iv. 231. Dec. 1800. ix. 233. March 1801. ix. 233. Feb. 1802. ix. 234. At Port-Royal, 1692. iv. 223.
- Easter-Island. iv. 239.
- Eastern-Harbour, or Chatham harbour. viii. 166.
- Eastern Indians at war with the Colonists from 1676 to 1749. ix. 218. Numbers of in 1710. x. 114. They are Roman Catholics. i. 211. v. 115. ix. 228.
- Eastham, Description and History of. viii. 154. First visited by the planters of Plymouth. viii. 218. Settled. iv. 112. Cove. viii. 155. 160. Indian towns. i. 197. Number of Indians in 1693. i. 201. In 1698. x. 133. See Nauset.
- East-Harbour. iii. 195. viii. 112. 208.
- East-India Marine Society. vi. 239.
- Easton, John. vi. 145.
- Easton, Nicholas. v. 250. vi. 144. 145.
- East wind prevails on the coast of New-England, during the spring. iii. 290. iv. 93.
- East-Windsor, Account of. v. 169.
- Eaton, Gen. ii. 207.
- Eaton, Theophilus. iv. 182.
- Eaton, William. ix. 133.
- Ebeling, Professor. v. 292.
- Ebenezer taken possession of by British troops. ii. 155.
- Eckley, Joseph. iii. 258.
- Eddy, Samuel. x. 192.
- Eden, William, British Commissioner, arrives in America. ii. 139. Returns to England. ii. 154.
- Edes, Benjamin. vi. 69.
- Edgarton, Indian towns in. i. 204. Number of Indians in 1698. x. 132. In 1763. i. 206.
- Edgecombe, Town of. vii. 166.
- Ederly, Thomas. x. 44.
- Edward, Fort. vii. 104.
- Edwards, Jonathan. iii. 193. iv. 55. x. 56. 70. His manner of preaching. iv. 51. President of Nassau College. x. 153. A great man. x. 157.
- Edwards, Jonathan, President of Union College. ix. 91.
- Edwards, Timothy. v. 169. 171.
- Eel-Point. iii. 153.
- Eel-River. viii. 220.
- Eels, Indian manner of catching. viii. 231.
- Elfingham, Earl of. ii. 157.
- Elfingham, Lord, Gov. of Virginia. v. 141. 147.
- Egeremet, Indian. vi. 113.
- Egg-Harbour, Iron ore at. ix. 257.
- Egg-Rock. iii. 296.
- Eglestone, Bagot. ix. 154.
- Egunksankapoug, the Whetstone Hills. ix. 80.
- Elders, Ruling, in New-England churches. vi. 243. vii. 272. x. 4. Ordained. v. 266. The manner of their ordination. x. 5. Not admitted in several churches of Connecticut. x. 91. The office is now hardly known. ix. 2.
- Eldridge, Enoch. iii. 16.
- Eldridge Point and Cove. viii. 145.
- Eliot, Abraham. x. 60. Deacon. x. 61.
- Eliot, Andrew. v. 209. viii. 280. ix. 178. Minister in Boston. iii. 260. Author. iii. 301.
- Eliot, Andrew, Minister in Fairfield. iii. 105. F. H. S. v. 292. Memoir of. x. 188.
- Eliot, Benjamin. i. 171.
- Eliot, John, Minister in Boston. iii. 260. viii. 68. F. H. S. v. 91. viii. 102.
- Eliot, John, Minister of Cambridge Village. ix. 192. Preaches to the In-

- dians. i. 171. 184. His salary from the Society for Propagating the Gospel. i. 218. Character. v. 266.
- Eliot, John, of Portsmouth. x. 60. Ruling elder. x. 61.
- Eliot, John, Minister of Roxbury, historical account of. viii. 5. Arrives at Boston. ix. 21. Speaks against the Indian treaty, but afterwards recants his opinion. vi. 247. viii. 29. Appears against Mrs. Hutchinson. viii. 7. One of the authors of the New-England Psalms. vii. 19. viii. 10. Undertakes the conversion of the Indians. viii. 11. 170. x. 8. Begins to preach at Nonantum. i. 168. v. 256. His manner of teaching. i. 168. 169. v. 257. viii. 13. Preaches at Neponset. i. 169. His motives for preaching to the Indians. i. 170. Translates the Bible and other books into the Indian language. i. 172. v. 266. Dedicated to Charles Ild. i. 174. vii. 222. Plants schools among the praying Indians. i. 172. By his motion magistrates appointed among them. i. 177. His reasons for establishing the payment of tithes among them. i. 178. Sets up a lecture in Logick and Theology among the Indians at Natick. i. 183. iii. 177. Takes a journey to Wamesit. i. 187. Travels to the Indian praying towns of Massachusetts. i. 189. Ordains ministers at Martha's Vineyard and Marshpee. i. 204. 206. Administers baptism to the Indians of Martha's Vineyard and Natick. i. 217. Requests lands for the Indians of Ponkipog. i. 100. ii. 9. ix. 160. His salary from the Society for Propagating the Gospel. i. 218. viii. 26. The Indian princes and priests jealous of him. viii. 18. Retires from the ministry. viii. 23. His style of preaching. viii. 23. Character. viii. 25. Courage. viii. 14. Heroick defence of the Indians. i. 228. viii. 30. Charity. x. 186. Political opinions. viii. 28. Prejudices. viii. 27. Death. i. 171. viii. 31. Account of his sons. i. 171. List of his works. viii. 32. See also iii. 177—188. v. 25. 43. vi. 198. 203. vii. 23. ix. 176. 192. x. 124.
- Eliot, Joseph, minister. i. 171. iv. 188. An eminent man. x. 93.
- Eliot, Richard Roswell. v. 267.
- Eliot, Samuel. i. 171.
- Elisha, Indian. x. 132.
- Elizabeth, Queen. vii. 266.
- Elizabeth-Islands, names of. i. 232. Indians in 1698. x. 131.
- Elizabeth-River. iii. 86.
- Ellington incorporated. v. 169.
- Ellis, Gov. iii. 102.
- Ellis, Jonathan, Minister in Plymouth. iv. 181. In Compton. ix. 206.
- Elmer, Edward. vii. 10.
- Elmer, Daniel. x. 85.
- Ely, Richard. x. 96.
- Emerson, John, Minister. x. 53. His children. x. 69.
- Emerson, John, Schoolmaster. vi. 240.
- Emerson, William. viii. 277. F. H. S. x. 192.
- Emery, Samuel. iii. 139.
- Emery, Stephen. viii. 154.
- Emigration from England ceases. vi. 256.
- Emistefego, Indian. ii. 233.
- Endicott, John, settles at Salem. i. 123. iii. 66. vii. 7. viii. 38. 41. ix. 2. Character. iii. 75. vi. 261. Promotes the ordination of ministers. iii. 67. vi. 242. Proceedings against the Brownes. vi. 245. ix. 2. 3. 4. 5. Expedition against the Pequots. iv. 273. vi. 231. Opposed to Mrs. Hutchinson. vi. 255. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. vi. 257. Death. vi. 261.
- England, Kings of, from James 1st. iii. 194.
- English, Mrs. accused of witchcraft. vi. 264. 269. Generous favour of Mr. Moodye to her. x. 66.
- English, Philip. vi. 269. x. 65.
- Enon, now Wenham. vi. 254.
- Epes, Daniel. vi. 240.
- Ephraim, Indian deacon. i. 180. x. 134.
- Episcopal church in Boston, the first, formed. iii. 259.
- Episcopius, Arminian Professor. iv. 134. vii. 269.
- Epping incorporated. iv. 87.
- Erskine, John. v. 292.
- Erskine, Sir William, on the expedition to Danbury. ii. 95. Enters Philadelphia. ii. 118. Marches to Chester. ii. 129.
- Espranija, village in Catskill. ix. 116.
- Esquimeaux coast, description of. i. 233. Indians. i. 234. ix. 217.
- Essequibo colony. i. 64. River. vi. 8.
- Essex bridge completed. vi. 229.
- Etchemina, or Schoodick river. iii. 100.
- Eutaw Springs, battle of. ii. 218.
- Evans, —, geographer. vii. 136.
- Evans, Lieut. ii. 164.
- Evarts, John. x. 96.
- Eveleth, John. x. 83.
- Everett, Moses. i. 99. ix. 178.
- Everett, Moses, jun. ix. 191.
- Everett, Oliver. iii. 281. ix. 178.
- Executions, first, in New-Hampshire. x. 55.
- Executions, not any, in Plymouth county, during 60 years. iii. 152.
- Exeter, description of. iv. 87. Academy founded. iv. 96.
- Eyre, Robert. x. 179.

- Eyres, Major. vi. 38.  
 Eyres, Major, engineer. vii. 145.
- F.
- Fairbanks, Ebenezer. ix. 133.  
 Fairfield burnt. ii. 169. iii. 103. vi. 174.  
 Fairhaven village in New-Bedford. iv. 232. 235. British attempt to burn it. iv. 236.  
 Fairhaven pond. i. 238.  
 Faith, definitions of. ix. 9.  
 Falkland Islands first visited by the whalemens of New-England. iii. 199.  
 Falmouth, Barnstable county, description of. viii. 127. Indian name of. i. 198. 231. Number of Indians in. i. 230.  
 Falmouth, Casco-bay, burnt. ii. 58.  
 Falmouth, Nova-Scotia. iii. 97. x. 81.  
 False-caterpillar of the pear tree. v. 287.  
 Familists, sect of. ix. 35. 49.  
 Faneuil, Peter. iii. 253.  
 Farmington Indians. x. 104.  
 Farms, tract of land in Dorchester. ix. 164.  
 Farnsworth, —, printer. vi. 77.  
 Fast, first general, in American colonies. ii. 55.  
 Fatootee Island. iv. 243.  
 Faunce, Thomas, deacon. iv. 126. Ruling elder. iv. 129.  
 Fayette, Marquis de la, engages in the American service. ii. 91. Wounded in the battle of Brandywine. ii. 116. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 142. At Rhode-Island. ii. 148. Visits France. ii. 160. Returns to America. ii. 184. Dispatched to Virginia. ii. 210. His operations there. ii. 213. Storms a British redoubt at Yorktown. ii. 222. ix. 107.  
 Fayette Fort taken. ii. 166.  
 Feak, Henry. viii. 119.  
 Fearing, Israel. iv. 237.  
 Febiger, Col. ii. 170.  
 Federal Constitution of the United States formed. ii. 132. iii. 245. viii. 91. Government first meets at New-York. ii. 132. iii. 245.  
 Federal Furnace in Carver. ix. 258.  
 Federal Island. ii. 21.  
 Felix, Thomas. iii. 150.  
 Fellowes, Gen. ii. 125.  
 Fellowship, Right hand of, given at ordinations in New-England. vi. 242. iv. 219.  
 Fenner, Arthur. vi. 146.  
 Fenwick, —, of Saybrook. iv. 183.  
 Ferguson, Adam. ii. 139. 151.  
 Ferguson, Col. ii. 185.  
 Ferguson, Major. ii. 198.  
 Fessenden, Benjamin. viii. 125.  
 Fessenden, William. ix. 145.  
 Filer, Walter. ix. 154.  
 Finney, Robert. iv. 123. 126.  
 Fires in Boston. iii. 269. iv. 189. 211. v. 52. In Salem, 1698. vi. 234.  
 Fisher, Hugh. ix. 157.  
 Fisher, Nathaniel. vi. 274.  
 Fish, Indian manner of catching. iii. 224. viii. 233.  
 Fishes, in Connecticut. iv. 270. In Demerary. vi. 4. In Labrador. i. 233. 236. In Maine. i. 255. iii. 139. 143. 145. 146. iv. 143. ix. 142. 228. In Massachusetts. i. 113. 119. 238. 273. ii. 6. iii. 2. 13. 18. 119. 139. 143. 146. 153. 157. 167. 168. 189. 199. iv. 233. viii. 122. 140. 150. 191. 198. 220. 233. 246. 255. In New-Brunswick. iii. 101. In New-England. i. 130. 185. 247. iii. 224. vii. 249. In New-Hampshire. iv. 95. In New-York. i. 285, ix. 118. 124. In Nova-Scotia. iii. 98. x. 80. In Rhode-Island. ix. 202. In Surinam. i. 63. In Virginia. iii. 85. v. 126.  
 Fishes, method of preserving. iv. 9.  
 Fishing the employment of men among the Indians. i. 149. ix. 101.  
 Fiske, John, General. vi. 240.  
 Fiske, John, Minister of Wenham. x. 26. Of Chelmsford. vi. 240. 253.  
 Fiske, Moses. vi. 240. Ordained. ix. 193.  
 Fiske, Nathan. i. 266.  
 Fiske, Samuel, Minister in Salem. iv. 219. vi. 240. Ordained. vi. 273. ix. 13. Death. vi. 274.  
 Fiske, Thaddeus. vii. 33.  
 Fiske, William, F. H. S. v. 291. Memoir of. ix. 206.  
 Fitch, Ebenezer. v. 291.  
 Fitch, Elijah. iv. 16.  
 Fitch, Jabez, minister of Ipswich. x. 31. ix. 197. Of Portsmouth. vii. 251. x. 49. His family. x. 68. An eminent man. x. 170.  
 Fitch, James, minister of Norwich. x. 50. ix. 86. Preaches to the Mohegan Indians. i. 172. 208. Prays for rain. ix. 87. His epitaph. x. 68. Children. x. 69.  
 Fitch, John. x. 68.  
 Fitch, Thomas, Gov. of Connecticut. vii. 91. 131. x. 68.  
 Fitch, Thomas, of Norwalk. x. 68.  
 Fitch's Inlet. i. 235.  
 Five Nations of Indians. vi. 131. 133. 138.  
 Flag of the United States established by Congress. ii. 80.  
 Flagg, Major. ii. 210.  
 Flat-rock Spring. vi. 214.  
 Flax-Pond. viii. 130.  
 Fleet, Thomas. v. 215.  
 Fleming, printer. vi. 71.  
 Fletcher, Gov. vi. 270. x. 66.  
 Fletcher, John. x. 43. 68.  
 Fleury, Col. ii. 170.

- Flintston described. iii. 240.  
 Flint's Pond. x. 14.  
 Flood, tradition of, among the natives of  
 Sandwich Islands. ix. 244.  
 Flucker, Thomas. v. 106.  
 Flynt, Henry, minister. ix. 175. 194.  
 Flynt, Henry, tutor. ix. 183. Charac-  
 ter. x. 165.  
 Flynt, Josiah. vi. 100. Minister of Dor-  
 chester. i. 99. ix. 194. Ordained.  
 ix. 175.  
 Fobes, Peres, minister. iii. 168. His in-  
 tended History of Plymouth. iii. 176.  
 Fog, Indian tradition respecting the ori-  
 gin of. v. 56.  
 Folger, Peter. iii. 159.  
 Follen's Pond. viii. 129.  
 Fones, John. v. 247.  
 Food of the Indians. i. 150. iii. 208.  
 viii. 193. 233. ix. 99. 101.  
 Forbes, Eli, minister. i. 265. x. 274.  
 Author. i. 274.  
 Ford, Thomas. ix. 154.  
 Fordgier, Goodman. ix. 192.  
 Fordyce, Capt. ii. 85.  
 Forefather's Rock at Plymouth. v. 57.  
 Forest-River. vi. 215. viii. 54.  
 Forge-Pond. iii. 168.  
 Forkes, Gen. iii. 22.  
 Fort-Hill, Boston. iii. 243.  
 Fort-Hill, Yarmouth. v. 55.  
 Fortifications, Indian, in America. iii.  
 23. 24. iv. 100. 106.  
 Fossil shells in Nantucket. iii. 163.  
 Fossil shells, bones, and trees in the  
 Southern States. iii. 88.  
 Foster, Dan. v. 169.  
 Foster, Deacon. x. 33.  
 Foster, Ensign. ix. 161.  
 Foster, John, deacon. iv. 130.  
 Foster, John, mathematician. ii. 10.  
 ix. 181.  
 Foster, John, minister. vii. 37.  
 Foster, Theodore. x. 192.  
 Foster, Thomas. iv. 132.  
 Foster's Pond. x. 76.  
 Fothergill, Anthony. x. 192.  
 Fowle, printer at Exeter. vi. 75.  
 Fowle, Daniel. v. 215. Thrown into  
 prison. vi. 69.  
 Fowler, Abraham. x. 99.  
 Fowler, Amos. x. 94.  
 Fowler, John. x. 96.  
 Fowling-Pond. iii. 168. 171. 172.  
 Fox. iii. 222.  
 Fox, George. x. 22.  
 Fox, Jabez. x. 181.  
 Fox, John. x. 181.  
 Fox Indians. x. 122. 123.  
 Fox-Point. ix. 163.  
 Fox's Mills, Action at. ii. 197.  
 Foxcroft, Francis. v. 75.  
 Foxcroft, Thomas, minister. iii. 257.  
 vi. (5.) Author. iii. 301. Character.  
 x. 164.  
 Foxon, Indian. ix. 83.  
 France, three Commissioners sent to by  
 Congress. ii. 89. Treaty with the  
 United States signed. ii. 134. War  
 commences with Great-Britain. ii.  
 145. Treaty of peace with Great-  
 Britain. ii. 234.  
 Franklin, Benjamin, of Boston. v. 211.  
 Franklin, Dr. Benjamin. v. 208. 211.  
 Printer in Boston. vi. 67. One of the  
 Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.  
 Agent of Massachusetts. ii. 44. Ap-  
 pears before the lords of the com-  
 mittee for plantation affairs on the  
 complaint against Hutchinson and  
 Oliver. iii. 109. Prosecuted for con-  
 veying the letters of the governours  
 to Massachusetts. iii. 112. Severe  
 reflections thrown on his character by  
 Wedderburne, the solicitor general.  
 iii. 113. Dismissed from his office  
 of deputy post-master general. iii.  
 115. Holds a conference with Lord  
 Howe. ii. 75. vi. 164. Arrives in  
 France as Commissioner of the United  
 States. ii. 89. Makes a representa-  
 tion to Lord Stormont respecting  
 American prisoners. ii. 98. Gives in-  
 formation to Lord North on the same  
 subject. ii. 131. Recommends to  
 American cruisers to treat Capt. Cook  
 as a friend. iv. 79. 156. Negotiates  
 peace with Great-Britain. ii. 234.  
 Grandson of Peter Folger. iii. 160.  
 Death, and donation to Boston. iii.  
 288.  
 Franklin, James, printer in Boston. v.  
 208. vi. 54. 67.  
 Franklin, James, printer in Newport.  
 vi. 75.  
 Franklin, Lieut. Gov. iii. 102.  
 Franklin, William. ii. 67.  
 Franklin-Island in George's River. iv.  
 20.  
 Franklin's Island in Pacifick Ocean. ii.  
 22.  
 Fraser, Gen. ii. 122. 124. vi. 170.  
 Fraser, Major. ii. 233.  
 Frederickton in New-Brunswick. iii.  
 100.  
 Freeman, Edmund. viii. 119.  
 Freeman, Gen. ii. 119.  
 Freeman, James. iii. 260. v. 291.  
 Freeman, John. vi. 91. viii. 152.  
 Freeman, Nathaniel, of Sandwich. v.  
 291.  
 Freeman, Nathaniel, jun. viii. 63.  
 Freeman, Nathaniel, of Harwich. viii.  
 135.  
 Freeman's Pond. x. 76.  
 Freemason, a species of Merribunter.  
 vi. 2.  
 Freemasons, the first lodge of, held in  
 North-America. iii. 273.  
 Freemen in New-England at first con-

- sisted of church members only. iv. 185. 217. v. 174. vi. 236. ix. 47. This practice not observed in Windsor. v. 167.
- Free-stone in Rhode-Island and Connecticut. ix. 260.
- Freetown, number of Indians in. i. 201.
- French attempt to gain the Six Nations and other Indians. x. 146. Send an army into the western country of Virginia. x. 147. Cultivate the friendship of the Indians. v. 119. Trade with the British American colonies. i. 80. Troops arrive at Newport. ii. 188.
- French River. i. 114.
- French, Thomas. x. 96.
- Fresh-brook Hollow. viii. 115.
- Friend's settlement. i. 285.
- Frink, —, minister. iv. 131.
- Frink, Thomas. x. 87.
- Frisbie, Levi. x. 33.
- Frobisher, Sir Martin. ix. 54.
- Frobisher, William. iii. 281.
- Frog of Democracy. vi. 3.
- Frontenac Fort. vii. 131.
- Frost, uncommon, in Massachusetts. iv. 44.
- Frost-Fish Brook. vi. 215. 216.
- Fruits in Demerary. vi. 4. In New-England. i. 108. 119. 128. iii. 78. 221. In Virginia. iii. 87. 89.
- Fry, Col. of Virginia. vi. 140.
- Frye, Col. of Nova-Scotia. x. 115.
- Frye, Joseph. ix. 137.
- Fryer, Justice. x. 44.
- Fulwin Indians. x. 123.
- Fuller, Abraham. v. 277.
- Fuller, Samuel, surgeon. iii. 74. ix. 3. Deacon at Plymouth. x. 2. Character. iv. 111. vii. 272.
- Fuller, Samuel, minister. iii. 149. Character. iv. 127.
- Fulton's Point. iii. 141.
- Fundy Bay described. iii. 97.
- G.
- Gabaron-Bay. v. 205.
- Gabriel, Indian. vi. 16.
- Gachradodon, Cahuga chief. vii. 194. Bold and graceful orator. vii. 200.
- Gage, Thomas, Lieut. Col. vii. 92. 100. Gen. ii. 46. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 196. v. 106. Sends troops to Concord. ii. 48. 53. Declares Massachusetts to be in a state of rebellion. ii. 49. 54. Embarks for England. ii. 56.
- Gager, Deacon. ix. 12. Dies. viii. 40.
- Gair, Thomas. iii. 264.
- Galessoniere, Marquis de. vi. 53.
- Gallop, Capt. vi. 30.
- Gallope, —, of Dorchester. ix. 150.
- Gallop's Island. iii. 296.
- Galloway's account of British cruelty. ii. 93.
- Gambier, Capt. ii. 186.
- Gambier, Commodore, succeeded by Admiral Montague. ii. 45. Admiral, arrives at New-York. ii. 145. Succeeded by Lord Howe. ii. 151.
- Gambling, Benjamin. x. 53.
- Gaming, Indians addicted to. i. 153. iii. 234. viii. 236. 254.
- Gammon, Point. iii. 13. viii. 132.
- Gannett, Caleb. vii. 1. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Gansevoort, Col. ii. 108. 112. 116.
- Gardiner, John. iii. 301.
- Gardiner, John S. J. iii. 263. viii. 78.
- Gardiner, Major. ii. 163. 168.
- Gardiner's Island. ii. 206.
- Gardner, Andrew. i. 116.
- Gardner, Capt. of Nantucket. x. 132.
- Gardner, Capt. in Philip's war. vi. 90. 234. 266.
- Gardner, Henry. ix. 191.
- Gardner, John, minister of Stow. x. 83. 89. His children. x. 83.
- Gardner, Joseph. ix. 191.
- Gardner, Nathaniel. iii. 301.
- Gardner, —, minister of Lancaster. ix. 195.
- Garth, Gen. plunders New-Haven. ii. 169. Assists in burning Fairfield. iii. 103. 105. Taken prisoner. ii. 180.
- Gaspee settled by the French. vi. 136.
- Gaspee schooner burnt at Rhode-Island. ii. 45.
- Gates, Gen. Horatio. vi. 160. Takes command of the northern army. ii. 70. 79. 84. Commands the northern army in 1777. vi. 170. Complains of the murder of Miss M'Crea. ii. 111. Takes post near Stillwater. ii. 116. Number of troops under his command. ii. 125. Makes prisoners of Burgoyne's army. ii. 123. Encamps with troops at White Plains. ii. 145. Takes possession of Rhode-Island. ii. 180. Defeated at Camden. ii. 189. President of convention of officers in 1783. ii. 239.
- Gay, Ebenezer, ordained. ix. 196. An eminent man. x. 159.
- Gay-Head, according to an Indian tradition, once joined Noman's Land. i. 139. Number of Indians at. x. 132. i. 206. Indian inscription on a grave stone. i. 140.
- Gayland, William, selectman of Dorchester. ix. 152. Deacon. ix. 154.
- Gediack, or Jediuk tribe. x. 116.
- Gee, Joshua, minister. iii. 258. x. 67. Author. iii. 300. Character. x. 157. 170.
- General courts in New-Haven colony. iv. 185. x. 97.
- Genesee, or Genesee river, lands on, described. i. 285. Falls. i. 285. Indians. x. 121.
- Geneva, on Canada-Saga lake, described. i. 285.



- George Ist and IId. iii. 194.  
 George III. iii. 195. ix. 281.  
 George, Jonathan, Indian of Little-Compton. x. 129.  
 George, Sachem of Nauset. viii. 164. 169.  
 Georgekee, Indian name of Thomaston. iv. 20.  
 Georges, Fort at, attacked by the French and Indians. iv. 20.  
 George's Island. iii. 296.  
 Georgetown, Description of. i. 251.  
 Georgia joins American colonies. ii. 64.  
 Progress of the British troops in. ii. 163.  
 Gerard, Minister from France arrives. ii. 146. Has his first audience of Congress. ii. 148. Presents memorials to Congress. ii. 159. 160.  
 Germaine, Lord George, Secretary of State for American colonies. ii. 63. Brings into the House of Commons the American piracy bill. ii. 92. Communicates to Gen. Carleton the plan of the northern campaign of 1777. ii. 97. Recommends employing the Indians. ii. 111. Censured by Gen. Howe. ii. 139. Defends the manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 157. Resigns. ii. 226.  
 German-Flats, Houses at, burnt by the royalists. ii. 152.  
 Germantown, Battle of. ii. 119.  
 German troops hired by Parliament. ii. 62. Arrive at New-York. ii. 72. Number of in 1777. ii. 100.  
 Gerrish, John. vi. 241.  
 Gerry, Thomas. viii. 55.  
 Gibbons, —, one of the first settlers of the Isles of Shoals. vii. 249. 253.  
 Gibbons, Capt. ii. 171.  
 Gibbs, Henry, minister of Watertown. x. 68. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Gibbs, John, Indian minister at Nantucket. i. 206. 207. His life threatened by King Philip. iii. 159.  
 Gibson, Bishop. viii. 77.  
 Gibson, Richard. x. 38.  
 Gidney, Bartholomew, King's counselor. v. 245. Judge. v. 76.  
 Gifford, G. ix. 11.  
 Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, Col. ix. 53. Obtains a patent of Queen Elizabeth. ix. 51. Sails to Newfoundland. ix. 52. Lost in a storm. ix. 50. Character. ix. 52.  
 Giles, Capt. vi. 115.  
 Gilians and Valdes Island. ix. 242.  
 Gill, John. vi. 69.  
 Gillet, Nathan. ix. 154.  
 Gillon, Commodore. ii. 229.  
 Gilman, family of. iv. 93.  
 Gilman, Peter. x. 70.  
 Gilmantown in New-Hampshire. iv. 89. 93.  
 Gist, Col. ii. 114. General. ii. 233.  
 Glades among the Alleghany Mountains. iii. 22.  
 Glauber's Salts manufactured in Massachusetts. viii. 124. 138. ix. 165.  
 Gloucester settled. ix. 39.  
 Gloucester in Virginia. ix. 108.  
 Glover, —, intended minister of Plymouth. vii. 277.  
 Glover, —, of Dorchester, dies. ix. 197.  
 Glover, Col. viii. 80.  
 Glover, Gen. ii. 125. 148.  
 Glover, John, one of the first settlers of Dorchester. ix. 18. 150. 180.  
 Glover, John, Dr. ix. 180.  
 Glover, Joseph, brings the first printing press to New-England. vi. 232. vii. 19.  
 Glover, Nathaniel. ix. 186.  
 Glover, Pelatiah. ix. 180.  
 Gnat-River. ix. 116.  
 Goddard, John. x. 63. 69.  
 Gods of the Indians. i. 136. 154. iii. 206. 226. viii. 264. x. 108. See Cautantowwit.  
 Godfrey, —, of Chatham. ix. 196.  
 Goff, —, comes to New-England. vii. 12.  
 Goffe, Col. one of King Charles' judges. ii. 36. Resides in Cambridge. vii. 60.  
 Golden Hill. x. 112.  
 Goodale's Spring. vi. 216.  
 Goodman, John. viii. 223. 225.  
 Goodman, Richard. vii. 10.  
 Goodwin, John. ix. 7.  
 Goodwin, Thomas, President of Magdalen College. vii. 41. Chaplain to Oliver Cromwell. ix. 8.  
 Goodwin, William. vii. 10.  
 Gookin, Daniel, Major Gen. v. 256. Memoirs of. i. 228. Removes to Cambridge. vii. 23. A grantee of Worcester. i. 115. Appointed superintendent of the Indians in Massachusetts. i. 177. x. 128. Defends his character. vi. 198. Takes a journey to Wamesit. i. 186. Visits the Indian praying towns in Massachusetts. i. 189. Endeavours to civilize the Indians. x. 9. Writes a narrative of the war with the Maquas. iii. 180. A pillar in the Indian work, iii. 181. His courts among the praying Indians held in the English tongue. iii. 184. 185. His salary from the Society for Propagating the Gospel. i. 180. 218. Contents of his History of New-England. i. 224. Death and character. iii. 187. Inscription on his monument. vii. 24. Account of his posterity. ii. 25.  
 Gookin, Daniel, minister of Sherburne. i. 229. Preacher at Natick. iii. 185. 187. viii. 21.

- Gookin, Nathaniel, minister of Cambridge. vii. 32. Memoir of. vii. 54.
- Gookin, Nathaniel, jun. minister in Hampton. ii. 25. Character. vii. 55.
- Gookin, Nathaniel, 3d. minister in Hampton. ii. 25. x. 55. 68. Character. vii. 55.
- Gooseberries, rocks. vi. 222.
- Gore, Christopher. v. 291.
- Gorges, Sir Ferdinando, proprietor of Maine. iii. 138. Receives a charter of the province. iii. 8. ix. 248. Three of his planters killed by the Indians. viii. 227. Attempts to introduce into New-England the worship of the English church. i. 125. ix. 6. A false friend to the New-England puritans. iii. 70. 71. iv. 120. Form of an oath appointed to be taken by him. i. 101.
- Gorges, Robert. i. 125.
- Gorges, Thomas. iii. 139.
- Gorgiana, now York, incorporated. iii. 8. Tax of, in 1645. i. 102.
- Gorham, Col. i. 16. 38.
- Gorham, William. iv. 27. 30.
- Gorton, Samuel, of Rhode-Island. v. 230. Head of the Familists. ix. 35. x. 28.
- Gortonists, Sect of. ix. 36. 40.
- Gosnold, Bartholomew, discovers Cape Cod. viii. 160. And the Elizabeth Islands. iv. 234.
- Gospel first preached to the Indians of New-England. i. 168. v. 256. viii. 12. ix. 197. x. 11.
- Gospel, Society for Propagating, in New-England constituted. i. 212. v. 261. Obtains a charter from Charles II. i. 214. vii. 226.
- Gosport. vii. 244. Erected into a town. vii. 246.
- Goss, Thomas. x. 82.
- Gould, Lieut. Col. ii. 96.
- Government of the Indians. i. 132. 154. iii. 229. ix. 213. 214.
- Governour's Island, Boston Harbour. iii. 296. 299.
- Governour's Island, New-York Harbour. ii. 67.
- Gower, Lord. ii. 104.
- Graaf, Sieur de, Gov. ii. 92.
- Grafton, Duke of, supports Earl of Chatham's motion for an accommodation with America. ii. 103. Protests against the manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 157.
- Grafton, Joseph. v. 275.
- Grafton, Indian name of. i. 184. Number of Indians in. i. 195. x. 134.
- Grammar Schools established in Plymouth colony. viii. 167.
- Grampus-Bay. viii. 218.
- Grandby Fort taken. ii. 212.
- Grand-Cove. viii. 132.
- Grand-Manan-Island. iii. 95.
- Grand-River. vi. 53.
- Grant, Matthew. ix. 154.
- Grant's Hill. iii. 22.
- Grape-Island. iii. 296.
- Grape-Swamp. viii. 156.
- Grapes in New-England. i. 119. iii. 221. viii. 42.
- Grasse, Count de. ii. 217. 221. 225.
- Grasses in Rhode-Island. ix. 200.
- Grave-Creek. iii. 24.
- Graves of the Indians. iii. 238. viii. 209. 215. 218.
- Graves, Rocks. iii. 206.
- Graves, Thomas. v. 75.
- Gray, Ellis, minister. iii. 261. Author. 300.
- Gray, or Grey, Gen. ii. 151. iv. 237.
- Gray, Thomas. ix. 205.
- Great-Bridge, Battle of. ii. 85.
- Great-Britain, Increase of the national debt of, by the American war. ii. 240.
- Great-Harbour. viii. 151. 166.
- Great-Hill. viii. 117. 143.
- Great-Hollow. iii. 196. viii. 209. 210.
- Great-Island, Newcastle. x. 46.
- Great-Island, Wellfleet. iv. 41.
- Great-Marshes. iii. 16.
- Great-Meadow River. viii. 155. 219.
- Great-Neck, Eastham. viii. 158.
- Great-Neck, Marblehead. viii. 54. 55.
- Great-Neck, Marshpee. i. 231.
- Greaton, James. iii. 261.
- Great-Pasture. vi. 213.
- Great-Plain. x. 100.
- Great-Pond. viii. 156. 218.
- Great-Swamp. vi. 213.
- Greaves, Samuel, Admiral. ii. 58. 61.
- Greaves, Thomas, Admiral, joins Admiral Arbuthnot. ii. 188. Commands British fleet at New-York. ii. 215. 218. Sails for Chesapeak-Bay. ii. 220. Engagement with Count de Grasse. ii. 221.
- Green, —, minister of Reading. x. 26.
- Green, —, printer in Boston. vi. 70.
- Green, B. printer. v. 209. vi. 67.
- Green, B. jun. printer. vi. 67.
- Green, Christopher, defends Red-Bank. ii. 126. Slain. ii. 210.
- Green, Henry. x. 44.
- Green, John, of Stow. x. 84.
- Green, John, of Warwick. v. 219. 221. 223. 226. 230. 236.
- Green, Joseph, minister in Barnstable. iii. 16. Preaches at Marshpee. iii. 192.
- Green, Joseph, of Boston. iii. 301.
- Green, Joseph, minister of Salem-village. x. 170.
- Green, Joseph, minister of Yarmouth. v. 60.
- Green, Nathaniel, appointed Major-General. ii. 74. Abandons Fort Lee. ii. 83. In the battle of Trenton. ii.

88. In the battle of Brandywine. ii.  
 115. In the battle of Germantown.  
 ii. 119. 120. In the battle of Mon-  
 mouth. ii. 143. In the battle of  
 Rhode Island. ii. 149. Commands in  
 Carolina. ii. 199. His movements in  
 North-Carolina. ii. 205. Fights the  
 battle of Guilford-court-house. ii.  
 207. And of Waxhaws. ii. 209. Re-  
 pulsed at Ninety-six. ii. 212. Defeats  
 the royalists at Eutaw-Springs. ii.  
 218. ix. 105. Takes leave of the  
 army in Carolina. ii. 242. See also,  
 ii. 104. 129. 188. 192. 230. 233.
- Green, Samuel, printer in Cambridge.  
 v. 215. vii. 19.
- Green, Samuel, printer in New-Haven.  
 vi. 76.
- Green, Samuel, printer in New-London.  
 vi. 76.
- Green, Thomas, printer in Boston. v.  
 210. vi. 67.
- Green, Thomas, printer in Connecticut.  
 vi. 76.
- Green, Timothy. v. 215. vi. 76.
- Green, William. vi. 145.
- Green, William, jun. vi. 146.
- Green County, incorporated. ix. 111.
- Green-Island. iii. 296.
- Greenleaf, Daniel. v. 60.
- Greenleaf, Joseph. viii. 177.
- Greenleaf, Stephen. x. 69.
- Greenland. ix. 64. Indians. ix. 217.
- Greenland in Maine described. iii. 240.
- Greenland in New-Hampshire. x. 46.  
 47.
- Greenough, William. v. 277.
- Greensburgh in Pennsylvania. iii. 22.
- Green's Harbour. ix. 39.
- Greenwood, Isaac. iii. 300.
- Greenwood, Mrs. x. 67.
- Grenada taken by Count d'Estaing. ii.  
 178.
- Grenville, Lord George. vi. 190. Lowers  
 the duty on foreign molasses. vi. 193.  
 Proposes to raise a revenue in Amer-  
 ica. ii. 41. vi. 194. ix. 268.
- Grey, Gen. ii. 151. iv. 237.
- Grey Rock. vi. 222.
- Gridley, Col. vi. 86.
- Gridley, Jeremy. iii. 301. v. 212. vi. 69.
- Griffin's Island. iv. 41.
- Griswold, Matthew. vii. 238. 239.
- Groton in Connecticut. x. 102. Burnt  
 by Arnold. ii. 217.
- Ground-Nut. i. 128.
- Ground-Root-Hill. iii. 9.
- Grove, —, of Charlestown. ix. 18.
- Grover's Hill. iii. 103. 104.
- Guilderaleeve, Cyrus. ix. 158.
- Guilford, History of. iv. 182. x. 90.  
 Settled. iii. 5. 153. Harbour. x. 100.
- Gulls, Method of killing, at Wellfleet.  
 iii. 120.
- Gun, Capt. ii. 232.
- Gunby, Col. ii. 208. 209.
- Gunnison, Ellhu. x. 69.
- Gunpowder manufactured in the United  
 States. ii. 61.
- Gunpowder Plot. x. 171.
- Gurnet, Point. ii. 5. viii. 242.
- Gurney, David. iii. 2. 150.
- Guttridge, Richard. x. 96.
- Gwynn's Island, Battle of. ii. 60.

## H.

- Hadden, Garrad. vii. 10.
- Hadley attacked by the Indians. iii.  
 179.
- Hales, Edward. ix. 50.
- Hains, John, Gov. of Connecticut, his  
 speech to R. Williams. i. 230. See  
 Haynes.
- Haines, Samuel. x. 42. 43. 53.
- Hair, Long, considered as a crime in  
 New-England. x. 179.
- Hakluyt, Richard. ix. 49. 57.
- Haldimand, Frederick, Gov. of Quebec.  
 ii. 113. vi. 64. Sent into Germany.  
 ii. 133. Orders a census of Quebec.  
 vi. 49.
- Hale, —, minister. v. 75. vi. 267.
- Hale, Israel. ix. 138.
- Haley, —, of the Isles of Shoals. vii.  
 247.
- Haley's Island. vii. 242.
- Half-Moon on Hudson's River. vi. 35.
- Half-Moon Island. iii. 296.
- Half-Ponds. viii. 158.
- Halfway River. i. 114.
- Halfway Rock. vi. 222.
- Halifax described. iii. 96. x. 79. 82.  
 Road from, to Gulf of St. Lawrence  
 opened. iii. 101.
- Halket, Sir Peter. vii. 93.
- Hall, Ammi-Ruhamah. x. 53.
- Hall, Prince, black man. iv. 199. Grand  
 Master of African Lodge. iv. 210.
- Hall, Samuel, travels to Connecticut  
 river. ix. 152.
- Hall, Samuel, printer. v. 215. vi. 75.  
 vii. 19.
- Hall, Stephen. iv. 29.
- Hall, Thomas. x. 192.
- Hall, William. x. 96.
- Hallet, Enoch. v. 59.
- Hamden, John. viii. 258.
- Hamilton, Gen. ii. 125.
- Hamilton, Henry, Lieut. Gov. at De-  
 troit. ii. 161. Lieut. Gov. of Que-  
 bec. vi. 55.
- Hamilton, James, proprietor of Lancas-  
 ter. vii. 178. Gov. of Pennsylvania.  
 vi. 138.
- Hamlin, Africa. ix. 144.
- Hamlin, America. ix. 138.
- Hamlin, Europe. ix. 138.
- Hamlin, Hannibal. ix. 144.
- Hamlin, Jabez. vii. 238.
- Hammonasset River. iv. 183.

- Hammond, Sir Andrew. iii. 102.  
 Hammond, Sir Andrew Snape. ii. 175.  
 Hammond, Col. ii. 164.  
 Hammond, Dr. ix. 8.  
 Hammond's Fort. i. 253.  
 Hand, Gen. ii. 175.  
 Handfield, Capt. vi. 122.  
 Hancock, John, minister in Braintree, ordained. ix. 197. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Hancock, John, minister of Lexington. vii. 33. ix. 177. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Hancock, John, of Boston, his wine vessel seized by the Commissioners of the Customs. ii. 43. Patriot of 1775. v. 106. President of Congress. iii. 244. Signs Declaration of Independence. ii. 68. Major Gen. in the expedition against Rhode-Island. ii. 148. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 195. Judge Minot's care to introduce his name into the History of the Insurrections. viii. 98. Author. iii. 301.  
 Hancock, Thomas. ix. 186.  
 Hancock County. iv. 153.  
 Hancock's Inlet. i. 235.  
 Hancock's Island. ii. 22.  
 Hangman's Island. iii. 296.  
 Hapgood, Oliver. ix. 139.  
 Hap's Hill. iv. 234.  
 Harcourt, Col. takes Gen. Lee prisoner. ii. 85. Enters Philadelphia. ii. 118.  
 Harding, Elisha. i. 265.  
 Harding's Beach. viii. 147.  
 Harding's Hollow. viii. 113.  
 Harding's Rocks. iii. 296.  
 Hardy, Sir Charles, Gov. of New-York, arrives. vii. 103. Goes to Albany, and calls in the militia. vii. 124. Makes a speech to the Assembly. vii. 129. One of the grand council of war. vii. 131. Ascendancy gained over him by De Lancey. vii. 135. 142. 144.  
 Harkermer, Gen. ii. 108. 116.  
 Harlackenden, Richard. vii. 10.  
 Harmon and Moulton subdue the Norridgewocks. ix. 209. 220.  
 Harrington, Earl of. ii. 124.  
 Harris, Col. ii. 167.  
 Harris, Henry, minister. iii. 259. vii. 217. Author. iii. 300.  
 Harris, Job. x. 53.  
 Harris, Thaddeus-Mason, minister. ix. 178. F. H. S. v. 291.  
 Harris, William. viii. 63. 78.  
 Harrison, Carter-Basset. iii. 91.  
 Harrison, Col. ii. 209.  
 Harrison, Dr. x. 27.  
 Hart, John. x. 94.  
 Hart, Samuel. x. 53.  
 Hart, Stephen. vii. 10.  
 Hartford settled. vii. 16. iii. 153. Bill of mortality. iii. 4. Account of. iii. 5. Number of Indians in 1761. x. 105.  
 Harvard, John. i. 242. vii. 18.  
 Harvard College founded. i. 242. vii. 16. 18. Overseers appointed. vii. 21. First charter granted. vii. 27. List of Presidents. vii. 27. Hall burnt. i. 3. vii. 5. Halls described. vii. 5.  
 Harvard, town, account of. x. 88.  
 Harwich, Indian name of. i. 197. Granted. viii. 162. Incorporated. viii. 175. x. 72. Indians. viii. 173. x. 133. Description of. viii. 141. x. 73.  
 Harwood, Charles. iii. 259.  
 Haskell's Cove. vi. 217.  
 Hassanamesit, or Hassanamisco. vi. 205. Indian town. i. 184. Indian church gathered at. ix. 198. x. 124. Indians. x. 105. 134.  
 Haste-Rock. vi. 222.  
 Hatch, Israel. x. 140.  
 Hatch, Nathaniel. ix. 188.  
 Hatfield attacked by the Indians. iii. 179.  
 Hathorne, or Harthorne, John. v. 62.  
 Hathorne, William. vi. 251. 256. 260. 266. Memoir of. v. 286.  
 Hatton, George. iii. 259.  
 Haughton, James. ix. 75.  
 Haven, Jason. ix. 178.  
 Haven, Samuel. x. 56.  
 Hawes, Prince. v. 59.  
 Hawks tamed by the Indians. iii. 220.  
 Hawley, Gideon, missionary. x. 113. 153. Memoirs of. iii. 191. iv. 50.  
 Hawley, George. i. 86.  
 Hay, Col. ii. 170.  
 Hayes, Col. ii. 204.  
 Hayman, Peter. v. 160.  
 Hayne, Isaac. ii. 215.  
 Haynes, John, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. v. 172. Of Connecticut. vii. 10. 12. Speech to R. Williams. i. 280.  
 Haynes, Williams. v. 219.  
 Hayt, Peter, Indian. x. 132.  
 Hazard, Ebenezer. v. 292.  
 Hazlewood, Commodore. ii. 127.  
 Head of Pamet Hollow. viii. 113.  
 Hearth stone for furnace. ix. 260.  
 Heate, Thomas. vii. 10.  
 Heath, Capt. vi. 113.  
 Heath, William, General. vii. 36.  
 Hedge, Barnabas. v. 59.  
 Hedge, Jacob, Indian. x. 133.  
 Heevaroa Island. iv. 240.  
 Heister, Gen. de, arrives at New-York. ii. 72. In the battle of White-Plains. ii. 81. Returns to Europe. ii. 131.  
 Hemmenway, Moses. iii. 139.  
 Hemp, Wild, in New-England. viii. 221. ix. 152.  
 Henchman, Capt. v. 270.  
 Henchman, Thomas. i. 163. 187.  
 Hendrick, Mohawk sachem. x. 86. 143. 151. His speech at the Congress of Albany. vii. 76. Slain. ix. 97.

- Henley, Thomas. ii. 77.  
 Henry, Cape. iii. 85.  
 Henry, Patrick. ii. 69.  
 Herbert's Church Militant quoted. i. 160.  
 Herbs, Esculent, in New-England. i. 118. iii. 77. viii. 221.  
 Heresay, Law passed in Massachusetts against. vi. 255.  
 Herring-Cove. iv. 42. viii. 110.  
 Herring-Pond Indians. i. 201. 230. iii. 189. iv. 66.  
 Herring-River. iv. 41. viii. 114. 165.  
 Hessian troops hired by Parliament. ii. 62.  
 Hiacoomes, Indian preacher, story of. i. 154. Ordained at Martha's Vineyard. i. 204. Preaches to the Indians of Nantucket. i. 206.  
 Hiacoomes, Joel. i. 155. 173.  
 Hiacoomes, John. x. 134.  
 Hickory. iii. 220.  
 Hidden, Samuel. ix. 145.  
 Higgins, Ambrose. iv. 253.  
 Higgins, Richard. viii. 164. 168.  
 Higgins'-River. viii. 188.  
 Higginson, Francis, arrives at Salem. i. 123. vi. 231. Ordained. iii. 67. vi. 242. iv. 219. ix. 2. 3. Differs in some points from the church of Plymouth. ix. 13. 14. Death. viii. 40. Character. vi. 244. Portrait. vi. 275.  
 Higginson, Francis, minister of Westmoreland. vi. 244. 253.  
 Higginson, John, minister of Guilford. iv. 187. x. 92. 93. 96. Of Salem. vi. 243. 259. ix. 12. Popular minister. iv. 217. viii. 278. Wrote, jointly with William Hubbard, dying testimony to the order of the churches. x. 35. Death. vi. 272. ix. 195.  
 Higginson, Stephen. viii. 104.  
 Higginson, Stephen, jun. x. 192.  
 High-land of Cape Cod. iii. 197. viii. 113. 115. 158.  
 Highland, George. x. 96.  
 Hildersham's description of faith. ix. 9.  
 Hill, —, of Dorchester. ix. 150.  
 Hill, Edward. v. 145. 158.  
 Hill, Elisha. x. 53.  
 Hillhouse, James. vii. 238.  
 Hilliard, Timothy, minister in Barnstable. iii. 16. In Cambridge. vii. 37. 38. Memoirs of. vii. 63.  
 Hilliard, William. vii. 19.  
 Hillsborough, Lord. ii. 43.  
 Hilton, —, of Pownalborough. vii. 169.  
 Hinchcliffe, Dr. Bishop of Peterborough. Supports Lord Chatham's motion for an accommodation with America. ii. 103. Speaks against the manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 156.  
 Hinckley, Daniel. x. 130.  
 Hinckley, Thomas. iii. 16. 188. v. 194. viii. 152. Commissioner of the United Colonies. v. 229. Gov. of Plymouth. iii. 194. v. 235. viii. 171.  
 Hincks, John. v. 245.  
 Hinds, Ebenezer. iii. 2. 151.  
 Hinsdale, Theodora. v. 168.  
 Historical Journal of the American War. ii. 41.  
 Historical Society instituted. iii. 274. viii. 102. 282. First constitution. i. 1. Introductory address. i. 2. First circular letter. ii. 1. Act of incorporation. iv. 1. Second constitution. iv. 2. Second circular letter. iv. 5. Present constitution. x. —.  
 Hitchborn, Benjamin-Andrews. ix. 191.  
 Hoadley, John. x. 92. 96.  
 Hoar, Leonard. vi. 100. vii. 27. ix. 176.  
 Hobart, Nehemiah, minister of Newton. v. 267. ix. 156. Death. ix. 196. x. 168.  
 Hobart, Peter. v. 267. x. 26.  
 Hobbamock, Indian, resides at Plymouth. viii. 241. A Pinesee. viii. 242. Accuses Tisquantum of treachery. viii. 241. 242. 244. Accompanies Gov. Bradford to Manomet. viii. 253. And Edward Winslow to Puckanokick. viii. 258. Massasowat reveals to him the plot of the Indians. viii. 262. Which he communicates to Winslow. viii. 264. Accompanies Capt. Standish to Massachusetts. viii. 269. Fights against the Indians. viii. 271. See also viii. 272. 275.  
 Hobbamocka-Pond. x. 84.  
 Hoccanum Indians, in East-Hartford. x. 105.  
 Hockanom Creek. i. 232. viii. 131. See Hokkanom.  
 Hoes of the Indians. iii. 222. viii. 193. ix. 101.  
 Hog-Island, Boston harbour. iii. 296.  
 Hog-Island, Little. iii. 296.  
 Hog-Island, Bristol harbour. v. 217.  
 Hog-Island, Chatham harbour. viii. 188.  
 Hog-Island, Isles of Shoals. vii. 242. 246.  
 Hog-Island, harbour, Falmouth. viii. 128.  
 Hog-Pond. viii. 122.  
 Hog's Back in Truro. iii. 197. viii. 210.  
 Hokkanom in Yarmouth. v. 58.  
 Holden, Effects of the great earthquake in. iv. 231.  
 Holland, Trade of, with the British American colonies. i. 80. Foundation of the disputes between, and England. ii. 92. 160. Disputes increase. ii. 183. Reprisals made on, by England. ii. 201. Declares war against England. ii. 203. Acknowledges the independence of the United States. ii. 228. Treaty of commerce between, and the United States signed.

- ii. 233. Treaty of peace between, and Great-Britain signed. ii. 234.
- Hollingsworth, Richard. vi. 269. His son. x. 65.
- Hollis, Thomas. iii. 19. v. 171. x. 149.
- Holliston, Description of. iii. 18.
- Hollows, or vallies, in the county of Barnstable. iii. 196. viii. 113.
- Holman, Thomas. ix. 194.
- Holmes, Abiel, minister of Midway. ix. 158. Of Cambridge. vii. 38. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Holmes, John. ii. 8. iv. 123.
- Holmes, Joseph. ix. 255.
- Holt, Charles. vi. 77.
- Holt, Lord Chief Justice. ix. 248.
- Holyoke, Edward, minister in Marblehead. viii. 70. President of Harvard College. vii. 27. Character. x. 158.
- Homans, John. ix. 190.
- Homer, Arthur. x. 192.
- Homer, Jonathan, minister. v. 277. F. H. S. x. 191.
- Homer, Stephen, father of seven gigantic sons. v. 68.
- Honnonthauans, or Seneka Indians. vi. 132.
- Hood, Admiral Sir Samuel, arrives at New-York. ii. 218. Sails for Chesapeake-Bay. ii. 221. Takes ship Ville de Paris. ii. 225. Sails from the West-Indies. ii. 233.
- Hoods in Virginia. iii. 85.
- Hooker, Thomas, minister of Newtown, or Cambridge. vii. 10. Memoirs of. vii. 38. Arrives in New-England. vii. 12. Confers with J. Eliot. viii. 29. Disputes with R. Williams. x. 17. Moderator of a Synod. ix. 32. Settles Hartford. vi. 156. vii. 16. Encourages Connecticut troops. iv. 278. Invited to attend the Westminster Assembly. ix. 40. Moderator of an Assembly of ministers at Cambridge. ix. 48. The inhabitants of Massachusetts dissatisfied with him. i. 280. See also ix. 13. 15. 21.
- Hooper, Robert. vii. 169.
- Hooper, William, minister. iii. 263. Author. iii. 301.
- Hoosack-River. viii. 48.
- Hope, Henry. vi. 53.
- Hope Mount. v. 222. 224. 226.
- Hopkins, Daniel. vi. 275.
- Hopkins, Edward. iv. 182. Benefactor to Harvard College. iv. 15. Gov. of Connecticut. vii. 22.
- Hopkins, Esack. ii. 62.
- Hopkins, Stephen, travels to Pamet River. viii. 207. 212. One of the planters of Plymouth. viii. 226. Sent messenger to Massasoit. iii. 148. viii. 232.
- Hopkins, Stephen, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. Gov. of Rhode-Island. vi. 145.
- Hopkins, —, of Sheffield. x. 152.
- Hopkins' Cliff. viii. 210.
- Hopkins' Creek. viii. 211.
- Hopkinton, Description of. iv. 15. Indian name. i. 188. x. 82.
- Hopson, Col. iii. 101.
- Hor, Philip. ix. 139.
- Horsemanden, Daniel, judge in New-York. vii. 143. Chief justice. ii. 45.
- Horse-Neck, British expedition to. ii. 161.
- Horse-Pasture-Point. vi. 212.
- Horse-Shoe in Billingsgate Harbour. iii. 117.
- Horton in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. 98. x. 81.
- Horton's Point. vi. 216.
- Hoemer, Thomas. vii. 10.
- Hotham, Commodore. ii. 154.
- Houghton, Elder. vi. 243. ix. 2.
- Houlden, Randall. v. 219. 221. 223. 226. 230. 236. 250.
- Houl, Edmund. ix. 171.
- Housatonic, or Stockbridge. vii. 98. River. vii. 233.
- House-Island. vi. 221.
- Houses of the Indians. i. 123. 132. 149. 181. iii. 211. 212. iv. 72. viii. 216. ix. 213. 227.
- Howard, —, of Rhode-Island. vii. 76. 203.
- Howard, Bezaleel. vii. 66.
- Howard, Capt. ii. 237.
- Howard, Col. ii. 204. 208.
- Howard, Simeon. iii. 174. x. 189. Minister. iii. 263.
- Howe, —, chaplain to Oliver Cromwell. ix. 7. Writes against the doctrine of particular faith. ix. 8. His opinion of Cromwell. ix. 9.
- Howe, James-Blake. ix. 191.
- Howe, Joseph. iii. 261.
- Howe, Nathaniel. iv. 17.
- Howe, Richard, Lord Viscount Admiral, arrives off New-York. ii. 70. His conference with a Committee of Congress. ii. 75. vi. 164. Convoys British army to Chesapeake-bay. ii. 108. Arrives at the mouth of Elk-river. ii. 113. Attempts to remove the obstructions in Delaware-river. ii. 127. Sails to Newport. ii. 130. One of the Commissioners in 1778. ii. 139. Appears off Rhode-Island. ii. 149. vi. 173. Succeeded by Admiral Gambier. ii. 151.
- Howe, Robert, Gen. ii. 155.
- Howe, Sir William, General, arrives at Boston. ii. 49. Commands in the battle of Bunker-hill. ii. 49. vi. 169. Succeeds Gen. Gage in the command of the British army. ii. 66. Lands his army on Staten-Island. ii. 67. Commissioner for restoring peace. ii. 70.

- vi. 164. Lands his army on Long-Island. ii. 73. vi. 165. His account of the movements of his troops, after they landed on New-York. ii. 80. Pursues the American army through New-Jersey. ii. 84. His troops reach the Delaware. ii. 85. Issues a proclamation for levying provincial troops. ii. 95. Demands of Gen. Washington an exchange of prisoners. ii. 98. Difference takes place between him and Earl Piercy. ii. 102. Opens the campaign of 1777. ii. 104. Advances with his army to Westfield. ii. 105. Embarks from New-York for Chesapeak-bay. ii. 108. Lands at Elk-river. ii. 113. Battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. Battle of Germantown. ii. 118. Finds it difficult to obtain supplies for his troops in Philadelphia. ii. 127. Meditates an attack on the American army at Valley Forge. ii. 130. Resigns his command of the British army. ii. 139.
- Howe, William, of Nova-Scotia. vi. 122.
- Howel, —, counsel for David Avery. v. 51.
- Hubbard, Ebenezer. viii. 70.
- Hubbard, George. x. 96.
- Hubbard, Gilbert-Harrison. v. 292.
- Hubbard, James. vii. 29.
- Hubbard, John. ii. 31.
- Hubbard, Thomas, Speaker. vi. 97. 130. Commissioner of the Society for Propagating the Gospel. iii. 192.
- Hubbard, Thomas, printer. vi. 77.
- Hubbard, William, representative of Ipswich. x. 32. 34.
- Hubbard, William, minister of Ipswich, memoirs of. x. 32. Grant made to him for writing his History. x. 187. Which is in the possession of the Historical Society. i. 2. Character of his History. vii. 263. His description of the Congregational church. x. 4. Publishes his Narrative of Indian Wars. ix. 87. See also v. 206. vi. 264. ix. 29.
- Hubbardston, Action at. ii. 124.
- Huddy, Joshua. ii. 226.
- Hudson, Capt. ii. 186.
- Hudson and Goodwin, printers. vi. 76.
- Hudson's Point. iii. 243.
- Hudson's River. ii. 70. ix. 112.
- Hugar, Gen. ii. 207. 208.
- Hugar, Major. ii. 168.
- Hughes, Sir Richard. iii. 102.
- Hutt, Ephraim. v. 168.
- Hull, —, minister in Boston. iii. 269.
- Hull, —, of Dorchester. ix. 160.
- Hull, —, minister at the Isles of Shoals. vii. 264.
- Hull, John. v. 217.
- Hulton, Henry. ii. 43.
- Humane Society instituted. iii. 274.
- Humane Society's huts, situation of. iii. 197. 298. viii. 110.
- Humphrey, James. ix. 189.
- Humphrey, John. ix. 2.
- Humphreys, Daniel. x. 61.
- Humphries, John. vi. 251. 256.
- Hunt, Asa. iii. 151.
- Hunt, John, minister. iii. 258. Author. iii. 301.
- Hunt, Samuel. iv. 235.
- Hunt, Thomas, kidnaps Indians. viii. 160. 227. 228. 238.
- Hunting, the employment of men among the Indians. i. 131. 149. ix. 101. Ways of. iii. 233.
- Huntington, Jabez. vii. 238.
- Huntington, John. vi. 275.
- Huntington, Nathaniel. v. 170.
- Huntington, Samuel. ii. 175.
- Hurd, Bishop. ii. 167.
- Hurons, Indians. vii. 190. x. 122.
- Husk, —, postmaster. vi. 67.
- Hussey, —, counsellor in New-Hampshire. vi. 93.
- Hutchin's map, Error of, pointed out. iii. 28.
- Hutchinson, Anne, commences religious teacher: she is tried and condemned. vii. 16. viii. 6. ix. 22. 26. Her opinions make no progress in Salem. vi. 252.
- Hutchinson, Capt. i. 259.
- Hutchinson, Elisha. v. 231. 235. 247.
- Hutchinson, Thomas, Commissioner to treat with the eastern Indians. ix. 221. One of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203. Friend to the order of the New-England churches. x. 20. Publishes his history. i. 3. His house destroyed. i. 3. Gov. of Massachusetts. ii. 44. 45. iii. 195. Orders election of counsellors to be held at Cambridge. ii. 44. vii. 35. Delivers Castle William to Col. Dalrymple. ii. 45. Receives his salary from the crown. ii. 45. Departs for England. ii. 46. Author. iii. 301. See also iv. 202. vi. 130. vii. 262. viii. 101. ix. 47. x. 6.
- Hyanis Road. iii. 13. 16.
- Hysterick Fits common in the county of Barnstable. viii. 159.

## I.

- Ice Islands, how formed. ix. 54.
- Ichneumon Fly, which preys on the eggs of the slug-worm. v. 290.
- Idleness, Indians addicted to. i. 123. 136. 149. 178. iv. 71. 73. 269. v. 19. 27. 28. 42. vii. 237. ix. 76. 215. 228. x. 23.
- Independence of the British American colonies naturally to be expected. i. 72.
- Independence of the United States de-

clared by Congress. ii. 68. iii. 244. vi. 164. Necessity of, shown. ii. 69. Declared in Boston. ii. 70.

Indian-Brook. viii. 155.

Indian-Corn. iii. 208. 221. viii. 210. 217. Great increase of. i. 118. Time of sowing. viii. 274. Mode of cultivation. viii. 190.

Indian Grammar published by Eliot. viii. 12.

Indian-Neck in Truro. viii. 211.

Indian-Neck in Welfleet. iv. 41.

Indian-Rock in Franklin. x. 141.

Indian-Town in Yarmouth. v. 55.

Indian traders, General character of. vii. 184.

Indians are good marksmen. vii. 182. Are generally straight limbed. i. 131. vii. 182. viii. 231. ix. 217. As a mark of honour give names. vii. 194. Their mode of approving a speech made to them. vii. 185.

Indians, estimate of the numbers employed by the British during the Revolutionary war. x. 123.

Indians, about Concord, agree on several orders for their civil and religious government. viii. 16. x. 14.

Indians, at a treaty with Sir William Johnson, 1764. x. 121.

Indians of Long-Island, their marriages. x. 106. Way of naming their children. x. 108. Gods. x. 108. Powaws. x. 109. Burial of the dead. x. 109. Will not mention the name of the dead. x. 110. Notions of a future state. x. 110.

Indians of Martha's Vineyard, Fabulous traditions and customs of. i. 139. Converted to Christianity. i. 172. 201. Their numbers at different periods. i. 205. 206. Intermarry with negroes. i. 206.

Indians of Massachusetts, Act of government for the civilization of. i. 177. viii. 15. x. 13. Account of their plantations, 1698. x. 129. Numbers at different periods. i. 195. Numbers from Massachusetts to Canso, 1690, and 1726. ix. 234.

Indians of New-England, Gookin's historical collections of. i. 141.

Indians of New-England, Williams' key into the language of. iii. 203. v. 80.

Indians of New-England described. i. 122. 123. 131. Conjectures of their original. i. 144. iii. 205. The colour of their skins, their shape, and hair. i. 123. 131. 135. 144. viii. 227. Account of the principal nations. i. 147. A mortal disease among them. i. 122. 148. 246. iii. 148. viii. 160. 226. 234. Their language. i. 149. iii. 203. v. 80. viii. 33. 260. ix. 90. x. 137. [See language.] Customs and manners. i.

123. 131. 149. 166. 223. iii. 207. Indulgent to their children. i. 149. 182. 219. iii. 211. Methods of managing them in infancy. iii. 216. Modes of punishing their children and servants. iii. 159. Their women described. i. 135. Who cultivate the ground. i. 135. 149. iii. 208. 212. 221. And perform most of the labour. i. 123. iii. 212. 213. 222. 230. 231. viii. 256. And have great ease in child-birth. i. 155. iii. 212. 214. 230. The women separated from the family during the menses. iii. 205. 211. Their marriages. iii. 230. The men not restrained to one wife. iii. 230. viii. 264. Give dowries for their wives. iii. 205. 230. Fornication not accounted a sin. iii. 230. Their virgins wear their hair over their eyes. iii. 211. Their houses described. i. 123. 132. 149. 181. iii. 211. 212. viii. 216. ix. 213. 227. They frequently remove their houses. iii. 213. They frequently sleep in the open air, and generally by a fire. iii. 209. Their tools and household stuff. i. 123. 151. iii. 212. 222. 231. viii. 216. Their baskets and mats. i. 123. 135. 151. iii. 209. 211. viii. 210. 216. Their food. i. 128. 150. iii. 208. 220. 221. 224. viii. 228. 233. Their drink. i. 151. iii. 208. viii. 234. They are addicted to drunkenness. i. 151. 194. iii. 1. 158. [See drunkenness.] They generally use tobacco. iii. 208. 213. 215. 217. viii. 228. 230. Their tobacco pipes described. iii. 212. Their methods of catching and killing birds. iii. 120. 219. Of hunting. iii. 233. Of catching deer. viii. 212. Of catching fish. iii. 224. 225. viii. 231. Their canoes described. i. 152. iii. 223. Their clothes. i. 131. 152. iii. 225. 226. 232. Manner of wearing their hair. iii. 213. viii. 227. They paint their faces. i. 135. 153. iii. 212. 236. viii. 228. 230. And anoint, or grease themselves. i. 153. iii. 205. viii. 230. Their money. i. 152. iii. 225. 231. viii. 192. Their trade. iii. 232. They buy and sell land. iii. 220. They are addicted to idleness. i. 123. 136. 149. 178. And to begging presents. iii. 232. 235. Their games and sports. iii. 217. 227. 228. 234. They are addicted to gaming. i. 153. iii. 234. viii. 236. 254. To dancing. i. 140. 153. iii. 235. viii. 227. Their salutations. iii. 207. Complimentary expressions. iii. 213. 215. 237. Oratory. iii. 215. 235. They attend in silence to any one who speaks. iii. 215. The names by which they are called. iii. 204. 205. Obscure and



- mean Indians have no names. iii. 208. Their manner of keeping time. iii. 211. 216. 217. They divide the year into thirteen months. iii. 216. Modes of travelling. iii. 216. 217. They are hospitable to strangers. i. 153. iii. 158. 208. 209. There are no paupers among them. iii. 211. Their methods of fighting. iii. 235. Their weapons. i. 123. 152. viii. 219. They are excellent marksmen. iii. 219. They generally attempt to surprise an enemy. x. 138. Are skilful in cutting off the heads of their enemies. iii. 214. They torment their prisoners. iii. 84. Hang up the heads and hands of their enemies as trophies. iii. 214. Their mode of conveying intelligence in time of war. iii. 216. They delight in hearing and telling news. iii. 214. Their government. i. 122. 132. 154. iii. 228. 229. Methods of obtaining justice and punishing crimes. iii. 211. 217. 230. A brother pays the debt of a brother deceased, and expiates his crimes. iii. 211. Mode of putting criminals to death. viii. 244. Adultery, murder, and robbery not common among them. iii. 217. 230. Mode of punishing adultery in women. ix. 83. Their religion. i. 123. 136. 154. iii. 205. 206. 209. 213. 216. 217. 223. 226. 229. viii. 264. Their powows. i. 133. 154. iii. 227. 237. Their diseases. iii. 214. 237. Methods of curing diseases and medicines. iii. 214. 228. 236. 237. viii. 260. Their hot house described. iii. 236. Their manner of burying the dead. iii. 238. Their graves. viii. 215. 218. They black their faces for mourning. iii. 237. And make great lamentations for the dead. iii. 212. 237. It is esteemed a crime among them to name the name of the dead. iii. 159. 208. 237. The English sell them muskets and ammunition. iii. 61. 62. 63. 64. 82. At war with the English. i. 228. iii. 178. [See Pequots, Philip.] At war with the Maquas. i. 162. Defeated by them. i. 167. They conclude peace with them. i. 167. Attempts made to convert them. iii. 206. Progress of the gospel among them. i. 168—210. Proposals for civilizing and converting them. i. 219. [See Praying Indians.] Account of their churches, 1673. x. 124. Their numbers at different periods. i. 195. 201. 205. 207. 209. 210. 211.
- Indians of North-America are decreasing. iv. 99. 101. 107. v. 34. viii. 175. ix. 205. 211.
- Indians of Rhode-Island are the most wretched of savages. i. 210. x. 20.
- Indians near Lake Superior. iii. 24.
- Indians in Surinam. i. 65.
- Ingraham, Joseph. ii. 20. iv. 238.
- Ingraham's Island. ii. 20. iv. 241.
- Ingram, Col. ii. 230.
- Innes, Col. vii. 92.
- Inoculation for the small-pox first practised in Boston. iii. 291. iv. 213. ix. 276. 278.
- Insects in Demarary. vi. 1. In Maine. iv. 148. In Massachusetts. i. 122. In New-York. i. 286. In Virginia. iii. 86.
- Invalids, Corps of, formed by Congress. ii. 105.
- Ipswich settled. vi. 233. Church gathered. vii. 15.
- Irish-town in Halifax. x. 79.
- Iron not known to the Indians of North-America. ix. 214.
- Iron Forge, the first in America built. iii. 170.
- Iron Ore, how produced by nature. iii. 173.
- Iron Ore early discovered in New-England. i. 248.
- Iron Ore in Massachusetts. i. 273. iii. 2. 139. 168. 172. 175. ix. 254. In New-Jersey. ix. 267. In Nova-Scotia. iii. 98.
- Iron Ware, Number of tons of, manufactured in Plymouth county. ix. 263.
- Iroquois Indians. vi. 132. 133. ix. 92.
- Iroquois River. vi. 134. vii. 131.
- Irvine, Gen. ii. 130.
- Irwing, Paul-Emilius. vi. 54.
- Isinglass in Massachusetts. iv. 234.
- Island-Creek-Pond. ii. 6.
- Israelites, Indians in North-America, supposed to be the descendants of. i. 144. 146.
- Iyanough, Sachem of Cumaquid, his hospitality. viii. 237. 261. Acknowledges himself the subject of the King of England. viii. 161. Solicited to join the Indians against the English. viii. 256. Death. viii. 162. 273.
- J.
- Jacob, Indian of Nonantum. v. 264. ix. 198.
- Jackson, Daniel. x. 57.
- Jackson, Ephraim. v. 273.
- Jackson, John. v. 273.
- James 1st. King. iii. 194. Enemy to the Puritans. vii. 267.
- James, Duke of York, obtains a grant of large tracts of lands in America. vi. 187. King of England. iii. 194.
- James, —, minister of Charlestown. ix. 19. Sent to Virginia. ix. 46.
- James, Black, Indian. i. 190. ix. 199.
- James Head. viii. 143. 145.

James River. iii. 85. 86. 90.  
 Jamestown settled. v. 217.  
 Janes, Elder. ii. 30.  
 Japhet, Indian minister. x. 131.  
 Jay, John, President of Congress, sent Plenipotentiary to Madrid. ii. 175.  
 Negotiates treaty of peace. ii. 234.  
 His address delivered at the close of the war. ii. 245. F. H. S. v. 292.  
 Gov. of New-York. vi. 146.  
 Jedjuk, or Gediack tribe. x. 116.  
 Jefferds, Samuel. iii. 139.  
 Jefferies' Bank. iv. 42.  
 Jefferson, Thomas. ii. 89. Gov. of Virginia. ii. 197.  
 Jefferson, village in Catskill. ix. 115.  
 Jeneckaws, or Senecus, Numbers of. x. 123.  
 Jenckes, Joseph. vi. 115.  
 Jenkinson, Sir Anthony. ix. 51.  
 Jenks, William. v. 208. ix. 97.  
 Jennings, Edmund. v. 145. 158.  
 Jennings, Edward. vii. 171.  
 Jennison, William. vi. 274.  
 Jeffries, Lawrence, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.  
 Jeremiah's Gutter. viii. 155. 156.  
 Jeremysquam-Bay. i. 252.  
 Jeremysquam-Island. i. 253. vii. 165.  
 Jerningham, Capt. i. 206.  
 Jersey-Island, French make a descent on. ii. 172.  
 Jesuits, Law passed in Massachusetts against. vi. 257.  
 Jewett, Stephen. ix. 145.  
 Jocelyn, Indian preacher. x. 134.  
 John, Indian preacher. x. 136.  
 John, Sagamore in Massachusetts. viii. 46.  
 John's Gospel translated into the Mohawk language. x. 154.  
 John's, Saint, Island. iii. 96.  
 John's, Saint, in New-Brunswick. iii. 97. Described. iii. 99.  
 John's, Saint, River and Falls. iii. 99. 100.  
 John's, Saint, in Nova-Scotia, Cascade at. iii. 99.  
 Johnson, —, of Dorchester. ix. 150.  
 Johnson, —, minister of Woburn. vii. 45.  
 Johnson, Arbella, Lady. viii. 40. ix. 19.  
 Johnson, Capt. vi. 90.  
 Johnson, Col. ii. 170.  
 Johnson, Isaac. iii. 72. 75. ix. 10. 16.  
 Founder of Boston. iii. 242. 259.  
 Death. iii. 76. Character. viii. 40. ix. 19.  
 Johnson, Sir John, besieges Fort Stanwix. ii. 108. Defeated by Gen. Van Ransalaer. ii. 197.  
 Johnson, William. x. 192.  
 Johnson, Sir William. v. 121. x. 146. 147. 148. His house described. iv. 68.

Builds two forts. vi. 40. Has an interview with the Six Nations at Onondago. vii. 76. One of the congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203. Appointed to the command of an expedition against Crown-Point. vii. 88.  
 Marches with the provincial troops. vii. 90. Holds a congress with Indian sachems at Mount Johnson. vii. 97.  
 Defeats Baron Dieskau. vii. 104—115. Set up as the competitor of Shirley. vii. 138. Created a baronet. vii. 145. Makes a peace with Indian nations at Niagara. x. 122. See also vii. 148. 153. 156.  
 Johnson, William-Samuel. vii. 238.  
 Johnstone, Gov. George. vi. 177. British Commissioner, arrives in America. ii. 139. Attempts to bribe Major Read. ii. 146. Returns to England. ii. 151.  
 Johnstone, Richard. v. 145.  
 Jonah, Indian. iv. 53.  
 Joncaire, French emissary among the Senecas. vii. 123.  
 Jones, —, printer. vi. 77.  
 Jones, Capt. who brought the first planters to Plymouth. vii. 207. 212. Sails to Pamet river. viii. 213. Arrives a second time at Plymouth. viii. 243.  
 Jones, Ebenezer. iii. 151.  
 Jones, Ichabod. iii. 145.  
 Jones, Israel. viii. 49.  
 Jones, John-Paul. ii. 183.  
 Jones, Ralph, Indian. x. 133.  
 Jones, Thomas, of Guilford. x. 96.  
 Jones, Thomas, minister of Woburn. ix. 188.  
 Jones, Sir William. v. 292.  
 Jones' River. viii. 220.  
 Jones-River-Pond. ix. 255.  
 Jonquiere, M. de. vi. 132.  
 Jordan, Thomas. x. 96.  
 Jose, Ebenezer. x. 60.  
 Josiah, Sachem at Chappaquiddick. x. 132.  
 Josiah, Charles, Sachem. ix. 161.  
 Juan Fernandez Island. iv. 247.

## K.

Kackapoes, Indians. x. 123.  
 Kahnnonwolohale, village of the Oneidas. v. 13.  
 Kalb, Baron de. ii. 192.  
 Kamschatka. ix. 93.  
 Kashpugowitk tribe. x. 116.  
 Katamet, on Buzzard's Bay. i. 199.  
 Keais, Deacon. x. 63.  
 Kehtehticut. x. 134. See Titticut.  
 Kelley, Hattil. viii. 136.  
 Kelley's Pond. viii. 129.  
 Kellogg, Joseph. iv. 67. x. 161.  
 Kellogg, Martin. iv. 67. x. 143.  
 Kellogg, Rebecca. iv. 67.

Kennebecasius River. iii. 101.  
 Kennebeck Indians at war with the Ma-  
 quas. i. 162. Many remove into Can-  
 ada. x. 116.  
 Kennebeck River. i. 251. iii. 141. vii.  
 164. Western boundary of the Duke  
 of York's territory. iii. 95.  
 Kennebunk, a parish in Wells. iii. 139.  
 River. iii. 138. New harbour pro-  
 jected at. iii. 140.  
 Kenny, Penelope. x. 55.  
 Kensie's Point. iii. 103.  
 Kent, Benjamin. iv. 47.  
 Kent, Number of Indians in. x. 112.  
 Keppel, Admiral. ii. 141.  
 Ketah, James, Indian. x. 133.  
 Kettehiquot, or Titicut. i. 200. iii. 150.  
 Key into the language of the Indians of  
 New-England. iii. 203. v. 80.  
 Kilby, Thomas. iii. 300.  
 Kilham, Daniel. v. 291.  
 Killingworth settled. x. 93.  
 Killistnoes, Indians. ix. 92.  
 Kimball, Capt. ix. 144.  
 Kine-pox introduced into America. vii.  
 88.  
 King, Capt. ix. 244.  
 King, Robert. vii. 176.  
 King-Bird, or Sachem. iii. 220.  
 King-Crab. viii. 189.  
 King's Hill. v. 170.  
 King's Mountain, Battle of. ii. 198.  
 Kingsnoth, Henry. x. 96.  
 Kingston, Major. ii. 122. Lieut. Col.  
 ii. 126.  
 Kingston, in Massachusetts, incorpora-  
 ted. iv. 130.  
 Kingston, on North-river, burnt. ii. 122.  
 Kippis, Andrew. iv. 81. v. 6.  
 Kirkland, Dr. vii. 166.  
 Kirkland, John-Thornton, minister. iii.  
 261. F. H. S. v. 291.  
 Kirkland, Samuel, missionary among  
 the Oneida Indians. i. 287. iv. 70.  
 v. 12. ix. 76. 89.  
 Kirkwood, Capt. ii. 219.  
 Kirtland, Samuel. x. 123. See Kirk-  
 land.  
 Kitchel, Robert. iv. 182. x. 96.  
 Kitchmakin, or Cutshemoquin, Sachem.  
 ix. 169.  
 Kittaumut, or Monument Ponds. i. 199.  
 231. x. 133.  
 Kittery. i. 103. The Selectmen of, pre-  
 sented by Grand Jury, for neglecting  
 Education. i. 104.  
 Kneeland, Samuel. v. 209. vi. 67.  
 Knipphausen, Gen. establishes his post  
 at King's Bridge. ii. 81. Wounded.  
 ii. 121. Commands the foreign troops.  
 ii. 231. Commands in New-York,  
 and ravages part of New-Jersey. ii.  
 187.  
 Knox, Capt. ii. 171.  
 Knox, Henry, commended by Gen.

Washington. ii. 145. Made a Major  
 General. ii. 225. See also ii. 237.  
 Knox's Island. ii. 22.  
 Knowles, Capt. ii. 186.  
 Knowles, ———, minister of Water-  
 town. ix. 46.  
 Kockopotanauh, Sachem. x. 105.  
 Kollock, Lemuel. v. 292.  
 Konkapot, John, Indian. ix. 97.

## L

L, The letter, could not be pronounced  
 by many of the Indians of New-Eng-  
 land. iii. 223. viii. 260. ix. 99.  
 Labials used in the languages of the In-  
 dians of New-England, but not in the  
 language of the Six Nations. ix. 93.  
 Labrador, Account of the coast of. i.  
 233.  
 Lake, Bishop. x. 11.  
 Lake, Capt. i. 253.  
 Lamb, Joshua. v. 236.  
 Lancaster in Pennsylvania described. vii.  
 176.  
 Land, Indian method of clearing. ix.  
 101. Indians' property in. ix. 213.  
 Lands in America, Inquiry into the  
 right of the Indians to. iv. 169. v. 9.  
 Langdale, ———. ii. 124.  
 Langdon, Mark. x. 57.  
 Langdon, Samuel, minister in Porta-  
 mouth and Hampton-Falls. x. 51.  
 69. President of Harvard College.  
 vii. 27. His children. x. 69.  
 Langdon, Tobias. x. 53.  
 Langford, Anthony. x. 61.  
 Language of the Indians of New-Eng-  
 land, Vocabulary of. iii. 203. v. 80.  
 Specimens of. viii. 33. ix. 96. 98.  
 x. 137. Abounds with gutturals. ix.  
 99. x. 9. Consists of different dia-  
 lects. iii. 204. 223. ix. 92. Supposed  
 to bear some resemblance to the He-  
 brew. iii. 205. And to the Greek.  
 iii. 205. 206. The names of numbers.  
 iii. 210. The formation of the mascu-  
 line and feminine genders, and of the  
 singular and plural numbers. iii. 210.  
 222. Ablative case absolute much  
 used. iii. 216.  
 Languages of the Micmacs, Mountain-  
 eers, and Skoffies, Specimens of. vi.  
 18.  
 Lankton, Samuel. iii. 10.  
 Laron, Indian. vi. 116.  
 Lathrop, Capt. vi. 206. 234. 266.  
 Lathrop, John. iii. 258. 261. viii. 282.  
 ix. 88.  
 Lathrop, John, of Barnstable. iii. 15.  
 See Lathrop.  
 Lashaway River. i. 269.  
 Lassell, Antoine. x. 123.  
 La Tour, Gov. iii. 145.  
 Leubaugh, ———, minister in Catskill.  
 ix. 120.

- Laud, Archbishop, persecutes Puritan ministers. vii. 39. 43. x. 172. Obtains with eleven others a commission for revoking charters. iv. 119.
- Laurey, Gilbert. x. 45.
- Lauzun, Duke de. ii. 222. ix. 105.
- Lawrence, Gov. iii. 101. 102.
- Lawrence, J. Alderman. v. 207.
- Lawrence, John, Treasurer. vii. 239.
- Lawrens, Henry. ii. 107. 165. President of Congress. ii. 140. Taken prisoner. ii. 196. Negotiates peace with Great-Britain. ii. 234.
- Lawrens, John, Colonel. ii. 222. Killed. ii. 233.
- Laws, Body of, composed in Massachusetts, 1646. ix. 49.
- Laws of New-England, collected out of the Scriptures. v. 173.
- Lawson, —, preacher at Salem village. vi. 266.
- Lawton, Gen. ii. 207.
- Lead ore discovered in Worcester. i. 113.
- Leadbetter, Israel. i. 99. ix. 169.
- Learned, Gen. ii. 125.
- Leavitt, Dudley. vi. 274.
- Ledyard, Col. ii. 217.
- Lee, Arthur. iii. 110. 116. Arrives in France as Commissioner of the United States. ii. 89. See also ii. 132.
- Lee, Charles, General, arrives at Cambridge. vi. 160. Goes to Carolina. ii. 62. His account of the battle of Sullivan's Island. ii. 66. Joins the continental army at Haerlem. ii. 79. In the battle of White-Plains. ii. 82. Taken prisoner. ii. 85. Arrested by Gen. Washington. ii. 144. Tried, and suspended for one year. ii. 150. Death. ii. 150.
- Lee, Col. in the battle of Guilford courthouse. ii. 207. Takes Fort Granby. ii. 212. In the battle of Eutaw-Springs. ii. 218.
- Lee, Col. Jeremiah. viii. 80.
- Lee, Major. ii. 171. vi. 175.
- Lee, Richard. v. 144. 159.
- Lee, Richard-Henry. ii. 107. 140.
- Lee, Thomas. vii. 181.
- Lee, Fort, taken. ii. 81. 83.
- Leeds, Daniel. ix. 189.
- Leete, Andrew. x. 99.
- Leete, John. x. 98.
- Leete, William, of Guilford. iv. 182. ix. 85. x. 92. 96. Gov. of Connecticut. iv. 222. x. 98.
- Legardeur de St. Pierre. vii. 71.
- Leger, Saint, Col. attacks Fort Stanwix. ii. 112.
- Legge, Col. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 102. Prohibits the exportation of arms and ammunition. ii. 48.
- Legge's Hill. vi. 213. 217.
- Leister, —, of New-York. iii. 127.
- Le Mercier, Andrew, minister. iii. 264. Author. iii. 301.
- Leonard, James and Henry, build a forge at Raynham, the first in America. iii. 170. Genealogical sketch of the family. iii. 173.
- Leonard, Joshua. v. 170.
- Leonard, Nathaniel. iv. 131. 132.
- Leslie, Capt. ii. 90.
- Leslie, Lieut. ii. 85.
- Leslie, Gen. ii. 90. Commands in Georgia. ii. 182. Takes possession of Charleston. ii. 185. Invades Virginia. ii. 197. Proposes to Gen. Greene a cessation of arms. ii. 230. Orders troops to ravage Combakee river. ii. 233. Evacuates South-Carolina. ii. 234.
- Lettsom, Dr. v. 292.
- Leverett, Elder. ix. 42.
- Leverett, John, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. vi. 263. ix. 194. x. 42. Popular magistrate. iv. 217. Death. vi. 272.
- Leverett, John, President of Harvard College. iv. 15. vii. 27. Enemy to Cotton Mather. iii. 138. Death. ix. 197.
- Lewis, Isaiah. iii. 118.
- Lewis, Stephen-C. iii. 261.
- Lewis, Thomas. vi. 67.
- Lewis, William. vii. 10.
- Lewis's Bay. i. 230. iii. 13. 17. Number of vessels at. viii. 141.
- Lexington incorporated. vii. 28. 32. Battle of. i. 107. ii. 48. 52. vi. 157.
- Leyden, Thirty-five persons come to Plymouth from. iii. 66. Their character. iii. 69.
- Libbey, Jeremiah. x. 62.
- Liberty of conscience established in Rhode-Island. i. 281. viii. 4. x. 21.
- Lightfoot, John. v. 145.
- Light-House Island. iii. 297. 299.
- Limestone in Holliston. iii. 18. In New-York. ix. 112. In Nova-Scotia. iii. 98. In Pennsylvania. vii. 178. In Smithfield. iii. 18. In Thomastown. iv. 23.
- Lincoln, Benjamin, General, drives the Renown man of war from Boston harbour. ii. 65. His action with the British at Bound-brook. ii. 94. Commands a division of the northern army. ii. 116. vi. 170. In the battle of Behmus's heights. ii. 25. Wounded in the battle of Stillwater. ii. 122. Commands in Carolina. ii. 163. Advances on the rear of Gen. Prevost. ii. 166. Compels him to retire to Savannah. ii. 168. vi. 174. Repulsed in an attack upon Savannah. ii. 179. vi. 184. Surrenders Charleston. ii. 184. At the siege of York-town. ix. 105. Receives the surrender of Com-

- wallis's army. ii. 222. F. H. S. v. 291. Anecdote of. viii. 98.
- Lincoln County incorporated. vii. 168.
- Lincoln Town incorporated. i. 237.
- Lincoln's Island. ii. 21.
- Lion erroneously supposed by the first planters to exist in New-England. i. 119. viii. 224.
- Lippincut, Capt. ii. 227.
- Little, Daniel, preaches in Portsmouth. x. 55. Minister in Wells. iii. 139.
- Little, Ephraim. iv. 129. 130.
- Little, Woodbridge. viii. 49.
- Little-Cambridge church. vii. 36.
- Little-Beach. viii. 145.
- Little-Compton, Indian name of. i. 200.
- Indian plantations in. x. 129. Annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211. See Compton.
- Little-River, in Exeter. iv. 90.
- Little-River, in Topsham. iii. 142.
- Little-River, in Windsor. v. 167.
- Littleton, Indian name of. i. 188. Remarkable pond in. i. 188.
- Liturgy of the English Church translated into the Mohawk language. x. 154.
- Livermore, Jonathan. x. 86.
- Livermore, Matthew. x. 56.
- Livermore, Samuel. x. 59. 71.
- Liverpool, in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. x. 81. River. iii. 97.
- Livingston, Col. commands Fort Montgomery. ii. 118. In the battle of Rhode-Island. ii. 149.
- Livingston, Gov. ii. 162. vii. 67. His complaints of the British army. ii. 93.
- Livingston, Major. ix. 81.
- Lizard in Demerary. vi. 2.
- Loan Offices established by Congress. ii. 79.
- Locke, Jonathan. x. 57.
- Locke, Samuel. vii. 27.
- London, Plague in, 1625. iii. 38.
- Londoners-Island. vii. 243.
- Longevity, Instances of, in Massachusetts. i. 99. 202. 273. ii. 6. iii. 2. 9. 119. 169. 174. iv. 234. v. 255. 268. vi. 241. 264. 288. vii. 62. viii. 66. 195. 277. ix. 132. x. 33. 141. In New-Hampshire. iv. 92. See mortality, bills of.
- Longfellow, Stephen. iv. 27. 30.
- Long-Island, Boston harbour. iii. 297.
- Long-Island, New-York, granted to the Duke of York. vi. 187. Described. ii. 73. Battle of. ii. 74. vi. 165. American army retreats from. ii. 74.
- Long-Island Indians subject to the Pequots. i. 147. To the Narragansets. i. 147. Not disposed to embrace Christianity. i. 208. See Indians of Long-Island.
- Longley, Eli. ix. 143. 144.
- Long-Point, Provincetown. iv. 42. viii. 197. 206.
- Long-Point, Salem. vi. 217.
- Long-Pond, Bridgton. iii. 239. Curious stones in. iii. 240.
- Long-Pond, Compton. ix. 199.
- Long-Pond, Eastham. viii. 156.
- Long-Pond, Shrewsbury. i. 113.
- Long-Sands. iii. 7.
- Long-Swamp. vi. 214.
- Longueul, Baron of. vi. 53.
- Lord, Joseph, minister of Chatham. v. 206. viii. 154.
- Lord, Joseph, minister in Carolina. ix. 156. 177.
- Lord, Richard. vii. 10.
- Lord's Hill. vi. 214.
- Lord's prayer in Indian language. vii. 24. viii. 33.
- Loring, Israel. x. 85. 87. 89.
- Loring, John. x. 87.
- Loring, Jonathan. x. 87.
- Lothrop, Barnabas. x. 70.
- Lothrop, Isaac. v. 291.
- Lothrop, John, minister of Scituate. iv. 111. Of Barnstable. iii. 15. x. 70.
- Louden, John. iv. 236.
- Loudon, Earl of. vii. 125. General of British troops in America. vii. 145.
- Arrives. vii. 167. vi. 36. Successor of Gen. Shirley. vii. 161.
- Louisbourg surrendered to Pepperell and Warren. i. 46. 48. Courage of the New-England troops engaged in the expedition against, vindicated. i. 110. Number of inhabitants, 1764. x. 82.
- Louisiana. vi. 134.
- Lovelace, Col. vi. 83.
- Lovell, Capt. ix. 150.
- Lovell, James. ix. 183.
- Lovell, John, schoolmaster. vi. (10.) viii. 86. 279. Author. iii. 353. 301.
- Lovell's Island. iii. 297.
- Low, Pirate. vii. 252.
- Lowth, Bishop. ii. 167.
- Ludlow, Capt. v. 170.
- Ludlow, Roger, one of the first settlers of Dorchester. ix. 18. 150. 164. Deputy Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 298. One of the first settlers of Windsor. v. 168.
- Lumber trade unprofitable. iii. 147.
- Lunenburg, village in Catskill. ix. 115.
- Lunenburg, in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. x. 80. 81.
- Lunt, Daniel. x. 53.
- Lutwidge, Capt. ii. 106.
- Lydius, Col. vii. 97. x. 86. 146.
- Lyford, John, arrives at Plymouth. vii. 273. An enemy to the leading men. vii. 273. 275. 278. Banished. iv. 109.
- Lyman, Isaac. iii. 10.
- Lyman, Major-Gen. vi. 36. vii. 95. Builds Fort Edward. vii. 104. Urges

- Gen. Johnson to pursue Dieskau's army. vii. 108.  
 Lyme, Number of Indians in. x. 103.  
 Lynch, Col. ii. 207.  
 Lynchburg in Virginia. iii. 86.  
 Lynde, Benjamin. vi. 241.  
 Lynde, Simon. v. 235. 239.  
 Lyndon, Josias. vi. 145.  
 Lynn settled. viii. 39. Church gathered. vii. 15.  
 Lyon, George. ix. 194.  
 Lyon, James. iii. 145.  
 Lyon, Richard. vii. 27.  
 Lyttleton, Lord. ii. 104.
- M.
- Maanexit, Indian town. i. 190. vi. 205.  
 Mably, Abbe. iv. 158.  
 Mac Arthur, Major. ii. 219.  
 Mac Call, Col. ii. 204.  
 Maccarty, —, minister of Kingston. iv. 130.  
 Maccarty, Thaddeus. i. 116.  
 Macclintock, Samuel. x. 51.  
 Mac Clure, David, minister. v. 169. x. 52. F. H. S. v. 292.  
 Mac Cobb, James. i. 253. 255.  
 Mac Crea, Miss. ii. 111.  
 Mac Dougall, Gen. defends Peck's-kill. ii. 94. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. Passes the Delaware. ii. 129.  
 Member of Congress. ii. 193.  
 Mac Dowal, Major. ii. 204.  
 Mac Dowel, Col. ii. 198.  
 Mac Fadden, George. iv. 29.  
 Macgilchrist, William. vi. 274.  
 Mac Ginnes, Capt. vii. 108.  
 Machias, Description of. iii. 144. River. iii. 145.  
 Mackay, Benjamin. x. 60.  
 Mackay, Col. ii. 44.  
 Mac Kean, Joseph. ix. 158.  
 Mackerel Cove. vi. 282.  
 Mac Kinstry, John. v. 170.  
 Mackintosh, Col. ii. 167.  
 Maclean, Gen. ii. 171. vi. 175.  
 Mac Pherson, John. ii. 59.  
 Mac Pherson, Major. ii. 213.  
 Macpori of Demerary. vi. 3.  
 Mac Quain, David. ix. 137.  
 Madakit, or Matacut, harbour. iii. 156.  
 Madambetticks Mountain. iv. 21.  
 Madame, Isle. iii. 99.  
 Madamkisswick River. iii. 100.  
 Madison, village in Catskill. ix. 115.  
 Madochewando, Indian chief. iii. 139.  
 Magaw, Col. ii. 83.  
 Magee, Bernard. iv. 244. 247.  
 Magee, James. iv. 261.  
 Magegadavick River. iii. 100.  
 Magnalia, Mather's, Character of. vii. 262.  
 Magunkaquog, Indian town. i. 188.  
 Mahmansuck Pond. ix. 80.  
 Mahomet, Indian. iv. 167.  
 Mahone-Bay. iii. 96.  
 Maine, Extracts from the records of. i. 101. Inhabitants of, combine into a body politick. i. 103. Number of Indians in. i. 211. Number of towns in 1716. i. 251. Two conventions meet, to consider the expediency of forming it into a separate government. iv. 25. Eastern counties of, described. iv. 142. Religious state of these counties. iv. 153.  
 Maisteron, Richard. iii. 44. Deacon in Plymouth. vii. 272. Character. iv. 111.  
 Maitland, Lieut. Col. attacked by the Americans at Stono. ii. 168. Joins Gen. Prevost. ii. 179.  
 Maize cultivated by the Indians. i. 150. iii. 221. viii. 210. ix. 99. 100. 213.  
 Maizium, Indian bread. viii. 233.  
 Malaga Island. vii. 243.  
 Malcom, —, minister. viii. 77.  
 Malden church fined. x. 24.  
 Malebarre, Cape, described. viii. 117. 145.  
 Mallegash in Nova-Scotia. x. 80.  
 Mamecag in New-London. x. 101.  
 Manach, French priest. x. 115.  
 Manasseh, Indian preacher. viii. 173. x. 133.  
 Manchage, Indian town. i. 189.  
 Manchester, Duke of, supports Earl of Chatham's motion for an accommodation with America. ii. 103. Protests against the manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 157.  
 Manchester, in Massachusetts, incorporated. vi. 233.  
 Manchester, in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96.  
 Mandrake in New-York. ix. 122.  
 Mangrove. vi. 10.  
 Manhattan, afterwards New-York. iv. 294.  
 Manhumsqueeg, the Whetstone country. ix. 80.  
 Manly, Capt. ii. 60.  
 Mann, Thomas. x. 141.  
 Mannamit. i. 198. River. i. 231.  
 Mannamoyk Indians. i. 148. See *Monamoyick*.  
 Manning, President. iii. 164.  
 Manomet, or Mannamit, Indian town. viii. 252. The sachem of joins in the conspiracy against the English of Plymouth. viii. 255. 262.  
 Manomet River. viii. 122. 253.  
 Mansfield, Earl of. ii. 104.  
 Mansfield, Isaac, minister. iv. 88. Esquire. vii. 58. 78.  
 Maquas, Account of. i. 156. Their situation. i. 156. 160. Oppress the Indians of Canada. i. 157. 161. Defeated by the French of Canada. i. 161. Their manner of making war. i. 162. 164. Five Maquas come to

- Cambridge. i. 164. vii. 29. Defeat the New-England Indians. i. 167. Conclude peace with them. i. 167. Their character. i. 167. At war with the Indians of New-England. iii. 180. Are cannibals. iii. 209. 213. See Mohawks.
- Maquoit bay. iii. 141.
- Marblehead, Topographical and historical account of. viii. 54. Origin of the name. i. 118. Separated from Salem. vi. 233. Church formed in. vi. 264. Merchants first send fish to foreign markets. viii. 56.
- Marblehead rock. vi. 222.
- Marchant, Judge. vi. 75.
- Margaret's bay. iii. 96. 97.
- Margaret's islands discovered. iv. 261. 298.
- Marie, French agent to Massachusetts. i. 161.
- Marine productions, Methods of preserving. iv. 13.
- Marine Society, in Boston. iii. 274.
- Marine Society, in Salem. vi. 239.
- Marion, Col. repulses Tarleton's legion at Ninety-Six. ii. 201. Gen. takes Fort Motte. ii. 212. In the battle of Eutaw Springs. ii. 218. Action with Major Fraser. ii. 233.
- Market opened in Boston. iii. 254.
- Markham, Archbishop. ii. 157.
- Mark's Gospel translated into the Mohawk language. x. 154.
- Marl in Canada. vi. 51. In Maine. iv. 145. In New-York. ix. 112.
- Marlborough, Description of. iv. 46. Indian name of. i. 185. Number of English families in, 1674. i. 220. Assaulted by the Indians. iv. 46. Note on. x. 89. Association. x. 89.
- Marowynne river. i. 64.
- Marqueess Islands. iv. 238.
- Marrett, Daniel. ix. 145.
- Marriages among the Indians. i. 134. 149. iii. 230. x. 106.
- Marsh, Ebenezer-Grant, Memoir of. ix. 108. F. H. S. x. 192.
- Marsh, Jonathan. v. 168.
- Marsh, Joseph. ix. 196.
- Marshall, Capt. vi. 90.
- Marshall, H. post-master. vi. 67.
- Marshall, John. x. 57.
- Marshall, John, jun. x. 57.
- Marshall, Joseph. x. 60.
- Marshe, Witham. vii. 171.
- Marshfield incorporated. iv. 111.
- Marshpee Indians. iv. 66. Ordination in, 1729. v. 206. See Mashpee.
- Martha's Vineyard, Indian name of. i. 148. 154. 201. viii. 262. Fabulous traditions and customs of the Indians. i. 139. Indians subject to the Pawkunnawkutta. i. 148. Join the conspiracy against the English. viii. 262.
- First settled by the English. i. 202. Progress of the Gospel among the Indians. i. 201. Indians submit to the English government. vi. 196. Indian church gathered at. i. 203. 205. Names of the Indian ministers. i. 204. x. 131. Praying towns. i. 204. Indian churches and religious assemblies. iii. 185. iv. 65. x. 124. 131. Number of Indians at different periods. i. 205. 206. x. 131. Intermarry with negroes. i. 206. Character of the Indians. i. 206. Iron ore at. ix. 267.
- Martin, Counsellor. vi. 93.
- Martin, Gov. ii. 63.
- Martyn, John. x. 85.
- Martyn, Richard. x. 43.
- Mary II. Queen. iii. 194. ix. 260.
- Maryland, Law passed in, for the support of the clergy. vii. 174. List of public offices and places of profit in. vii. 202.
- Mary's river. iii. 97.
- Massasoit. viii. 161. See Massasoit.
- Mascarenc, John. iii. 301.
- Mascarenc, Paul, Counsellor in Nova-Scotia. vi. 121. Lieut. Gov. vi. 122. Concludes a treaty with the Penobscot Indians. vi. 108.
- Mashne island. i. 232.
- Mashepeg pond. ix. 162.
- Mashpah, or Mashpee Indians, 1698. x. 133.
- Mashpee, Indian praying town. i. 197. Church gathered at. i. 204. iii. 190. Account of its ministers. iii. 188. Described. iii. 189. Town granted to the Indians. iii. 190. Indian places in. i. 231. 232. Number of Indians at different periods. i. 201. 230. x. 113. See Marshpee.
- Mashpege, or Mashpee, Indian church. x. 124.
- Mason, John, one of the first settlers of Dorchester, removes to Connecticut. ix. 154. Subdues the Pequots. iv. 277. A valiant man. v. 170. Purchases the lands of the Moheagans. ix. 81. Surrenders them to Connecticut. ix. 85.
- Mason, John-Tufton. x. 59.
- Mason Robert. v. 245. vi. 93.
- Masquabaniak meadow. i. 269.
- Massachusetts-bay, now Boston harbour. viii. 38. 248. Standish goes to. viii. 267.
- Massachusetts, colony, Plantation of, projected. viii. 37. First charter granted. i. 256. viii. 38. Settlement begins. iii. 66. vi. 231. viii. 38. State of, in 1673. iv. 218. Second charter granted. ix. 273. Arrived at Boston. vi. 272. Council how chosen. i. 75. Number of fighting men in 1756. vii. 139. Number of inhabitants at dif-

- ferent periods. iv. 198. State of the fishery in 1763. viii. 202. General Court writes a circular letter to the American colonies. ii. 43. Is dissolved for refusing to rescind it. ii. 43. Convention of delegates assembles at Boston. ii. 44. General Court petitions the king to remove Hutchinson and Oliver. ii. 45. iii. 109. The petition dismissed by king and council. ii. 46. iii. 114. General Court held at Salem. ii. 46. Chooses delegates to Congress. ii. 46. Constitution of government altered by act of Parliament. ii. 46. iii. 117. Proceedings in Parliament against. iii. 116. Amount of warlike stores in, Ap. 1775. i. 232. Provincial Congress renounces Gen. Gage as Governour. ii. 49. New constitution of, completed. iii. 245. iv. 203. viii. 281. Insurrection in. iii. 152. 169. iv. 209. viii. 91. 100. 106. 108. ix. 267. List of Governours of. iii. 194.
- Massachusetts, Ecclesiastical history of. vii. 262. ix. 1. x. 1.
- Massachusetts forts taken by the French. vi. 135.
- Massachusetts Indians, Account of. i. 148. A mortal disease among. i. 148. Trade with the English of Plymouth. viii. 241. 243. 250. Plot against the English. viii. 256. 262. Several of their chiefs slain. viii. 269. Their praying towns described. i. 180. Their numbers at different periods. i. 195. See Indians of Massachusetts.
- Massacre in Boston. ii. 44. iii. 244. viii. 281.
- Massafuero island. iv. 248.
- Massapee. x. 114. See Marshpee.
- Massaquoockummis brook. i. 269.
- Massasoit, sachem of the Wamponoags. iii. 166. viii. 226. Visits Plymouth. viii. 228. Concludes a treaty with the English. viii. 230. Winslow and Hopkins sent to visit him. iii. 148. viii. 232. Submits to king James. viii. 161. Falsely accused by Tisquantum. viii. 242. Demands Tisquantum. viii. 244. His friendship to the English cools. viii. 247. Visited by Winslow in his sickness. viii. 258. Reveals the plot of the Indians against the English. viii. 162. 262. Claims the land at Providence. i. 276.
- Massey, Jeffrey. vi. 237. Memoirs of. vi. 282.
- Massey, John, first child born in Massachusetts. vi. 237. 282.
- Masters, John. vii. 10.
- Matacut, or Madakit, harbour. iii. 156.
- Matakees Indians. i. 148. See Mattakees.
- Matchapoxet pond. viii. 148. 151.
- Mather, Cotton, minister in Boston. iii. 258. Witchcraft. vi. 266. Desired by condemned witches to pray with them. v. 68. Writes a letter in favour of Gov. Dudley. iii. 129. Extract from his private diary. iii. 137. Reproves Gov. Dudley. iii. 128. First proposes inoculation. iii. 291. ix. 276. Author. iii. 300. His character. x. 156. 168. Character of his Magnalia. vii. 262. Mr. Neal's opinion of his character and style. v. 200. Treated disrespectfully by the authors of the Universal History. viii. 14. His opinion of R. Williams. vii. (4.) viii. 1. ix. 23. x. 19. Held the doctrine of particular faith. ix. 9. Wore a wig. viii. 27. See also viii. 68. 277. ix. 6. 33. 44. x. 26.
- Mather, Eleazar, minister of Northampton. ix. 170. 171. 172. 192. x. 93. Character. ix. 181.
- Mather, Increase, born. ix. 171. Graduated. ix. 181. Minister in Boston. iii. 258. ix. 173. x. 26. President of Harvard College. vii. 27. Doctor of Divinity. vii. 60. Agent from Massachusetts. ix. 273. Conversations with King William. ix. 245. 252. With Queen Mary. ix. 250. Objects against second charter. ix. 273. 274. Condemns witchcraft proceedings. v. 71. 75. vi. 266. Reproves Gov. Dudley. iii. 126. Approves inoculation. ix. 276. Author. iii. 300. Character. vii. 53. x. 156. 167. See also vii. 32. ix. 155.
- Mather, Joseph. ix. 171.
- Mather, Nathaniel, born. ix. 171. Minister of Barnstable, &c. ix. 173. Character. ix. 179.
- Mather, Richard, minister of Dorchester. i. 99. ix. 155. x. 26. One of the authors of the New-England Psalms. vii. 19. viii. 10. Memoirs of. ix. 170. Epitaph. ii. 10. x. 26.
- Mather, Samuel, minister in Boston. iii. 258. 263. Author. iii. 301.
- Mather, Samuel, minister in Dublin. iii. 258. ix. 172. x. 26. Born. ix. 171. Graduated. ix. 178. Fellow of Harvard College. vii. 49. Memoirs of. x. 27.
- Mather, Samuel, minister of Windsor. v. 168. ix. 182.
- Mather, Thomas. ix. 170.
- Mather, Timothy. ix. 171.
- Matignon, Francis. iii. 264.
- Matoonus, Indian. vi. 206.
- Mats of the Indians. i. 123. 151. iii. 209. 211. viii. 216.
- Mattabeeset Indians. x. 106.
- Mattacheeset, or Mattachiet. iii. 15. viii. 237. English buy corn at. viii. 251. 254. Indians join the conspiracy



- against the English. viii. 256. 262. See Mattakees.
- Mattakees. v. 58. Indians subject to the Pawkunnawkuts. i. 148. Indian praying town. i. 197.
- Mattakecet, Indian name of Duxborough. ii. 4. Number of Indians, in 1698. x. 134.
- Mattakeset-pond. ix. 258.
- Mattaneang, Indian name of Windsor. ix. 162.
- Mattapan, Indian name of Dorchester. i. 99. iii. 74. ix. 18. 149.
- Mattapoiset. vi. 87. viii. 258. 263.
- Mattapoiset-harbour. iii. 2.
- Mattaquason, sachem of Monamoyick. viii. 151. 164. 169.
- Matthews, Gen. ii. 164.
- Matthews, —, minister of Yarmouth. v. 59.
- Mauduit, Israel. vi. 195. Character. ix. 268.
- Mauduit, Jasper, agent of Massachusetts. vi. 189. ix. 268. Of the Governours. iii. 110.
- Maumachegin, Indian preacher. x. 132.
- Maushop, or Moshup, Indian giant, or tutelary deity. i. 139. v. 57.
- Maverick, John, minister of Dorchester. i. 98. v. 166. ix. 148. Death. ix. 153. 170. Character. ix. 18.
- Maverick, Samuel, first occupier of Noddle's island. iii. 299. iv. 194. viii. 42. ix. 47.
- Maverick, Samuel, Charles II'd's commissioner to the colonies. iv. 194. v. 193. 218. 230.
- Mawhawks. i. 156. See Maquas, and Mohawks.
- Maxfield, —, minister of Block-island. x. 111.
- Maxwell, Gen. Action with royalists in New-Jersey. ii. 93. In the battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 141. See also ii. 104. 162. 175. 176.
- Maxwell, Gov. ii. 229.
- Mayhew, John. i. 205.
- Mayhew, Jonathan, minister in Boston. iii. 263. Author. iii. 301. vi. 70. Character. x. 159. 169.
- Mayhew, Matthew. i. 205.
- Mayhew, Thomas, settles in Water-town. i. 202. Removes to Martha's Vineyard. i. 202. Obtains a grant of Nantucket. iii. 155. Attempts to convert the Indians. i. 172. 202. 203. iv. 65. His salary from the corporation for propagating the gospel. i. 218. Obtains a commission for the government of the Indians. vi. 196. Death. i. 202.
- Mayhew, Thomas, jun. preaches to the Indians. i. 155. 172. 202. 206. Lost at sea. i. 203.
- Mayhew, Zachary. iv. 65.
- Mayo, John. iii. 258.
- Mayo, Elisha. viii. 116.
- Mead, —, friend to New-England. ix. 247.
- Measles in Boston. iv. 213.
- Mechiassac river. iii. 145.
- Medford settled. viii. 39. A flourishing town. i. 107.
- Megonko-hill. iv. 15.
- Meigs, Bowen, and Dana, printers. vi. 77.
- Meigs, Col. destroys British stores at Sagg-Harbour, ii. 102. In the storming of Stony-Point. ii. 170.
- Meigs, —, of Guilford. x. 93.
- Mein, —, printer. vi. 71.
- Mellen, John, minister in Lancaster. iv. 231. Character. iv. 17.
- Mellen, John, minister in Barnstable. iii. 16. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Memevcook in Nova-Scotia. x. 115.
- Memrancook river. iii. 101.
- Mendana, Alvaro de. iv. 238.
- Menekiah, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.
- Menemeseg, Indian town. vi. 205.
- Menemasha, in Martha's Vineyard. i. 232.
- Mennonimies, Indians. x. 121.
- Menotomy in Cambridge. vii. 2. Made a parish. vii. 33. Number of houses in. vii. 6.
- Menunkatuck, Indian name of Guilford. iv. 182.
- Mercer, Gen. ii. 90.
- Mercer, Lieut. Col. commands at Oswego. vii. 124. Slain. vii. 158.
- Meriam, Jonas. v. 274.
- Merribunter. vi. 1.
- Merrimack-river. i. 107.
- Merrimichi Indians. x. 115. River and bay. iii. 100.
- Merry-meeting bay. iii. 141. 142.
- Meshawn, Indian praying town. i. 196. viii. 173.
- Messisaugas, Indians. vii. 123. x. 122. Language. ix. 92.
- Metack, Indian chief. vi. 196.
- Methodist preachers sent to America. iii. 265.
- Mexico Indians. ix. 214.
- Miami, battle of, St. Clair's. iii. 26.
- Wayne's. x. 123. River. iii. 26. Funeral of an Indian, and dress of women described. iii. 26.
- Miamis, Indians. x. 123.
- Miantonimoh, Sachem of Narraganset. iii. 229. Sells Rhode-Island to the English. x. 20. Joins the English against the Pequots. iv. 279. Eighty of the Pequots given to him. ix. 82. Disposed to keep the Sabbath. iii. 229. His battle with Uncas. ix. 77. Killed. ix. 84.

- Micmack Indians, Numbers of. x. 115.  
Treaty made with. x. 116. Vocabulary of the language. vi. 18.
- Middle-bank. iv. 42.
- Middleborough, Description of. iii. 1. Historical account of. iii. 148. Indian name. viii. 232. 233. 252. Indian towns. i. 198. 200. Number of Indians. i. 201. Iron ore. iii. 175. Bills of mortality. viii. 79. ix. 235. x. 188.
- Middle-river. iii. 145.
- Middlesex, Description of. i. 107.
- Middletown, Connecticut, Indians of. x. 105.
- Midway in Georgia. ix. 157.
- Mifflin, Fort, evacuated by the Americans. ii. 128.
- Milburn and Leisler killed at New-York. iii. 127. 129.
- Milford in Connecticut settled. iii. 5. 153.
- Milford-haven, Cascade at. iii. 98.
- Militia of the United States, 80,000 provisionally detached. viii. 80.
- Mill, the first in Massachusetts erected. ix. 164.
- Millar, John. v. 59.
- Miller, —, minister of Rowley. ix. 46.
- Miller, Alexander. x. 60.
- Miller, Phineas. v. 292.
- Miller, Samuel. x. 192.
- Miller, William-Fowler. v. 169.
- Millet, Thomas. ix. 167.
- Mills and Hicks, printers. vi. 72.
- Mills, Ebenezer. v. 169.
- Millstone hill. i. 113.
- Milmer, Col. v. 147.
- Milton, the poet. ix. 8.
- Milton, lands at, purchased. ix. 159. Incorporated. i. 100. ix. 161. Church gathered. ix. 193.
- Milton's hill, Wellfleet. iv. 41.
- Mipham, John. x. 92.
- Minas in Nova-Scotia. x. 80. 116. Basin. iii. 97. 98.
- Minerals in Connecticut. vii. 236. In Demerary. vi. 10. In Massachusetts. i. 113. 248. 273. iii. 139. 168. 172. 175. ix. 254. In Nova-Scotia. iii. 98. In the United States. vi. 180. In Virginia. v. 125. Method of Collecting. iv. 14.
- Mingoes, name of Six Nations. vii. 74.
- Ministers, Order passed by the government of Massachusetts respecting the calling of. x. 25. Maintenance of, provided for by law in Massachusetts. x. 29.
- Ministry, learned, Massachusetts planters encourage. x. 25—29.
- Ministry, British, changed in 1782. ii. 226.
- Minomonees, Indians. ix. 92.
- Minot, Francis. viii. 87.
- Minot, George. viii. 96.
- Minot, George-Richards, Character of. viii. 86. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Minot, James. ix. 182.
- Minot, Stephen. viii. 96.
- Misery-Island. vi. 221.
- Mishawum, Indian name of Charlestown. iii. 241. ix. 18.
- Missiquash river. iii. 96. 99.
- Missogkonog Indians. vi. 201.
- Mistaken-harbour. i. 235.
- Mistick, Indian town in Connecticut, taken. iv. 292. Burnt. iv. 294.
- Mistick, in Massachusetts, settled. viii. 39. River. i. 107.
- Mitchel, Jonathan, came to New-England. ix. 171. Minister of Cambridge. v. 266. vii. 27. Appointed licensor of the press. i. 228. Memoirs of. vii. 47. Death. vii. 30.
- Mitchel's river. viii. 147.
- Mit-hill, Samuel-L. v. 292.
- Moffet, Joseph. ix. 133.
- Mohawk Indians, attempts made to educate their children at Stockbridge. x. 142. 153. These attempts opposed by the Episcopalians. x. 145. 148. And by the Dutch of New-York. x. 148. One of the Six Nations. v. 120. In the battle of Lake George. vii. 109. Numbers, who met Johnson in 1764. x. 121. Numbers employed by the British. x. 123. They left their ancient villages in 1780. v. 20. x. 153. Numbers in 1796. v. 23. Language. ix. 93. Specimen of it. x. 137. See Maquas.
- Mohawk-river. ii. 97. vii. 95. Falls. i. 285. Lands on. i. 284.
- Moheagans. iv. 174. vi. 207. viii. 18. Memoir of. ix. 77. Numbers in 1705. ix. 78. In 1774. ix. 79. In 1803. ix. 76. Remarks on their language. ix. 90. Specimen of their language. ix. 96. 98. See Mohegan.
- Moheakaunuck Indians. iv. 68. ix. 90. 91.
- Noheek, Indian town. i. 208. ix. 86.
- Mohegan Indians. i. 160. Subject to the Pequots. i. 147. Numbers of. i. 210.
- Mohegan river. i. 190.
- Mohickons, Indians. x. 123.
- Molasses, foreign, Duty laid on by Parliament. vi. 193. 194.
- Monamessat Neck. viii. 145.
- Monamoyick Indians. viii. 159. 253. Subject to the Pawkunnawkuts. i. 148. Numbers in 1698. viii. 173. x. 133. In 1762. x. 114. Town. i. 197. 198. Lands purchased by the English. viii. 151. Settled by the English, and named Chatham. viii. 152. Harbour. viii. 144. 165. 249.
- Mondiquid river. i. 159.
- Monequessin, Indian. viii. 21.

- Money, Capt. ii. 122.  
 Money first coined in Massachusetts. vii. 229.  
 Money, Paper, suppressed in Massachusetts, 1750. iii. 287. See Paper Money.  
 Money of the Indians. i. 162. iii. 54. 231. viii. 192.  
 Monhiggon. viii. 225. 271.  
 Monimoy Indians. x. 133. See Monamoyick.  
 Monmouth, Battle of. ii. 143. vi. 172.  
 Monmouth, Earl of. ix. 248.  
 Monongahela-river. iii. 22.  
 Mononotto, Indian. iv. 289.  
 Monponset-pond. ix. 254.  
 Monseag-river. vii. 167.  
 Montague, Admiral, succeeds Commodore Gambier. ii. 45. Advises whale fishery at Falkland-Islands. iii. 199.  
 Montagus, agent. ix. 270.  
 Montague, Capt. i. 111.  
 Montague, William. iii. 261.  
 Montauk Indians, Account of. x. 105.  
 Montcalm, Gen. vi. 38.  
 Montezuma. ix. 214.  
 Montgomery, Gen. ordered to advance into Canada. ii. 55. Takes St. John's and Montreal. ii. 58. Slain at Quebec. ii. 59. vi. 161. Account of his burial. i. 111.  
 Montgomery, Gov. vii. 78.  
 Montgomery, Major. ii. 218.  
 Montgomery fort taken. ii. 118.  
 Montour, Madame. vii. 189.  
 Montreal taken by Gen. Montgomery. ii. 58.  
 Montresor, Engineer. vii. 114.  
 Monta, De, visits Kennebeck-river. i. 251. Lands at Passamaquoddy. ix. 217.  
 Montweag. ix. 210.  
 Montville, Indian name of. i. 208.  
 Monument-hill. vi. 214.  
 Monument-point. viii. 130.  
 Monument-ponds, Church at. iv. 131.  
 Monumet in Sandwich. viii. 122. See Manomet.  
 Moody, —, of Providence. ix. 196.  
 Moody, —, minister at the Isles of Shoals. vii. 255.  
 Moody, Caleb. x. 64.  
 Moody, Joseph. iii. 10.  
 Moody, Joshua, minister of Portsmouth. Memoirs of. x. 40. 64. vi. 270. Minister in Boston. vi. (5.) x. 44. An eminent man. x. 167.  
 Moody, Samuel, minister of York. iii. 10. vii. 257. x. 170. Anecdote of. i. 49.  
 Moody, Samuel, preacher at Newcastle. x. 64.  
 Moody, Samuel, preceptor of Dummer Academy. x. 55.  
 Moody, Silas. x. 64.  
 Moody, William. x. 45. His descendants. x. 64.  
 Moogunkawg, or Magunkaquog. x. 82.  
 Moon-island. iii. 297. ix. 164.  
 Moore, John. ix. 154.  
 Moore, Thomas. vii. 171.  
 Moorhead, John. iii. 264.  
 Moors, Indians of America supposed to be the descendants of. i. 145.  
 Moose-island. iii. 95.  
 Mooshausick, Indian name of Providence. x. 18.  
 Morals, State of, among Stockbridge, Oneida, and Brothertown Indians. iv. 70. v. 17. 19.  
 Moratiggon. viii. 226.  
 Morcus, Sachem. vi. 114.  
 Morell, or Morrell, William. i. 125. ix. 6.  
 Morga, Don Antonio. iv. 238.  
 Morgan, Abner. ix. 133.  
 Morgan, Col. annoys British troops in New-Jersey. ii. 104. 106. In the battle of Stillwater. ii. 122. His action with the enemy near Jenkinstown. ii. 130. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 141. General. ii. 200. Defeats Tarleton at Cowpens. ii. 203. Pursued by Cornwallis. ii. 205.  
 Morgan, Jonathan. ix. 133.  
 Morgan, Joseph. ix. 132.  
 Morrell, Abraham. vii. 10.  
 Morrill, Nathaniel. x. 55.  
 Morris, George. ii. 140.  
 Morris, Judge. vii. 78.  
 Morris, Robert. ii. 211.  
 Morris, Robert-Hunter, Lieut. Gov. of Pennsylvania. vii. 72. Urges the Assembly of the Province to make exertions to defend their frontiers. vii. 100. Member of the grand council of war. vii. 131. Accused of high treason by Evans. vii. 137. Builds a line of forts. vii. 153.  
 Morris's cove. viii. 145.  
 Morris's Island. viii. 118. 146.  
 Morse, —, of Chatham. ix. 196.  
 Morse, Deacon. x. 53.  
 Morse, Jedidiah, author of the American Universal Geography. v. 123. F. H. S. v. 291. Minister of Charlestown. vii. 259.  
 Mora, Joseph. ix. 195. 196.  
 Mortality, Bills of, in Connecticut. iii. 4. In Maine. iii. 143. In Massachusetts. i. 114. 116. 240. 274. iii. 17. 20. 121. 160. 201. iv. 19. 43. 213. v. 207. 276. vi. 276. viii. 79. 125. ix. 168. 235. x. 188. In New-Hampshire. ix. 236.  
 Morton, Bishop. ix. 170.  
 Morton, Charles, minister of Charlestown. ix. 166. An eminent man. x. 167. Epitaph. viii. 76.  
 Morton, Ephraim. iv. 123. 126.

- Morton, George. iv. 127.  
 Morton, Nathaniel. iv. 136. ix. 35.  
 Morton, Thomas, sells muskets and ammunition to the Indians. iii. 61. 64. Apprehended and sent prisoner to England. iii. 62. 64. Complains against New-England. iv. 120.  
 Mosely, Capt. vi. 207.  
 Mosely, Samuel. ix. 186.  
 Moses, Nadab. x. 57.  
 Moses, Theodore. x. 61.  
 Moshenupsuck, the notch in Bolton mountain. ix. 80.  
 Moshup, fabulous giant at Gay-head. i. 139. See Maushop.  
 Mother-brook. ix. 163.  
 Motte, Fort, taken. ii. 212.  
 Moulding of iron ware. ix. 261.  
 Moulton and Harmon subdue the Norridgewocks. ix. 209. 220.  
 Moulton, Jeremiah. i. 104.  
 Moulton, Johnson. iii. 11.  
 Moultrie, Col. commands at Sullivan's Island. ii. 66. Defeats the British at Beaufort. ii. 163. Retreats to Charleston. ii. 166.  
 Mountaineer language, Vocabulary of. vi. 19.  
 Mount-Hope. iii. 171. v. 222. 224. 226. 270.  
 Mourning for the dead among the Indians. i. 134. 153. iii. 237. x. 109.  
 Mousam, —, minister in Marblehead. viii. 76.  
 Mousam-river. iii. 139. Canal near. iii. 140.  
 Mowatt, Capt. ii. 58.  
 Moxon, George. ix. 191. x. 26.  
 Mr. A title given to gentlemen only in the early periods of New-England. ix. 150. x. 99.  
 Muckemuck, Job, Indian preacher. x. 132.  
 Muddy-river in Flintston. iii. 239.  
 Muddy-river in Topsham. iii. 141.  
 Mud-island abandoned by the Americans. ii. 123.  
 Mugford, James. viii. 59.  
 Muhheakunnuk country described. ix. 99. Etymology of the word. ix. 100. The traditions of the nation. ix. 100. Agriculture, hunting, and weapons. ix. 101.  
 Muhhekaneew Indians. i. 195. ix. 91. 100.  
 Muhhekaneok. ix. 90. See Moheak-aunuck.  
 Muhlenberg, Gen. ii. 210.  
 Mulford's Cliff. viii. 158.  
 Munsees, Indians. ix. 92. x. 123.  
 Munshee, Daniel, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.  
 Murder among the Indians, how punished. i. 149. iii. 211. iv. 166. v. 18.  
 Murdock's pond. viii. 223.  
 Murray, Counsellor. vii. 76. 203.  
 Murray, Gen. vi. 54.  
 Murray, John. iii. 264. Universalist. x. 72.  
 Muscle-point. viii. 145.  
 Muset in Sandwich. i. 232.  
 Musgrave P. Post-master. v. 209. vi. 67.  
 Muskulthe Indians. x. 123.  
 Musquetequid, Indian name of Concord. i. 240.  
 Musquidoboit-river. iii. 97.  
 Musquito in Demerary. vi. 2.  
 Mussauco, Indian name of Simsbury. ix. 84.  
 Mussey, Hester. vii. 10.  
 Mutcheshesunnetooh, evil god of the Long-Island Indians. x. 109.  
 Myles, Samuel. iii. 259. vii. 217.  
 Myrick-island. iv. 41.  
 Myrick's pond. x. 76.
- N.
- Naamskaket in Harwich. i. 232.  
 Nacomuck-brook. i. 269.  
 Nagawoomcom-pond. x. 84.  
 Nananticks, Indians. iv. 174. See Nantanticks and Nianticks.  
 Nantantick. x. 102. See Niantick.  
 Nails made in Middleborough. iii. 2.  
 Nalkitgoniash in Nova-Scotia. x. 116.  
 Naltaug-brook. i. 269.  
 Namasakeeset, Indian name of Duxborough. ii. 4.  
 Namasket, Namasquet, or Namasseke, visited by Hopkins and Winslow. iii. 148. viii. 232. By Gov. Bradford viii. 252. By Winslow and Hamden. viii. 258. 264. Indian town. i. 200. Now Middleborough. iii. 1.  
 Namcock in the Narraganset country. v. 240.  
 Nameeag Indians. x. 101.  
 Names of the dead, esteemed a crime among the Indians to speak. iii. 189. 208. 237. x. 110.  
 Naming of children among the Indians. x. 108.  
 Namskaket creek. viii. 160. 188. 219. x. 72. Land purchased of the Indians. viii. 164. See Skaket.  
 Nanticoke Indians, Plot of, against the English discovered. vii. 199. Language. ix. 92.  
 Nantucket, Description of. iii. 153. Macy's account of. iii. 155. Progress of the whale-fishery. iii. 161. Bill of mortality. iii. 160. Indian fable respecting the discovery of the island. v. 56.  
 Nantucket Indians subject to the Pawkunnawkuts. i. 148. Numbers. i. 205. 207. iii. 157. 159. Progress of the gospel among them. i. 206. 207. Praying towns. i. 207. Churches. iii.

185. iv. 66. x. 124. 132. Character. i. 206. iii. 158. Mortal disease among them. i. 207. iii. 158.
- Narraganset Indians**, enemies to the Wamponoags. viii. 231. 238. Account of. i. 147. Vocabulary of their language. iii. 203. v. 80. Their customs, religion, &c. iii. 203—238. Boundaries of their country. v. 239. In which were many towns. iii. 207. Send a defiance to Plymouth. viii. 239. Hostile to the English there. viii. 241. Sell lands to Roger Williams, William Coddington, Richard Smith. v. 216. And to Humphrey Atherton and others. v. 217. 240. Treaty of peace with. x. 18. At war with the Moheagans. ix. 77. Pequots incorporated with them. ix. 82. Not disposed to embrace Christianity. i. 210. Their character and numbers. i. 210. Indians defeated in their country by the colonists. vi. 90.
- Nash**, Gen. in the battle of Brandywine. ii. 115. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. Wounded. ii. 120.
- Nashamoies**, Indian town. i. 204.
- Nashauckammuck**. x. 131. See **Nashuakemmiuk**.
- Nashaun island**. i. 232. Indian church at. i. 206. See **Naushaun**.
- Nashaway Indians** subject to the Massachusetts. i. 148. At war with the Maquas. i. 162. 193. Gookin's letter to them. i. 193.
- Nashawinna island**. i. 232.
- Nashobah**, Indian town. i. 188.
- Nashua river**. i. 107.
- Nashuakemmiuk**, or **Nashouohkamuck**, Indian town. i. 204. Number of Indians in. i. 206.
- Nashwack-river**. iii. 100.
- Nass**, on the north-west coast. ix. 243.
- Nassau**, Prince of. ii. 172.
- Natick**, Indian town. i. 171. 180. 181. iii. 185. viii. 19. Incorporated. i. 184. Indians. v. 25. 32. 206. 263. Law of General Court respecting. i. 177. Form of government established among. i. 181. Removed to Long-Island during Philip's war. i. 228. Sell lands at Salem. vi. 278. Numbers in 1698. x. 134. In 1749. x. 134. At different periods. i. 195. x. 136. Church. i. 181. v. 43. vi. 201. viii. 20. 21. x. 124. Instructions of, to William and Anthony. vi. 201.
- Naugus's head**. vi. 217.
- Nauhaught**, Elisha, Indian. v. 56.
- Naumkeak**, Indians of, subject to the Pawtuckets. i. 149. Settled by the English. iii. 86. Account of, in 1620. i. 123. Now Salem. iii. 241.
- Naumkoyick neck and creek**. viii. 188.
- Nauset**, Indian town. i. 197. Visited by the Plymouthans. viii. 237. By Gov. Bradford. viii. 250. By Capt. Standish. viii. 252. Settled by the English. iv. 112. viii. 163. The name now confined to the north-east part of Eastham. viii. 158. Indians kidnapped by Hunt. viii. 160. 227. 238. Account of. viii. 159. Number of fighting men. viii. 161. 226. Attack the English. viii. 219. Trade with them. viii. 162. Join in the conspiracy against them. viii. 262. Receive the gospel. viii. 170.
- Nauset-beach**. viii. 115.
- Nauset-harbour**. viii. 116. 154. 187.
- Naushaun-island**. iv. 234. See **Naushaun**.
- Nawdowessies**, Indians. ix. 92.
- Nawset Indians** subject to the Pawkunnawkuts. i. 148. See **Nauset**.
- Neal**, Daniel, Historian of New-England. v. 199. Character of his history. v. 200. vii. 262. Error pointed out. ix. 12.
- Nechegansit Indians**. See **Narraganset**.
- Neddick**, Cape. iii. 7.
- Neforummin**, Indian minister. v. 43.
- Negro slave in Massachusetts** sues his master for his freedom. iv. 202.
- Negroes**, Duty imposed in Massachusetts on imported. iv. 196. Indians of Martha's Vineyard and Marshpee improved in their morals by intermarrying with. i. 206. iv. 208. Well treated in Virginia. iii. 92.
- Nehantick**. ix. 90. See **Niantick** and **Nihantick**.
- Nehanticks**, Indians. ix. 77. 79.
- Nemiah**, Indian. ix. 198.
- Nehumkek**. i. 123. See **Naumkeak**.
- Nelson**, Samuel. iii. 151.
- Neponset Indians** subject to the Massachusetts. i. 148. Mortality among. vii. 9.
- Neponset-river**. i. 169. 184. ix. 163.
- Netowah**, Indian preacher. x. 132.
- New-Albion** discovered. i. 144. ix. 54.
- New-Bedford**, Description of. iv. 232. Indian name. i. 200. Burnt by Gen. Gray. ii. 151.
- New-Braintree** incorporated. i. 266.
- New-Brunswick**, Description of. iii. 99.
- Newbury** settled. vii. 242. Church gathered. vii. 15. Ministers inclined to Presbyterianism. ix. 48.
- Newcastle in Maine**. vii. 164.
- Newcastle in New-Hampshire**. x. 46. 47.
- Newcomb's Hollow**. viii. 114.
- New-Dublin**. iii. 96.
- New-emission money** recommended by Congress. ii. 184.
- New-England**, Bradford's account of. iii. 77.
- New-England**, Barnard's sketch of eminent ministers in. x. 167.

- New-England, Chauncy's sketch of eminent men in. x. 154.
- New-England's first fruits, as to the progress of learning, &c. i. 242.
- New-England, Morrell's poem on. i. 125.
- New-England, Observations on, 1673. iv. 216.
- New-England's Plantation, containing a description of New-England, 1629. i. 117.
- New-England settled by the English. viii. 36. Character of its inhabitants. i. 105. 243. vii. 138. Of its first ministers. iii. 79. Of its first magistrates. iii. 89. Number of towns in 1643. i. 247.
- New-England full of swamps, rivers, brooks, and ponds. iii. 217. Cold of, accounted for. iii. 218.
- New-England, Commissioners of the united colonies of, dedicate Eliot's Indian Bible to Charles II. i. 174. vii. 222. Their letter to Robert Boyle. i. 216. Account of the corporation for propagating the gospel among the Indians of. i. 212. Their letter to the commissioners of the united colonies. i. 214. Appoint them to superintend the Christian Indians. i. 213. 214. See Indians of New-England.
- Newfoundland taken possession of by Sir Humphrey Gilbert. ix. 50. Imports and exports of, 1799. vii. 219.
- New-Hampshire, Assembly of, refuse to vote supplies in the war of 1756. i. 75. Towns of, put themselves under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, 1641. x. 38. Constitution established. iv. 204. No Indians remaining. i. 211. Character of the government and people in 1795. iv. 98.
- New-harbour in Chatham. viii. 144.
- New-Haven settled. iii. 5. 153. Latitude and longitude. vii. 231. Plundered by Gen. Garth. ii. 169. iii. 103. vi. 174.
- New-Haven Colony, Civil government of. iv. 185. x. 97.
- New-Haven harbour. vii. 234.
- Newichawanocks, Indians. ix. 210.
- New-Jersey, British army enters. ii. 81. 83.
- New-London, Indian name of. i. 147. ix. 84. x. 101. North parish purchased of the Indians. ix. 81. Flourishing town in 1680. iv. 220. Latitude and longitude. vii. 231. Burnt by Arnold. ii. 217.
- New-London river. vii. 233. 234.
- Newman, John. x. 192.
- Newman, Samuel. ix. 191.
- New-Market incorporated. iv. 87.
- New-Meadows river. iii. 141.
- New-Milford incorporated. vii. 167.
- New-Netherlands settled by the Dutch. iii. 51.
- New-North church in Boston erected. iii. 260. viii. 68.
- Newport in Nova-Scotia. x. 81.
- Newport in Rhode-Island built. v. 216.
- New-Providence, Garrison of, surrenders to Capt. Hopkins. ii. 62. Taken by the Spaniards. ii. 229.
- New-Salem settled from Middleborough. iii. 152.
- New-Shoreham on Block-island. x. 111.
- Newspapers first printed in Boston. v. 208. vi. 66. In Connecticut. vi. 76. In New-Hampshire. v. 215. In Rhode-Island. v. 215. In Philadelphia. vi. 64.
- New-Stockbridge Indians. v. 13. x. 153.
- New-Testament, Eliot's translation of, first published. i. 176.
- Newton, Anthony. ix. 194.
- Newton, Hibbert. vi. 121.
- Newton, Judge. iii. 126.
- Newton, Description and history of. v. 253. Indian name. i. 168. Cambridge-village. i. 171.
- Newtown in Connecticut, Indians of. x. 112.
- Newtown in New-York, Description of. ix. 120.
- Newtown-creek. ix. 123.
- New-York, Great mortality in, 1702. ix. 195. City and harbour described. ii. 67. College founded. vii. 89. City evacuated by the American army. i. 76. vi. 165. Great fire in. ii. 77. Another fire in. ii. 148. Evacuated by the British. ii. 243.
- Niagara, Letter from a gentleman on his return from. i. 284.
- Niantick Indians subject to the Narragansetts. i. 147. Situation of their country. v. 239. ix. 82. Mortgaged to Humphrey Atherton and others. v. 240. Lands in their country claimed by James Noyes. v. 242. The Indians uniformly adhered to the English. vi. 86. ix. 82. See Nehanticks and Nihanticks.
- Nicholet, Charles. vi. 263.
- Nichols, —, minister in Salem. vi. 274.
- Nichols, Richard, Charles II.'s commissioner to the colonies. v. 218. 228. 231. 238.
- Nicholson, Col. Gov. of Virginia. v. 158. 159. 164. Popular. v. 130.
- Nicholson, Gen. vii. 215. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. vi. 120. 123.
- Nickerson, William. viii. 161.
- Nickerson's point. viii. 145.
- Nick's-mate-island. iii. 297.
- Nicoles, Mohawk chief. x. 143. 151.
- Nihanticks, Number of, in 1761. x. 103. In 1783. x. 104. See Niantick.
- Niles, Nathaniel. v. 292.

- Niles, Samuel, minister of Braintree. ix. 196. Eminent man. x. 170.
- Ninegret, Sachem of the Nianticks. ix. 82. Mortgages his lands to Humphrey Atherton and others. v. 240. 241. 242. Uniformly adhered to the English. iv. 279. vi. 86. Punishes his wife for adultery. ix. 83. Accused of treachery to the English. vi. 207. Number of his tribe in 1761. x. 104.
- Ninety-Six, Tarleton repulsed at. ii. 201. Gen. Greene repulsed in his attack upon. ii. 212.
- Nipegons, Indians. ix. 92.
- Nipmuck Indians tributary to the Narragansets. i. 147. Subject to the Massachusetts. i. 148. At war with the Maquas. i. 162. Situation of their country. i. 116. v. 239. ix. 80. Praying towns. i. 189. x. 128. Ambush Capt. Hutchinson's party. i. 269.
- Nipmuck-river. i. 185.
- Nipnets, or Nipmucks. i. 259. ix. 93.
- Nippahonsit-pond. iii. 168.
- Nippaniquet-pond. iii. 166. 168.
- Nixon, Gen. ii. 126.
- Noah, Indian preacher. x. 132.
- Noailles, M. de, French ambassador. ii. 134.
- Noailles, Viscount de. ii. 222.
- Noble, David. viii. 49.
- Noble, John. x. 57.
- Nobcuset, or Nobaquasit. viii. 169. Indians subject to the Pawkunnawkuts. i. 148. Indian town. i. 197. Village in Dennis. i. 232. viii. 134.
- Nobeka, near Wood's Hole. i. 232.
- Noddle's Island. iii. 297. iv. 194.
- Noel, Col. ii. 167.
- Nokhick, or Nokake, Indian food. i. 150. iii. 208. viii. 228.
- Noman's Land, according to Indian tradition, once joined Gay-head. i. 139. Few Indians left at, 1720. i. 206.
- Nonantomomqua meadow. i. 269.
- Nonantum Indians subject to the Massachusetts. i. 148. John Eliot preaches the gospel to them. i. 168. v. 255. viii. 14. x. 13.
- Non-importation agreement of the Boston merchants. ii. 43.
- Nonnymesset-island. viii. 128.
- Nocheeva-island. iv. 242.
- Noonatomen. v. 265. See Nonantum.
- Nope, or Martha's Vineyard. i. 148. 154. 201.
- Norfolk county erected. iii. 241.
- Norfolk in Virginia burnt. ii. 61.
- Norman's map. viii. 209.
- Norridgewock Indians, Situation of. i. 251. Their tradition of a murder perpetrated by the English. i. 252. Subdued. ix. 209. 220. Peace made with. vi. 117. Join the Canadians. ix. 226. Specimen of their language. x. 137.
- Norris, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Norris, Edward, minister. vi. 254.
- Norris, Edward, schoolmaster. vi. 240.
- North, Lord, account of his conciliatory plan. ii. 48. Proposes the American piracy bill. ii. 92. His conciliatory acts passed by Parliament. ii. 136. Succeeded by the Marquis of Rockingham. ii. 226. Made Secretary of State. ii. 234. See also ii. 113.
- North-America discovered. ix. 54.
- North-America, British colonies in, Observations on. i. 86. Plan of union of. vii. 203. Objections of Connecticut against the plan. vii. 210. Number of inhabitants. 1765. vii. 220.
- Northborough incorporated. x. 86.
- North-Bristol in Guilford. x. 96.
- North-church (old) in Boston chooses a pastor, who is set aside by the government. x. 25.
- Northern lights. ii. 14.
- Northfield, Account of. ii. 30. Part of it annexed to New-Hampshire. iii. 108.
- Northfields in Salem. vi. 212. 218.
- North-pond in Hopkinton. iv. 17.
- North-pond in Worcester. i. 114.
- North-river in Concord. i. 238.
- North-river in Salem. vi. 216.
- Northumberland, Straits of. iii. 97.
- North-west coast of America. ix. 242.
- North-west passage, Attempts to discover. ix. 54.
- North-west-river in Flintston. iii. 239.
- Norton, —, minister of Hingham. ix. 194.
- Norton, Asa. v. 292.
- Norton, John, leaves England. iv. 110. vii. 43. Preaches at Plymouth. iv. 110. vii. 277. Minister in Ipswich and Boston. iii. 257. vi. (5.) 260. ix. 44. Author. iii. 300. Character. x. 30.
- Norton, John, chief of Six Nations. x. 154.
- Norton, Seth. v. 170.
- Nottingham in Pennsylvania. vii. 174.
- Norwalk burnt by Gov. Tryon. ii. 169.
- Nova-Scotia granted to William Alexander. iii. 95. Ceded to Great-Britain by the French. vi. 130. History of, from 1710. vi. 120. Number of inhabitants, 1764. x. 81. Description of. iii. 94. Divided into four governments. iii. 96. Agricultural Society. iii. 98. Governours. iii. 101.
- Nowel, Increase, ruling elder in Boston. viii. 6. ix. 12. 19. x. 2. Leaves the office. ix. 3. Magistrate. ix. 20. Superintendent of the Indians. x. 128.
- Noyes, Dr. v. 198.
- Noyes, James, minister of Newbury. vi.

264. *Memoirs of*. vii. 242. *Character*. vi. 273. *Inclined to Presbyterianism*. ix. 48.
- Noyes, James, minister of Stonington. vii. 242.
- Noyes, Moses, minister of Lyme. vii. 242.
- Noyes, Nicholas, minister in Salem. vi. 264. *Believed in witchcraft*. v. 64. 75. *Death*. vi. 273. *Character*. vi. 286. x. 168.
- Nukkehkumnees, Indian town. x. 130.
- Number-four, Fort, built. iii. 107.
- Nummuck, William, Indian. x. 133.
- Numpaus, Indian. x. 114.
- Nunnepoag in Edgartown. x. 132.
- Nurse, John. ix. 145.
- Nussinut-Hill. i. 238.
- Nut-Island. iii. 297.
- Nutting, John. vi. 240.
- O.
- Oak. iii. 220.
- Oakes, Josiah. iii. 118. viii. 176.
- Oakes, Simon. vii. 110.
- Oakes, Thomas. iii. 118.
- Oakes, Urian, President of Harvard College. vii. 27. *Minister of Cambridge*. vii. 31. *Death*. vii. 32. *Memoirs of*. vii. 51.
- Obachickquid, Indian. ix. 83.
- Obtakiest, Sachem of Massachusetts. viii. 265. *Plots against the English*. viii. 272. *Inclined to make peace*. viii. 273. *See Chickataubut*.
- Ochre, Yellow, in Brookfield. i. 273.
- Occum, Samson, a Mohegan Indian. ix. 76. *Preaches to the Montauk Indians*. x. 105. *Removes to Oneida*. i. 210. *Minister of the Brotherton Indians*. v. 13. *Memoirs of*. ix. 89.
- Odiorne, Thomas. iv. 94.
- Odlin, John. iv. 88.
- Odlin, Woodbridge. iv. 88.
- Ogden, Col. ii. 235.
- Ogden, John-Cosens, minister in Portsmouth. x. 58. 63. *His children*. x. 71.
- Oggawame, Indian town. i. 207.
- Oglevie, —, missionary to the Indians. iv. 54.
- O'Hara, Gen. in the battle of Guilford. ii. 209. *At York-town*. ii. 222.
- Ohio-river. iii. 22.
- Ohkonkemme in Tisbury. x. 131.
- Okommakamesit, Indian town. i. 185. 220. *Now Marlborough*. iv. 46.
- Oldham, John, endeavours to make a division in the church of Plymouth. vii. 273. *Travels to Connecticut river*. ix. 152. *Killed by the Indians*. iv. 273. vii. 275.
- Old-Harbour, Chatham. viii. 143.
- Old-Harbour, Dorchester. ix. 163. 166.
- Old-Indian wear on Taunton river. viii. 233.
- Old-South church in Boston formed. iii. 258. *Censured by the General Assembly*. x. 34. *Place of worship converted into a military riding school*. i. 3.
- Old-Testament, Eliot's translation of, first published. vii. 222.
- Old-Tom's-hill. viii. 211.
- Oliver, Andrew, stamp-master, his property injured by a mob. ii. 43. *Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts*. ii. 45. *General Court petitions for his removal*. iii. 110. *Author*. iii. 301. vi. 74.
- Oliver, Mrs. of Salem. vi. 252. 255.
- Oliver, Peter. ii. 46.
- Oliver, Thomas, deacon in Newton. v. 273.
- Oliver, Thomas, Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts. ii. 46. ix. 189.
- Oliver, Thomas-Fitch, minister in Marblehead. viii. 73.
- Olmstead, James. vii. 10.
- Onandaga-lake. i. 284. *See Onondago*.
- Onateyo-island. iv. 240.
- Oneehow-island. ix. 244.
- Oneida, Indian town. i. 284. iv. 71.
- Oneida Indians, one of the Five Nations. v. 120. *Massacre Englishmen*. vii. 151. *Consent to the erection of forts in their country*. vii. 152. *Number who met Sir William Johnson in 1764*. x. 121. *Number employed by the British*. x. 123. *Account of them*. iv. 67. *Severe sufferers in the American war*. iv. 69. *Their number in 1794*. v. 13. 23.
- Oneida-lake. vii. 95.
- Oneida-creek, Action near. ii. 108.
- Oneiyutas, or Oneidas. x. 146.
- Oniactmaws, Indians. x. 123.
- Onions, great quantities in Barnstable. iii. 14.
- Onohoghwaige, or Onohquauga. iv. 65. x. 146.
- Onomog, Indian sachem. iv. 46.
- Onondago Indians. v. 18. vii. 123. *One of the Five Nations*. v. 120. vii. 179. *Consent to the erection of forts in their country*. vii. 152. *Number who met Sir William Johnson in 1764*. x. 121. *Number employed by the British*. x. 123. *Successful expedition against*. ii. 164. *Number in 1794*. v. 23.
- Onondago-lake. ix. 124.
- Onondago-river. vii. 95. 131.
- Onoontaugas, or Onondagoes. x. 146.
- Onset in Wareham. i. 232.
- Ontario-lake. vii. 131.
- Ooashoona-island. iv. 243.
- Orangeburg taken by Gen. Sumpter. ii. 212.
- Orangetown described. iii. 240.
- Oranje fort. i. 156. 160.
- Ord, Capt. ii. 186.



- Ordination, First, of ministers in Massachusetts. iii. 67. iv. 136. 219. vi. 242. ix. 3.
- Ordination sermons not preached in the early periods of New-England. ix. 12.
- Oriskas, outcast Oneidas. v. 18.
- Orleans. viii. 116. Description of. viii. 186. River. viii. 187.
- Orne, Deacon. vi. 264.
- Orne's point. vi. 216.
- Oromocto-river. iii. 100.
- Oronoake Indian villages. x. 111.
- Oronoque-river. i. 64.
- Orr, Hector. ix. 267.
- Orr, Hugh. ix. 264.
- Orr, Robert. ix. 267.
- Osborne, Sir Danvers, Gov. of New-York. vii. 80. Instructed to obtain a permanent salary for the Governour. vii. 127. Death. vii. 81.
- Osborne, George-Jerry. x. 61.
- Osborne, John. vi. 97.
- Osborne, Samuel, minister in Eastham. viii. 183. 191. Character. viii. 195.
- Osgood, David. viii. 282.
- Osgood, John. ix. 157.
- Osgood, Mary. vii. 241.
- Osnobian-river. iii. 25.
- Oswald, Richard. ii. 234.
- Oswego fort. vii. 95. Taken by the French. vii. 157.
- Oswego bass. ix. 124.
- Oswego-falls. i. 285.
- Otis, Harrison-Gray. v. 51. Member of Congress. viii. 104.
- Otis, James, of Barnstable. ix. 221.
- Otis, James, of Boston. iii. 301. vi. 70.
- Otisfield described. iii. 240.
- Otsego-lake. iv. 62.
- Ottagaumies, Indians. ix. 92.
- Ottawagas, Indians. x. 122.
- Ottowaus, Indians. vi. 140. ix. 92. x. 123.
- Ouquagos, Indians. x. 121.
- Ousamaquin. i. 276. See *Massasoit*.
- Ouschankamang, Indian name of Wind-sor. ix. 162.
- Outawawas, or Ottawaus, Indians. vii. 117. 123.
- Owaneco, or Oneco, claims lands in Connecticut. ix. 81. In the expedition against the Narragansets. ix. 88.
- Owen, Dr. minister in London. x. 177. His opinion of Cromwell. ix. 9. Invited into New-England. vi. 262.
- Owusunug, John, Indian. ix. 198.
- Oxenbridge, John, minister in Boston. iii. 257. vi. (5.) Ordained. ix. 193. Popular. iv. 217. viii. 277. Author. iii. 300.
- Oxford, Indian name of. i. 189.
- Oxford, village in New-Bedford. iv. 232.
- Oyster-bay. iii. 13. viii. 141.
- Oyster-pond. viii. 147. 150.
- P.
- Pabodie, William. ix. 205.
- Pachawesit in Sandwich. i. 231.
- Pachet-brook. x. 114.
- Packachoog, Indian town. i. 192. See *Bogwachog*.
- Packard, Ass. iv. 47.
- Packard, Elijah. iv. 131.
- Packeen-river. ix. 162.
- Paddock, Ichabod. iii. 157.
- Paddy, William. iv. 111.
- Paine, Robert-Treat. viii. 177.
- Paine, Thomas, Arguments in favour of independence. ii. 68. Offends the French ambassadour. ii. 159. Goes to France. ii. 233.
- Paint their faces, Indians. i. 153. iii. 236. vii. 180. 198. viii. 228. 230.
- Painted-post, township in New-York. ix. 123.
- Pakemit or Punkipog, Indian town. i. 171. 184. ix. 160.
- Palmer, Edward. v. 232.
- Palmer, Gen. viii. 135.
- Palmer, John. x. 60.
- Palmer, Thomas. iii. 149.
- Pamet, Indian territory near Cape-Cod. iii. 118. 200. viii. 159. 256. Indians of, join in the conspiracy against the English. viii. 262.
- Pamet-river. i. 257. iii. 196. viii. 113. 211. 213.
- Paniese. viii. 242. See *Pinese*.
- Panquash, Sagamore. vii. 199.
- Panther-river. iii. 239.
- Paper-money first issued by Congress. ii. 56. Counterfeited by the British. ii. 103. Went out of circulation. ii. 225.
- Papooes, Indian little children. iii. 211. vii. 189.
- Paradise-hill. vi. 218.
- Paramaribo described. i. 61.
- Pariahnes, Indians. vi. 14.
- Paris, —, minister of Salem village. vi. 266.
- Paris, Noyes. x. 87.
- Paris in New-York. v. 21.
- Park, Daniel. v. 145. 158.
- Parker, Capt. ii. 232.
- Parker, Hyde, Commodore, arrives at Savannah. ii. 155. Issues, with Campbell, a proclamation. ii. 163. Returns to England. ii. 166.
- Parker, James, printer. vi. 76.
- Parker, James, preacher. x. 38.
- Parker, John. i. 252. 255.
- Parker, Lieut. Col. ii. 91.
- Parker, Noah. x. 62.
- Parker, Sir Peter, Commodore, arrives at Cape-Fear. ii. 64. Repulsed at Charleston. ii. 65. vi. 163. Arrives at Staten-Island. ii. 72. Takes possession of Rhode-Island. ii. 84.
- Parker, Samuel, minister in Boston. iii. 263. Bishop. x. 53.

- Parker, Samuel, minister in Provincetown. viii. 202.
- Parker, Thomas, minister of Newbury. vi. 273. vii. 242. x. 26. Inclined to Presbyterianism. ix. 48.
- Parker, William. x. 53.
- Parker's island. i. 251. vii. 165.
- Parker's river. viii. 131.
- Parkman, Ebenezer. x. 85. 89.
- Parks, Paul. x. 60.
- Parliament declares the Colonies to be in a state of rebellion. ii. 63.
- Parmelin, John. x. 96.
- Parmenius, Memoir of. ix. 49.
- Parr, Col. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 102.
- Parris, —, minister of Salem village. v. 76. vi. 266.
- Parsons, Eben. v. 291.
- Parsons, Joseph. i. 266.
- Parsons, Theophilus. viii. 98.
- Partridge, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Partridge, Ralph, minister of Duxborough. viii. 278. x. 26. Account of. ii. 7. Character. iv. 111. Member of Cambridge Synod. iv. 135.
- Pascotoquak Indians subject to the Pawtuckets. i. 149.
- Pascotoquack settled by the English. viii. 278. x. 38.
- Pasquotank-river. iii. 86.
- Passadumky-river. ix. 208.
- Passamaquoddy, De Monts lands at. ix. 217.
- Passamaquoddy bay, rivers, and islands. iii. 95.
- Passamaquoddy Indians. ix. 220. Number. i. 211. Condition. ix. 209.
- Pascticus, Sachem. v. 237.
- Paterson, Col. interview with Gen. Washington. ii. 70. Summons fort Washington. ii. 81.
- Paterson, Gen. ii. 125.
- Patrick, Daniel. vii. 10.
- Patten, Capt. vii. 154. 156.
- Patterson, Gen. ii. 185.
- Patterson, Judge. v. 123.
- Pattison, Gen. ii. 215.
- Patucket-river. v. 239. 240.
- Patuxet, Indian name of Plymouth. iv. 108. Several of the Indians kidnapped by Hunt. viii. 160. 227. 238. Inhabitants of, destroyed by a pestilence. viii. 226.
- Paugasset, Number of Indians in. x. 111.
- Paugautuck river. v. 238. 239. See Pauquatic.
- Paul, Silas, Indian minister. i. 140. 206. iii. 150.
- Paulding, John. ii. 194.
- Paulus-hook fort taken. ii. 171.
- Pauquatic, or Paukatuck, river. i. 278. v. 234. 249. See Pawcutuk.
- Pauquanuch, Number of Indians in. x. 112.
- Pautucket-river. v. 216. See Patucket.
- Pawcutuk-river. i. 147.
- Pawkunnawkut Indians, Account of. i. 148. See Pokanocket and Wampnoaga.
- Pawpossit, Indian town. i. 197. 231.
- Pawtucket Indians, Account of. i. 148. At war with the Maquas. i. 162.
- Payson, Edward, minister of Rowley. v. 207. x. 67. Death. ix. 182.
- Payson, Philips. ix. 197. Minister of Walpole. ix. 186.
- Pea, Beach, viii. 145.
- Peace, Provisional articles of, between the United States and Great-Britain signed. ii. 234. iii. 245. Definitive treaty of, signed. ii. 243.
- Peach's point. vi. 231.
- Peaked-hill. viii. 111. Bara. iv. 42.
- Pearce's hollow. viii. 114.
- Pearson, Eliphalet. x. 191.
- Peat in Massachusetts. vii. 2. viii. 148. 191. x. 76.
- Peccary. i. 63. vi. 3.
- Peck, William-Dandridge. v. 291.
- Peck's-kill, British expedition against. ii. 94.
- Pecksuot, Indian of Massachusetts. viii. 268. Killed. viii. 269. 272.
- Peegun-plain. x. 135.
- Peiroa, —, master of ship Lion. viii. 40. 44.
- Peirce, Capt. of Scituate. vi. 89.
- Peiros, Thomas. x. 53.
- Pemberton, Ebenezer, minister of Old-South church, Boston. iii. 268. x. 190. Ordained. ix. 195. Author. iii. 300. Character. vii. 57. x. 164. 169.
- Pemberton, Ebenezer, minister of New-Brick church, Boston. iii. 261. x. 190. Author. iii. 301.
- Pemberton, Thomas. F. H. S. Memoir of. x. 190.
- Pembroke, Number of Indians in. i. 201.
- Pempotowwuthut, Indian name of Albany. ix. 100.
- Pendleton, Brian. x. 39.
- Pendleton, James. x. 43.
- Penhallow, Capt. vi. 114.
- Penhallow, Samuel. x. 52. 53.
- Penn, —, of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Penn, John. ii. 113.
- Penn, Richard, examined before the House of Lords. ii. 58.
- Penn, William. viii. 2. 4.
- Pennahannit, Indian. i. 134. 188.
- Pennakook Indians subject to the Pawtuckets. i. 149. At war with the Maquas. i. 162.
- Pennsylvania Legislature consisted of two branches. i. 75. Line of the army revolts. ii. 203.

- Penobscot taken possession of by the British. ii. 171. Massachusetts expedition against fails. ii. 172. vi. 175.
- Penobscot-bay. ix. 208.
- Penobscot Indians. History of. ix. 207. Treaty with, 1693. ix. 231. Peace concluded with, 1726. vi. 108. Treaty with, 1749. ix. 220. Many remove into Canada. x. 115. Language. ix. 92.
- Penobscot-river. ix. 207.
- Pentagouette, or Penobscot settled by the French. ix. 210.
- Pentrey, William. vii. 10.
- Pepper, Robert. vi. 208.
- Pepperell, William, first settler of Isles of Shoals. vii. 249. 253.
- Pepperell, William, General. i. 5. vii. 253. Army sails for Cape-Breton. i. 13. Arrives at Canso. i. 14. At Cape-Breton. i. 26. Summons the garrison of Louisbourg to surrender. i. 27. Takes the town. i. 110.
- Pequot Indians. Account of. i. 147. Number of their fighting men. ix. 77. Their league with the Moheagans prevented by R. Williams. i. 277. War with. iv. 273. In which the English are assisted by the Moheagans and Narragansets. ix. 84. Subdued by the English. i. 246. vii. 233. Incorporated with the Moheagans and Narragansets. ix. 82. Oppressed by Uncas. ix. 83. Their country. iv. 174. v. 240. ix. 80. Extent of it. ix. 79. Massachusetts claims a share in. x. 102. Their number in 1755. x. 101. In 1762. x. 102.
- Perondiack in Nova-Scotia. x. 115.
- Pertwinkle. iii. 225. viii. 192.
- Perkins, Daniel. ix. 196.
- Perkins, James. v. 291.
- Perkins, John. iii. 301.
- Pernette, Naturalist in Nova-Scotia. iii. 98.
- Perry, John. v. 169.
- Peak-island. i. 232.
- Pestilence among the Indians of New-England. i. 148. iv. 108. viii. 160. 226. 234.
- Peter, Capt. ii. 204.
- Peters, Hugh, minister of Salem. vi. 234. 243. 275. x. 18. Arrives in New-England. vi. 249. Memoirs of vi. 250. 285. Appears against Mrs. Hutchinson. viii. 9. Sent agent to England. x. 30. Excepted from the act of indemnity. ix. 8.
- Peters, William, Secretary of Pennsylvania. vii. 181. One of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Peters, St. village in Cape-Breton. i. 28.
- Petersburg in Virginia. iii. 91.
- Petitodiack-river. iii. 101.
- Petit-riviere in Nova-Scotia. iii. 97.
- Petroleum in Pennsylvania. iii. 22.
- Pettequamscot. v. 241.
- Pettick's Island. iii. 297.
- Pewins, Indians. x. 122.
- Phelps, George, Samuel, and William. ix. 154.
- Philadelphia taken possession of by British troops. ii. 117. Evacuated by British troops. ii. 141. Ladies of, raise contributions for the American army. ii. 189. Mutiny of continental troops in. ii. 232.
- Phillip, sachem of the Wamponoags, his character. i. 200. Possessed Mount Hope. v. 222. 227. Resided at in winter. iii. 171. At Cohanat during the hunting season. iii. 170. 171. Treats Mr. Eliot with scorn. x. 15. Goes to Nantucket to kill John Gibbs. iii. 159. His letters to the Gov. of Plymouth. ii. 40. vi. 94. His war begins. iii. 148. v. 170. 269, vi. 84. His war interrupts the progress of Christianity among the Indians. i. 195. Killed. iii. 149. 171. v. 224. 271. His war terminates. i. 228. iii. 149. See also vi. 197. 198. 206. 208. 211.
- Phillips, Col. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 101. Forms a council. vi. 121. Summons the French inhabitants to take the oath of allegiance. vi. 123. Orders them to choose deputies. vi. 124.
- Phillips, Erasmus. vi. 122.
- Phillips, Gen. ii. 125. Dies. ii. 210.
- Phillips, George. iii. 74. Minister of Watertown. ix. 19. 46. Acknowledges that the church of Rome is a true church. x. 2.
- Phillips, John, preaches at Portsmouth. x. 55. Founder of Exeter Academy. iv. 96.
- Phillips, Mrs. viii. 40.
- Phillips, Walter. vii. 169.
- Philological Society in Middleborough. iii. 3.
- Phips, Spencer, Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. Concludes a treaty with the Eastern Indians. ix. 219. 221. 223.
- Phips, Sir William, conquers the Eastern country. ix. 231. 251. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. vi. 272. x. 66. An honest man. iii. 130.
- Piambohu, Indian. i. 185. v. 264. ix. 198.
- Pickens, Col. defeats Royalists in Georgia. ii. 163. In the battle of Cowpens. ii. 204. Gen. in the battle of Eutaw-Springs. ii. 218. See also ii. 164.
- Pickering, John. x. 48.
- Pickering, Timothy, F. H. S. v. 292. Secretary of State. vi. 219.

- Pickering-fort. vi. 229.  
 Pickering's-hill. vi. 214.  
 Pickering's mill-dam. x. 39.  
 Pickering's-point. vi. 217.  
 Pictou in Nova-Scotia. x. 116. Har-  
 bour. iii. 97. 98. 101.  
 Pierce, Capt. makes the first almanack  
 published in America. vi. 231. vii. 19.  
 Pierce, Edward. ix. 167.  
 Pierce, John. ix. 191.  
 Pierce, Richard, graduated. ix. 186.  
 minister in Dartmouth. iv. 235.  
 Piercy, Gen. Earl. ii. 81. 84. Embarks  
 for England. ii. 102.  
 Pieronnet, Thomas. x. 192.  
 Pierrepont, Joe. i. 111.  
 Pierson, Abraham, minister of Bran-  
 ford, attempts to convert the Indians  
 of Connecticut. i. 172. 207. His  
 salary. i. 218. See also. ix. 192.  
 Pigeons abound in New-England. iii.  
 220. viii. 45. In New-York. iv. 62.  
 Pigot, Admiral. ii. 233.  
 Pigot, —, minister in Marblehead.  
 viii. 76.  
 Pigwacket Indians. ix. 210.  
 Pike, — minister of Dover. x. 66.  
 Pillars of churches in New-Haven col-  
 ony. x. 92.  
 Pinchon, Mrs. viii. 40.  
 Pine-hill. vi. 213.  
 Pine-pond. x. 76.  
 Pine-swamp. vi. 213.  
 Pinese, an Indian warrior. viii. 242.  
 And counsellor. viii. 262.  
 Pinney, Humphrey. ix. 150. 164.  
 Piracy-bill, American, passed by Parlia-  
 ment. ii. 92.  
 Piscataonis-river. ix. 208.  
 Piscataqua, Tax of, 1646. i. 102.  
 Piscataqua Indians. ix. 210. See Pas-  
 catoquack.  
 Pisopgut, Indian town. i. 198. 231.  
 Pisquid in Nova-Scotia. x. 80.  
 Pitkin, Lieut. Gov. of Connecticut. vii.  
 76. 203.  
 Pitkin, William. vii. 238. 239.  
 Pitkin, —, minister of Farmington. x.  
 104.  
 Pittsburgh. iii. 22.  
 Plague, Great, among the Indians of  
 New-England. viii. 160. See pesti-  
 lence.  
 Plankishaws, Indians. x. 123.  
 Plant, Matthias. ix. 188.  
 Plantain. ix. 245.  
 Plaster of Paris in Nova-Scotia. iii. 98.  
 Platform of Church Discipline, Cam-  
 bridge, composed. vii. 25. Account  
 of. x. 2. 7.  
 Pleasant-bay. viii. 116. 145. 187. 188.  
 Pleasant-point. iii. 141.  
 Plum in New-York. ix. 122.  
 Plum-valley. viii. 115.  
 Plummer, William. x. 192.
- Plural of nouns how formed in the In-  
 dian languages. iii. 222. viii. 192.  
 193. ix. 92. 100.  
 Plymouth church, History of. iv. 107.  
 vii. 263.  
 Plymouth Colony, Mourt's History of.  
 viii. 203. Winalow's History of. viii.  
 239. Settled. viii. 37. Sickness dur-  
 ing the first winter. viii. 43. Gov.  
 Bradford's History of from 1624 to  
 1630. iii. 27. Character of the first  
 settlers. iii. 162. Bounds settled  
 between, and Rhode-Island. i. 279.  
 Contains much barren land. iii. 162.  
 viii. 163. List of Governours. iii.  
 194. Towns in 1686. viii. 162.  
 Plymouth county, No executions in,  
 during sixty years. iii. 162.  
 Plymouth-harbour. ii. 5. viii. 220.  
 Plymouth Indians. i. 148. viii. 169.  
 Progress of the gospel among them.  
 i. 196. Number of Christian congre-  
 gations in 1684. iii. 185. In 1698.  
 x. 133. Number of Indians in 1792.  
 i. 201. 230.  
 Plymouth town begins. iv. 108. vii.  
 221. Sacrifice rocks near. iv. 69.  
 vii. 120.  
 Pocasset. vi. 85.  
 Pocasset in Sandwich. viii. 122. See  
 Pokasset.  
 Pochet purchased. viii. 164. Part of  
 Orleans. viii. 187.  
 Pochet Island. viii. 117. 188. 189. Pur-  
 chased. viii. 169.  
 Pocumpruck Indians. x. 105. See Po-  
 komtakuke.  
 Podunk Indians, tributary to Uncas. ix.  
 85. Number of x. 105.  
 Podunk-meadow and pond. i. 269. 271.  
 Podunk-river. v. 167.  
 Poginouch Indians. x. 116.  
 Pohgneit, Caleb, Indian. x. 133.  
 Pohomooch in Nova-Scotia. x. 116.  
 Pokanocket, Indian town. viii. 243.  
 Journey of Winalow and Hopkins to.  
 viii. 232. Of Winalow and Hamden  
 to. viii. 258.  
 Pokanocket Indians. viii. 159. 160. See  
 Pawkunnawkuts and Wamponoag.  
 Pokasset in Sandwich. i. 231. viii. 122.  
 Pokomtakuke Indians. i. 148. 160. At  
 war with the Maquas. i. 162.  
 Polaski, Count, operations near Charle-  
 ton. ii. 166—168. Mortally wounded.  
 ii. 180. vi. 185.  
 Pole, William, epitaph. ii. 9. Charac-  
 ter. ix. 193.  
 Poliander, professor of divinity. iv. 134.  
 Pomeroy, —, minister. v. 171.  
 Pomeroy, Col. ii. 44.  
 Pomham, Indian. vi. 207.  
 Pomociticut, Indian name of Stow. x.  
 83.  
 Pond, village in Truro. iii. 195. viii. 209.

- Ponkipog Indians receive a grant of land from Dorchester.** i. 100. ii. 9. ix. 160. See Punkapaog.
- Poodatook Indians, Number of.** x. 112.
- Poor, Gen.** ii. 126. 175. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 144.
- Pope, Joseph.** iii. 265.
- Pope's head.** vi. 222.
- Popham, George.** i. 251.
- Popkin, John-Snelling.** x. 192.
- Popmonet, Caleb, Indian.** x. 133.
- Popmonet, Simon, Indian.** iii. 190. x. 133.
- Popponesit in Marshpee.** i. 231.
- Poquau.** iii. 224. See Quahaug.
- Poquannock in Windsor.** v. 169.
- Porpoise, Cape, River.** iii. 139.
- Portail, Du, Gen.** ii. 225.
- Porter, John.** v. 217.
- Porter-lake.** iii. 97.
- Porter's-river.** vi. 216.
- Portland, Duke of, protests against the manifesto of the British commissioners.** ii. 157. Prime minister. ii. 234.
- Port-royal in Jamaica.** iv. 223.
- Port-royal in South-Carolina, Col. Skirving defeats British on.** ii. 163.
- Portsmouth, New-Hampshire, Account of the religious societies in.** x. 37. Bills of mortality for. ix. 236.
- Portsmouth, Rhode-Island, begins.** v. 216.
- Portsmouth, Virginia, Fort at, taken.** ii. 184.
- Portugal, King of, forbids all intercourse between his dominions and the United States.** ii. 69.
- Posey, Col.** ii. 232.
- Potanaumauquut, Indian town.** i. 197. 198. viii. 169. 164. 188. Number of Indians in, at different periods. i. 201. 230. iv. 66. viii. 173. 175. x. 112. 133.
- Potanaumauquut-beach.** viii. 116.
- Potaquamscut-purchase.** v. 217.
- Pot-ash manufactured in Massachusetts.** i. 114. 239. iii. 169.
- Potatoes in the Sandwich-Islands.** ix. 245.
- Potawock-lake.** iii. 97.
- Potter, Gen.** ii. 175.
- Potterfield, Col.** ii. 190.
- Potwine, Thomas.** v. 169.
- Poughkeeste in Sandwich.** i. 231.
- Powell, —, chosen pastor of Old-North church, Boston.** x. 25.
- Powell's creek.** iii. 85.
- Powhatan, sachem.** iii. 87.
- Pownal, John.** vii. 86.
- Pownal, Thomas, character.** vii. 86. Enemy to Shirley. vii. 134. Goes to England. vii. 145. Returns to America. vii. 167. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. vi. 45. See also vi. 189. vii. 169.
- Pownalborough.** vii. 167. See Wiscasset.
- Pownal-harbour.** i. 236.
- Powows, Indian priests and physicians.** i. 133. 154. iii. 227. 237. v. 274. viii. 260. x. 109. Oppose Mr. Eliot. v. 258. viii. 14. x. 13. Prohibited by the General Court of Massachusetts. i. 178.
- Pratt, Benjamin.** iii. 301.
- Pratt, John.** vii. 10.
- Praying Indians in Connecticut, Number of.** i. 209.
- Praying Indians at Martha's Vineyard, their number and names of their towns.** i. 204. 205. Number of their places of publick worship. iii. 185.
- Praying Indians in Massachusetts.** i. 168. Law passed for establishing courts among them. i. 177. viii. 15. x. 13. Their civil government. i. 177. x. 128. They submit to the government of Massachusetts. i. 179. Townships of land granted to them. i. 100. 179. The number and names of their towns and churches. i. 180. iii. 185. Their manner of worship. i. 183. iii. 184. Whence their teachers are chosen. i. 183. iii. 184. Their state. iii. 180. 181. 188. Their hardships during Philip's war. i. 228. viii. 30.
- Praying Indians at Nantucket, their number, and the names of their towns.** i. 205. 206. 207. Number of their places of publick worship. iii. 185.
- Praying Indians in Plymouth, their number and names of their towns.** i. 196. Number of their places of publick worship. iii. 185. See also x. 124. 129.
- Preble, Capt.** i. 236.
- Preble, Commodore.** x. 185.
- Prentice, John.** x. 85. 89.
- Prentice, Thomas.** v. 270.
- Prentiss, Joshua.** iii. 19.
- Presbyterian church formed in Boston.** iii. 262.
- Prescott, Capt.** iv. 16.
- Prescott, Col. defeats Col. Allen.** ii. 58. Taken prisoner by Gen. Montgomery. ii. 58. Exchanged. ii. 79. Gen. ii. 84. Commands at Newport. ii. 102. Taken prisoner. ii. 107. Exchanged. ii. 85.
- Prescott, Dr.** v. 108.
- Prescott, —, minister.** iv. 219.
- Preston, Col.** ii. 91.
- Preston, Thomas, kills several inhabitants of Boston.** ii. 44. Tried. ii. 45.
- Preston's point.** ix. 163.
- Presumacot Indians.** ix. 210.
- Prevoet, Gen. takes possession of Sunbury.** ii. 155. His progress towards Charleston. ii. 166. Retreats to Savannah. ii. 168. Repulses D'Estaing

- and Lincoln in their attack on Savan-  
nah. ii. 179. Goes to St. Augustine.  
ii. 182.
- Price, Dr. ix. 272.
- Price, Ezekiel. viii. 66. F. H. S. v.  
291. Notice of. viii. 85.
- Price, Roger, minister in Boston. iii.  
259. viii. 77. Preaches in Hopkin-  
ton. iv. 16.
- Priestly, Dr. ix. 261.
- Prince and Bosworth of Hull. vi. 127.
- Prince, John, minister in Salem. vi. 274.  
viii. 52. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Prince, Joseph. viii. 64.
- Prince, Nathan. x. 165.
- Prince, Thomas, Gov. of Plymouth. iii.  
194. Settles Eastham. iv. 113. viii.  
164. Memoirs of. viii. 166.
- Prince, Thomas, minister in Boston. iii.  
193. 258. Author. iii. 300. Publishes  
his Annals. i. 2. Revises the New-  
England Psalms. vii. 20. His histori-  
cal manuscripts nearly destroyed. i.  
3. Character. vii. 280. viii. 167. x.  
164. 170. A mistake in his Annals  
pointed out. viii. 211.
- Prince, Thomas, author of Christian His-  
tory. iii. 300.
- Prince-George county, Description of.  
iii. 85.
- Princetown, Battle of. ii. 90.
- Prinler, James. x. 134.
- Printing-press, The first, in New-Eng-  
land erected. vii. 19. In Connecticut.  
v. 216.
- Propheying, how it differed from preach-  
ing. x. 16.
- Providence, Town of, so named by Roger  
Williams. i. 276. x. 18. Settled. iii.  
152. v. 216.
- Providence-island. v. 216.
- Providence-plantations, Charter obtained  
for. x. 20.
- Provincetown, Description of. viii. 196.  
See also iv. 42. viii. 110. 204. 217.
- Provost, Samuel, bishop. iii. 165. x. 59.
- Prussian-blue, Native, in Massachusetts.  
ix. 256.
- Psalms, New-England version of, print-  
ed. vii. 20. Authors of. viii. 10.
- Pudding-stone. ix. 162.
- Pulling-point. iii. 299.
- Pumpisset in Sandwich. i. 231.
- Punkapaog Indians subject to the Mas-  
sachusetts. i. 148. Law of Massachu-  
setts General Court respecting them.  
i. 177. Praying town. i. 184. iii. 185.  
See Ponkipog.
- Punonakanit, Indian town. i. 196. viii.  
159. 173.
- Purchas, author of Pilgrims. viii. 203.
- Putawawtawmaws, Indians. x. 123.
- Putnam, Israel, Gen. ii. 76. 82. At  
Horse-neck. ii. 161.
- Puyon Indians. x. 123.
- Pynchon, Col. x. 143. 152.
- Pynchon, John. v. 232. 245.
- Pynchon, Stephen. ix. 133.
- Q.
- Quabaug, or Quaboag, Indians. i. 160.  
258. At war with the Maquas. i. 162.  
Town. i. 194. vi. 205. Indian name  
of Brookfield. i. 258.
- Quabaug-pond. i. 269. 272.
- Quabaug-river. i. 271. 272.
- Quadequina, Indian. viii. 228.
- Quadrupeds: see Beasts.
- Quahaug. iii. 224. viii. 192.
- Quakers first appear in England. vi. 255.  
In Massachusetts. x. 35. Law with  
penalty of death made against them  
in Massachusetts. vi. 255. Several  
put to death in Boston. vi. 259. 260.  
Not any sanguinary laws made against  
them in Plymouth. iv. 121. Attempt  
to convert the Indians of Martha's  
Vineyard. i. 203. Opposed by Roger  
Williams. x. 22. Order passed against  
them in Rhode-Island, but the people  
would not suffer it to be executed. v.  
219. Charles II. puts a stop to the  
persecution. vi. 260. Build a meet-  
ing-house in Boston. iii. 260. Place  
their justification on their patience  
and righteouaness. viii. 167.
- Quaket in Tiverton. i. 230.
- Quananshet, Indian. vi. 207.
- Quanapaug, James, Indian. vi. 205.
- Quanapu, Thomas, Indian. vi. 206.
- Quansigomog, Indian name of Hopkin-  
ton. iv. 15.
- Quansit in Wareham. i. 232.
- Quantisset, or Quantisick, Indian town.  
i. 190. vi. 207.
- Quapissans, Indians. vi. 14.
- Quashnet-river. i. 232.
- Quason, John, sachem. viii. 151. 173.  
x. 133.
- Quason, Samuel, sachem. x. 114.
- Quebec bill passed by Parliament. vi. 48.
- Quebec city, American unsuccessful at-  
tempt against. ii. 59. vi. 161. Amer-  
icans retreat from. ii. 64. 65. vi. 162.  
Number of inhabitants in. vi. 63.
- Quebec province, State of. vi. 48.
- Queenebaug. v. 239. 249. See Quina-  
baug.
- Quequakanewet, sachem. v. 240.
- Quequaconchet, Indian. viii. 173.
- Quequenah, Indian. x. 132.
- Quesne, Fort du. iii. 22.
- Quibbletown, Action at. ii. 92.
- Quicksand pond. ix. 199.
- Quiliapiack, or Quinipiack, Indian  
name of New-Haven. iv. 182.
- Quinabaug Indians. iv. 174. River. i.  
190. ix. 129.
- Quinapeake Indians. i. 147.
- Quincy, Edmund. iii. 301.

Quincy, Josiah. iii. 301. vi. 70.  
 Quincy, Josiah, jun. v. 291.  
 Quincy, Samuel. iii. 301.  
 Quinsigamond country. i. 115. Pond.  
 i. 113.  
 Quiros, P. Fernandez de. iv. 238.  
 Quisset in Buzzard's Bay. i. 232.  
 Quitiquos-pond. iii. 2.  
 Quittaub, Number of Indians in. x. 134.  
 Quiquuha, Indians. x. 146.  
 Quivers of the Indians. ix. 102.  
 Quivet-creek. viii. 129. 131.  
 Quononoquut-island. v. 217.  
 Quoy, John, Indian. x. 133.

## R.

R, The letter, not pronounced by many  
 of the Indians of New-England. ix.  
 99. iii. 223.  
 Race-point. iv. 42. viii. 110. 197.  
 Rackoon-island. iii. 297.  
 Ragged-island. iii. 297.  
 Rail-hill. vi. 214.  
 Rainsford-island. iii. 297. 299.  
 Raleigh, Sir Walter. ix. 62.  
 Rallé, French Jesuit. v. 112. Killed.  
 ix. 209.  
 Ralph, John, Indian. x. 112.  
 Ram-island. vi. 222.  
 Ramsay, David. v. 292.  
 Ramsay, Ephraim. v. 292.  
 Rand, Isaac. v. 291.  
 Rand, William, minister of Kingston.  
 iv. 130. Character. x. 159.  
 Randal, Abraham. ix. 164.  
 Randolph, Edward. v. 232. 244. A spy  
 of the English court. viii. 278. Visits  
 New-Hampshire. vi. 92. Exhibits to  
 the Lords of the Council articles of  
 high misdemeanour against several  
 members of the Massachusetts Gen-  
 eral Court. i. 229. Appointed king's  
 counsellor. v. 245.  
 Ratcliffe, Robert. iii. 259.  
 Rattlesnake-hill. iii. 239.  
 Raumaug in Connecticut. x. 112.  
 Rawdon, Lord, action with Gen. Greene  
 at Waxhaws. ii. 209. Evacuates  
 Camden. ii. 211. Marches to Ninety-  
 Six. ii. 212. Orders the execution  
 of Col. Hayne. ii. 215. Taken pris-  
 oner. ii. 217.  
 Rawson, Grindall, minister of Mendon.  
 viii. 173. x. 129.  
 Rawson, Grindall, minister of Yarmouth.  
 v. 60.  
 Ray, Caleb. iv. 188.  
 Raymondton described. iii. 239.  
 Raynal, Abbé. vi. 152.  
 Raynes, Joseph. x. 44.  
 Raynham, Description of. iii. 166. Old  
 Indian wear in. viii. 234.  
 Razier, Isaac de. iii. 54.  
 Razor-shell. viii. 192.  
 Read, John. iii. 300.

Read, Joseph. ii. 146.  
 Redhead, Indian. vii. 99. 118.  
 Red-bank, British and Hessians repulsed  
 in attack upon. ii. 126. Abandoned  
 by the Americans. ii. 129.  
 Redings, Joseph. viii. 10.  
 Red-river. viii. 148.  
 Red-stone-creek. vi. 140.  
 Reed, Solomon. iii. 160.  
 Regulating laws recommended by Con-  
 gress. ii. 159.  
 Rehoboth, Indian name of. i. 276.  
 Reiners, or Foxers, Indians. x. 123.  
 Religion of the Indians. i. 123. 136.  
 154. iii. 205. 206. 209. 213. 216. 217.  
 223. 226. 229. iv. 72. v. 14. viii. 264.  
 ix. 218. x. 23. 108. 120.  
 Renown man of war driven from Boston-  
 harbour. ii. 65.  
 Rensselaer, John. vii. 110.  
 Revere, Paul. v. 106.  
 Revil, —, goes to England. viii. 40.  
 Revival of religion in New-England,  
 General. x. 55.  
 Reyner, John, minister of Plymouth. x.  
 174. Character. iv. 110. 118.  
 Rhode-Island purchased of the Indians.  
 x. 20. Settled. iii. 152. v. 216. An  
 asylum for the persecuted. i. 280.  
 List of Governours. vi. 144. The  
 government very popular. i. 75. The  
 island taken possession of by British  
 troops. ii. 84. Attempt to dispossess  
 them planned, but not executed. ii.  
 126. Unsuccessful expedition against.  
 ii. 148. Battle. ii. 149. Evacuated  
 by British troops. ii. 180.  
 Rhode-Island colony, Indians of. i. 147.  
 Not disposed to embrace Christianity.  
 i. 210. Their number at different  
 periods. i. 210. In 1774. x. 119.  
 See Narraganset.  
 Rice, Asaph. x. 86.  
 Rice, Ebenezer. x. 86.  
 Rice, Eber. ix. 144.  
 Rice, Jacob. x. 86.  
 Rice, Thomas. x. 86.  
 Rice, Timothy, sachem. x. 86.  
 Rich, Obadiah. x. 192.  
 Richards, —, of Dorchester. ix. 150.  
 Richards, George. x. 62.  
 Richards, James. v. 229.  
 Richards, John. x. 95.  
 Richards, Judge. v. 76.  
 Richards, Nathaniel. vii. 10.  
 Richardson, Gideon, graduated. x. 87.  
 Minister in Wells. iii. 139.  
 Richibouctou in Nova-Scotia. vi. 136.  
 Richmond, Duke of. ii. 157.  
 Richmond in Virginia. iii. 85. 86.  
 Right hand of fellowship given at ordi-  
 nations in New-England. vi. 242. iv.  
 135. 219.  
 Ripley, Ezra. i. 240. ix. 145.  
 Ripley, Lincoln. ix. 144.

- Rishebucta, or Richibouctou. x. 115.  
 Ritney, Major. ii. 94.  
 Robbins, Ammi-Ruhamah. viii. 51.  
 Robbins, Chandler. ix. 132.  
 Robbins, James. ix. 143.  
 Robbins, Jonathan. ix. 138.  
 Robbins, Lieut. ix. 144.  
 Robbins, Nathaniel. viii. 277. 280.  
 Robbins, Philemon. iv. 132.  
 Roberts, Daniel. ix. 157.  
 Roberts, Josiah. iv. 241. 249.  
 Robertson, Dr. ix. 40.  
 Robey, Henry. x. 44.  
 Robinson, Andrew. ix. 234.  
 Robinson, Capt. ii. 221.  
 Robinson, Edward. ix. 165.  
 Robinson, James, Dr. ix. 186.  
 Robinson, James, Major. ix. 165.  
 Robinson, John, goes to Holland. iv. 115. 135. Minister of the English church at Leyden. iv. 108. 114. Disputes with Episcopius. iv. 134. vii. 269. His sentiments of church government agreeable to the Cambridge platform. iv. 135. Death. iii. 39. 40. 41. 44. iv. 109. Character. vii. 267. 269. 276. ix. 16. 17. His church the first settlers of Plymouth. ii. 4. viii. 268.  
 Robinson, John, minister of Duxborough. ii. 8. ix. 183.  
 Roby, Thomas. viii. 154.  
 Rochambeau, Gen. arrives at Newport. ii. 188. At York-town. ii. 222. See also ii. 211. 226.  
 Rocket, —, of Wrentham. x. 138. 141.  
 Rock-harbour-river. viii. 155. 189.  
 Rock-hill. ix. 160. 152.  
 Rockingham, Marquis of, defends the right of Parliament to tax the colonies. ix. 282. Condemns the manifesto of the British Commissioners. ii. 156. Succeeds Lord North. ii. 226. Death. ii. 234.  
 Rocks, Point of, in Salem. vi. 216.  
 Rockweed in Maine. iv. 144.  
 Rockwell, William. ix. 152.  
 Rodney, Admiral. ii. 225.  
 Roe, Stephen. iii. 260.  
 Rogers, —, of Connecticut. ix. 81.  
 Rogers, —, minister at Plymouth. iv. 109. vii. 277.  
 Rogers, Capt. vii. 124. 147.  
 Rogers, Daniel, of Portsmouth. x. 67.  
 Rogers, Daniel, minister of Exeter. iv. 88.  
 Rogers, Ezekiel. ix. 47. x. 26.  
 Rogers, George. x. 67.  
 Rogers, John, first martyr in Mary's reign. x. 67.  
 Rogers, John, of Dedham, England. x. 67.  
 Rogers, John, president of Harvard College. vii. 27. x. 67.  
 Rogers, John, minister of Ipswich. v. 207. vii. 60. x. 34. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Rogers, John, minister of Kittery. x. 70.  
 Rogers, Judge. x. 67.  
 Rogers, Lieut. Col. ii. 81.  
 Rogers, Nathaniel, minister of Ipswich. x. 67. Death. x. 34.  
 Rogers, Nathaniel, minister in Portsmouth. x. 46. Epitaph. x. 49. His children. x. 67.  
 Rogers, Nathaniel, physician. x. 67.  
 Rogers, —, printer. vi. 69.  
 Roger-Williams bank. x. 23.  
 Roman Catholic church in Boston. iii. 264.  
 Roots, Esulent, in New-England. i. 118. iii. 77.  
 Ropes of the Indians. viii. 212.  
 Ross, Alexander. x. 184.  
 Ross, —, clerk of the Council, Maryland. vii. 171.  
 Ross, Major. ii. 222.  
 Rossignol lake. iii. 97.  
 Rossiter, or Rosseter, Bray. ix. 18. 150. 154.  
 Rossiter, Bryan. x. 93. 96.  
 Rossiter, Josiah. x. 99.  
 Rossiter, Edward. viii. 40.  
 Rotch, J. of New-Bedford. iv. 236.  
 Round-pond. ix. 199.  
 Round-swamp. vi. 213.  
 Rouse, Capt. in the expedition against Cape-Breton. i. 23. 30. Appointed to the command of the Vigilant. x. 183.  
 Rowland, David-Sherman. v. 168.  
 Rowland, Henry-Augustus. v. 168.  
 Rowland, William-Frederick. iv. 88.  
 Roxbury. viii. 7. ix. 21. Settled. viii. 39. Church gathered. vii. 15.  
 Royal, Isaac. ix. 166.  
 Royal, William. ix. 187.  
 Ruggles, Benjamin. iii. 150.  
 Ruggles, John, daughter of. viii. 44.  
 Ruggles, Thomas. iv. 188. x. 94.  
 Ruggles, Thomas, jun. iv. 188. x. 94.  
 Rum, Indians wasted by. x. 147. See depopulation.  
 Rumford, Count. v. 292.  
 Rupture-wort. viii. 197.  
 Rush, Benjamin. iv. 201.  
 Russell, Eleazer. x. 64.  
 Russell, Ezekiel. vi. 73. 76.  
 Russell, Job, Indian. x. 132.  
 Russell, John. iii. 259.  
 Russell, Jonathan, minister in Barnstable. iii. 16. x. 64. Eminent man. x. 169.  
 Russell, Jonathan, jun. iii. 16.  
 Russell, Joseph. vi. 70.  
 Russell, Lieut. Col. ii. 129.  
 Russell, Samuel. x. 95.  
 Russell, William. v. 168.  
 Rutawoo-river. iv. 188.



Rutland harassed by the Indians. i. 264.  
 Rutledge, Edward, interview with Lord Howe at Staten-Island. ii. 76. Gov. of South-Carolina. ii. 166.  
 Rymes, Christopher. x. 59.  
 Ryswick, Peace of. vi. 271.

## S.

Sabbath, how observed in Rhode-Island. i. 281.  
 Sables, Cape. iii. 95.  
 Sachem, or king-bird. iii. 220.  
 Sachema, Extent of the authority of. iv. 168. v. 21. vii. 76. viii. 236.  
 Sachem's-head harbour. x. 100.  
 Sackville fort taken. ii. 161.  
 Saco, The tax of, 1645. i. 102.  
 Saconeset-point. x. 131.  
 Saconet Indians submit to the government of Plymouth. v. 193. State of, in 1698. x. 129. Number in 1700. x. 114. Account of. ix. 204.  
 Sacrament-lake. vi. 136.  
 Sacrifice rocks of the Indians. iv. 69. viii. 120.  
 Saddle-back-mountain. iii. 240.  
 Saffin, John. v. 231. 235. 247.  
 Sagadahoc. i. 251.  
 Sagamore, or Witch-creek. x. 46.  
 Sag-harbour, British stores destroyed at. ii. 102.  
 Sagkonate. ix. 199. See Sogkonate.  
 Sahchecontucket. x. 132. See Sanchezantacket.  
 Sahquastucket. x. 133. See Sawkattucket.  
 Sailor's-island. iii. 297.  
 Saint-Ambrose-island. iv. 267.  
 Saint-Andrew's, New-Brunswick. iii. 100.  
 Saint-Anne's, New-Brunswick. iii. 99.  
 Saint-Clair, Gen. evacuates Ticonderoga. ii. 106. vi. 169.  
 Saint-Clair, Sir John. vii. 100. Deputy Quarter Master General. vii. 131.  
 Saint-Croix-river. iii. 95.  
 Saint-George's-river. iv. 21.  
 Saint-Felix-island. iv. 256.  
 Saint-Francis Indians. ix. 226. Their language. ix. 92.  
 Saint-John's in New-Brunswick. iii. 99. x. 82.  
 Saint-John's island. x. 82.  
 Saint-John's river. iii. 99. ix. 207.  
 Saint-Leger, Lieut. Col. ii. 97. Attacks fort Stanwix. ii. 112. vi. 170.  
 Saint-Luc, Mons'r. ii. 124.  
 Saint-Peter's on Cape-Breton. i. 6. Destroyed. i. 28.  
 Saint-Pierre, Mons'r. vii. 111.  
 Saint-Simon, Marquis de. ix. 106.  
 Sakonet. i. 200. See Saconet.  
 Salem, Description and history of. vi. 212. Settled. iii. 66. 77. The name and soil. i. 117. State in 1629. i. 128.  
 First ordination of ministers. iii. 67. ix. 2. Religious character of its first inhabitants. x. 16. Gov. Winthrop's company land at. viii. 39. Church calls Roger Williams. ix. 20. 23. A water-mill, glass-house, and salt-works erected. vi. 251. Thirteen ketches taken by the Indians. vi. 263. Indian deed. vi. 278. Account of the century lecture. iv. 219.  
 Salem-neck. vi. 218.  
 Salem-village. vi. 233. Witchcraft in. vi. 265.  
 Saltonstall, Gurdon, Gov. of Connecticut. v. 207. viii. 82. ix. 81. Death. ix. 197.  
 Saltonstall, Nathaniel, king's commissioner. v. 232. Counsellor. v. 245. Judge. v. 75. vi. 266.  
 Saltonstall, Sir Richard, assistant in Massachusetts. vi. 95. 256. viii. 41. 45. One of the first settlers of Watertown. ix. 19.  
 Salt-springs at Onondaga. i. 284. ix. 124.  
 Salt-works in the county of Barnstable. viii. 124. 135. 201. x. 78. In Dorchester. ix. 165.  
 Samoset, first Indian who visits Plymouth. viii. 161. 225. 227. 231.  
 Sampson's island. viii. 117. 188.  
 Sampson's pond. ix. 254.  
 Samson, Ezra. x. 192.  
 Samuel, Daniel, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.  
 Sanchecontacket, Indian town. i. 204. Number of Indians in. i. 206.  
 Saneohain, Indian. x. 133.  
 Sanctuit, Indian town. i. 197.  
 Sancumucha, sachem. vi. 208.  
 Sandeman, Robert, comes to America. x. 61. His epitaph. x. 71.  
 Sandemanians in Boston. iii. 264. In Portsmouth. x. 61. Their leading doctrine. x. 71.  
 Sanders, John. viii. 265. 266. 268.  
 Sandford's island. x. 131.  
 Sandwich, Letter to the Earl of. i. 108.  
 Sandwich, Description of. viii. 119. Biographical and topographical anecdotes of. iii. 188. Harbour. viii. 123. Village. viii. 121. Indians in 1698. x. 132. Indian places. i. 197. 199. 231. viii. 252. 255.  
 Sandwich Islands, Natives of. ix. 243.  
 Sandy-beach in Rye. x. 46.  
 Sandy-neck in Barnstable. iii. 12.  
 Sandy-point of Chatham. viii. 117. 145.  
 Sandy-point of Nantucket. iii. 153. 158.  
 Sanford, Peleg. vi. 145.  
 Sanger, Zedekiah. ii. 8.  
 Sapokonik-brook. viii. 169.  
 Saranacha-river. i. 65.  
 Saratoga, Convention of. ii. 123.  
 Sargeant, —, minister in Cambridge. x. 71.

- Sargent, Judge. v. 76.  
 Sargent, —, minister of Malden. x. 26.  
 Sargent, Winthrop. v. 292.  
 Sartine, Sieur de. ii. 134.  
 Sasacus, sagamore of the Pequots. x. 101. ix. 82. Twenty-six sachems subject to him. vii. 233. ix. 84. Makes war on the English. iv. 273. Subdued. iv. 295.  
 Satucket in Brewster. x. 72. See Sawkatucket  
 Satuit, Indian town. i. 197.  
 Saugus, Indian name of Lynn. v. 58. Settled. viii. 39.  
 Saukies, Indians. ix. 92.  
 Sauquish in Plymouth harbour. ii. 5.  
 Sausaman, John, Indian. vi. 193. Murdered. iii. 145.  
 Savage, Capt. ii. 214.  
 Savage, Ephraim. v. 113.  
 Savage, Habijah. x. 181.  
 Savannah taken by Col. Campbell. ii. 155. D'Estaing and Lincoln repulsed in an attack upon. ii. 179. Evacuated by the British. ii. 232.  
 Saw-fly. v. 287.  
 Sawkatucket Indians subject to the Pawkunnawkuta. i. 148. viii. 159. Indian town. i. 197. Number of Indians in 1698. viii. 173.  
 Sawpit-hill. x. 135.  
 Sawwonnuntoh, western god of the Indians. x. 110.  
 Saxes, Indians. x. 122.  
 Sayre, —, minister in Fairfield. iii. 104.  
 Scalping practised by the Maquas. i. 162. Not always fatal. i. 163.  
 Scammel, Col. action with the British at Spicken-devil. ii. 213. Wounded. ix. 105. Death. ii. 223. ix. 106.  
 Scantic-river. v. 167. ix. 154.  
 Scanton, or Scorton, hill. iii. 15.  
 Scarborough, Charles. v. 145. 159.  
 Scargo-hill. viii. 130.  
 Scayace-river. ix. 124.  
 Schandaub, sachem. x. 101.  
 Schenectady. iv. 63. Described. i. 284. iv. 58. vii. 125.  
 Schohary described. iv. 53. Indians in 1766. x. 121.  
 Schools erected among the praying Indians. i. 172. x. 127.  
 Schooners invented. ix. 234.  
 Schuyler, Gen. ordered to advance into Canada. ii. 65. vi. 160. Tried and acquitted. ii. 107. Commands on the Hudson. ii. 28.  
 Schuyler, Peter, Colonel. vii. 90. One of the grand council of war. vii. 131.  
 Schuyler-fort. i. 284.  
 Scituate incorporated. ii. 3. Church. iv. 111. Return of loss in Philip's war. vi. 92.  
 Sconticut-neck. iv. 233.  
 Scoodick-river. iii. 95. 100.  
 Scorton, or Scanton, hill. i. 232. iii. 15.  
 Scotland in York. iii. 9.  
 Scott and, Bishops of, ejected. iii. 162. Persecuted. iii. 163.  
 Scott, Col. action with the British at Quibble-town. ii. 92. Brig. Gen. ii. 105. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 141.  
 Scottow, Joshua. iii. 300.  
 Scratom, John. x. 96.  
 Scuseet, village in Sandwich. i. 231. viii. 120.  
 Scuttup, sachem. v. 240. 241.  
 Seabury, Samuel, bishop. iii. 162.  
 Seakonnet. ix. 199. See Saconet.  
 Seals at St. Ambrose island. iv. 259.  
 Sears, Edward. viii. 136.  
 Sears, John. viii. 135.  
 Sears, Reuben. viii. 136.  
 Sears, Richard. viii. 118.  
 Seavey, William. x. 39.  
 Sebago-pond, Plantations on described. iii. 239.  
 Seccomb, John. x. 88.  
 Seconchquut in Chilmark. x. 131.  
 Secunk, Indian name of Rehoboth. i. 276. Planted. v. 227. See Sekunk.  
 Sedgwick, Theodore. viii. 49.  
 Seeby's creek. ix. 123.  
 Seekers, Sect of. ix. 49.  
 Seguin-island. vii. 164.  
 Seiver, Col. ii. 198.  
 Sekins, Thomas. iii. 150.  
 Sekunk-river. i. 147.  
 Selden, one of the assembly of divines. ix. 45.  
 Select men chosen in the towns of New-England. ix. 152. At first called townsmen. vii. 25. x. 39.  
 Seneca Indians. v. 120. vi. 132. vii. 123. 152. The largest of the Six Nations. x. 147. Number who met Sir William Johnson in 1766. x. 121. Number employed by the British. x. 123. Number in 1794. v. 23.  
 Seneca river and lake. ix. 124.  
 Sengekontakit, Indian town. i. 204. Number of Indians in. i. 206.  
 Senter, Isaac. v. 292.  
 Sepos, or Sepous, Indians. x. 104.  
 Sequassen, sachem. ix. 83.  
 Sergeant, John, missionary to the Stockbridge Indians. iv. 55. 71. v. 13. x. 153.  
 Serpents in Demerary. vi. 4. In New-England. i. 122. iii. 223. 239. In Surinam. i. 63. In Virginia. iii. 86. Method of preserving. iv. 9.  
 Seruniyattha, Indian chief. vi. 143.  
 Sesuet in Dennis. i. 232.  
 Sewall, —, Attorney General of Massachusetts. vi. 72.  
 Sewall, David, of York. x. 69. F. H. S. v. 291.

- Sewall, Joseph, minister in Boston. iii. 258. x. 157. Author. iii. 301.  
 Sewall, Samuel, Judge. v. 76. x. 175. Author. iii. 300. iv. 198.  
 Sewall, Samuel, bridge-builder. iii. 11.  
 Sewall, Stephen, Judge. x. 158.  
 Sewall, Stephen, Professor. viii. 74.  
 Sewan, or Wompompeague. iii. 54.  
 Shabbukin-hill. x. 83.  
 Shallop-cove. vi. 216.  
 Shank-painter-swamp. viii. 196.  
 Sharon, Wayne's action with the Cherokee Indians at. ii. 232.  
 Sharp, Col. ii. 184.  
 Sharpe, Horatio, Lieut. Gov. of Maryland. vii. 100. Member of the grand council of war. vii. 131.  
 Sharp, Miss. viii. 44.  
 Sharp, Samuel. vi. 243.  
 Sharp, Thomas. vii. 7. viii. 41. 45. 46.  
 Sharpless, —, portrait painter. viii. 103.  
 Shauntam, Joshua, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.  
 Shaw, Jeremiah. vii. 258.  
 Shaw, Oakes. iii. 16.  
 Shaw, Philander. viii. 116. Minister of Eastham. viii. 186.  
 Shaw, William-Smith. x. 192.  
 Shawanese Indians. vii. 74. 153. Persuade the Nanticokes to rise against the English. vii. 199. Language. ix. 92. Number employed by the British. x. 123. Number in the battle of Miami. x. 123.  
 Shawmut, Indian name of Boston. i. 256. iii. 242. Settled. ix. 149.  
 Shawshine, Indian name of Billerica. vii. 26. 30.  
 Sheder, John. x. 96.  
 Sheeffe, Jacob. x. 92.  
 Sheens, William. vi. 122.  
 Sheep, Number of, in New-England. 1643. i. 247.  
 Sheep-island. iii. 297.  
 Sheep-pasture in Salem. vi. 213.  
 Sheep-pond. x. 76.  
 Sheepecut-river. i. 253. vii. 164.  
 Shelburne, Earl of, friend to the colonies. ii. 71. 103. ix. 282. Prime minister. ii. 234.  
 Shelburne in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96.  
 Shelby, Col. ii. 198.  
 Shelden, Elisha. vii. 238.  
 Sheldon, Isaac. ix. 154.  
 Shell-fish in Maine. iv. 143. In Massachusetts. iii. 13. 119. 199. iv. 22. viii. 122. 132. 140. 150. 191. 199. 220. 253. In New-England. iii. 224. In Virginia. iii. 85. Method of preserving. iv. 9.  
 Shells, Strata of, in Demerary. vi. 10. Found in the wells of Nantucket. iii. 156. Ridge of, in Surinam. i. 61.  
 Shepard, Mase. ix. 206.  
 Shepard, Thomas, minister of Cambridge. vii. 14. 16. x. 14. Death. vii. 26. Memoirs of. vii. 42. Author. v. 260. Specimen of his rhymes. viii. 10.  
 Shepard, Thomas, minister of Charlestown. vii. 46. 53. Death. ix. 193.  
 Shequocket in Barnstable. i. 230.  
 Sherburne, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.  
 Sherburne, Henry, select-man in Portsmouth. x. 39. Church-warden. x. 64.  
 Sherburne, Henry, jun. x. 56.  
 Sherburne, James. x. 57.  
 Sherburne, Major. ii. 64.  
 Sherburne, Samuel. x. 53.  
 Sherburne in Massachusetts. iii. 185.  
 Sherley, James. iii. 84.  
 Sherlock, Bishop. ix. 188.  
 Sherman, —, minister of Sudbury. x. 87.  
 Sherman, Caleb. ix. 133.  
 Sherman, Isaac. iv. 48.  
 Sherman, Roger, assistant in Connecticut. vii. 238. Judge. vii. 239.  
 Sheshatapooshshoish Indians. vi. 16. Vocabulary of their language. vi. 19.  
 Shetucket-river. i. 190.  
 Shewamett, Indian town. vi. 211.  
 Shields of the Indians. ix. 102.  
 Shining mountains. iii. 25.  
 Ship-building in New-England. 1643. i. 248.  
 Shirley, Bishop, friend to the colonies. ii. 157. ix. 282.  
 Shirley, —, Secretary to Gen. Braddock. vii. 93.  
 Shirley, William, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. ix. 223. Instructions to Gen. Pepperell on the expedition against Cape-Breton. i. 5. Prevails on the Assembly of Massachusetts to support fort Dummer. iii. 108. Vindication of his integrity. iv. 77. Lends Massachusetts £30,000 of publick money. vi. 47. Commander in chief of the British forces in North-America. vi. 34. 40. vii. 94. 131. Character and various transactions of. vii. 69—160. Author. iii. 301.  
 Shirley, Point. iii. 298. 299.  
 Shirreff, William. vi. 122.  
 Shoal-ground near Billingsgate-point. iii. 117. 196.  
 Shoals, Description and history of the Isles of. vii. 242. Hogs not allowed on. i. 103.  
 Shore, —, minister of Taunton. ix. 192.  
 Short, Thomas. v. 216.  
 Shortridge, Richard. x. 57.  
 Shrimton, Samuel. v. 219. 232.  
 Shubenaccadie river and lake. iii. 97.  
 Shukelemy, Oneida chief. vii. 195.

- Shulldham, Admiral, arrives at Boston. ii. 61. At Sandy-Hook. ii. 67.
- Shumuit, Indian town. i. 197. 231.
- Shurtleff, William, of Marshfield. x. 70.
- Shurtleff, William, minister in Portsmouth. x. 54. His family. x. 69.
- Shute, Samuel, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. Character. i. 105. v. 201. vi. 66. Account of the hearing before the Lords of the Privy Council, on his complaint against Massachusetts. ii. 32.
- Shutesbury in Massachusetts. iii. 152.
- Sickness, Custom of the Indians to visit their friends in. viii. 257.
- Siely, Capt. vi. 90.
- Silliman, Gen. ii. 95.
- Silver-hole. vi. 218.
- Silver springs-creek. iv. 41.
- Simcoe, Col. 213.
- Simon, John, Indian. ix. 204.
- Simons, William, Indian. x. 130.
- Simpkins, John. ix. 145. Minister of Brewster. x. 79.
- Sipson's island. viii. 188.
- Sissibou-river. iii. 97.
- Six Nations of Indians, their situation. v. 120. vii. 237. Treaty held with in 1744. vii. 178. The French attempt to gain them. x. 146. They sell lands to Connecticut. vii. 232. Treaty held with, 1754. iv. 57. vii. 76. Averse to the Niagara expedition. vii. 99. Their number and character, 1792. i. 287. Their number in 1795. iv. 67. In 1796. v. 23. They are under the guardianship of New-York. v. 27. See also iv. 75. vii. 74. 162. 153. 159.
- Skaket, or Namsket, creek. viii. 188. Territory. i. 232. viii. 188.
- Skaket-creek, Little. viii. 188.
- Skanton. i. 232. See Scorton.
- Skeene, Col. ii. 27.
- Skeket. i. 232. iii. 118. See Namsket.
- Skelton, Samuel, minister of Salem. vi. 244. x. 16. Ordained. iii. 67. iv. 219. ix. 2. Death. ix. 23.
- Skelton, Mrs. viii. 46.
- Skillman, Isaac. iii. 264.
- Skinner, Thomson-J. viii. 49.
- Skirving, Col. ii. 163.
- Skoffie Nation. vi. 16. Vocabulary of their language. vi. 19.
- Skotacook, on Hudson's river. x. 105.
- Skunkamug in Barnstable. i. 232. iii. 15.
- Slade's ferry. viii. 258.
- Slanie, John. viii. 228.
- Slate-island. iii. 297.
- Slave-trade prohibited by the Legislature of Massachusetts. iv. 197. 205. By the Legislatures of Rhode-Island and Connecticut. iv. 205.
- Slavery not known among the Indians of North America. ix. 213.
- Slaves, Law passed in Massachusetts, prohibiting the buying and selling of. iv. 195. The manner in which they are treated in Surinam. i. 64. In Virginia. iii. 92.
- Slewiack-river. iii. 97.
- Slocum's-Island. x. 131.
- Slough-pond. x. 76.
- Slug-worm, Natural history of. v. 280.
- Smalley, John. viii. 164. 168.
- Smalley, Thomas. viii. 112.
- Small-point in Casco-bay. i. 264.
- Small-pox in Boston. iv. 213. v. 207.
- Smallwood, Gen. in the expedition to Staten-Island. ii. 112. Ordered into Maryland. ii. 114. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. See also ii. 200.
- Smith, Aaron. iv. 47. x. 89.
- Smith, Capt. truckmaster. vi. 115.
- Smith, Cornet. ix. 144.
- Smith, David. iii. 199.
- Smith, —, one of the settlers of Dorchester. ix. 150.
- Smith, Dr. of Dorchester. ix. 196.
- Smith, Elias. x. 62.
- Smith, Elihu-H. v. 292.
- Smith, Frederick. ii. 46.
- Smith, Isaac. x. 102.
- Smith, John, celebrated navigator. viii. 160. Discovers Isles of Shoals. vii. 243. His account of the Massawomeks. i. 157.
- Smith, John, President of Rhode-Island. vi. 144.
- Smith, Lieut. Col. ii. 128.
- Smith, —, member of Congress. ii. 165.
- Smith, —, minister of Barnstable. iii. 16. Of Sandwich. iii. 188.
- Smith, Ralph, minister of Plymouth. iv. 109. vi. 247. ix. 2. 20. x. 2. Character. vii. 276.
- Smith, Richard, first settler in the Narraganset country. v. 216. 230.
- Smith, Richard, jun. purchases Hog-Island. v. 217. Assistant in Rhode-Island. v. 247. 250.
- Smith, Thomas, minister of Falmouth. v. 210.
- Smith, Thomas, minister of Yarmouth. v. 60. Of Pembroke. iii. 191.
- Smith, William, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203. Counsellor of New-York. vii. 143. Chief-Justice of Quebec. vi. 50.
- Smith, William, minister of Weymouth. ix. 190.
- Smithfield, Free-stone in. ix. 280.
- Smith's isles. vii. 243.
- Smooch-hill. iii. 168.
- Smuggling, Plan to prevent in British American colonies. i. 82.

- Smutty-nose-island. vii. 242.  
 Smyth, John. ix. 11.  
 Snake-island. iii. 297.  
 Snake-pond. viii. 122.  
 Snelling, Jonathan. i. 18. 22.  
 Snipatuet-pond. iii. 2.  
 Snow, Elisha. iv. 23.  
 Snow, Nicholas. viii. 164. 168.  
 Snow-storm, Remarkable in New-England. ii. 12. v. 209. vii. 58. viii. 176. ix. 196.  
 Snow's brook. viii. 166.  
 Snow's hollow. viii. 115.  
 Societies in Boston. iii. 273.  
 Sogkonate, Indian name of Compton. ix. 199. See Saconet.  
 Soheage, sachem. iv. 267.  
 Soil of New-England described by the first settlers. i. 117. 118. 124. 127. 128. 249. viii. 221.  
 Sökkie Indians. x. 123.  
 Sokones, or Sokonesset, Indian town. i. 198. 231. viii. 262.  
 Soms, Dr. ix. 41.  
 Somers, Sir John. ix. 273.  
 Somersset-court-house, Action near. ii. 91.  
 Somersset man-of-war shipwrecked. ii. 164.  
 Songo-pond. iii. 239. River. iii. 239. ix. 142.  
 Sothuze Indians. x. 123.  
 Southack, Capt. vi. 121.  
 Southack, Cyprian. x. 181.  
 Southampton county in Virginia. iii. 91.  
 Southborough incorporated. iv. 47. Account of. x. 82.  
 South-church, Old, in Boston, formed. iii. 258. Censured by the government. x. 34.  
 Southcote, Capt. ix. 150.  
 Southerland, Lady. ix. 250.  
 Southern Indians, Situation and numbers of, in 1768. x. 119.  
 South-fields, in Salem. vi. 217.  
 South-pond, in Brookfield. i. 272.  
 South-river, in Salem. vi. 214. 215.  
 Southworth, Constant. v. 194.  
 Southworth, Thomas. iv. 136.  
 Sowama, Indian town. viii. 235. 263.  
 Spanish-river in Cape Breton. iii. 99.  
 Spanish trade with British-American colonies. i. 80.  
 Sparhawk, John, minister in Salem. vi. 273. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Spark, Alexander. v. 292.  
 Spaulding, Joshua. vi. 275.  
 Spear, Samuel. viii. 202.  
 Spectacle-island. iii. 297.  
 Speeches, Indian manner of making. i. 191. iii. 215. 228. 235. vii. 194. 197. 200. viii. 263.  
 Speen, James, Indian. vi. 206.  
 Speen, John, Indian. i. 184. ix. 198.  
 Spencer, Elihu. iv. 56.  
 Spencer, Gen. ii. 126.  
 Spencer, Joseph. vii. 238.  
 Spencer, Nicholas. v. 160.  
 Spencer, Thomas. vii. 10.  
 Spenoer, William. vii. 10.  
 Spicken-devil, Col. Scammel's action with the British at. ii. 213.  
 Spider in Demerary. vi. 1.  
 Split-rock-spring. vi. 214.  
 Spooner, John-Jones. v. 292.  
 Spooner, William. v. 291.  
 Spots, Daniel, Indian. x. 132.  
 Sprague, Edward. x. 52.  
 Spring-cove. vi. 216.  
 Springer, James. vi. 77.  
 Springfield in New-Jersey, burnt. ii. 188.  
 Spring-hill, in Sandwich. i. 232. viii. 121.  
 Spring-hills, in Salem. vi. 214.  
 Spring-pond. vi. 214.  
 Sprout, James. x. 95.  
 Squabette in Raynham. iii. 172.  
 Squakeag, Indian name of Northfield. ii. 30.  
 Squakeays, Indians. i. 160.  
 Squam in Nantucket. iii. 154.  
 Squamaug, Indian. ix. 160.  
 Squam-harbour. vii. 252.  
 Squamscot-river. iv. 87. 89.  
 Squanto, Indian. viii. 228. 231. See Tisquantum.  
 Squantum in Dorchester. ix. 164.  
 Squash, or vine-apple. iii. 222. ix. 99. 100.  
 Squatesit, Indian town. i. 207.  
 Squawbay-neck. i. 257.  
 Squeb, Capt. ix. 148.  
 Staats, —, of Albany. vii. 98.  
 Stabroek described. vi. 6.  
 Stacey, Joseph. iv. 130.  
 Stage-harbour, Chatham. viii. 147.  
 Stage-harbour, Eastham. viii. 115. 154.  
 Stage-point. vi. 216.  
 Stakes, Capt. ii. 214.  
 Stamp-act proposed in Parliament. ix. 269. Passed. ii. 41. iii. 244. Opposed by mobs in Boston. i. 3. ii. 43. Repealed. ii. 43.  
 Standish, Miles, travels to Pamet-river. viii. 207. Chosen Captain at Plymouth. viii. 225. Meets Massasoit. viii. 229. 231. Divides the militia into four companies. viii. 241. Trades with the Indians at Massachusetts-bay. viii. 243. Goes to Nauset. viii. 251. To Mattachiest. viii. 254. To Manomet. viii. 255. Goes to Massachusetts with eight men. viii. 266. Kills Indiana, who had conspired against the English. viii. 162. 269. Returns to Plymouth. viii. 272. Agent from Plymouth. iii. 36. 38. One of the first settlers of Duxborough. ii. 3. 5. His death and character. ii. 4. See also viii. 120. 222. 264. 276.

- Stanhope, Michael. viii. 60.  
 Stanwix-fort besieged by Sir John Johnson. ii. 108. Attacked by Col. St. Leger. iii. 112.  
 Staple commodities of New-England, 1643. i. 247. 249.  
 Staples, John. v. 273.  
 Star-island. vii. 242. 244. 246.  
 Stark, John, Brigadier Gen. ii. 125. Account of. ii. 28. Defeats Col. Baum. ii. 29. 110. vi. 170.  
 Staten-Island, Gen. Sullivan's expedition to. ii. 112. Lord Stirling's. ii. 182.  
 Staunton, Robert. vi. 274.  
 Stebbins, Abner. ix. 133.  
 Stebbins, Edward. vii. 10.  
 Steele, George, Henry, and John. vii. 10.  
 Steep-hill. iii. 168.  
 Stephen, Indian. x. 131.  
 Stephens, Gen. action with the British near Brunswick. ii. 102. In the battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119.  
 Stephens, John. x. 96.  
 Stephens, Joseph. x. 170.  
 Stephens, Thomas. x. 96.  
 Stephens river. i. 251. 254.  
 Sterling, Lieut. Col. ii. 162.  
 Steuben, Baron, appointed major-general. ii. 130. Disciplines the American army. vi. 175. See also ii. 210. 213.  
 Stevens, Gen. in the battle of Guilford-court-house. ii. 207. Wounded. ii. 208.  
 Stevens, Josiah. vii. 259.  
 Steward, Major. ii. 170.  
 Stewart, Capt. ix. 244.  
 Stewart's Bend. viii. 117.  
 Stewart's Knoll. viii. 117. 145.  
 Stileman Elias. x. 43.  
 Stiles, Ezra, preaches at Portsmouth. x. 52. President of Yale College. viii. 278. x. 52. F. H. S. v. 292. Author. vi. 75.  
 Stillman, Samuel. iii. 259.  
 Stillwater, Battle of. ii. 121.  
 Stillwell, Jasper. x. 96.  
 Stinson's Point. i. 253.  
 Stirling, Henry, Earl of. vi. 187.  
 Stirling, Gen. Lord, taken prisoner at Long-island. ii. 74. Exchanged. ii. 79. Retreats from Princeton. ii. 84. Action with the British at Westfield. ii. 105. In the battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. In the battle of German-town. ii. 119. Expedition to Staten-Island. ii. 182.  
 Stirling, William-Alexander, Earl of, receives a grant of Nova-Scotia. iii. 95. vi. 131. 186. Grants Nantucket to Thomas Mayhew. iii. 156.  
 Stockbridge, Indian name of. vii. 98.  
 Indian school at. iv. 51. 54. x. 142. 153. State of the school. x. 148. Knowledge acquired in. x. 150.  
 Stockbridge Indians. iv. 51. Removed to Oneida. iv. 55. Account of. iv. 67. 69. Number who met Sir William Johnson in 1764. x. 122. Migrations and number of. i. 195. ix. 91. Number in 1794. v. 23.  
 Stockman, William, Indian. viii. 173. x. 133.  
 Stoddard, Solomon, minister of Northampton. ix. 276. Character. x. 157. 168.  
 Stone, —, builder of bridges. iii. 245.  
 Stone, James. iii. 19.  
 Stone, John. x. 96.  
 Stone, Nathan, minister of Dennis. viii. 140.  
 Stone, Nathan, minister of Southborough. x. 82.  
 Stone, Nathaniel, minister of Harwich. x. 78. v. 60. Eminent minister. x. 170.  
 Stone, Samuel, one of the first settlers of Cambridge. vii. 10.  
 Stone, Samuel, minister in Cambridge. vii. 12. Memoir of. vii. 41.  
 Stone, Solomon. ix. 144.  
 Stone, William. x. 96.  
 Stone-island. viii. 154.  
 Stones of New-England. i. 113. 118. iii. 240. iv. 18. 23. 90. viii. 221. ix. 142. 162. 260.  
 Stono, British lines at, attacked by the Americans. ii. 168.  
 Stony-Point-fort stormed by Gen. Wayne. ii. 170.  
 Storm, Remarkable, in New-England, 1723. ii. 11. Another, 1717. ii. 12. See snow-storm.  
 Stormont, Lord, British ambassador to France, remonstrates against the French merchants supplying the Americans. ii. 89. His answer to American commissioners. ii. 98. Obtains the confinement of Capt. Cunningham at Dunkirk. ii. 113. Leaves the court of Versailles. ii. 134.  
 Story, Isaac. viii. 76.  
 Stoughton, Capt. v. 170.  
 Stoughton, Israel. ix. 180.  
 Stoughton, Thomas, one of the settlers of Dorchester. ix. 150. 164. Erects the first mill in Massachusetts. ix. 164.  
 Stoughton, William. ix. 161. 162. vi. 106. A preacher. ix. 175. vii. 30. Agent from Massachusetts. v. 221. King's commissioner. v. 232. King's councillor. v. 245. Chief judge during the trials for witchcraft. v. 74. 77. Lieut. Gov. iii. 194. Erects Stoughton-hall. vii. 31. Me-

- moirs of. ix. 180. His epitaph. ii. 10.
- Stoughton, Indian name of. i. 99. 171. 184. iii. 185. Separated from Dorchester. i. 100. Incorporated. ix. 162. A few Indians remaining in. i. 195.
- Stout's creek. iii. 197. viii. 111.
- Stow, Account of. x. 83.
- Stratfield Indians. x. 112.
- Stratford Indians, Account of. x. 111.
- Stratford, Free-stone in. ix. 260. River. vii. 233.
- Strawberries abundant in New-England. i. 119. iii. 221. viii. 221.
- Strawberry-bank. x. 46.
- Strong, Caleb. x. 192.
- Strong, Job, minister in Portsmouth. x. 55. 70. His family. x. 70.
- Strong, Nehemiah. v. 169.
- Strong-island. viii. 143. 145.
- Strong-water-brook. vi. 212. 215.
- Stuart, Col. of the Guards, killed. ii. 209.
- Stuart, Col. action with Gen. Greene, at Eutaw-Springs. ii. 218.
- Sturgeon. iii. 224.
- Sturgis, John. v. 59.
- Sturgis, Samuel. v. 59.
- Stuyvesant, Gov. vi. 209.
- Succonet, Indians. viii. 262.
- Succonuset, Indian town. i. 198.
- Sudbury, Account of. x. 86.
- Sues, Indians. x. 123.
- Suet-creek. viii. 131.
- Suet, village in Dennis. i. 232. viii. 134.
- Suffolk, Lord. ii. 160.
- Suffolk in Virginia burnt. ii. 165.
- Suffolk-county in Massachusetts. iii. 241.
- Sugar-act reprobated in the British-American colonies. i. 83.
- Suguenth, sachem. v. 240.
- Sukiaugk Indians. x. 105.
- Sullivan, James. ix. 228. Attorney-General of Massachusetts. v. 51. viii. 103. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Sullivan, John, Gen. joins continental army at Sorel. ii. 65. Taken prisoner at Long-Island. ii. 74. Charged with a message to Congress from Lord Howe. ii. 75. Exchanged. ii. 79. In the battle of Trenton. ii. 88. His expedition to Staten-Island. ii. 112. In the battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. Commands at Providence. ii. 138. Commander in the expedition against Rhode-Island. ii. 148. vi. 173. His successful attempt against the Indians. ii. 175.
- Sullivan, John-Langdon. x. 192.
- Sullivan, William. x. 191.
- Sullivan's-Island, British repulsed in attack upon. ii. 66.
- Sulphur-islands. iv. 298.
- Sumner, Charles-P. viii. 92.
- Sumner, Gen. ii. 218.
- Sumner, George. ix. 194.
- Sumner, Increase. viii. 95.
- Sumner, Roger. ix. 192.
- Sumner, William. ix. 161.
- Sumpter, Col. defeats British at Hanging-rock. ii. 189. Defeated by them. ii. 191. Gen. defeats Tarleton's legion at Black-forks. ii. 200. Takes Orangeburg. ii. 212.
- Sumptuary laws passed in Massachusetts. vi. 258.
- Sunbury taken possession of by Gen. Prevost. ii. 155.
- Sunckquasson, sachem. iii. 6.
- Sunday schools established in Philadelphia. iii. 267.
- Sunken-island. iii. 297.
- Sunseto, sachem. ix. 88.
- Superior-lake, Tribes of Indians near. iii. 24. 25.
- Surrinam, Description of. i. 61.
- Surry-county in Virginia. iii. 91.
- Susquehanna-river. iv. 62.
- Susquehanna Indians. vii. 153.
- Sussex-county in Virginia. iii. 91.
- Sutherland, Major. ii. 171.
- Swanscot, Indian name of Exeter. iv. 87.
- Swan, James. ix. 166. Writes against the slave trade. iv. 201.
- Swan, James-Keadie. ix. 191.
- Swan-pond-creek. viii. 133.
- Swan's pond. v. 55.
- Swansey, Indian name of. vi. 87. viii. 258. Part of annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211. The Baptist church in, the first in Massachusetts. iii. 151.
- Sweetser, —, minister in Boston. iii. 259.
- Swett, Joseph. viii. 56.
- Swift, Job. viii. 51.
- Swift, John. x. 89.
- Swift, Seth. viii. 49.
- Swift, Thomas. ix. 194.
- Sydenham, Thomas. iii. 291.
- Sydney, Government of. iii. 96. 99.
- Symonds, Thomas. ii. 223.
- Symons, John. iii. 150.
- Synod of New-England Congregational churches, described. ix. 32.
- Synods held in Massachusetts, in 1637. vi. 252. vii. 16. ix. 14. 23. 32. In 1646—1648, which composed the Cambridge platform. iv. 135. vi. 257. vii. 25. ix. 14. 16. 49. 172. In 1662. vi. 260. vii. 49. In 1689. ix. 172. In 1679. vi. 263. vii. 25.

## T.

- Tascame, or Takame, Indian town. i. 204.
- Table land in Eastham. iii. 117. 197. viii. 115.

- Tabogimkik in Nova-Scotia. x. 116.  
 Tachanuntie, Onondago chief. vii. 179. 187.  
 Tackquannash, Joshua, Indian. x. 132.  
 Tailer, Gillam. ix. 187.  
 Tailer, William, Lieut. Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 194. viii. 75. Churchwarden. vii. 217.  
 Takame, Indian town. i. 204.  
 Takawombpait, Daniel, Indian. x. 134.  
 Talbot, Silas. ii. 153.  
 Talcott, John. vii. 10.  
 Talcott, John, Capt. vi. 209.  
 Talhanio, Indian town. i. 204.  
 Tamaahmaah, chief of Woahoo. ix. 243.  
 Tarcal-hill. iii. 168.  
 Tarleton, Col. defeats Col. Banford at Lynch's creek. ii. 186. Defeated by Gen. Sumpter at Black-forks. ii. 200. Repulsed at Ninety-Six. ii. 201. Defeated by Gen. Morgan at Cowpens. ii. 203. Skirmish with Col. Lee. ii. 207. Wounded in the battle of Guilford court-house. ii. 209. Action with the Duke de Lausune. ix. 105.  
 Tarro-root. ix. 245.  
 Tartars, Indians of America supposed to be the descendants of. i. 145.  
 Tashmiut in Truro. i. 257.  
 Tasker, Col. vii. 76. 203.  
 Tatnuck-brook. i. 114.  
 Tatnuck-hill. i. 113.  
 Tatobam, sachem. ix. 82.  
 Taunton-river. iii. 167. viii. 233.  
 Taushents, or Taushens, Indian name of youngest child. viii. 97.  
 Tawas, or River Indians. x. 123.  
 Tawawog, Indian name of New-London. x. 101.  
 Taylor, Barnabas. v. 59.  
 Taylor, John, of Cambridge. i. 164. vii. 29.  
 Taylor, John, minister of Milton. x. 67. Character. x. 158.  
 Tea, Duty imposed on, by Parliament. ii. 43. Use of, laid aside in Boston. ii. 44. Destroyed in Boston. ii. 45. iii. 244.  
 Tea-root. ix. 245.  
 Temple, Sir Thomas. vii. 229.  
 Ten-Broek, Gen. ii. 125.  
 Tennessee, or Tenisa river. x. 120.  
 Tenney, Samuel. v. 292.  
 Tenthredo Cerasi. v. 287.  
 Termites in Demerary. vi. 4.  
 Ternay, Admiral de, arrives at Newport. ii. 188. Death. ii. 201.  
 Tewauntaurogo, or Ticonderoga. x. 143.  
 Tewksbury, Indian name of. i. 186.  
 Thacher, Anthony. viii. 278.  
 Thacher, Daniel. ix. 126.  
 Thacher, David. v. 59.  
 Thacher, George. v. 59.  
 Thacher, James. viii. 137.  
 Thacher, Oxenbridge, of Boston. viii. 279. 284. Character. viii. 277. Author. iii. 301. vi. 70.  
 Thacher, Oxenbridge, of Milton. viii. 277. 284.  
 Thacher, Peter, minister in Weymouth. ix. 195. x. 26. In Boston. iii. 260. Author. iii. 300. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Thacher, Peter, minister in Malden and Boston. iii. 260. F. H. S. v. 291. viii. 102. Memoirs of. viii. 277.  
 Thacher, Peter, minister in Middleborough. iii. 149.  
 Thacher, Peter, minister of Milton. viii. 277. 284. ix. 205. Ordained. ix. 195. Death. ix. 176. 197. Eminent man. x. 169.  
 Thacher, Peter, minister of Sarum. viii. 278.  
 Thacher, Thomas, minister in Boston. iii. 258. A popular preacher. iv. 217. viii. 278.  
 Thacher, Thomas, minister in Dedham. viii. 277. 284.  
 Thacher, Thomas-Cushing. viii. 284.  
 Thaxter, —, surveyor. ix. 160.  
 Thayer, Ebenezer. ix. 196.  
 Thayer, John. iii. 264.  
 Thayer, Major. ii. 129.  
 Theatre in Boston. iii. 255.  
 Thistle-hill. vi. 214.  
 Thomas and Tinges, printers. vi. 76.  
 Thomas, Col. ii. 204.  
 Thomas, Gov. vii. 180.  
 Thomas, Isaiah, printer. i. 114. vi. 74.  
 Thomas, John, Gen. ii. 65. Death. ii. 66.  
 Thomas, John, Indian. v. 206.  
 Thomas, Josiah, Indian. x. 132.  
 Thomas, Philip. vii. 171.  
 Thomaston, Description of. iv. 20.  
 Thomlinson, —, of Portsmouth. x. 57.  
 Thompson, Col. taken prisoner at Sorel. ii. 65.  
 Thompson, Col. repulses the British at Sullivan's Island. ii. 66.  
 Thompson, —, surveyor. ix. 160.  
 Thompson, Thomas. x. 61.  
 Thomson, Samuel. iv. 29.  
 Thomson, Charles, translates the Septuagint. iv. 157. F. H. S. v. 292.  
 Thomson, David, begins a plantation at Pascoquoack. viii. 276. First possessor of Thomson's Island. iii. 299.  
 Thomson, —, minister of Braintree. x. 26. Preaches in Virginia. ix. 46.  
 Thomson's Island. iii. 297. 299. ix. 160. 164.  
 Thornton, Thomas. v. 59.  
 Three-rivers, Battle of. ii. 65.  
 Throat-distemper in New-England in 1735 and 1736. iv. 214. x. 50. In 1749. v. 275.  
 Thrognorton's-cove. vi. 217.  
 Throop, Capt. ii. 102.



- Ticonderoga surprised by Col. Allen. ii. 49. vi. 160. American army retreats to. ii. 70. vi. 163. Evacuated by the Americans. ii. 106. vi. 169.
- Tide, Remarkable high, in New-England, 1723. ii. 11.
- Tides rise very high in the bay of Fundy. iii. 97.
- Tigres, Indians. vi. 14.
- Tilestone, Thomas. ix. 166.
- Tilley, —, one of the settlers of Dorchester. ix. 150.
- Tilley, Edward. viii. 207. 217.
- Tillotson, Archbishop. ix. 249.
- Tilly, French naval captain. ii. 206.
- Timber-hills. vi. 214.
- Tinian in Dorchester. ix. 163.
- Tinker's-island. vi. 222.
- Tioga-river. ix. 123.
- Tisbury, Indian name of. i. 204. Indians in 1698. x. 131. In 1792. i. 206.
- Tispacan, sachem. iii. 1.
- Tisquantum, Indian of Patuxet, comes to Plymouth. viii. 228. Accompanies Winslow and Hopkins to Mount-Hope. iii. 148. viii. 232. Accompanies the English to Nauset. viii. 237. One of the Indians kidnapped by Hunt. viii. 238. Interpreter of the English. viii. 240. Charged with treachery by Hobbamock. viii. 241. His character. viii. 243. 245. His death demanded by Massasoit. viii. 244. Accompanies Gov. Bradford to Monamoyick. viii. 249. Death. viii. 250.
- Tithes, The payment of, established among the praying Indians of Massachusetts. i. 178.
- Titicut, Indian town. i. 198. iii. 150.
- Titicut-swamp. iii. 168.
- Tiverton annexed to Rhode-Island. i. 211.
- Tobacco injures the soil on which it grows. iii. 89. Much used by the Indians. iii. 208. vii. 182. viii. 228. 230. ix. 213. Law made against the use of, in Massachusetts. viii. 35.
- Tocconneck-falls. i. 253.
- Todd, Jonathan. x. 94.
- Tohkukquonno, Indian. x. 129.
- Toikiming, or Takama, Indian town. i. 204.
- Tokamaham, Indian. viii. 237. 240.
- Tokkhwompait, Daniel, Indian. x. 134.
- Toleration in religion taught by Roger Williams. vi. 246. ix. 24. 26. 43. x. 21.
- Tomahawk, Indian. i. 152. vii. 183. ix. 102.
- Tom's-neck. viii. 147.
- Tompson, William. ix. 191.
- Toneset-neck. viii. 187. 189.
- Tonnoraunto, Indian town. i. 286.
- Tonquiere, Marquis of. vi. 53.
- Tooth-ake common among the Indians of New-England. iii. 214.
- Toowehtoowees, or Twrightwees, Indians. x. 147.
- Topliff, Deacon. ix. 162.
- Topliff, Samuel. ix. 191.
- Topsfield incorporated. vi. 233.
- Topsham, Description of. iii. 141.
- Torporifick eel. i. 63.
- Torrey, Haviland. iv. 131.
- Torrey, John. iv. 132.
- Torrey, Samuel, minister of Weymouth. iv. 123. ix. 194. Ordained. ix. 192. Death. ix. 195. Character. x. 187.
- Tortoise known to live above forty-four years. iii. 3.
- Tory and Whig, Names of, applied to parties in America. ii. 63.
- Town-brook in Plymouth. viii. 221.
- Townsend, David. iii. 281.
- Townshend, Thomas. ii. 91.
- Townsmen: see Select-men.
- Towsowet, sachem. viii. 161.
- Traske, Capt. vi. 253.
- Treadwell, Jacob. x. 62.
- Treat, Capt. ii. 129.
- Treat, Richard. ix. 134.
- Treat, Robert. ii. 30. vi. 90. viii. 176.
- Treat, Samuel, preaches to the Indians. i. 201. Memoirs of. viii. 170.
- Treby, Sir George. ix. 273. 274.
- Trees in Cape-Breton. iii. 99. In Connecticut. iv. 271. In Demerary. vi. 12. In Labrador. i. 235. 236. In Massachusetts and Maine. i. 108. 113. 119. 238. 273. ii. 5. iii. 13. 118. 138. 146. 167. 172. 198. 239. 240. iv. 145. 148. vii. 2. 168. viii. 120. 127. 129. 133. 157. 196. 204. 206. 220. 221. 235. ix. 128. 140. In New-Brunswick. iii. 100. In New-England. i. 128. iii. 220. In New-Hampshire. iv. 89. In New-York. ix. 113. 114. 121. In Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. In Rhode-Island. ix. 200. In Virginia. iii. 87. 89. v. 126.
- Trent, Capt. iii. 22. vi. 139.
- Trenton, Battle of. ii. 88. vi. 166.
- Trescot, John. ix. 169.
- Trimountain, name of Boston. i. 256.
- Triplet, Major. ii. 204.
- Trott, Lemuel. ix. 187.
- Troup, Robert. v. 123.
- Troutbeck, John, minister in Boston. iii. 260. Preaches in Hopkinton. iv. 16.
- Trumbull, Benjamin, minister of North-Haven. x. 90. Historian. ix. 79. F. H. S. v. 292.
- Trumbull, John, printer. vi. 76.
- Trumbull, Jonathan. vi. 154. vii. 238.
- Trumbull, Samuel. vi. 77.
- Truro, Description of. iii. 195. Indian places in. i. 196. 257. Number of Indians in. i. 230. viii. 173. See also viii. 111. 176. 208.

- Tryon, Gen. Gov. of New-York. ii. 72.  
His expedition to Danbury. ii. 95.  
To Connecticut. ii. 168. Burns Fair-  
field and Norwalk. ii. 169. iii. 103.  
x. 189.
- Tryon, William, Gov. of North-Carolina.  
x. 120.
- Tucke, John. vii. 255. x. 50.
- Tucker, Ephraim. ix. 194.
- Tucker, James. ix. 194.
- Tucker, John. x. 43.
- Tucker, Manasseh. ix. 194.
- Tucker, Robert. ix. 194.
- Tucker, St. George. v. 292.
- Tucker's-island. i. 206.
- Tudor, Samuel. v. 169.
- Tudor, William. viii. 89. F. H. S. v.  
291. viii. 102.
- Turnblen's-cove. viii. 148.
- Tunipis-pond. ix. 199.
- Tunxis, Indians. x. 104.
- Tupper, Elisha. iii. 189.
- Tupper, Thomas, preaches to the Indi-  
ans. i. 201. iii. 189. x. 133. Preaches  
at Sandwich. iii. 188.
- Turell, Ebenezer. x. 157.
- Turell, Samuel. v. 291.
- Turket-river. iii. 97.
- Turkey-brook. i. 114.
- Turkey-hill, in Derby. x. 112.
- Turkey-hills, parish in Windsor. v.  
169.
- Turkey-shore, in Ipswich. x. 33.
- Turner, Caleb. iii. 2. 150.
- Turner, Charles. ii. 8.
- Turtle: see Tortoise.
- Turtle-creek. iii. 23.
- Tuscarora Indians disposed to receive  
the gospel. x. 146. Consent to the  
erection of forts in their country. vii.  
152. Number who met Sir William  
Johnson in 1764. x. 121. Number  
employed by the British. x. 123.  
Number in 1794. v. 23.
- Tuttmomest-neck. viii. 169.
- Tuxishoag-pond. iv. 183.
- Twightwees, Expedition of the French  
against. v. 121. x. 147.
- Tyng, Dudley-Atkins. vii. 259. F. H.  
S. v. 291.
- Tyng, Edward, of Dunstable. x. 180.  
King's counsellor. v. 245.
- Tyng, Edward, naval captain, Memoirs  
of. x. 180. See also i. 15. 27.
- Tyng, Edward, British officer. x. 181.
- Tyng, John. x. 180.
- Tyng, Jonathan. v. 245.
- Tyng, William, of Braintree. x. 180.
- Tyng, William, of Gorham, Memoirs of.  
x. 183.
- U.
- Uchipweys, Indians. x. 123.
- Uncas, sachem of the Moheagans, Me-  
moir of. ix. 77. Limits of his juris-  
diction. iv. 183. Joins the English  
in the war against the Pequots. iv.  
278. x. 100. Protests against the gos-  
pel's being preached to the Indians.  
i. 191. viii. 18. x. 15. Charged with  
assisting Philip against the English.  
vi. 87. His character. i. 208.
- Uncas, Ben, sachem. x. 104.
- Uncas, Isaiah. ix. 88.
- Uncataquisset, or Unquety. ix. 161.
- Underhill, Capt. iv. 278.
- United States, Independence of, declared  
by Congress. ii. 68. iii. 244. vi. 164.  
Plan of confederation formed. ii. 132.  
Treaty between, and France, signed.  
ii. 131. State of the National debt,  
1779. ii. 173. At the conclusion of  
the war. ii. 240. Federal constitution  
formed. ii. 132. iii. 245.
- Universalists, Children are received by  
dedication and prayer among. x. 62.  
A general convention of, held at Phil-  
adelphia. x. 72. Church in Boston.  
iii. 264. In Portsmouth. x. 62.
- Unquety, Indian name of Milton. i. 100.  
ix. 161.
- Unset, in Wareham. i. 232.
- Upham, Caleb. iii. 201.
- Usher, John. v. 245.
- Utrecht, Peace of. vi. 131.
- Uwonnass, on the north-west coast. ix.  
243.
- Uxbridge, Indian name of. i. 194.
- V.
- Vaccination introduced into America.  
vii. 38.
- Vallancey, Gen. x. 19.
- Valley-Forge, winter-quarters of the  
American army. ii. 130.
- Valparaiso in Chili. iv. 250.
- Vancouver, Capt. ix. 243. 245.
- Vander-Capellan, Baron. vi. 183.
- Vane, Sir Henry, Governour of Massa-  
chusetts. iii. 194. vi. 252. Antino-  
mian. ix. 27. 28. Character. v. 171.  
viii. 7. Assists in obtaining Rhode-  
Island of the Indians. x. 20.
- Van-Renselaer, Gen. ii. 197.
- Van-Renselaer, Stephen, Lieut. Gov. of  
New-York. viii. 61. F. H. S. v. 292.
- Van-Schaack, Henry. viii. 61.
- Van-Skaick, Col. ii. 164.
- Van-Vert, Isaac. ii. 194.
- Varnum, Gen. James-M. ii. 148.
- Vassall, William. viii. 40.
- Vaudreuil, Marquis de. vi. 63. vii. 105.
- Vaughan, —, counsellor in New-  
Hampshire. vi. 93.
- Vaughan, Gen. commands British troops  
in New-Jersey. ii. 86. 90. Expedi-  
tion up Hudson's river. ii. 118. Burns  
Kingston. ii. 122.
- Vaughan, John. x. 192.
- Veazie, Samuel. ii. 8.

- Vegetables, Method of collecting and preserving. iv. 12.
- Vergennes, Count de. ii. 134. 228.
- Vermont, No Indians in. i. 211.
- Vert, Bay of. iii. 98. 99.
- Vetch, Col. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. vi. 120. vii. 217.
- Vigilant, French man of war, taken 1745. i. 39. 43. x. 182.
- Villages, Indians of North-America lived in. ix. 213.
- Ville-de-Paris, French man of war, taken. ii. 225.
- Villiers, M. de, drives the English from the Ohio. iii. 22.
- Vincent, Saint, taken by Count D'Estaing. ii. 178.
- Vines, Richard. i. 102. iii. 138.
- Viomenil, Baron de. ii. 222. ix. 105.
- Virginia, Account of. v. 124. Described. ii. 69. Soil and water. ix. 104. Diseases. iii. 90. Appearance of the bowels of the earth in the lower part of. iii. 87. Value of its trade in 1775. ii. 61. Settles its form of government. ii. 69. Makes the first motion for independence. ii. 70.
- Vose, Richard. ix. 154.
- W.
- Waban, Indian of Nonantum. i. 168. 169. v. 256. vii. 26. viii. 19. His character. i. 184. v. 263. ix. 197. x. 11.
- Wabbequasset country. ix. 80.
- Wabquisset, or Wabbequasset, Indian town. i. 190. ix. 86.
- Wadsworth, Benjamin, minister in Boston. iii. 257. vi. (6.) Ordained. ix. 195. President of Harvard College. vii. 27. Character. x. 169.
- Wadsworth, Capt. v. 271.
- Wadsworth, John, magistrate in Connecticut. v. 235.
- Wadsworth, John, tutor. viii. 89. His epitaph. viii. 97.
- Wadsworth, William. vii. 10.
- Waeuntug, Indian town. i. 194.
- Waitahu-island. iv. 240.
- Wakoquet, or Waquoit, Indian town. i. 197. 230.
- Walden-pond. i. 238.
- Waldern, —, Waldron, counsellor in New-Hampshire. vi. 93.
- Waldo, Brigadier. i. 20. 52.
- Waldo, Jonathan. x. 181.
- Waldron, Major. x. 54.
- Waldron, William. iii. 261.
- Wales, John. iii. 168. 174.
- Wales, Samuel. iii. 168. 174.
- Walford, Thomas. x. 64.
- Wallace, Capt. cannonades Bristol. ii. 56. His action with continental ships. ii. 62.
- Wallace, Sir James. ii. 118. Taken prisoner. ii. 180.
- Wallcut, Thomas. v. 291.
- Walley, Thomas. iii. 16. iv. 123.
- Walker, George. x. 57.
- Walker, James. vi. 197.
- Walnuts, Indians of New-England extract an oil from. iii. 220.
- Walter, Nehemiah, minister of Roxbury. viii. 22. x. 155. Ordained. ix. 195. Character. x. 169.
- Walter, Thomas. x. 155.
- Walter, William. iii. 261. 263.
- Walton, Joseph. x. 61.
- Wameset, Indian town. i. 186. Suffers by the Maquas. i. 188.
- Wammasquid, Indian town. i. 207.
- Wampas, Indian. v. 268. x. 13.
- Wamponoags lived in the colony of Plymouth. viii. 159. 226. Once possessed Rhode-Island. x. 20. Treaty made between, and the English of Plymouth. viii. 230. Submit to the English government. viii. 181. At war with the New-England colonies. v. 270. vi. 84. See Pawkunnawkuts and Philip.
- Wampum presented to the Indians, when a speech is made to them. vii. 185. See Wompompeague.
- Wamsotta, sachem. v. 217.
- Wannalancet, sachem of Pawtucket. i. 187. Receives the gospel. iii. 179.
- Wanton, Gideon. vi. 145.
- Wanton, John. vi. 145.
- Wanton, Joseph. ii. 45. vi. 145.
- Wanton, William. vi. 145.
- Wanuho, sachem. i. 208. ix. 86.
- Waquoit-bay. viii. 128.
- Warburton, Bishop. ix. 45.
- Ward, —, minister of Haverhill. x. 26.
- Ward, —, minister of Ipswich. x. 26.
- Ward, English lawyer. ix. 273.
- Ward, Edmund. x. 95.
- Ward, Ephraim. i. 266.
- Ward, Richard. vi. 145.
- Ward, Samuel. vi. 145.
- Ward's-creek. iii. 85.
- Ware, Capt. x. 139.
- Wareham, John, sails from England. iv. 266. Arrives in New-England. i. 98. ix. 148. Minister of Dorchester. ix. 18. 170. His opinion of a visible church. iii. 74. Settles Windsor. v. 167. ix. 153. 172. Death. ix. 154.
- Wareham, Indian name of. i. 198. Rivers in. i. 231.
- Warlike stores, amount of, in Massachusetts, April, 1775. i. 232.
- Warner, Andrew. vii. 10.
- Warner, Seth, Col. takes Crown-Point. ii. 49. Reinforces Gen. Stark at Bennington. ii. 110. 116. Gen. ii. 125.
- Warren, Peter, Commodore, commands the naval forces on the expedition against Cape-Breton. i. 19. x. 182. Arrives on the coast of Massachusetts.

- i. 18. On the coast of Nova-Scotia. i. 19. Off Canso-harbour. i. 21. 25. Consultations of the officers of his fleet. i. 32. 41. His plan for reducing Louisbourg. i. 32. 33. Laments that his plans do not meet the approbation of Gen. Pepperell. i. 36. Complains of Gen. Pepperell's jealousy. i. 46. Commended by Gen. Pepperell. i. 47. Censured by Dr. Chauncy. i. 50. His character. i. 109.
- Warren, James. i. 84.
- Warren, Joseph, Gen. patriot of 1775. v. 196. Author. iii. 301. vi. 70. Slain. ii. 49. vi. 159.
- Warren in Rhode-Island, Houses burnt at. ii. 138.
- Warwick in Rhode-Island, settled. v. 217.
- Warwick Indians. i. 210.
- Washington, Col. makes prisoners of Col. Rugeley's party. ii. 201. Defeats royalists near Pacolet-creek. ii. 201. In the battle of Cowpens. ii. 204. In the battle of Guilford court-house. ii. 207. In the battle of Waxhaws. ii. 210. In the battle of Eutaw-Springs. ii. 119.
- Washington, George, Major, sent to the Ohio to complain of the encroachments of the French. vii. 71. Col. Skirmish with the French. vii. 73. Defeated by them. vii. 74. Marches into the western country of Virginia. vi. 139. General of the American army, arrives at Cambridge. ii. 49. vi. 160. vii. 36. iii. 244. Marches from Cambridge to New-York. vi. 162. Retuses to receive the letters of Lord and Gen. Howe. ii. 70. 71. Retreats from Long-Island to New-York. ii. 74. Abandons New-York. ii. 76. Detaches a body of troops to White-Plains. ii. 81. 82. Retreats through New-Jersey, and crosses the Delaware. ii. 84. 86. vi. 165. Recrosses the Delaware, and surprises the Hessians at Trenton. ii. 88. vi. 165. Attacks the British at Princeton. ii. 90. Charges the British with cruelty to the American prisoners. ii. 99. Encamps near Brunswick. ii. 102. vi. 167. Opposes the progress of Howe's army through New-Jersey in 1777. ii. 105. vi. 168. His manifesto in answer to Burgoyne's proclamation. ii. 107. Marches through Philadelphia, and encamps at Wilmington. ii. 113. Moves from Wilmington to Newport, and fights the battle of Brandywine. ii. 114. vi. 168. Fights the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. vi. 168. Orders a body of troops over the Delaware. ii. 129. Recommends half-pay for the officers of the army. ii. 132.
- Forwards to Congress the letter of the British Commissioners. ii. 140. Engages the enemy at Monmouth. ii. 141—145. vi. 172. Goes with his army to North-river. ii. 145. The winter-quarters of his troops in 1778. ii. 155. vi. 174. In 1779. ii. 181. Recommends half-pay to the officers for life. ii. 199. The winter-quarters of his army in 1780. ii. 201. Besieges York-town, and makes prisoners of Cornwallis's army. ii. 221—224. ix. 193. 107. Demands that Lippincut should be delivered up as a murderer. ii. 227. Releases Capt. Asgill. ii. 228. His speech to a convention of officers. ii. 236. Grants furloughs to the soldiers. ii. 241. Receives the thanks of Congress. ii. 242. Takes leave of the army. ii. 243. Resigns his commission to Congress. ii. 244. Chosen President of the United States. ii. 132. Inaugurated. iii. 245. Visits Boston in 1789. iii. 243. Death. viii. 93. 102. Washington-academy in Machias. iii. 245.
- Washington-county in Maine. iv. 153.
- Washington-fort taken. ii. 81. 83.
- Washington's-island. ii. 21.
- Wassapinewat, sachem. viii. 265.
- Waterbury, Gen. ii. 79.
- Waterford, Description and history of. ix. 137. Described. iii. 240.
- Waterhouse, Benjamin. vii. 38.
- Watertown settled. ix. 19. Church gathered. vii. 15. Remarkable mortality among the fish of a pond in. iii. 177.
- Watson, Bishop. x. 192.
- Watson, Ebenezer. vi. 76.
- Watson, Marston, Memoirs of. viii. 80. F. H. S. x. 191.
- Watson's hill. viii. 229.
- Watts, Isaac. v. 200. x. 177.
- Wauno, Joseph and John, Indians. x. 133.
- Wawanech Indians, Peace made with. vi. 118.
- Wawayontat, or Waywayantik, Indian town. i. 198. 231.
- Wawequay, sachem. ix. 85.
- Waxhaws, Battle of. ii. 209.
- Waymessick, or Wamesit. vi. 278.
- Wayne, Gen. ii. 104. In the battle of Brandywine. ii. 115. In the battle of Germantown. ii. 119. In the battle of Monmouth. ii. 242. Commended by Gen. Washington. ii. 144. Storms Stony-Point. ii. 170. vi. 175. Joins LaFayette in Virginia. ii. 213. Engagement with Cornwallis near James-river. ii. 214. Defeats the British near Savannah. ii. 230. Defeats the Cherokee Indians at Sharon. ii. 232. Defeats the Indians at Miami. x. 123.

- Weantick-river. i. 231.  
 Weapauge. x. 102. See Wecapaug and Wekapage.  
 Weapons of war, Indian. ix. 102.  
 Weare, Comptroller. i. 66.  
 Weare, —, of New-Hampshire, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.  
 Wear-mill-brook. viii. 132.  
 Webb, Benjamin, minister in Eastham. viii. 183. Character. viii. 184.  
 Webb, Gen. vii. 35. Arrives in America. vii. 149. His march towards Oswego delayed. vii. 158.  
 Webb, John, minister in Boston. iii. 260. Author. iii. 300.  
 Webb, Richard. vii. 10.  
 Webb's island. viii. 147.  
 Webhannet, Indian name of Wells. iii. 139.  
 Webster, Col. his successes in South-Carolina. ii. 185. In the battle of Guilford-court-house. ii. 207. Wounded. ii. 209.  
 Webster, Noah. v. 292. vi. 76.  
 Webster, Redford. v. 291.  
 Wecapaug-brook. v. 239.  
 Wedderburne, Solicitor-General. iii. 110.  
 Weechagaskas, Indians. i. 148.  
 Weeks, —, minister in Marblehead. viii. 78.  
 Weeks, Amiel. viii. 142.  
 Weeks, John. x. 131.  
 Weequakut, Indian town. i. 197. 230.  
 Weeset-neck. viii. 187.  
 Weesquobe, Indian town. i. 197. 231.  
 Weiser, Conrad. vii. 179.  
 Wekapage, boundary of the Narragansets. i. 147.  
 Weld, Thomas, minister in Roxbury. viii. 7. 29 ix. 21. Enemy to the Antinomians. ix. 33. One of the authors of the New-England Psalms. vii. 19. viii. 10. Sent agent to England. i. 168. viii. 7. x. 30.  
 Weld, Thomas, minister in Middleborough. iii. 149.  
 Welden, Robert. viii. 45.  
 Welderen, Count. ii. 160.  
 Welles, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.  
 Wellfleet, Description of. iii. 117. Creeks and islands. iv. 41. Hollows. viii. 114. Number of vessels. viii. 196. Harbour. iii. 117. viii. 217. Indian places. i. 196. See also viii. 165. 169. 173. 185.  
 Wells, Description of. iii. 138. Bay. iii. 7. 138. See also i. 103.  
 Welsh supposed to have migrated to America. iii. 23.  
 Welsh, Thomas. viii. 101.  
 Welstead, William, minister in Boston. iii. 261. Author. iii. 300. Eminent man. x. 170.  
 Wenaumut in Sandwich. i. 232.  
 Wenemovet, Indian. vi. 108.  
 Wendell, Jacob. iv. 58. vii. 34.  
 Wendon, Gen. ii. 115.  
 Wenham incorporated. vi. 233.  
 Wentworth, Benning. iii. 108. ix. 222.  
 Wentworth, Charles-Mary. x. 192.  
 Wentworth, John, Lieut. Gov. of New-Hampshire. vi. 108. 117.  
 Wentworth, John, Lieut. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 101. 102.  
 Wequaset in Chatham. viii. 151.  
 Wequash, sachem. iv. 281. His conversation with Roger Williams. iii. 207.  
 Weshakim Indians at war with the Maquas. i. 162. Gookin's letter to them. i. 193.  
 Wesko in Nantucket. iii. 158.  
 Wessagusset, Weston's colony at. viii. 37. 248. ix. 5. Plot of the Indians against. viii. 262. See Weston, Thomas.  
 Wessowessageeg-river. iv. 20.  
 West, Col. ii. 149.  
 West, Samuel, minister in Boston. iii. 262.  
 West, Samuel, minister in New-Bedford. iv. 235. v. 59.  
 West, Stephen, minister of Stockbridge. iv. 55. Vice-President of Williams-college. viii. 51.  
 Westborough incorporated. iv. 47. Account of. x. 84.  
 West-Boston-bridge. iii. 246. vii. 4.  
 Westerly in Rhode-Island. ix. 82.  
 Western incorporated. i. 266.  
 West-India-trade with British-American colonies. i. 80.  
 Westmoreland in New-York. v. 21.  
 Westmoreland on Wyoming. vii. 232.  
 West-mountain in Brimfield. ix. 131.  
 Weston, Isaiah. iv. 235.  
 Weston, Thomas, merchant of London. viii. 245. Sends to New-England a colony. viii. 247. Which plants Wessagusset. viii. 37. 248. ix. 5. Character of the people. viii. 264. The plantation broke up. viii. 271. Disturbs the Plymouth settlers. iii. 27.  
 West-point. ii. 192.  
 Westwood, William. vii. 10.  
 Wethersfield settled. iii. 5.  
 Wetmore, William. v. 291.  
 Wetucks works miracles among the Indians. iii. 206.  
 Wewenocks, Indians. ix. 210. 220. 226.  
 Wewewantet, Indian town. i. 198.  
 Wey, Henry. ix. 150. 151.  
 Weymouth, Lord. ii. 104.  
 Weymouth first planted by Weston's colony. viii. 248. Plantation broken up. viii. 271. Robert Gorges attempts a settlement. i. 125.

- Whakepee-pond. i. 231.  
 Whale-fishery begins at Nantucket. iii. 167. 161. State of in Massachusetts, 1763. viii. 202.  
 Whalley, Col. one of king Charles 1st's judges, escapes to New-England. ii. 36. Resides in Cambridge. vii. 50.  
 Whampinages. v. 217. See Wampnoaga.  
 Wharton, Lord, introduces Dr. Mather to king William. ix. 245. 246. Member of the Assembly of Divines. ix. 249.  
 Wharton, Richard. v. 231. King's counsellor. v. 246.  
 Wharton, William. v. 234. 237.  
 Whateley, —, prosecutes Dr. Franklin. iii. 112.  
 Wheatley, Phillis. iii. 301.  
 Wheeler, Joseph. x. 88.  
 Wheeler, Seth. ix. 143.  
 Wheeler's-pond, Engagement at. v. 272.  
 Wheelock, Eleazar. v. 171. ix. 88. President of Dartmouth college. ix. 89.  
 Wheelock, John. x. 192.  
 Wheelwright, Col. vi. 113.  
 Wheelwright, John. x. 42. Purchases Isles of Shoals. vii. 243. Antinomian. viii. 6. ix. 22. 27. Banished from Massachusetts. ix. 31. Settles Exeter. iv. 87. Removes to Wells. iii. 138. iv. 89. Released from banishment. ix. 48.  
 Whetstone-hills. ix. 80.  
 Whig and Tory, Names of, applied to parties in American colonies. ii. 63.  
 Whipple, Gen. ii. 126.  
 Whitaker, Nathaniel. ix. 89. Minister in Salem. vi. 275.  
 Whitcomb, Col. ii. 94.  
 White, Capt. ix. 106.  
 White, Ebenezer. ix. 185. 197.  
 White, John, of Cambridge. vii. 10.  
 White, John, minister in Gloucester. x. 170.  
 White, John, minister of Dorchester, England. ix. 2. 18. Member of the Assembly of Divines. ix. 46. Promotes the settlement of New-England. ix. 148. Dorchester named in honour of him. ix. 149.  
 White, Joseph. v. 67.  
 White, Peregrine, first child born in New-England. viii. 217.  
 White-hall-pond. iv. 17.  
 White-Island. vii. 243.  
 White-plains, Battle of. ii. 81. 82.  
 White-pond in Brewster. x. 76.  
 White-pond in Concord. i. 238.  
 Whitestown. v. 21. Described. i. 284.  
 Whitefield, George, comes to America. x. 162. Collects money for the sufferers by fire in Boston. iii. 271. Character. viii. 183. See also v. 171. viii. 280.  
 Whitfield, Henry, settles Guilford. iv. 182. ix. 96. Minister. x. 91. 92. Returns to England. x. 97. Character. iv. 186. See also ix. 85. x. 69.  
 Whitfield, John. ix. 164.  
 Whiting, Lieut. Col. vii. 107.  
 Whiting, Thurston. ix. 23.  
 Whitman, Levi. iii. 118. viii. 112.  
 Whitman, Samuel. vi. 240.  
 Whitman, Zechariah, minister of Hall. ix. 193. Character. ix. 197.  
 Whitney, Peter. x. 192.  
 Whittemore, Amos. vii. 3.  
 Whittingham, William, pastor of the first Congregational church. vii. 267. Account of, and his descendants. v. 206.  
 Whittlesey, Samuel. x. 169.  
 Whitwell, William. viii. 69.  
 Whortleberry. iii. 221.  
 Wianno, sachem. iii. 15.  
 Wibird, Anthony. x. 68.  
 Wibird, —, one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 176. 203.  
 Wibird, John. x. 68.  
 Wibird, Thomas. x. 53.  
 Wichagucumset. viii. 248. See Wessagusset.  
 Wickabaug-pond. i. 269. 269. 273.  
 Wigglesworth, Edward. x. 160.  
 Wigglesworth, Edward, jun. viii. 282.  
 Wight, Ebenezer. iii. 262.  
 Wigwams, Indiana. i. 149. iii. 211. 212. vii. 179. viii. 216.  
 Wildboar, —, of Compton. ix. 204.  
 Wilkes, John. ii. 136.  
 Wilkinson, Jemima. i. 285.  
 Willard, Joseph, tutor of Harvard-College. x. 188. President. vii. 27. viii. 284.  
 Willard, Joseph, minister in Portsmouth. x. 69.  
 Willard, Joseph, minister of Rutland. i. 264.  
 Willard, Samuel, minister of Groton. ix. 193. Minister in Boston. iii. 258. viii. 176. Vice-President of Harvard-College. vii. 27. x. 181. Condemns the witchcraft proceedings. v. 75. His kindness to Mr. and Mrs. English. vi. 266. 270. x. 66. Author. iii. 300. Character. x. 168. An eloquent preacher. viii. 182. An eminent man. x. 164.  
 Willard, Simon, Major, relieves Brookfield. i. 260. Cashiered. i. 261.  
 Willet, Col. skirmish with enemy. ii. 94. Sallies out of fort Stanwix. ii. 108. In the expedition against the Onondago Indians. ii. 164. Action with Major Ross. ii. 220.  
 William III. king. iii. 194. Conversation with Dr. Mather. ix. 146.  
 William-and-Mary-college founded. v. 159. 164.

- William, Castle, built. iii. 298. Delivered to Col. Dalrymple. ii. 45.
- Williams, —, one of the first settlers of Dorchester. ix. 150.
- Williams, —, minister of Hatfield. x. 167.
- Williams, British Major. ii. 122.
- Williams, Abraham. viii. 125.
- Williams, Col. one of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Williams, Col. in the battle of Guilford-court-house. ii. 207. In the battle of Eutaw-Springs. ii. 218.
- Williams, David. ii. 194.
- Williams, Dr. bishop of Lincoln. ix. 42.
- Williams, Dr. vice-chancellor of Cambridge. x. 31. 171.
- Williams, Elijah. viii. 51.
- Williams, Kishah, rector of Yale-college. x. 167.
- Williams, Ephraim, Col. viii. 47.
- Williams, Ephraim, jun. memoirs of. viii. 47. See also vii. 107. 113.
- Williams, Isaac. x. 67.
- Williams, Israel. viii. 49. ix. 221.
- Williams, James. iv. 122.
- Williams, John, minister of Deerfield. ix. 170. Death. ix. 197.
- Williams, John, of Deerfield. F. H. S. v. 291.
- Williams, John-Foster. viii. 197. 209.
- Williams, Jonathan. x. 192.
- Williams, Nehemiah. ix. 134.
- Williams, Roger, arrives in New-England. ix. 20. Preaches at Plymouth. iv. 110. vii. 277. x. 2. Banished from Massachusetts. i. 276. Finds the town of Providence. v. 216. Purchases lands of the Indians. v. 230. Renders essential services to the English in the Pequot war. i. 277. Sent agent to England. vi. 144. Obtains a charter for Providence Plantations. i. 278. President of the colony. vi. 144. Writes in favour of toleration. ix. 43. Bentley's memoirs of him and character. vi. 245. Strictures on his character. vii. (3.) Bentley's vindication of his character. viii. 2. Eliot's memoirs of him. ix. 23. x. 15. A great man. x. 1. See also iii. 204. 238. vi. 203.
- Williams, Solomon. x. 167.
- Williams, William. viii. 49.
- Williamsburgh in New-York. i. 285.
- Williamsburgh in Virginia described. ix. 104.
- Williams-college, Account of. viii. 47.
- Williamson, Gen. forces Col. Campbell to retreat to Savannah. ii. 183. Detaches a party of militia into the Indian country. ii. 184.
- Williamson, Hugh. v. 292.
- Williamson, —, at Plymouth, 1621. viii. 229.
- Williamstown in Massachusetts. viii. 48. 53.
- Willis, Zephaniah. x. 192.
- Willoughby, Sir Hugh. ix. 54.
- Wills, Major. ii. 213.
- Wilmot, Col. iii. 96. Gov. of Nova-Scotia. iii. 102.
- Wilson, John, minister in Boston. iii. 76. 242. 257. vi. (5.) viii. 44. ix. 12. 18. Opposes the Antinomians. ix. 28. Visits England. viii. 6. ix. 19. Visits Plymouth. x. 2. Goes to Nonantum. v. 259. x. 14. Author. iii. 300. Character. ix. 13. 28.
- Wilson, John, of Hopkinton. iv. 17.
- Wilson, John, minister of Medfield. i. 99. ix. 175.
- Windmill-point, in Boston. iii. 242.
- Windmill-point, in Salem. vi. 216.
- Winds, Indians of New-England reckon eight. iii. 218. South-west wind in New-England described. iii. 218. East wind prevails during the spring. iii. 290.
- Windsor in Connecticut. History of. v. 186. Settled. iii. 5. 153. ix. 152.
- Windsor in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. 98.
- Winegunganet, sachem. vi. 113. 114.
- Wing-pond. x. 76.
- Wingate, Joseph. ix. 234.
- Winkley, Francis. x. 69.
- Winnebagoes, Indians. ix. 92.
- Winnegance. ix. 210. Creek. i. 251. 254.
- Winniett, —, counsellor in Nova-Scotia. vi. 121.
- Winalow, Edward, parleys with Masasoit. viii. 229. Sent messenger to Masasoit. i. 148. viii. 232. Sent to Damarin's cove. viii. 246. Visits Masasoit in his sickness. viii. 257. Sent agent to England. vii. 277. viii. 276. Brings the first cattle to New-England. iii. 35. Gov. of Plymouth. iii. 194. His kindness to Roger Williams. i. 276. 277. x. 22. Prays and exhorts in publick. iv. 136. Answers the complaints of Thomas Morton, and committed to prison in London. iv. 120. Solicits Parliament to constitute a corporation for propagating the gospel among the Indians of New-England. i. 212.
- Winalow, John, Gen. His successes in Nova-Scotia. vii. 91. Commands the provincial forces in 1756. vii. 157. His operations. vi. 34. Estimates the expenses of Massachusetts for 1758. vi. 44.
- Winalow, Josias, Gov. of Plymouth. iii. 194. Gen. of the United Colonies in Philip's war. vi. 90. Commissioner of the United Colonies. v. 229.
- Winter-harbour. vi. 216.
- Winter-island. vi. 212. 219. 228.

- Winthrop, James. vii. 11. F. H. S. v. 291. viii. 102.
- Winthrop, John, Gov. of Massachusetts. iii. 76. 194. Arrives from England. i. 256. iii. 74. 241. vi. 155. ix. 149. One of the first settlers of Boston. iii. 242. Builds a house in Cambridge. vii. 8. Removes to Boston vii. 8. Exhorts in publick. vii. 6. ix. 19. x. 2. Opposes Roger Williams. vi. 247. ix. 24. Advises him to go to Narraganset-bay. i. 276. Visits Salem, and is treated with great respect. vi. 252. Opposes the Antinomians. viii. 7. ix. 28. 31. Apology for his credulity. ix. 29. Goes to Watertown to settle a controversy. ix. 21. Governour's island granted to him. iii. 299. Death. vi. 258. Character. iii. 74. vii. 11. viii. 38. Author. iii. 300. His journal published by Noah Webster. i. 2. See also iii. 72. 75. 298. v. 172. vi. 237. 256. viii. 9. ix. 10. 12. 16. 20. 27. 37. 42. 44. 47. 151. 174. x. 1.
- Winthrop, John, agent to England. v. 238. 248. Account of his agency. iv. 262. Purchases land of the Narraganset sachema. v. 217. Gov. of Connecticut. iv. 262.
- Winthrop, John, professor. vii. 11. Death. x. 52. Character. x. 159.
- Winthrop, John-Fitz. v. 232. King's counsellor. v. 245.
- Winthrop, Judge. v. 76.
- Winthrop, Thomas-Lindall. x. 192.
- Winthrop, Waite. v. 235. vi. 287. King's counsellor. v. 245.
- Winthrop, William. vii. 3. 7. 11.
- Winthrop's-island. i. 206. x. 131.
- Winthrop's pond. iii. 18.
- Wintonbury parish in Windsor. v. 169.
- Wiscasset, Description of. vii. 163.
- Wiscasset Indians. ix. 220.
- Wise, —, minister of Ipswich. ix. 276.
- Wise, Jeremiah, minister in Berwick. x. 70. Eminent man. x. 170.
- Wistar, Caspar. x. 192.
- Wiswall, Ichabod, minister of Duxborough. i. 99. ii. 8. Agent for colony of Plymouth. ix. 179.
- Wiswall, Ichabod, schoolmaster. ix. 186.
- Wiswall, Noah. v. 272.
- Wiswall, Peleg. ix. 185.
- Wiswall, Samuel. ix. 184.
- Wiswall, Thomas. ix. 192. v. 266.
- Witchcraft, Several persons in Massachusetts executed for, in 1655. vi. 258. Many more in 1692. v. 61. 234. 265. vii. 241.
- Witherspoon, Dr. ii. 140.
- Withington, Mather. ix. 187.
- Wituwamat, Indian of Massachusetts, solicits Canacum against the English. viii. 255. Capt. Standiah sent to Massachusetts to kill him. viii. 266. He insults Capt. Standiah. viii. 269. But is put to death. viii. 269. 272.
- Wivurna, Indian. vi. 114.
- Woahoo, Sandwich Islands. ix. 243.
- Woburn incorporated. ix. 39.
- Wolcott, Gen. ii. 125.
- Wolcott, Henry. ix. 154.
- Wolcott, Lieut. Col. ii. 98.
- Wolcott, Oliver. vii. 238. F. H. S. v. 292.
- Wolcott, Major. vii. 76. 203.
- Wolcott, Roger. iv. 262.
- Wolcott, Solomon. v. 169.
- Wollaston, Capt. viii. 37.
- Wollaston, Mount. iv. 120. viii. 37.
- Women, Indian, till the ground. i. 149. iii. 212. 221. iv. 72. v. 8. 20. 22. ix. 100. And perform the greater part of the labour. iii. 212. viii. 252. 256. ix. 217. 228.
- Wompompaug, Indian money, of what made. i. 152. iii. 231. viii. 192. Inhabitants of Plymouth begin to trade with. iii. 54. See Wampum.
- Wongunck on Connecticut river. x. 105.
- Wooops-island. iv. 242.
- Wood, Nathaniel. iv. 127.
- Wood, —, the Oxonian. ix. 9.
- Woodbridge, —, minister of Andover. x. 26.
- Woodbridge, Benjamin, Memoirs of. x. 32.
- Woodbridge, Col. ii. 117.
- Woodbridge, Deacon. iv. 55. 56.
- Woodbridge, John. v. 169.
- Woodbridge, William. ix. 96.
- Woodcock's garrison. x. 139. 140. Capt. Pierce defeated by the Indians near. vi. 89.
- Wood-creek, emptying into Oneida-lake. vii. 95. i. 285.
- Wood-end in Province-town. iv. 42. viii. 197. 204.
- Woodford, Col. ii. 85. Gen. ii. 144.
- Woods, Lake of. iii. 24.
- Woods-hole. viii. 128.
- Woods-neck. viii. 187.
- Woodstock, Indian towns in. i. 190. ix. 86.
- Woodstock in Vermont. iii. 152.
- Woodward and Green, printers. vi. 77.
- Woodward, Henry. ix. 192.
- Woodward, Samuel. ix. 206.
- Woolens manufactured in the British-American colonies. i. 74.
- Woolman, John. iv. 201.
- Woolston's-river. vi. 216.
- Wooster, Gen. ii. 95.
- Worcester, —, minister of Salisbury. x. 26.
- Worcester county formed. i. 116.
- Worcester town, Description of. i. 112. Indian town in. i. 192.
- Worm, Gray, and white. ix. 203.



- Wormley, Christopher, counsellor in Virginia. v. 144. Collector. v. 159.
- Wormley, Ralph, counsellor in Virginia. v. 144. Collector. v. 159. Secretary v. 165.
- Worms, Five sorts of, which are destructive to Indian corn. viii. 190.
- Worten-creek. ix. 102.
- Worthington, John. viii. 49. One of the Congress at Albany. vii. 76. 203.
- Woulfe, Mr. ix. 256.
- Wraxal, Capt. vii. 145. Aid-de-camp to Gen. Johnson. vii. 98. In the battle of Lake-George. vii. 108.
- Wreck-cove. viii. 117.
- Wrentham, Indians defeated near. x. 138. Disputes in the church of. v. 49.
- Wright, Benjamin. x. 96.
- Wright, Sir James. ii. 64.
- Wullamannuck-hill. i. 269.
- Wunnohon, Indian. x. 132.
- Wyandots, Indians. x. 123.
- Wyandance, sachem. x. 106.
- Wylls, George. ix. 78. vii. 214. 239.
- Wyoming settlements destroyed. ii. 147.
- Yaneka, Indian town. ix. 96.
- Yarmouth in Massachusetts, Description of. v. 54. Vessels. viii. 141. Indian towns. i. 197. 232. v. 55. See also viii. 131. 132.
- Yarmouth in Nova-Scotia. iii. 96. x. 82.
- Yellow-fever among the Indians. i. 140.
- York in Maine, Description of. iii. 6. Destroyed by the Indians. i. 104.
- York in Virginia, Siege of. ii. 221. ix. 102.
- York, Territory granted to the duke of, by Charles II. iii. 95.
- York, Dr. Markham, Archbishop of. ii. 157.
- Yorke, Sir Joseph, his memorials to the Dutch. ii. 92. 183.
- York-pond. iii. 7.
- York-river. iii. 7.
- Yummanum, sachem. x. 104.
- Z.
- Zeb's-cove. viii. 187.
- Zedwitz, Lieut. Col. ii. 72.
- Zubly, Dr. ix. 157.

---



---

## INDEX OF THE AUTHORS OF THE PAPERS IN THE TEN VOLUMES.

*Note. The figures refer to the numbers in the General Table of Contents.*

- A.
- Alden, Timothy. 177. 196. 276. 333. 372.
- Apthorp, George-Henry. 357.
- Auchmuty, Robert. 73.
- Awasuncks, Squaw sachem. 29.
- B.
- Backus, Isaac. 317. 374.
- Badger, Stephen. 211.
- Bailey, Jacob. 244.
- Bangs, Edward. 308.
- Barnard, John. 178.
- Basset, Benjamin. 218.
- Belknap, Jeremy. 1. 3. 6. 7. 122. 124. 184. 238. 274. 300. 361.
- Bennet, Nehemiah. 316.
- Bentley, William. 125. 151. 281.
- Bernard, Francis. 250.
- Birdsey, Nathan. 233.
- Blake, James. 368.
- Bollan, William. 78. 81. 92. 98. 99.
- Bradford, Alden. 267. 314.
- Bradford, William. 12. 18.
- Bratle, Thomas. 64.
- Brinley, Francis. 60. 61.
- Brown, Clark. 312. 350. 351.
- Buck, Isaac. 48.
- Bulkley, John. 226.
- Burgoyne, Gen. 114.
- C.
- Carr, Robert. 23.
- Chauncy, Charles. 144. 175. 179. 180.
- Church, Benjamin. 112.
- Clap, Noah. 302. 304.
- Clark, William. 87. 91.
- Coffin, Peleg. 342.
- Cole, Hugh. 25.
- Colesworthy, Samuel. 353.
- Colman, Benjamin. 72.
- Colman, John. 71.
- Contrecoeur, Capt. 83.
- Cooper, John. 265.
- Cotton, John, of Boston. 14.
- Cotton, John, Esq. of Plymouth. 315.
- Cranfield, Edward. 57.
- Cramston, John. 50.
- Cudworth, James. 43, 145.
- Cugnet, ———. 253.
- D.
- Dalton, Capt. 246.
- Damon, Jude. 216.

Dana, James. 192.  
 Davis, Daniel. 119.  
 Davis, John. 195.  
 Davis, Wendell. 335.  
 Dawes, Thomas, jun. 190.  
 Dickinson, Timothy. 294.  
 Downes, John. 16.  
 Dudley, Thomas. 13.  
 Dummer, Jeremiah. 165. 166.  
 Dwight, Joseph. 82.

## E.

Easton, John. 40.  
 Edwards, Jonathan. 220.  
 Eliot, Andrew. 115.  
 Eliot, John, of Boston. 129. 132. 138.  
 143. 147. 152. 158. 161. 172. 185. 191.  
 194. 195. 283. 299. 320.  
 Eliot, John, of Roxbury. 28. 204. 206.  
 297.  
 Ellis, Jonathan. 268.  
 Emerson, William. 343.

## F.

Fiske, Nathan. 309. 310.  
 Fitch, Ebenezer. 189.  
 Flynt, Henry. 176.  
 Fobes, Peres. 121. 319.  
 Folger, Walter. 339.  
 Foster, Theodore. 131.  
 Franklin, Benjamin. 107.  
 Freeman, Ezekiel. 113. 254. 255. 256.  
 257. 258.  
 Freeman, James. 153. 180. 321. 322.  
 323. 327. 328. 329. 331. 332. 335. 338.  
 Freeman, John. 41.  
 Freeman, Nathaniel. 217.  
 Frye, Col. 198.

## G.

Gardner, John. 288.  
 Goldthwait, Joseph. 242.  
 Gookin, Daniel. 154. 203.  
 Gorton, Samuel. 39.  
 Grant, Alexander. 259.  
 Graves, ———. 280.

## H.

Half-king, Indian chief. 84.  
 Hamilton, James. 86.  
 Harris, Thaddeus-Mason. 301.  
 Hawley, Gideon. 236. 240. 337.  
 Higgeson, or Higginson, Francis. 279.  
 Hoare, Leonard. 140.  
 Holmes, Abiel. 135. 136. 137. 141. 142.  
 146. 160. 168. 181. 182. 229. 230. 285.  
 Homer, Jonathan. 286.  
 Hubbard, John. 311.

## I. &amp; J.

Jay, John. 239.  
 Ingraham, Duncan. 352.  
 Ingraham, Joseph. 360.

Jones, William. 287.

## K.

Kippis, Andrew. 123.  
 Kirkland, John-Thornton. 237. 245.

## L.

Leate, William. 53.  
 Lettson, John-C. 375. 376. 377. 379.  
 Leverett, John. 47.  
 Lincoln, Benjamin. 248. 263. 264.  
 Livingston, Gov. 96.  
 Loring, Israel. 289.

## M.

Mac-Clure, David. 345.  
 Macy, Zaccheus. 340.  
 Magee, Bernard. 362.  
 Magee, James. 359.  
 Mann, James. 44.  
 Marshe, Witham. 74.  
 Mascarenc, Paul. 77.  
 Mason, Thaddeus. 210.  
 Mather, Cotton. 62. 63. 164. 297. 367.  
 Mather, Increase. 70. 163.  
 Mather, Samuel. 296.  
 Mauduit, Israel. 106.  
 Mauduit, Jasper. 102. 103. 105.  
 May, Joseph. 159.  
 Mayhew, Thomas. 30.  
 Mellen, John. 371.  
 Mellen, John, jun. 187. 334. 347.  
 Morell, William. 313.  
 Morse, Jedediah. 275.  
 Mourt, ———. 10.  
 Myles, Samuel. 133.

## N.

Neal, Daniel. 169.  
 Newman, Henry. 171.

## O.

Occum, Samson. 241.  
 Ogden, ———. 252.  
 Osborne, John. 95.

## P.

Packard, Asa. 290.  
 Page, Robert. 65.  
 Palmer, Edward. 45.  
 Parkman, Ebenezer. 306.  
 Parmenion, Stephen. 9.  
 Peck, William-Dandridge. 378. 380. 381.  
 Pemberton, Thomas. 118. 295.  
 Philip, Sachem. 24.  
 Pierronet, Thomas. 197. 356.  
 Pitkin, William. 89. 90.  
 Potter, Elam. 249.  
 Prince, Gov. 31. 34. 149. 155.  
 Prince, John. 26.  
 Prince, Thomas. 363.

## Q.

Quanapaug, James. 46.

## R.

Rallé, Sebastian. 202.  
 Ramsay, David. 247.  
 Randolph, Edward. 37. 52.  
 Rawson and Danforth. 208.  
 Rawson, Edward. 35. 38.  
 Revere, Paul. 111.  
 Ripley, Lincoln. 271.  
 Roberts, Edward. 19.  
 Ruggles, Thomas. 349.

## S.

Sewall, David. 167. 173. 174. 273.  
 Sharp, Granville. 134.  
 Shaw, Bezaleel. 341.  
 Shirley, William. 75. 80.  
 Shute, Samuel. 69.  
 Simpkins, John. 330.  
 Smith, Aaron. 291.  
 Spalding, Lyman. 277.  
 Spooner, John-Jones. 355.  
 Stiles, Ezra. 200. 213. 214. 215. 223.  
 225. 227. 228. 231. 232. 344.  
 Stimson, Jeremy. 293.  
 Stirling, Earl of. 100.  
 Stone, Nathan. 292. 307.  
 Stuyvesant, Gov. 22.  
 Sullivan, James. 4. 126. 201. 266. 269.  
 Sunderland, Earl of. 49. 55.

## T.

Temple, Thomas. 128.  
 Tenney, Samuel. 278. 365.  
 Thacher, James. 373.  
 Thayer, Nathaniel. 369.  
 Thomas, Nathaniel. 42.  
 Thomson, Isaac. 318.  
 Tracy, Nathaniel. 156.  
 Trumbull, Jonathan. 108. 116.  
 Tudor, William. 130.  
 Tufts, Cotton. 67.

## UNKNOWN.

15. 66. 76. 109. 117. 127. 139. 150. 205.  
 235. 260. 270. 282. 303. 364. 364. 370.

## W.

Walker, James. 32.  
 Washington, George. 85.  
 Watts, Isaac. 170.  
 Weare, Comptroller. 104.  
 Webster, Noah. 348. 348.  
 Wells, Nathaniel. 272.  
 Wharton, William. 56.  
 Wheeler, Joseph. 305.  
 Whitman, Levi. 324. 325. 326.  
 Willard, Secretary. 94.  
 Williams, Roger. 148. 222.  
 Winslow, Edward. 11.  
 Winslow, John. 97.  
 Winthrop, James. 193. 284.  
 Winthrop, John. 366.  
 Wolcott, Roger. 20.

AUTHORS OF LETTERS, EXTRACTS,  
ETC. FORMING PARTS OF THE  
FOREGOING PAPERS.

*Note. The figures refer to the pages of the volumes, as in the General Index.*

Adams, John. iv. 80. viii. 101.  
 Adams, John-Quincy. viii. 105.  
 Adams, Samuel. iv. 83.  
 Aspinwall, William. v. 187.  
 Barnard, John. viii. 55. 77.  
 Belknap, Jeremy. iv. 67. v. 32. vi. (13.)  
 Bentley, William. ix. 13. x. 64.  
 Bernard, Richard. ix. 16.  
 Blake, Elder. ix. 149.  
 Blossom, Thomas. iii. 41.  
 Bourne, Richard. i. 196.  
 Boyle, Robert. i. 214.  
 Bulfinch, Charles. iii. 250. 255.  
 Calamy, Dr. ix. 8.  
 Callender, J. ix. 182.  
 Capellan, Baron Van der. vi. 185.  
 Cartwright, George. v. 193.  
 Carver, Jonathan. ix. 92.  
 Chalmers, George. ix. 153.  
 Clarke, John. iii. 251.  
 Clark, Thomas. viii. 34.  
 Cornwallis, Lord. ii. 192.  
 Cotton, John, of Boston. vii. 39.  
 Cotton, John, of Plymouth. i. 199. 207.  
 Cushman, Robert. iii. 29. 34.  
 Damon, Jude. iii. 201.  
 Danforth, John. ix. 176.  
 De Lancey, Lieut. Gov. vii. 81.  
 Devotion, John. x. 105.  
 Duchambon, Gov. i. 45.  
 Dudley, Joseph. iii. 135.  
 Du Pratz. ix. 93.  
 Edwards, Jonathan, jun. ix. 91. 95.  
 Eliot, John, of Boston. iii. 300. iv. 210.  
 Eliot, John, of Roxbury. viii. 24. 29.  
 Endicot, John. iii. 66.  
 Fitch, James. i. 208.  
 Fletcher, Thomas. iii. 39.  
 Foster, Dr. iv. 240.  
 Franklin, Benjamin. iii. 288. vi. 65.  
 Frisbie, Levi. x. 33.  
 Fuller, Samuel. iii. 74.  
 Galloway. ii. 93.  
 Gates, Gen. ii. 111. 116. 189.  
 Germaine, Lord George. ii. 97.  
 Gerry, Elbridge. iv. 84.  
 Gott, Charles. iii. 67.  
 Greene, Gen. ii. 192. 207. 242.  
 Gridley, Jeremy. v. 212.  
 Hales, Stephen. iii. 277.  
 Hardy, Sir Charles. vii. 129.  
 Herbert. i. 160.  
 Higgins, Ambrose. iv. 253.  
 Holmes, Abiel. ix. 58. 284.  
 Howe, Gen. ii. 81.  
 Hubbard, William. vii. 279. ix. 151.  
 x. 4.

Hutchinson, Thomas. i. 250.  
 Jay, John. ii. 245.  
 Jefferson, Thomas. ix. 91.  
 Jessop, Francis. iii. 44.  
 Johnson. vii. 13, 17.  
 Kirkland, John-T. vi. (15.)  
 Kippis, Andrew. iv. 79.  
 Langdon, Samuel. x. 63.  
 Lee, Gen. ii. 65.  
 Legardeur de St. Pierre. vii. 71.  
 Lincoln, Gen. ii. 173.  
 Livingston, Gov. ii. 93.  
 Locke. iv. 161.  
 Lovell, James. iv. 83.  
 Madison, James. iv. 82.  
 Maison-forte, Marquis de la. i. 43.  
 Manning, President. iii. 165.  
 Mather, Cotton. iii. 128. vii. 251. ix.  
 174. 277.  
 Mather, Increase. ix. 155. x. 176.  
 Mayhew, Thomas. i. 204.  
 Milton. v. 171.  
 Minot, George-Richards. viii. 98.  
 Moodey, Joshua. x. 40. 44.  
 Morgan, Gen. ii. 203.  
 Morton, Nathaniel. iv. 122.  
 Newcastle, Duke of. i. 20.  
 Paine, Thomas. ii. 69. 226.  
 Pepperell, William. i. 13—53.  
 Pole, William. ii. 9.  
 Prentiss, Joshua. iii. 19.  
 Prince, Thomas. viii. 232. 237. 253.  
 Purcell. iv. 99.  
 Razier, Isaac de. iii. 54.  
 Reaumur. v. 287.  
 Robertson, William. vii. 228.  
 Robinson, John. iii. 45.  
 Rolt. i. 110.  
 Sergeant. v. 18.  
 Sewall, Stephen. viii. 97.  
 Shelburne, Earl of. ii. 71.  
 Shepard, Thomas. vii. 43.  
 Sherley, James. iii. 27—73.  
 Shirley, William. vii. 131.  
 Skinner, James. i. 18.  
 Smith, John. i. 157.  
 Snelling, Jonathan. i. 18.

Stiles, Ezra. x. 166.  
 Thomson, Charles. iv. 156.  
 Townsend, Thomas. ii. 91.  
 Treat, Samuel. viii. 171. 177.  
 Trumbull, Benjamin. ix. 77.  
 Tucker, St. George. iv. 191.  
 Varnum, James-M. ii. 129.  
 Wallcut, Thomas. iv. 7.  
 Warren, John. iii. 290.  
 Warren, Peter. i. 21—49.  
 Washington, George. ii. 99. 105. 107.  
 113. 119. 133. 141. 171. 188. 199. 236.  
 244. viii. 99.  
 Wayne, Gen. ii. 170.  
 Webster, Noah. vi. 76.  
 Wentworth, Benning. i. 13.  
 White, Roger. iii. 39. 42.  
 Wilkes, John. ii. 135.  
 Willard, President. vi. (6). vii. 66.  
 Winthrop, James. vii. 61.  
 Winthrop, Gov. vi. 155. viii. 29. 220.  
 ix. 12. 21. 154. 155. x. 2. 38.

◆

#### AUTHORS OF NOTES.

Backus, Isaac. iii. 164.  
 Belknap, Jeremy. i. 125. ii. 20—24.  
 35. iv. 158. 223. v. 5. 53. 54. 124.  
 Brinley, Francis. v. 251.  
 Davis, John. vi. (3.) (10.) (11.) (13.)  
 83—100. 205. 207.  
 Eliot, John, of Boston. i. 66—95. v.  
 171. 172. 187. viii. 4. ix. 268.  
 Emerson, William. ix. 236.  
 Freeman, James. i. 111—230. iii. 203.  
 v. 80. viii. 203—276.  
 Holmes, Abiel. vii. 222. x. 89—178.  
 Minot, George-Richards. i. 233.  
 Morse, Jedidiah. i. 209. vii. 67.  
 Rich, Obadiah. viii. 145.  
 Stiles, Ezra. x. 97. 98. 112. 118.  
 Thacher, Peter. ii. 14. 25. 28. 41.  
 Wetmore, William. iii. 50. 77.  
 Willis, Zephaniah. viii. 147.

L A W S  
OF THE  
MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

---

ARTICLE I. Each member shall pay eight dollars at the time of his admission, and two dollars annually, to create a fund, for the benefit of the institution. And any member shall be exempted from the annual payment of two dollars, provided he shall at any time after six months from his admission, pay to the Treasurer thirty-four dollars, in addition to what he had before paid.

ART. II. All elections shall be made by ballot.

ART. III. Nominations of Corresponding Members may be made by the members of the Society; but no member shall nominate more than one candidate at the same meeting; and all nominations shall be made at a meeting previous to that at which the ballot is to be taken.

ART. IV. There shall be four stated meetings of the Society in each year; namely, on the last Thursdays of January, April, and October, and on the day before Commencement. And occasional meetings shall be convened, on due notification, by the President, or in case of his absence, by one of the Secretaries, on the application of any two of the members.

ART. V. There shall be annually chosen, at the meeting in April, a President, a Recording Secretary, a Corresponding Secretary, a Treasurer, a Librarian, a Cabinet Keeper, and a Standing Committee of five.

ART. VI. At the request of any two members present, any motion shall be deferred to another meeting, for farther consideration, before it is finally determined, and shall then be taken up.

ART. VII. All accounts shall be kept in dollars and cents.

ART. VIII. Five members present shall be a quorum for all purposes, excepting those of making alterations in, or additions to, the laws and regulations of this Society, and the election of members.

ART. IX. No alterations in, or addition to, the laws and regulations of this Society shall be made, unless there are eight members present;

and no member shall be chosen, unless there are nine members present at the election, and unless two-thirds of the members present vote for his admission.

**ART. X.** Members, who are chosen in other States and countries, shall not be required to make contribution with the members who are citizens of the Commonwealth.

---

#### LAWS, REGULATING THE STANDING COMMITTEE.

**ARTICLE I.** All nominations of Resident Members shall be made by the President and Standing Committee, at one meeting at least previous to that, at which the ballot is to be taken.

**ART. II.** The Standing Committee shall regulate all the common expenses of the Society, and make the necessary provision of such small articles as may be wanted, and shall have power to draw on the Treasurer to defray the expense.

**ART. III.** They shall aid the Librarian and Cabinet Keeper, when they shall require it, in the arrangement of the books, pamphlets, maps, and manuscripts, and in the disposition of curiosities and articles belonging to the cabinet, and shall especially attend to the preservation and binding of books and pamphlets.

**ART. IV.** They shall frequently inspect the records, and inquire whether all the orders of the Society are carried into effect with precision and promptitude.

**ART. V.** They shall inquire for, and endeavour to obtain, on the best terms for the benefit of the Society, manuscripts, books, and articles of curiosity.

**ART. VI.** They shall meet in the week previous to each stated quarterly meeting of the Society, and arrange and prepare such business, as may be a subject for the Society's attention. The Recording Secretary shall notify to the Standing Committee their stated meetings.

---

#### LAWS, REGULATING THE LIBRARY AND MUSEUM.

**ARTICLE I.** All books which are presented to the library shall be accepted with thanks, and also every curiosity for the museum.

**ART. II.** American coins and curiosities shall be kept by themselves in the best part of the cabinet.

ART. III. At every quarterly meeting, a catalogue of the books, pamphlets, manuscripts, and maps, shall be produced by the Librarian; and a catalogue of the curiosities by the Cabinet Keeper: and every member shall in person, if present, and in writing if absent, give an account of the books and manuscripts, or whatever article belonging to the Society he may have in his possession.

ART. IV. Once in every year, previous to the spring meeting, the Standing Committee shall inspect the library and museum, and report the state of every article at that meeting, and what books are particularly wanted.

ART. V. There shall be two keys to the Society's room, one of which shall be kept by the Librarian, and the other by the Cabinet Keeper, to be by them delivered to no person except one of the members.

ART. VI. No book shall be taken from the library, but with the knowledge of the Librarian, who shall make a record of the same. A member shall not have more than three books at a time, unless by special leave obtained by a vote of the Society. He shall not retain any volume longer than four weeks, but may renew the same once: after which the same person shall not have the same books for three months, unless by special leave of the Standing Committee. Members living more than ten miles from Boston may renew their books without personal application. No manuscript shall be taken out of the library, but in the presence of the Librarian.

ART. VII. The sixth article shall not prevent the Committee, annually chosen to superintend the publications of the Society, from taking out of the library, with the knowledge of the Librarian, as many books and papers as they may want.

ART. VIII. Newspapers and maps shall not be allowed to be taken out of the library, except by the Publishing Committee.

ART. IX. Fines for a breach of the sixth article shall be at the weekly rate of ten cents for every book less than an octavo; twenty, for an octavo; thirty, for a quarto; and forty, for a folio.

ART. X. An application in writing, left with the Librarian, shall secure any volume or set, for a fortnight after it may be returned to the library; and if more than one such application be made, they shall be answered in the order of their respective dates.

ART. XI. If books or manuscripts be requested for publick uses, or for the peculiar benefit of persons whom the Society is disposed to oblige, the application shall be made to the Librarian through the medium of some member, who shall be responsible in a written obligation, for the

return of each article borrowed, within such time as shall be stipulated by the Librarian, not exceeding three months.

ART. XII. All persons, who take books from the library, shall be answerable for any injury to the same, which shall be estimated by the Standing Committee.

ART. XIII. The privilege of using the library shall be suspended, as respects the person who neglects to pay any fines or assessments for damages, longer than one month, after he shall have received notice from the Librarian.

ART. XIV. It shall be the duty of the Librarian to attend at the library, or to procure some member to attend in his stead, on the afternoon of each Thursday, at 3 o'clock, P. M., for the accommodation of the members. And it is understood and expected that the members will regulate themselves accordingly.

ART. XV. All pamphlets shall be bound, except duplicates; which shall be kept by themselves, and triplicates shall be exchanged.

ART. XVI. All manuscripts shall be distinctly marked and numbered, and kept in cases of paper; which shall also be numbered, and the contents of each registered.

ART. XVII. Every present received shall be recorded, and an account of it rendered at the next meeting of the Society.

ART. XVIII. A printed ticket shall be pasted on the inside of the cover of each book, signifying that it is the property of the Society, and also the name of the donor, if it be a present.

---

At a meeting of the Massachusetts Historical Society, holden **May 4th**, 1809, it was voted,

That the foregoing Articles shall be the Statute Laws of the Society, any votes and customs to the contrary notwithstanding.

Copied from the Records,

**JAMES FREEMAN, Rec'g Sec'y.**



## OFFICERS OF THE SOCIETY.

*Presidents.*

James Sullivan, 1791—1806.  
Christopher Gore, 1806—1809.

*Standing Committee.*

James Winthrop, 1791—1809.  
Peter Thacher, 1791—1802.  
George R. Minot, 1791—1792.  
Redford Webster, 1793—1809.  
John Davis, 1798—1809.  
Josiah Quincy, 1798—1802.  
William Tudor, 1803—1807.  
William Emerson, 1803—1809.  
John T. Kirkland, 1807—1809.

*Treasurers.*

William Tudor, 1791—1796.  
George R. Minot, 1796—1799.  
William Tudor, 1799—1803.  
Josiah Quincy, 1803—1809.

*Corresponding Secretaries.*

Jeremy Belknap, 1791—1798.  
John Eliot, 1798—1809.

*Recording Secretaries.*

Thomas Wallcutt, 1791—1792.  
George R. Minot, 1792—1793.  
James Freeman, 1793—1809.

*Librarians.*

John Eliot, 1791—1793.  
George R. Minot, 1793—1795.  
John Eliot, 1795—1798.  
John T. Kirkland, 1798—1806.  
William S. Shaw, 1806—1808.  
Timothy Alden, 1808—1809.

*Cabinet Keepers.*

Samuel Turell, 1794—1808.  
Timothy Alden, 1808—1809.  
Joseph Mc. Kean, 1809.

*Committees of Publication.**1st. Volume.*

Jeremy Belknap,  
John Eliot,  
James Freeman,  
George R. Minot.

*2d. Volume.*

James Sullivan,  
Peter Thacher,  
William Tudor,  
Redford Webster.

*3d. Volume.*

Jeremy Belknap,  
William Wetmore.  
Aaron Dexter,  
James Freeman.

*4th. Volume.*

Jeremy Belknap,  
John Eliot,  
James Freeman,  
George R. Minot.

*5th. Volume.*

John Eliot,  
James Freeman,  
Jedediah Morse,  
Josiah Quincy.

*6th. Volume.*

George R. Minot,  
John Davis,  
John T. Kirkland,  
Josiah Quincy.

*7th. Volume.*

Abiel Holmes,  
Jedediah Morse,  
William Spooner,  
Thaddeus M. Harris.

*8th. Volume.*

Peter Thacher,  
John Eliot,  
James Freeman,  
William Sullivan.

*9th. Volume.*

John Davis,  
William Emerson,  
John T. Kirkland,  
Josiah Quincy.

*10th. Volume.*

Thomas L. Winthrop,  
Abiel Holmes,  
John Q. Adams,  
Thaddeus M. Harris.

*Committee chosen to publish the first volume of the new series, John Eliot, James Freeman, John Davis, and Redford Webster, to whom it is requested communications may be made.*

## MEMBERS DECEASED SINCE THE INSTITUTION OF THE SOCIETY.

Rev. Jeremy Belknap, D. D.  
 Rev. Peter Thacher, D. D.  
 His Excellency James Sullivan, Esq.  
 Hon. George Richards Minot, Esq.  
 Isaac Lothrop, Esq.  
 Mr. Thomas Pemberton.  
 Hon. Peleg Coffin, Esq.  
 Ezekiel Price, Esq.  
 Rev. John Clarke, D. D.  
 Thomas Brattle, Esq.  
 William Fiske, Esq.  
 Marston Watson, Esq.

Rev. John Erskine, D. D.  
 Rev. Ezra Stiles, D. D.  
 Rev. John Jones Spooner.  
 Sir William Jones.  
 Mr. Gardiner Baker.  
 Mr. Gilbert Harrison Hubbard.  
 Dr. Isaac Senter.  
 Dr. Elihu Hubbard Smith.  
 Rev. Andrew Eliot.  
 Rev. Arthur Houser, D. D.  
 Mr. Ebenezer Grant Marsh.

## ERROURS CORRECTED.

Vol. i. p. 251. l. 7. for 1616 read 1716.  
 p. 257. l. 5. for *Tashmuit*, r. *Tashmuit*.

Vol. ii. p. 25. l. 5. for *son Daniel*, r. *son Nathaniel*.

Vol. iii. p. 15. last l. for 1739, r. 1639.  
 p. 194. in the list of the Governours of  
 Plymouth,

after 1637. *Wm. Bradford*, insert  
 1638. *Tho. Prince*.  
 1639. *Wm. Braiford*.

Vol. iv. p. 111. l. 30. for 1638, r. 1639.

Vol. v. p. 56. l. 1. for *Joseph*, r. *Elisha*.  
 p. 211. l. 11. for *Eccha*, r. *Eccho*. p. 215.  
 l. 15. r. *newspapers*.

Vol. vi. p. 102. Note. A more prob-  
 able and intelligible supposition is that  
*gen'g* is intended to express *general thing*,  
 or *genus*, for he adds, the *species thereof*.  
 p. 270. l. 3. r. *ministers in Boston*.

Vol. vii. p. 15. Note. Read,  
*The second church was gathered at Charles-*  
*town in the year 1630.*

*The fourth—at Roxbury—1631.*

*The fifth—at Lynn—1631.*

*The sixth—at Watertown—1631.*

*The seventh—at Boston—1632.*

p. 24. Note. l. 18. from bot. for 1668, r.

1663. p. 30. Note. l. 8. from bot. for  
*Mather*, r. *Danforth*. p. 38. for *Stone died*  
*July 2. r. July 20.*

Vol. viii. p. 27. l. 21. for *protecity*, r. *pro-*  
*lixity*. p. 68. l. 14. for *During this year*,  
 r. *In the year 1716*. p. 143. l. 7. from bot.  
 for *east*, r. *west*. p. 167. l. 35. Rev. Mr.  
 Prince was not a descendant of Gov. Prince.  
 See Eliot's Biographical Dictionary. p. 393.  
 p. 278. in the Note, l. 19. from bot. for  
 1664, r. 1644.

Vol. ix. p. 32. l. 1. for 1677, r. 1637. p.  
 41. in the Note, l. 17. for 1684, r. 1585. p.  
 157. Note. l. 2. from bot. for *Connecticut*, r.  
*Massachusetts*. p. 160. l. 32. after *behalf*,  
 insert *and*. p. 162. l. 11. after *date*, insert  
*January 2. 1792*. p. 163. l. 7. for *from*, r.  
*into*. p. 175. l. 8. from bot. for 1681, r.  
 1671. p. 177. l. 13. for 1767. r. 1697.

Other Errours are noted in Vol. i. p. 124.  
 139. 153. 226. Vol. ii. *beginning*. Vol. iii.  
*beg.* and p. 32. 240. Vol. v. p. 106. Vol.  
 vi. p. (22.) and 288. Vol. viii. *beg.* Vol.  
 ix. *beg.*

Note. In the second Edition of the *1st*  
 Vol. the Errours of the first Edition are  
 corrected.